

George Pólya · Gabor Szegő

# Problems and Theorems in Analysis II

Theory of Functions.  
Zeros. Polynomials.  
Determinants.  
Number Theory.  
Geometry



### **George Pólya**

Born in Budapest, December 13, 1887, George Pólya initially studied law, then languages and literature in Budapest. He came to mathematics in order to understand philosophy, but the subject of his doctorate in 1912 was in probability theory and he promptly abandoned philosophy.

After a year in Göttingen and a short stay in Paris, he received an appointment at the ETH in Zürich. His research was multi-faceted, ranging from series, probability, number theory and combinatorics to astronomy and voting systems. Some of his deepest work was on entire functions. He also worked in conformal mappings, potential theory, boundary value problems, and isoperimetric problems in mathematical physics, as well as heuristics late in his career. When Pólya left Europe in 1940, he first went to Brown University, then two years later to Stanford, where he remained until his death on September 7, 1985.



### **Gabor Szegő**

Born in Kunhegyes, Hungary, January 20, 1895, Szegő studied in Budapest and Vienna, where he received his Ph. D. in 1918, after serving in the Austro-Hungarian army in the First World War. He became a privatdozent at the University of Berlin and in 1926 succeeded Knopp at the University of Königsberg. It was during his

time in Berlin that he and Pólya collaborated on their great joint work, the Problems and Theorems in Analysis. Szegő's own research concentrated on orthogonal polynomials and Toeplitz matrices. With the deteriorating situation in Germany at that time, he moved in 1934 to Washington University, St. Louis, where he remained until 1938, when he moved to Stanford. As department head at Stanford, he arranged for Pólya to join the Stanford faculty in 1942. Szegő remained at Stanford until his death on August 7, 1985.

**Classics in Mathematics**

**George Pólya • Gabor Szegő**

**Problems and Theorems  
in Analysis II**

**Springer**

*Berlin*

*Heidelberg*

*New York*

*Barcelona*

*Budapest*

*Hong Kong*

*London*

*Milan*

*Paris*

*Santa Clara*

*Singapore*

*Tokyo*



George Pólya • Gabor Szegő

# Problems and Theorems in Analysis II

Theory of Functions. Zeros.  
Polynomials. Determinants.  
Number Theory. Geometry

Reprint of the 1976 Edition



Springer

George Pólya †  
Gabor Szegő †

*Translator:*

C. E. Billigheimer  
McMaster University  
Mathematics  
Hamilton, Ontario  
Canada

---

Originally published as Vol. 216 of the  
*Grundlehren der mathematischen Wissenschaften*

---

Mathematics Subject Classification (1991): 10-01, 15-01, 15A15, 30-01, 30A06,  
30A08

CIP data applied for

Die Deutsche Bibliothek – CIP-Einheitsaufnahme

Pólya, George:

Problems and theorems in analysis / George Pólya; Gabor Szegő. – [Nachdr.] – Berlin; Heidelberg; New York;  
Barcelona; Budapest; Hong Kong; London; Milan; Paris; Santa Clara, Singapore; Tokyo: Springer  
(Classics in mathematics)

2. Theory of functions, zeros, polynomials, determinants, number theory, geometry. – Reprint [der Ausg.]

Berlin, Springer, 1976. – 1998

ISBN 3-540-63686-2

ISSN 1431-0821

ISBN 3-540-63686-2 Springer-Verlag Berlin Heidelberg New York

This work is subject to copyright. All rights are reserved, whether the whole or part of the material is concerned, specifically the rights of translation, reprinting, reuse of illustrations, recitation, broadcasting, reproduction on microfilm or in any other way, and storage in data banks. Duplication of this publication or parts thereof is permitted only under the provisions of the German Copyright Law of September 9, 1965, in its current version, and permission for use must always be obtained from Springer-Verlag. Violations are liable for prosecution under the German Copyright Law.

Springer is a part of Springer Science+Business Media

© Springer-Verlag Berlin Heidelberg 1998

Printed in Germany

The use of general descriptive names, registered names, trademarks etc. in this publication does not imply, even in the absence of a specific statement, that such names are exempt from the relevant protective laws and regulations and therefore free for general use.

**G. Pólya G. Szegő**

# **Problems and Theorems in Analysis**

**Volume II**

**Theory of Functions · Zeros · Polynomials  
Determinants · Number Theory · Geometry**

**Translation by C. E. Billigheimer**



**Springer-Verlag  
Berlin Heidelberg New York 1976**

**George Pólya . Gabor Szegő**  
**Stanford University, Stanford, California, USA**

**Claude Elias Billigheimer**  
**McMaster University, Hamilton, Ontario, Canada**  
**and Maimonides College, Toronto, Ontario, Canada**

**Revised and enlarged translation of *Aufgaben und Lehrsätze aus der Analysis II*, 4th edition, 1971; Heidelberger Taschenbücher, Bd. 74**

**AMS Subject Classifications (1970): 10-01, 15-01, 15 A 15, 30-01, 30 A 06, 30 A 08**

**ISBN 3-540-06972-0 Springer-Verlag Berlin Heidelberg New York**  
**ISBN 0-387-06972-0 Springer-Verlag New York Heidelberg Berlin**

**This work is subject to copyright. All rights are reserved, whether the whole or part of the material is concerned, specifically those of translation, reprinting, re-use of illustrations, broadcasting, reproduction by photocopying machine or similar means, and storage in data banks. Under § 54 of the German Copyright Law where copies are made for other than private use, a fee is payable to the publisher, the amount of the fee to be determined by agreement with the publisher. © by Springer-Verlag Berlin Heidelberg 1976. Printed in Germany. Typesetting: William Clowes & Sons Ltd., London, Beccles and Colchester. Printing and bookbinding: Konrad Triltsch, Würzburg.**

**Library of Congress Cataloging in Publication Data. Pólya, George, 1887-. Problems and theorems in analysis. (Die Grundlehren der mathematischen Wissenschaften in Einzeldarstellungen, Bd. 193, 216.) Vol. 2 translated by C. E. Billigheimer. Rev. and enl. translation of Aufgaben und Lehrsätze aus der Analysis, 4th ed., 1970-. Contents : v. 1. Series, integral calculus, theory of functions. v. 2. Theory of functions, zeros, polynomials, determinants, number theory, geometry. I. Mathematical analysis – Problems, exercises, etc. I. Szegő, Gabor, 1895 – joint author. II. Title. III. Series. QA301. P64413. 515'.076. 75-189312.**

# Contents

## Part Four. Functions of One Complex Variable. Special Part

### Chapter 1. Maximum Term and Central Index, Maximum Modulus and Number of Zeros

	Problem Numbers		Problem Page	Solu- tion Page
§ 1	(1–40)	Analogy between $\mu(r)$ and $M(r)$ , $\nu(r)$ and $N(r)$ .	3	167
§ 2	(41–47)	Further Results on $\mu(r)$ and $\nu(r)$ . . . . .	7	171
§ 3	(48–66)	Connection between $\mu(r)$ , $\nu(r)$ , $M(r)$ and $N(r)$ .	8	173
§ 4	(67–76)	$\mu(r)$ and $M(r)$ under Special Regularity Assump- tions . . . . .	11	178

### Chapter 2. Schlicht Mappings

§ 1	(77–83)	Introductory Material . . . . .	14	182
§ 2	(84–87)	Uniqueness Theorems . . . . .	15	183
§ 3	(88–96)	Existence of the Mapping Function . . . . .	15	183
§ 4	(97–120)	The Inner and the Outer Radius. The Normed Mapping Function . . . . .	16	186
§ 5	(121–135)	Relations between the Mappings of Different Domains . . . . .	20	189
§ 6	(136–163)	The Koebe Distortion Theorem and Related Topics . . . . .	23	192

### Chapter 3. Miscellaneous Problems

§ 1	(164–174.2)	Various Propositions . . . . .	27	198
§ 2	(175–179)	A Method of E. Landau . . . . .	29	202
§ 3	(180–187)	Rectilinear Approach to an Essential Singularity	30	203
§ 4	(188–194)	Asymptotic Values of Entire Functions . . . .	31	205
§ 5	(195–205)	Further Applications of the Phragmén-Lindelöf Method . . . . .	32	207
§ 6	(*206–*212)	Supplementary Problems . . . . .	33	210

## Part Five. The Location of Zeros

### Chapter 1. Rolle's Theorem and Descartes' Rule of Signs

	Problem Numbers		Prob- lem Page	Solu- tion Page
§ 1	(1–21)	Zeros of Functions, Changes of Sign of Sequences	36	212
§ 2	(22–27)	Reversals of Sign of a Function . . . . .	39	214
§ 3	(28–41)	First Proof of Descartes' Rule of Signs . . . .	39	215
§ 4	(42–52)	Applications of Descartes' Rule of Signs . . .	42	217
§ 5	(53–76)	Applications of Rolle's Theorem . . . . .	43	220
§ 6	(77–86)	Laguerre's Proof of Descartes' Rule of Signs .	46	224
§ 7	(87–91)	What is the Basis of Descartes' Rule of Signs? .	50	226
§ 8	(92–100)	Generalizations of Rolle's Theorem . . . . .	51	228

### Chapter 2. The Geometry of the Complex Plane and the Zeros of Polynomials

§ 1	(101–110)	Center of Gravity of a System of Points with respect to a Point . . . . .	53	230
§ 2	(111–127)	Center of Gravity of a Polynomial with respect to a Point. A Theorem of Laguerre . . . . .	54	231
§ 3	(128–156)	Derivative of a Polynomial with respect to a Point. A Theorem of Grace . . . . .	57	234

### Chapter 3. Miscellaneous Problems

§ 1	(157–182)	Approximation of the Zeros of Transcendental Functions by the Zeros of Rational Functions .	62	239
§ 2	(183–189.3)	Precise Determination of the Number of Zeros by Descartes' Rule of Signs . . . . .	66	248
§ 3	(190–196.1)	Additional Problems on the Zeros of Polynomials	69	250

## Part Six. Polynomials and Trigonometric Polynomials

§ 1	(1–7)	Tchebychev Polynomials . . . . .	71	252
§ 2	(8–15)	General Problems on Trigonometric Polynomials	72	253
§ 3	(16–28)	Some Special Trigonometric Polynomials . .	73	254
§ 4	(29–38)	Some Problems on Fourier Series . . . . .	75	257
§ 5	(39–43)	Real Non-negative Trigonometric Polynomials .	77	258
§ 6	(44–49)	Real Non-negative Polynomials . . . . .	77	259
§ 7	(50–61)	Maximum-Minimum Problems on Trigonometric Polynomials . . . . .	78	261
§ 8	(62–66)	Maximum-Minimum Problems on Polynomials .	80	264
§ 9	(67–76)	The Lagrange Interpolation Formula . . . .	82	266
§ 10	(77–83)	The Theorems of S. Bernstein and A. Markov .	84	268
§ 11	(84–102)	Legendre Polynomials and Related Topics . .	85	269
§ 12	(103–113)	Further Maximum-Minimum Problems on Poly- nomials . . . . .	89	276



**Part Seven. Determinants and Quadratic Forms**

	Problem Numbers		Prob- lem Page	Solu- tion Page
§ 1	(1–16)	Evaluation of Determinants. Solution of Linear Equations . . . . .	92	279
§ 2	(17–34)	Power Series Expansion of Rational Functions .	96	283
§ 3	(35–43.2)	Generation of Positive Quadratic Forms . . .	100	286
§ 4	(44–54.4)	Miscellaneous Problems . . . . .	104	289
§ 5	(55–72)	Determinants of Systems of Functions . . .	108	296

**Part Eight. Number Theory****Chapter 1. Arithmetical Functions**

§ 1	(1–11)	Problems on the Integral Parts of Numbers . .	111	302
§ 2	(12–20)	Counting Lattice Points . . . . .	112	303
§ 3	(21–27.2)	The Principle of Inclusion and Exclusion . .	113	305
§ 4	(28–37)	Parts and Divisors . . . . .	116	308
§ 5	(38–42)	Arithmetical Functions, Power Series, Dirichlet Series . . . . .	118	310
§ 6	(43–64)	Multiplicative Arithmetical Functions . . .	120	311
§ 7	(65–78)	Lambert Series and Related Topics . . . .	125	316
§ 8	(79–83)	Further Problems on Counting Lattice Points .	128	319

**Chapter 2. Polynomials with Integral Coefficients and Integral-Valued Functions**

§ 1	(84–93)	Integral Coefficients and Integral-Valued Polynomials . . . . .	129	319
§ 2	(94–115)	Integral-Valued Functions and their Prime Divisors . . . . .	130	322
§ 3	(116–129)	Irreducibility of Polynomials . . . . .	132	325

**Chapter 3. Arithmetical Aspects of Power Series**

§ 1	(130–137)	Preparatory Problems on Binomial Coefficients .	134	330
§ 2	(138–148)	On Eisenstein's Theorem . . . . .	134	332
§ 3	(149–154)	On the Proof of Eisenstein's Theorem . . .	136	333
§ 4	(155–164)	Power Series with Integral Coefficients Associated with Rational Functions . . . . .	137	335
§ 5	(165–173)	Function-Theoretic Aspects of Power Series with Integral Coefficients . . . . .	138	337
§ 6	(174–187)	Power Series with Integral Coefficients in the Sense of Hurwitz . . . . .	140	338
§ 7	(188–193)	The Values at the Integers of Power Series that Converge about $z=\infty$ . . . . .	142	341

**Chapter 4. Some Problems on Algebraic Integers**

	<b>Problem Numbers</b>		<b>Prob- lem Page</b>	<b>Solu- tion Page</b>
§ 1	(194–203)	Algebraic Integers. Fields . . . . .	143	343
§ 2	(204–220)	Greatest Common Divisor . . . . .	146	347
§ 3	(221–227.2)	Congruences . . . . .	147	350
§ 4	(228–237)	Arithmetical Aspects of Power Series . . . . .	149	351

**Chapter 5. Miscellaneous Problems**

§ 1	(237.1–244.4)	Lattice Points in Two and Three Dimensions . . . . .	150	353
§ 2	(245–266)	Miscellaneous Problems . . . . .	152	356

**Part Nine. Geometric Problems**

§ 1	(1–25)	Some Geometric Problems . . . . .	157	366
-----	--------	-----------------------------------	-----	-----

**Appendix**

§ 1	Additional Problems to Part One . . . . .	163	380
	New Problems in English Edition . . . . .		383
	Author Index . . . . .		384
	Subject Index . . . . .		387
	Topics . . . . .		390
	Errata . . . . .		392

# Notation and Abbreviations

We have attempted to be as consistent as possible in regard to notation and abbreviations and to denote quantities of the same nature by the same symbol, at least within the same part. A particular notation may be specified for a few sections. Otherwise the meaning of every letter is explained anew in every problem except when we refer to a previous problem. A problem that is closely related to the preceding one is introduced by the remark "continued"; if it is related to some other problem the relevant number is mentioned, e.g. "continuation of 136".

We denote parts by roman numerals, chapters (where necessary) by arabic numerals. The problems are numbered in bold-face. Within the same part only the number of the problem is given; if, however, we refer to another part its number is also indicated. For example if we refer to problem (or solution) **123** of Part IV in a problem (or solution) of Part IV we write "**123**"; if we refer to it in a problem (or solution) of any other part we write "IV **123**".

Remarks in square brackets [ ] in a problem are hints, while in a solution (particularly at the beginning of the solution) they are citations or references to other problems that are used in various steps of the proof. All other remarks appear in ordinary parentheses. A reference to a problem number indicates in general that one should consult both problem and solution, unless the opposite is explicitly stated, e.g. "solution 75".

Almost always references to the sources are given only in the solution. If a problem has already appeared in print, this fact is indicated in the citations. If the author but no bibliography is mentioned, the problem has been communicated to us as a new problem. Problems whose number is preceded by the symbol \* (as in \*206 of Part IV) or contains a decimal point (as in 174.1 of Part IV) are new, that is they are either not contained in the original German edition, or else are contained there but are essentially modified in the present English version. If the problem is the same as in the original edition but the solution has some essentially new feature, the symbol \* is used only in the solution. The abbreviations of the names of journals are taken from the index of Mathematical Reviews and, if not listed there, from the World List of Scientific Periodicals Published 1900–1960, Peter Brown, British Museum, Washington, Butterworths, 1963.

The most frequently quoted journals are:

Abh. Akad. Wiss. St. Petersburg	= Akademie der Wissenschaften, St. Petersburg
Acta Math.	= Acta Mathematica, Stockholm
Acta Soc. Sc. Fennicae	= Acta Societatis Scientiae Fennicae
Amer. Math. Monthly	= American Mathematician Monthly
Arch. Math. Phys.	= Archiv der Mathematik und Physik
Atti Acad. Naz. Lincei Rend.	= Atti dell' Accademia Nazionale dei Lincei Rendiconti.
Cl. Sci. Fis. Mat. Natur.	= Classe di Scienze Fisiche, Matematiche e Naturali, Roma
Berlin. Ber.	= Berliner Berichte
C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris) Ser. A–B	= Comptes rendus hebdomadaires des séances de l'Académie des Sciences, Paris, Séries A et B
Giorn. Mat. Battaglini	= Giornale di Matematiche di Battaglini
Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein.	= Jahresbericht der deutschen Mathematiker-Vereinigung
J. Math. spéc.	= Journal de Mathématiques Spéciales, Paris
J. reine angew. Math.	= Journal für die reine und angewandte Mathematik
Math. Ann.	= Mathematische Annalen
Math. és term. ért.	= Matematikai és természettudományi értesítő
Math. Z.	= Mathematische Zeitschrift
Münchener Ber.	= Münchener Berichte

Nachr. Akad. Wiss. Göttingen	= Nachrichten der Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften Göttingen
Nouv. Annls Math.	= Nouvelles Annales de mathématiques
Nyt. Tidsskr.	= Nyt tidsskrift for matematik
Proc. Amer. Math. Soc.	= Proceedings of the American Mathematical Society
Proc. Lond. Math. Soc.	= Proceedings of the London Mathematical Society
Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.	= Transactions of the American Mathematical Society

The following textbooks are quoted repeatedly and are usually cited by the name of the author only or by a suitable abbreviation (e.g. Hurwitz-Courant; MPR.):

- G.H. Hardy and E.M. Wright: *An Introduction to the Theory of Numbers*, 4th Ed. Oxford: Oxford University Press 1960.
- E. Hecke: *Vorlesungen über die Theorie der algebraischen Zahlen*, New York: Chelsea Publishing Co. 1948.
- E. Hille: *Analytic Function Theory*, Vol. I: Boston – New York – Chicago – Atlanta – Dallas – Palo Alto – Toronto – London: Ginn & Co. 1959; Vol. II: Waltham/Mass. – Toronto – London: Blaisdell Publishing Co. 1962.
- A. Hurwitz – R. Courant: *Vorlesungen über allgemeine Funktionentheorie und elliptische Funktionen*, 4th Ed. Berlin – Göttingen – Heidelberg – New York: Springer 1964.
- K. Knopp: *Theory and Applications of Infinite Series*, 2nd Ed. London – Glasgow: Blackie & Son 1964.
- G. Kowalewski: *Einführung in die Determinantentheorie*, 4th Ed. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter 1954.
- G. Pólya: *How to Solve It*, 2nd Ed. Princeton: Princeton University Press 1971. Quoted as HSI.
- G. Pólya: *Mathematics and Plausible Reasoning*, Vols. 1 and 2, 2nd Ed. Princeton: Princeton University Press 1968. Quoted as MPR.
- G. Pólya: *Mathematical Discovery*, Vols. 1 and 2, Cor. Ed. New York: John Wiley & Sons 1968. Quoted as MD.
- G. Szegő: *Orthogonal Polynomials*, American Mathematical Society Colloquium Publications Vol. XXIII, 3rd Ed. New York: American Mathematical Society 1967.
- E.C. Titchmarsh: *The Theory of Functions*, 2nd Ed. Oxford – London – Glasgow – New York – Melbourne – Toronto: Oxford University Press 1939.
- E.T. Whittaker and G.N. Watson: *A Course of Modern Analysis*, 4th Ed. London: Cambridge University Press 1952.

The following notation and abbreviations are used throughout the book:

$a_n \rightarrow a$  means " $a_n$  tends to  $a$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ ."

$a_n \sim b_n$  (read " $a_n$  is asymptotically equal to  $b_n$ ") means " $b_n \neq 0$  for sufficiently large  $n$  and

$\frac{a_n}{b_n} \rightarrow 1$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ ".

$O(a_n)$ , with  $a_n > 0$ , denotes a quantity that, divided by  $a_n$ , remains bounded,  $o(a_n)$  a quantity that, divided by  $a_n$ , tends to 0 as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ .

Such notation is used analogously in limit processes other than for  $n \rightarrow \infty$ .

$x \rightarrow a+0$  means " $x$  converges to  $a$  from the right";

$x \rightarrow a-0$  means " $x$  converges to  $a$  from the left".

$\exp(x) = e^x$ , where  $e$  is the base of natural logarithms.

Given  $n$  real numbers  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$ ,  $\max(a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n)$  denotes the largest (or one of the largest) and  $\min(a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n)$  the smallest (or one of the smallest) of the numbers  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$ .  $\max f(x)$  and  $\min f(x)$  have an analogous meaning for a real function defined on an interval  $a, b$ , provided  $f(x)$  assumes a maximum or a minimum on  $a, b$ . Otherwise we retain the same notation for the least upper bound and the greatest lower bound, respectively. Analogous notation is used in the case of functions of a complex variable.

$\operatorname{sgn} x$  denotes the signum (Kronecker) function:

$$\operatorname{sgn} x = \begin{cases} +1 & \text{for } x > 0 \\ 0 & \text{for } x = 0 \\ -1 & \text{for } x < 0. \end{cases}$$

$[x]$  denotes the greatest integer that is not greater than  $x$  ( $x-1 < [x] \leq x$ ). Square brackets are, however, also used instead of ordinary parentheses where there is no danger of confusion. (They are also used in a very special sense restricted to Part I, Chap. 1, § 5.)

$\bar{z}$  is the conjugate to the complex number  $z$ .

For the determinant with general term  $a_{\lambda,\mu}$ ,  $\lambda, \mu = 1, 2, \dots, n$ , we use the abbreviated notation

$$|a_{\lambda\mu}|_1^n \text{ or } |a_{\lambda\mu}|_{\lambda,\mu=1,2,\dots,n} \text{ or } |a_{\lambda 1}, a_{\lambda 2}, \dots, a_{\lambda n}|_1^n.$$

A non-empty connected open set (containing only interior points) is called a *region*. The closure of a region (the union of the open set and of its boundary) is called a *domain*. As this terminology is not the one most frequently used, we shall sometimes emphasize it by speaking of an "open region" and a "closed domain".

A *continuous curve* is defined as a single-valued continuous image of the interval  $0 \leq t \leq 1$ , i.e. as the set of points  $z = x + iy$ , where  $x = \varphi(t)$ ,  $y = \psi(t)$ , with  $\varphi(t)$  and  $\psi(t)$  both continuous functions on the interval  $0 \leq t \leq 1$ . The curve is *closed* if  $\varphi(0) = \varphi(1)$ ,  $\psi(0) = \psi(1)$ , and is *without double points* if  $\varphi(t_1) = \varphi(t_2)$ ,  $\psi(t_1) = \psi(t_2)$ ,  $t_1 < t_2$ , imply  $t_1 = 0$ ,  $t_2 = 1$ . A curve without double points is also called a *simple curve*. A simple, continuous curve that is not closed is often referred to as a *simple arc*.

A simple closed continuous curve (a *Jordan curve*) in the plane determines two regions of which it forms the common boundary.

The paths of integration of line integrals or complex integrals are assumed to be continuous and rectifiable.

$(a, b)$  denotes the open interval  $a < x < b$ ,  $[a, b)$  the half-open interval  $a \leq x < b$ ,  $(a, b]$  the half-open interval  $a < x \leq b$ ,  $[a, b]$  the closed interval  $a \leq x \leq b$ . When we do not need to distinguish between these four cases we use the term "interval  $a, b$ ".

"Iff" is used occasionally as an abbreviation for "if and only if".





# Problems



## Part Four. Functions of One Complex Variable

### Special Part

#### Chapter 1. Maximum Term and Central Index, Maximum Modulus and Number of Zeros

##### § 1. Analogy between $\mu(r)$ and $M(r)$ , $\nu(r)$ and $N(r)$

Let  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots$  be complex numbers not all zero. Let the power series

$$f(z) = a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^n + \dots$$

have radius of convergence  $R$ ,  $R > 0$ . If  $R = \infty$ ,  $f(z)$  is called an entire function. Let  $0 \leq r < R$ . Then the sequence

$$|a_0|, |a_1|r, |a_2|r^2, \dots, |a_n|r^n, \dots$$

tends to 0, and hence it contains a largest term, the *maximum term*, whose value is denoted by  $\mu(r)$ . Thus

$$|a_n|r^n \leq \mu(r)$$

for  $n=0, 1, 2, 3, \dots, r \geq 0$  [I, Ch. 3, § 3].

The *central index*  $\nu(r)$  is the value of  $n$  for which the maximum of  $|a_n|r^n$  is attained, so that  $\mu(r) = |a_{\nu(r)}|r^{\nu(r)}$ . If several of the numbers  $|a_n|r^n$  are equal to  $\mu(r)$ , then  $\nu(r)$  denotes the largest of the corresponding  $n$ .

The above applies for  $r > 0$ ; for  $r=0$  cf. 15.

Denote by  $M(r)$  the *maximum modulus* of the function  $f(z)$  on the circle  $|z|=r$ . Then  $M(r)$  is also the maximum of  $|f(z)|$  in the circular disc  $|z| \leq r$  [III 266]. We have

$$|a_n|r^n \leq M(r)$$

for  $n=0, 1, 2, \dots, r > 0$ . We have equality if and only if all terms of the sequence  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$  with the exception of  $a_n$  vanish [III 122].

The *number of zeros*  $N(r)$  is the number of zeros in the closed circular disc  $|z| \leq r$  counted with the proper multiplicity.

The above notation applies to the whole chapter.

1. Calculate  $\mu(r)$  and  $\nu(r)$  for the power series

$$1 + \frac{z}{1!} + \frac{z^2}{2!} + \dots + \frac{z^n}{n!} + \dots$$

2. Calculate  $M(r)$  and  $N(r)$  for

$$e^z = 1 + \frac{z}{1!} + \frac{z^2}{2!} + \dots + \frac{z^n}{n!} + \dots$$

3. Calculate  $\mu(r)$  and  $\nu(r)$  for

$$\frac{1}{1!} + \frac{z}{3!} + \frac{z^2}{5!} + \cdots + \frac{z^n}{(2n+1)!} + \cdots.$$

4. Calculate  $M(r)$  and  $N(r)$  for

$$\frac{\sin \sqrt{z}}{\sqrt{z}} = \frac{1}{1!} - \frac{z}{3!} + \frac{z^2}{5!} - \cdots + \frac{(-z)^n}{(2n+1)!} + \cdots.$$

5. Calculate  $\nu(r)$  for the geometric series

$$1 + z + z^2 + \cdots + z^n + \cdots.$$

6. Calculate  $N(r)$  for

$$1 + z + z^2 + \cdots + z^n + \cdots.$$

7. In the case of a polynomial of degree  $n$

$$a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \cdots + a_n z^n, \quad a_n \neq 0,$$

we have

$$\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \mu(r)}{\log r} = \lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \nu(r) = n.$$

8. In the case of a polynomial of degree  $n$

$$f(z) = a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \cdots + a_n z^n, \quad a_n \neq 0,$$

we have

$$\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log M(r)}{\log r} = \lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} N(r) = n.$$

9. In the case of a transcendental entire function the two limits in 7 are equal to  $\infty$ .

10. In the case of a transcendental entire function the first limit in 8 is equal to  $\infty$ , the second may be finite or  $\infty$ .

11. Denote by  $\mu_k(r)$  and  $\nu_k(r)$  the maximum term and the central index of the series

$$a_0 + a_1 z^k + a_2 z^{2k} + \cdots + a_n z^{nk} + \cdots, \quad k = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$

respectively. Express  $\mu_k(r)$ ,  $\nu_k(r)$  in terms of  $\mu_1(r)$ ,  $\nu_1(r)$ .

12. Denote by  $M_k(r)$  and  $N_k(r)$  the maximum modulus and the number of zeros of  $f(z^k)$  in the circle  $|z| \leq r$ ,  $k = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ . Express  $M_k(r)$ ,  $N_k(r)$  in terms of  $M_1(r)$ ,  $N_1(r)$ .

13. Calculate the limit  $\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\nu(r)}{\log \mu(r)}$  for the two power series

$$1 + \frac{z^2}{2!} + \frac{z^4}{4!} + \frac{z^6}{6!} + \cdots + \frac{z^{2n}}{(2n)!} + \cdots = \frac{e^z + e^{-z}}{2},$$

$$1 + \frac{2z^2}{2!} + \frac{2^3 z^4}{4!} + \frac{2^5 z^6}{6!} + \cdots + \frac{2^{2n-1} z^{2n}}{(2n)!} + \cdots = \left( \frac{e^z + e^{-z}}{2} \right)^2 = \frac{1}{2} + \frac{e^{2z} + e^{-2z}}{4}.$$

**14.** In contrast to the notation of **12**, we now denote by  $M_k(r)$  and  $N_k(r)$  the maximum modulus and the number of zeros of  $(f(z))^k$  in the circle  $|z| \leq r$   $k=1, 2, 3, \dots$  respectively. The quotient  $\frac{N_k(r)}{\log M_k(r)}$  is independent of  $k$ .

**15.** If  $a_0=a_1=\dots=a_{q-1}=0$ ,  $a_q \neq 0$ , let  $\nu(0)=q$ . The function  $\nu(r)$  is piecewise constant. It increases at its jump points by a positive integer and is *everywhere* continuous from the right [I **120**].

**16.** If  $a_0=a_1=\dots=a_{q-1}=0$ ,  $a_q \neq 0$ , then  $N(0)=q$ . The function  $N(r)$  is piecewise constant. It increases at its jump points by a positive integer and is *everywhere* continuous from the right.

**17.** If  $a_0=0$ ,  $0 < r_1 < r_2 < R$  then

$$\frac{\mu(r_2)}{\mu(r_1)} \geq \frac{r_2}{r_1}.$$

**18.** If  $f(0)=0$ ,  $0 < r_1 < r_2 < R$  then

$$\frac{M(r_2)}{M(r_1)} \geq \frac{r_2}{r_1}.$$

**19.** The function  $\eta = \log \mu(e^\xi)$  is represented in a rectangular coordinate system  $\xi, \eta$  by a curve which is non-decreasing and convex. [Consider the aggregate of the straight lines

$$\eta = \log |a_0|, \quad \eta = \xi + \log |a_1|, \quad \eta = 2\xi + \log |a_2|, \dots, \eta = n\xi + \log |a_n|, \dots,$$

omitting meaningless terms with  $a_n=0$ . How can  $\mu(r)$  and  $\nu(r)$  be interpreted in terms of this configuration?]

**20.** The function  $\eta = \log M(e^\xi)$  is represented in a rectangular coordinate system  $\xi, \eta$  by a curve which is always increasing and is strictly convex, apart from certain exceptional polynomials for which the curve degenerates into a straight line.

**21.** Let  $\alpha$  be fixed,  $0 < \alpha < 1$ . The quotient  $\mu(\alpha r)/\mu(r)$  is non-increasing with increasing  $r$ .

**22.** Let  $\alpha$  be fixed,  $0 < \alpha < 1$ . The quotient  $M(\alpha r)/M(r)$  is strictly decreasing with increasing  $r$ , apart from certain polynomials [20].

**23.** Let  $R=\infty$ . For fixed  $\alpha$ ,  $0 < \alpha < 1$ ,

$$\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\mu(\alpha r)}{\mu(r)} = 0,$$

if the power series does not terminate,  $=\alpha^n$  if the power series reduces to a polynomial of degree  $n$ .

**24.** Let  $f(z)$  be an entire function. For fixed  $\alpha$ ,  $0 < \alpha < 1$ ,

$$\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{M(\alpha r)}{M(r)} = 0,$$

if  $f(z)$  is transcendental,  $=\alpha^n$  if  $f(z)$  is rational of degree  $n$ .

We denote the jump points of the central index  $\nu(r)$ , ordered according to magnitude, by

$$\rho_1, \rho_2, \rho_3, \dots, \rho_n, \dots; \quad \rho_1 = \rho_2 = \dots = \rho_q = 0, \quad \rho_{q+1} > 0, \quad q \geq 0,$$

where a jump point is represented  $m$  times if the magnitude of the jump is  $m$ ; at the point  $r=0$  we regard  $\nu(0)$  as the jump [15]. This sequence may terminate after finitely many terms.

We denote the zeros of  $f(z)$ , ordered according to increasing absolute values, and for equal absolute values according to increasing arguments, by

$$w_1, w_2, w_3, \dots, w_n, \dots; \quad w_1 = w_2 = \dots = w_q = 0, \quad w_{q+1} \neq 0, \quad q \geq 0,$$

where a zero of multiplicity  $m$  is represented  $m$  times.

Let  $|w_n| = r_n$ ,  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ , where accordingly

$$r_1 \leq r_2 \leq r_3 \leq \dots \leq r_n \leq \dots$$

This sequence may terminate after finitely many terms.

This notation applies to the whole chapter.

**25.** If  $\rho_n < \rho_{n+1}$ , then in the half-closed interval  $[\rho_n, \rho_{n+1})$

$$\nu(r) = n.$$

**26.** If  $r_n < r_{n+1}$ , then in the half-closed interval  $[r_n, r_{n+1})$

$$N(r) = n.$$

**27.** Calculate the numbers  $\rho_n$  for the power series

$$1 + \frac{z}{1!} + \frac{z^2}{2!} + \dots + \frac{z^n}{n!} + \dots, \quad 1 + \frac{z}{3!} + \frac{z^2}{5!} + \dots + \frac{z^n}{(2n+1)!} + \dots,$$

$$1 + \frac{z^2}{2!} + \frac{z^4}{4!} + \dots + \frac{z^{2n}}{(2n)!} + \dots.$$

**28.** Calculate the numbers  $r_n$  for the functions

$$e^z + i, \quad \frac{\sin \sqrt{z}}{\sqrt{z}}, \quad \cos z.$$

**29.** If there exist infinitely many  $\rho_n$  then

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \rho_n = R.$$

**30.** If there exist infinitely many  $r_n$  then

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} r_n = R.$$

**31.** Let  $a_0 \neq 0$ . Then

$$\mu(r) = \frac{|a_0| r^n}{\rho_1 \rho_2 \dots \rho_n},$$

if  $\rho_n \leq r \leq \rho_{n+1}$ .

**32.** Let  $a_0 \neq 0$ . Then

$$M(r) \geq \frac{|f(0)| r^n}{r_1 r_2 \dots r_n}.$$

[III 120.] For which entire functions can the equality sign hold in this inequality?

**33.** Assuming that  $a_0 \neq 0$ , we have

$$\log \mu(r) - \log |a_0| = \int_0^r \frac{\nu(t)}{t} dt.$$



**34.** Assuming that  $a_0 \neq 0$ , we have

$$\log M(r) - \log |f(0)| \geq \int_0^r \frac{N(t)}{t} dt.$$

**35.** For an arbitrary entire function

$$\limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \nu(r)}{\log r} = \limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \log \mu(r)}{\log r}.$$

**36.** For an arbitrary entire function

$$\limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log N(r)}{\log r} \leq \limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \log M(r)}{\log r}.$$

**37.** Consider a power series which is convergent everywhere and let  $k > 0$ . The infinite series  $\sum_{n=q+1}^{\infty} \rho_n^{-k}$  and the infinite integral  $\int_1^{\infty} r^{-k-1} \log \mu(r) dr$  are either both convergent or both divergent.

**38.** Consider an entire function and let  $k > 0$ . If the infinite integral  $\int_1^{\infty} r^{-k-1} \log M(r) dr$  is convergent, then the infinite series  $\sum_{n=q+1}^{\infty} \rho_n^{-k}$  is also convergent (not vice versa!).

**39.** Consider a power series which is convergent in the interior of the unit circle, and let  $k > 0$ . The series  $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 - \rho_n)^{k+1}$  and the integral  $\int_0^1 (1-t)^{k-1} \log \mu(t) dt$  are either both convergent or both divergent.

**40.** Consider a function which is regular in the interior of the unit circle, and let  $k > 0$ . If the integral  $\int_0^1 (1-t)^{k-1} \log M(t) dt$  is convergent then the series  $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 - r_n)^{k+1}$  is also convergent.

## § 2. Further Results on $\mu(r)$ and $\nu(r)$

**41.** In a rectangular coordinate system mark the points

$$(0, -\log |a_0|), (1, -\log |a_1|), (2, -\log |a_2|), \dots, (n, -\log |a_n|), \dots$$

(omitting meaningless ones with  $a_n = 0$ ) and from each point draw a ray directed vertically upwards. The smallest convex region  $\mathfrak{R}$  which includes all these rays extends to infinity. Draw the supporting line with direction coefficient  $\log r$  (the straight line on which lies at least one boundary point and no interior point of  $\mathfrak{R}$  and which forms an angle with the positive real axis whose tangent is  $\log r$ ). Interpret in the resulting figure  $\log \mu(r)$ ,  $\nu(r)$ ,  $\log \rho_n$ .

**42.** If  $m$  is a positive integral value assumed by  $\nu(r)$ ,  $m > \nu(0)$ , then

$$\rho_m = \max \left( \left| \frac{a_0}{a_m} \right|^{\frac{1}{m}}, \left| \frac{a_1}{a_m} \right|^{\frac{1}{m-1}}, \dots, \left| \frac{a_{m-1}}{a_m} \right| \right).$$

**43.** Let the power series

$$a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^n + \dots$$

be such that each term in turn becomes the maximum term, i.e. to every index

$n=0, 1, 2, \dots$  there belongs at least one real number  $r, r>0$ , such that  $|a_n|r^n$  is not exceeded by any term. For this it is necessary and sufficient that

$$0 < \left| \frac{a_0}{a_1} \right| \leq \left| \frac{a_1}{a_2} \right| \leq \left| \frac{a_2}{a_3} \right| \leq \dots \leq \left| \frac{a_n}{a_{n+1}} \right| \leq \dots$$

[31, I 117.]

**44.** Let  $0 < \alpha < 1$ . The central index  $\nu(r)$  of the power series

$$1 + e^{\alpha-1} z + e^{\alpha-1} 2^\alpha z^2 + \dots + e^{\alpha-1} n^\alpha z^n + \dots$$

which is convergent for  $|z| < 1$  assumes in turn all the values  $0, 1, 2, 3, \dots$ . Its maximum term satisfies

$$\mu(r) \sim \exp \left( \frac{1-\alpha}{\alpha} \left( -\frac{1}{\log r} \right)^{\frac{\alpha}{1-\alpha}} \right),$$

as  $r$  tends to 1.

**45** (continued). As  $r$  tends to 1,

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} e^{\alpha-1} n^\alpha r^n \sim \frac{\sqrt{2\pi\alpha}}{1-\alpha} \left( \frac{\alpha}{1-\alpha} \right)^{\frac{1-\alpha}{\alpha}} \left( \log \mu(r) \right)^{\frac{1}{2} + \frac{1-\alpha}{\alpha}} \mu(r).$$

[Consider  $\int_0^{\infty} e^{\alpha-1} x^\alpha r^x dx$ ; II 208.]

**46.** Let  $\alpha > 0$ . Calculate  $\rho_1, \rho_2, \rho_3, \dots$  for the power series

$$1 + 1^{-\alpha} z + 2^{-2\alpha} z^2 + \dots + n^{-n\alpha} z^n + \dots$$

which is convergent for all finite  $z$ , and show that its maximum term satisfies

$$\mu(r) \sim \exp \left( \alpha e^{-1} r^{\frac{1}{\alpha}} \right)$$

as  $r$  tends to  $+\infty$ .

**47** (continued). For fixed  $\alpha, \alpha > 0$ , as  $r$  tends to  $+\infty$

$$1 + 1^{-\alpha} r + 2^{-2\alpha} r^2 + \dots + n^{-n\alpha} r^n + \dots \sim \frac{\sqrt{2\pi}}{\alpha} [\log \mu(r)]^{\frac{1}{2}} \mu(r).$$

[II 209.]

### § 3. Connection between $\mu(r)$ , $\nu(r)$ , $M(r)$ and $N(r)$

**48.** For an entire function  $f(z)$  let

$$\limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log M(r)}{r} = l.$$

The convergence of the series

$$f(z) + f'(z) + f''(z) + \dots = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{d^n f(z)}{dz^n}$$

is assured, excluded or undecided according as

$$l < 1, \quad l > 1 \quad \text{or} \quad l = 1.$$

**49.** For the Weierstrass  $\sigma(z)$  function, in the case when the period parallelogram is a square with sides of length 1,

$$N(r) \sim \pi r^2, \quad \log M(r) \sim \frac{\pi}{2} r^2,$$

as  $r$  tends to  $\infty$ . [Hille, Vol. II pp. 132–133 Hurwitz-Courant, pp. 174–175.]

**49.1.** There is an entire function for which

$$\rho_n = r_n - 1$$

for  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$  [I 50]. Construct an entire function for which

$$\rho_n = r_n + (-1)^{n-1}$$

for  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$

**50.** For the entire functions

$$\frac{\sin \sqrt{z}}{\sqrt{z}}, \quad \cos z, \quad \cos^2 z, \quad e^z + i, \quad e^z, \quad \sigma(z)$$

determine the limits of the quotients

$$\frac{r_n}{\rho_n}, \quad \frac{N(r)}{\nu(r)}, \quad \frac{N(r)}{\log M(r)}, \quad \frac{\nu(r)}{\log \mu(r)}, \quad \frac{M(r)}{\mu(r)\sqrt{\log \mu(r)}}, \quad \frac{\log N(r)}{\log r}$$

as  $r$  (or  $n$  in the first quotient) tends to infinity, and collect the results in a table. [For  $e^z$  the first and last quotients are meaningless, for  $\sigma(z)$  only the third and the last are to be determined under the assumption that the period parallelogram is a square. The last quotient gives the exponent of convergence of the zeros, II 149. Use 1–4, 13, 27, 28 and Stirling's formula for the asymptotic value of  $\mu(r)$ .]

**51.** For any entire function

$$\limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \log \mu(r)}{\log r} = \limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \log M(r)}{\log r}$$

(it is obvious that the inequality  $\leq$  holds). The common value of these two limits is called the *order* of the entire function.

**52.** The order of an entire function may also be defined as the exponent of convergence [I, Ch. 3, § 2] of the sequence  $\rho_1, \rho_2, \dots, \rho_n, \dots$

**53.** The order of an entire function  $f(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n z^n$  with positive coefficients  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots$  may also be defined as the following limit:

$$\limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log [rf'(r)f(r)^{-1}]}{\log r}$$

**54.** For entire functions of finite order we have the following result (stronger than 51):

$$\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log M(r)}{\log \mu(r)} = 1.$$

**55.** For transcendental entire functions the integral

$$\int_{t_0}^{\infty} \mu(t)[M(t)]^{-l} dt, \quad t_0 > 0.$$

is convergent for  $l > 1$ .

**56.** For any entire function, given any arbitrary  $\varepsilon$ ,  $\varepsilon > 0$ , there exist arbitrarily large values of  $r$  such that

$$M(r) < \mu(r) [\log \mu(r)]^{1+\varepsilon}. \quad [45, I \ 122.]$$

**57.** For an entire function of finite order  $\lambda$  we have the following result (stronger than **56**): Given any arbitrary  $\varepsilon$ ,  $\varepsilon > 0$ , there exist arbitrarily large values of  $r$  such that

$$M(r) < (\lambda + \varepsilon) \sqrt{2\pi \log \mu(r)} \mu(r). \quad [47, I \ 118.]$$

Let  $c$  be a constant,  $c \neq 0$ ,  $q$  an integer,  $q \geq 0$ , and  $w_1, w_2, w_3, \dots$  an infinite sequence of complex numbers

$$w_1 = w_2 = \dots = w_q = 0 < |w_{q+1}| \leq |w_{q+2}| \leq |w_{q+3}| \leq \dots,$$

such that

$$\frac{1}{|w_{q+1}|} + \frac{1}{|w_{q+2}|} + \frac{1}{|w_{q+3}|} + \dots$$

is convergent. An entire function of the form

$$cz^q \left(1 - \frac{z}{w_{q+1}}\right) \left(1 - \frac{z}{w_{q+2}}\right) \dots$$

is called a function of *genus zero*, [Titchmarsh p. 253, Hille Vol. II, p. 199]. As Hadamard has shown, every entire function of order  $< 1$  is of genus zero. (**36**, **58**, III **332** are important elements of a proof.)

**58.** The order of an entire function of genus zero is equal to the *exponent of convergence* of its zeros [Vol. I, pp. 25–26, Titchmarsh p. 250, Hille Vol. II, p. 188].

**59.** For an entire function of finite order  $\lambda$ ,  $\lambda > 0$ , whose central index has the jump-points  $\rho_1, \rho_2, \rho_3, \dots, \rho_n, \dots$  which are regularly spaced in the sense of II, Ch. 4, § 1, we have

$$\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\nu(r)}{\log \mu(r)} = \lambda. \quad [II \ 159.]$$

**60.** For entire functions of finite order  $\lambda$ ,  $\lambda > 0$ , without any special conditions of regularity we have

$$\liminf_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\nu(r)}{\log \mu(r)} \leq \lambda \leq \limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\nu(r)}{\log \mu(r)}. \quad [II \ 160.]$$

**61.** Let  $\lambda$  be the exponent of convergence of the sequence  $r_1, r_2, r_3, \dots, r_n, \dots$ , which is regularly spaced in the sense of II, Ch. 4, § 1, and let  $0 < \lambda < 1$ . For the entire function of genus zero

$$f(z) = \left(1 + \frac{z}{r_1}\right) \left(1 + \frac{z}{r_2}\right) \dots \left(1 + \frac{z}{r_n}\right) \dots$$

we have

$$\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log f(r e^{i\vartheta})}{N(r)} = \frac{e^{i\vartheta\lambda}\pi}{\sin \pi\lambda},$$

if  $\vartheta$  is a fixed number,  $-\pi < \vartheta < \pi$ . [II 159.]

**62.** For the entire function discussed in **61** we have, even without assuming the regular spacing of the sequence  $r_1, r_2, r_3, \dots, r_n, \dots$ ,

$$\limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{N(r)}{\log M(r)} \geq \frac{\sin \pi\lambda}{\pi}. \quad [\text{II } 161.]$$

**63.** For an entire function whose zeros have a finite exponent of convergence  $\lambda$

$$\liminf_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{N(r)}{\log M(r)} \leq \lambda. \quad [32.]$$

**64.** Let  $f(z)$  be an entire function and let  $\mathfrak{G}(r)$  and  $g(r)$  be defined as the geometric means of  $|f(z)|$  on the circle  $|z|=r$ , and in the circular disc  $|z| \leq r$ , respectively [III 121]. If the moduli of the zeros of  $f(z)$  are regularly spaced [II, Ch. 4, § 1], then

$$\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \left( \frac{g(r)}{\mathfrak{G}(r)} \right)^{\frac{1}{N(r)}} = e^{-\frac{1}{\lambda+2}},$$

where  $\lambda$ ,  $0 < \lambda < \infty$ , denotes the exponent of convergence of the zeros. For polynomials the above limit also exists and equals  $e^{-1/2}$ .

**65** (continued). Without assuming the regular spacing of the zeros we have

$$\liminf_{r \rightarrow \infty} \left( \frac{g(r)}{\mathfrak{G}(r)} \right)^{\frac{1}{N(r)}} \leq e^{-\frac{1}{\lambda+2}} \leq \limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \left( \frac{g(r)}{\mathfrak{G}(r)} \right)^{\frac{1}{N(r)}}.$$

**66.** Let  $f(z)$  be an entire function of finite order  $\lambda$  and  $\mathfrak{M}(r)$  and  $m(r)$  the arithmetic means of  $|f(z)|^2$  on the circle  $|z|=r$  and in the circular disc  $|z| \leq r$  respectively. Then

$$\liminf_{r \rightarrow \infty} \left( \frac{m(r)}{\mathfrak{M}(r)} \right)^{\frac{1}{\log r}} = e^{-\lambda}.$$

#### § 4. $\mu(r)$ and $M(r)$ under Special Regularity Assumptions

**67.** Let the entire function

$$f(z) = a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^n + \dots$$

satisfy the condition

$$\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} r^{-\alpha} \log M(r) = a,$$

where  $\alpha, a$  are positive constants. Prove that:

(1) If  $b > a$ , then for  $n$  sufficiently large

$$|a_n| < \left( \frac{\alpha b e}{n} \right)^{\frac{n}{\alpha}}.$$

(2) Let  $k$  and  $\varepsilon$  be fixed numbers,  $k$  real,  $0 < \varepsilon < 1$ . Then there exists a number  $\delta, \delta > 0$ , such that for  $r$  sufficiently large

$$\left( \sum_1^{\alpha ar^{\alpha(1-\varepsilon)}} + \sum_{\alpha ar^{\alpha(1+\varepsilon)}}^{\infty} \right) n^k |a_n| r^n < M(r) e^{-\delta r^{\alpha}}.$$

If the summation were extended from 0 to  $\infty$  without omission of the “center” and  $k=0$  the sum would be  $\geq M(r)$ . Thus the “center” of the series considerably outweighs the two “tails”. [(1) serves as a preparation for (2).]

**68.** If for an entire function any one of the three limiting relations

$$(1) \log M(r) \sim ar^{\alpha}, \quad (2) \log \mu(r) \sim ar^{\alpha}, \quad (3) \nu(r) \sim \alpha ar^{\alpha}$$

holds for  $r \rightarrow \infty$ , where  $a, \alpha$  are positive constants, then the other two also hold. [Formally, (3) follows from (2) by differentiating both sides of (2), cf. **33**.] Without any conditions of regularity **51**, **54**, **35** and **60** hold.

**69.** If the coefficients  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$  of the entire function  $f(z)$  considered in **67** are positive and satisfy the inequalities

$$a_0 \geq a_1 \geq a_2 \geq \dots \geq a_n \geq \dots,$$

then we can assert that

$$\log a_n \sim -\frac{n \log n}{\alpha}.$$

If they satisfy the inequalities

$$\frac{a_1}{a_0} \geq \frac{a_2}{a_1} \geq \frac{a_3}{a_2} \geq \dots \geq \frac{a_{n+1}}{a_n} \geq \dots,$$

then we can deduce the stronger result

$$\sqrt[n]{a_n} \sim \left( \frac{\alpha a e}{n} \right)^{\frac{1}{\alpha}}.$$

**70.** Add to the assumptions of **67** that  $a_n \geq 0$  for  $n=0, 1, 2, \dots$ . Then for fixed real  $k$

$$\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n^k a_n r^n}{(\alpha ar^{\alpha})^k f(r)} = 1.$$

**71.** Under the assumptions of **67**, **70** we can differentiate the limiting relation

$$\log f(r) \sim ar^{\alpha},$$

i.e. we can deduce from it

$$\frac{f'(r)}{f(r)} \sim \alpha ar^{\alpha-1}.$$

**72.** (Generalization of I **94**.) Let

$$b_0 + b_1 z + b_2 z^2 + \dots + b_n z^n + \dots = f(z)$$



be an everywhere convergent power series. From the three conditions

$$b_n > 0, \quad n=0, 1, 2, \dots; \quad \lim_{r \rightarrow +\infty} r^{-\beta} \log f(r) = b; \quad \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{a_n}{n^k b} = s$$

( $\beta, b$  positive,  $k$  and  $s$  arbitrary real constants) it follows that

$$\lim_{r \rightarrow +\infty} \frac{a_0 + a_1 r + a_2 r^2 + \dots + a_n r^n + \dots}{(\beta b r^\beta)^k f(r)} = s.$$

**73.** Show that for the *Bessel* function of order 0,  $J_0(z)$ , we have as  $r \rightarrow +\infty$

$$J_0(ir) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n! n!} \left(\frac{r}{2}\right)^{2n} \sim \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi r}} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{r^{2n}}{(2n)!} \sim \frac{e^r}{\sqrt{2\pi r}}. \quad [\text{II } 204.]$$

**74.** Let  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_p, b_1, b_2, \dots, b_q$  be real constants different from 0,  $-1, -2, -3, \dots$ , where  $p < q$ ,

$$P(z) = (z + a_1 - 1)(z + a_2 - 1) \dots (z + a_p - 1),$$

$$Q(z) = (z + b_1 - 1)(z + b_2 - 1) \dots (z + b_q - 1).$$

As  $r$  tends to infinity ( $r > 0$ ) the everywhere convergent power series

$$1 + \frac{P(1)}{Q(1)} r + \frac{P(1)P(2)}{Q(1)Q(2)} r^2 + \dots + \frac{P(1)P(2) \dots P(n)}{Q(1)Q(2) \dots Q(n)} r^n + \dots$$

$$\sim \frac{\Gamma(b_1)\Gamma(b_2) \dots \Gamma(b_q)}{\Gamma(a_1)\Gamma(a_2) \dots \Gamma(a_p)} (2\pi)^{\frac{1-l}{2}} l^{-\frac{1}{2}} r^{\frac{2\Delta+l+1}{2l}} e^{lr^{\frac{1}{l}}},$$

where we set  $l = q - p, \Delta = a_1 + a_2 + \dots + a_p - b_1 - b_2 - \dots - b_q$ . [Verify that from this **73** follows as a special case after a change of variables. Use as a “comparison series”

$$1 + \frac{l^n}{n!} r + \frac{l^{2n}}{(2n)!} r^2 + \dots + \frac{l^{nl}}{(nl)!} r^n + \dots \sim \frac{1}{l} e^{lr^{\frac{1}{l}}}.]$$

**75.** Obtain the asymptotic formula in **74**, without making use of **72**, by means of **I 94** and **II 207**.

**76.** Let all the coefficients  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots$  of the power series  $a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^n + \dots$  be positive and satisfy the condition

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} n \left( \frac{a_n^2}{a_{n-1} a_{n+1}} - 1 \right) = \frac{1}{\lambda}, \quad 0 < \lambda < \infty.$$

(It is satisfied for example by the power series in **74**.) Prove that

- (1) The series represents an entire function of order  $\lambda$ .
- (2) As  $r \rightarrow \infty$ ,  $\nu(r) \sim \lambda \log \mu(r)$ .
- (3) In a rectangular coordinate system the aggregate of points

$$\left( \frac{l}{\sqrt{\nu(r)}}, \frac{a_{\nu(r)+l} r^{\nu(r)+l}}{\mu(r)} \right), \quad l = -\nu(r), -\nu(r)+1, \dots, -1, 0, 1, 2, \dots$$

tends to the *Gaussian error curve*, i.e.

$$\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{a_{\nu(r)+l} r^{\nu(r)+l}}{\mu(r)} = e^{-\frac{x^2}{2\lambda}}, \quad \text{if} \quad \lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{l}{\sqrt{\nu(r)}} = x.$$

Draw the rectangles whose base is of length  $\nu(r)^{-1/2}$  and lies on the  $x$ -axis and whose upper edge is bisected by one of the points described in (3). Compare their total area with the area under the Gaussian error curve.

## Chapter 2. Schlicht Mappings

### § 1. Introductory Material

**77.** Let the polynomial

$$z + a_2 z^2 + a_3 z^3 + \dots + a_n z^n$$

be schlicht (univalent) in the unit circle  $|z| < 1$ . Then  $n|a_n| \leq 1$ .

**78.** Let the function  $w=f(z)$  effect a schlicht mapping of the unit circle  $|z| < 1$  onto a *region* (non-empty connected open set)  $\mathfrak{R}$  and let  $\varphi(w)$  be schlicht in  $\mathfrak{R}$ . Then  $\varphi[f(z)]$  is schlicht in  $|z| < 1$ .

**79.** Let the function  $f(z)$  be schlicht in the unit circle  $|z| < 1$  and let  $f(0)=0$ . Then the function

$$\varphi(z) = \sqrt{f(z^2)} = z \sqrt{\frac{f(z^2)}{z^2}},$$

with a fixed branch of the square root, is also schlicht in  $|z| < 1$ . A similar result holds for  $\sqrt[n]{f(z^n)}$ , where  $n$  is a positive integer.

**80.** The function  $\varphi(z)$  in **79** is the most general *odd* function that induces a schlicht mapping of the unit circle  $|z| < 1$ . More precisely: If  $\varphi(z)$  is an odd function schlicht for  $|z| < 1$ , then there exists a function  $f(z)$  which is schlicht for  $|z| < 1$  from which  $\varphi(z)$  is derived as in **79**.

**81.** Let the open circular disc  $\mathfrak{E}$  be mapped one-to-one and conformally onto the region  $\mathfrak{R}$ . In particular, let the concentric circular disc  $\mathfrak{c}$  contained in  $\mathfrak{E}$  be mapped onto the sub-region  $\mathfrak{r}$  of  $\mathfrak{R}$ . Denoting the respective areas by  $|\mathfrak{E}|$ ,  $|\mathfrak{R}|$ ,  $|\mathfrak{c}|$ ,  $|\mathfrak{r}|$ , we have

$$\frac{|\mathfrak{R}|}{|\mathfrak{r}|} \geq \frac{|\mathfrak{E}|}{|\mathfrak{c}|}.$$

We have equality if and only if the mapping is obtained by means of a linear entire function. [III 124.]

**82.** Let the open circular disc  $\mathfrak{E}$  be mapped one-to-one and conformally onto the region  $\mathfrak{R}$ . In particular let the center  $\mathfrak{c}$  of  $\mathfrak{E}$  be mapped into the point  $\mathfrak{r}$  of  $\mathfrak{R}$ . Denote by  $a^2$  the area enlargement ratio at  $\mathfrak{c}$  [Vol. I, p. 117]. Then we have (using the notation of **81**)

$$\frac{|\mathfrak{R}|}{|\mathfrak{E}|} \geq a^2.$$

We have equality if and only if the mapping is effected by means of a linear entire function (limiting case of 81).

**83.** Let the open annular region  $\mathfrak{A}$  between two concentric circles be mapped one-to-one and conformally onto the doubly connected region  $\mathfrak{G}$ . Let the smallest open circular disc which contains  $\mathfrak{A}$  be  $\mathfrak{C}$ . Those points of  $\mathfrak{C}$  not belonging to  $\mathfrak{A}$  form a closed circular disc  $c$ . Similarly let  $\mathfrak{R}$  be the smallest simply connected region containing  $\mathfrak{G}$ , and let  $\tau$  be the set of all points of  $\mathfrak{R}$  which do not belong to  $\mathfrak{G}$  ( $\tau$  is closed). Finally let a circle concentric with  $c$  and  $\mathfrak{C}$  contained in  $\mathfrak{A}$  and its image curve in  $\mathfrak{G}$  be traversed in the same sense. Then we have the relation between the areas

$$\frac{|\mathfrak{R}|}{|\tau|} \geq \frac{|\mathfrak{G}|}{|c|}.$$

We have equality if and only if the mapping is effected by means of a linear entire function. [Generalization of 81, not contained in it!]

## § 2. Uniqueness Theorems

**84.** A one-to-one conformal mapping which maps an open circular disc onto itself, with the center a fixed point, is a rotation. [82.]

**85.** Let two open annular regions each bounded by two concentric circles have the same outer boundary and be related by a one-to-one and conformal mapping. Also let the mapping be such that a circle of one region concentric with the boundary corresponds to a curve of the other region traversed in the same sense. Then the two annular regions are identical and the conformal mapping is a rotation. [83.]

**86.** There do not exist two distinct functions  $w=f(z)$  which map the unit circle  $|z| < 1$  in a schlicht manner onto a given region  $\mathfrak{R}$ , where the origin  $z=0$  is mapped onto a given point  $w=w_0$  of  $\mathfrak{R}$  and  $f'(0) > 0$ .

**87.** The only functions which map the unit circle  $|z| < 1$  in a schlicht manner onto itself are the bilinear functions  $e^{i\alpha} \frac{z-z_0}{1-\bar{z}_0 z}$ ,  $\alpha$  real,  $|z_0| < 1$ .

## § 3. Existence of the Mapping Function

**88.** In the mapping induced by the formula

$$\frac{a-z}{1-\bar{a}z} = \left( \frac{\sqrt{a}-\eta w}{1-\sqrt{a}\eta w} \right)^2,$$

to a point in the  $z$ -plane there correspond in general two points in the  $w$ -plane. Which  $z$ -points form an exception to this? [ $a=|a|e^{i\alpha}$ ,  $0 < |a| < 1$ ,  $\alpha$  real,  $|\eta|=1$  and  $\eta$  is determined in such a way that  $\frac{dz}{dw} > 0$  for  $w=0$ .] The mapping is *independent* of the (fixed) sign of  $\sqrt{a}$ .

**89.** Let  $\mathfrak{R}$  be a simply-connected region in the  $z$ -plane, which contains the point  $z=0$  and is contained in the circle  $|z| < 1$ . Let  $a$ ,  $|a| < 1$ , be the boundary

point of  $\Re$  closest to the point  $z=0$ . [If there are several such points, choose say the one of smallest argument,  $0 \leq \arg a < 2\pi$ .] By means of the mapping 88 there correspond to the region  $\Re$  two regions of the  $w$ -plane, of which one  $\Re^*$  contains the point  $w=0$  and the other  $\Re^{**}$  does not.  $\Re^*$  and  $\Re^{**}$  have no common points; however they have at least one common boundary point and both lie in the interior of the unit circle.

The region  $\Re^*$  determined in 89 will be termed in the sequel the *Koebe image region* of  $\Re$ . It is advantageous to interpret  $\Re$  and  $\Re^*$  as lying in the same plane.  $\Re$  and  $\Re^*$  correspond to each other in a one-to-one manner, preserving the origin and the directions at the origin. Both  $\Re$  and  $\Re^*$  form a proper sub-region of the unit circle.

**90.** Investigate the Koebe image region of the *slit region* which arises from the unit circle  $|z| < 1$  by deleting ("cutting along") the line segment  $a \leq z \leq 1$ ,  $0 < a < 1$ . In particular determine the boundary point which is nearest to the origin.

**91.** Investigate the Koebe image region of the circle  $|z| < a$ ,  $0 < a < 1$  and determine the boundary points which are nearest to and furthest from the origin.

**92.** Every point of the Koebe image region of  $\Re$  is at a greater distance from the origin than the corresponding point of  $\Re$ .

**93.** Let  $\Re_1$  be the Koebe image region of  $\Re$ ,  $\Re_2$  that of  $\Re_1$ ,  $\Re_3$  that of  $\Re_2$ , ... Denote by  $a, a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots$  the nearest point from the origin of  $\Re, \Re_1, \Re_2, \Re_3, \dots$  respectively. Then we have

$$|a| < |a_1| < |a_2| < |a_3| < \dots$$

**94 (continued).** By the Koebe mapping  $\Re$  is mapped one-to-one and conformally onto  $\Re_1$ ,  $\Re_1$  onto  $\Re_2$ , ...,  $\Re_{n-1}$  onto  $\Re_n$ . Let the resulting mapping of  $\Re$  onto  $\Re_n$  be expressed by the analytic function  $f_n(z)$  ( $z$  runs through the points of  $\Re$ ). Then  $f_n(0)=0$ ,  $0 < f'_n(0) < \frac{1}{|a|}$ . Express  $f'_n(0)$  in terms of  $a, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{n-1}$ .

**95.** Denoting by  $a, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots$  the points introduced in 93, prove by means of 94 that

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} |a_n| = 1.$$

**96. (Continuation of 93, 94.)** The limit  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} f_n(z) = f(z)$  exists at every point  $z$  of  $\Re$  and the convergence is uniform in every interior domain of  $\Re$ . The limit function  $f(z)$  maps  $\Re$  schlicht onto the interior of the unit circle. [III 258.]

#### § 4. The Inner and the Outer Radius. The Normed Mapping Function

In the sequel [97-163] let  $\Re$  be an arbitrary, simply-connected region in the  $z$ -plane having more than one boundary point, and let  $a$  be an arbitrary finite point of  $\Re$ . The infinite point may be an interior or a boundary point of  $\Re$ . We map  $\Re$  conformally and schlicht onto the interior of a circle in the  $w$ -plane, and

in such a manner that the point  $a$  goes over into the center of the circle and that the *enlargement ratio* [Vol. I, pp. 116–117] at  $a$  is equal to 1. The radius of this image circle is uniquely determined by the region  $\Re$  and the *central point*  $a$ . We term it the *inner radius* of  $\Re$  with respect to  $a$  and denote its length by  $r_a$ . There exists [96] a uniquely determined [86] function  $w=f(a; z)=f(z)$  which effects this mapping, i.e. which maps  $\Re$  schlicht onto the interior of the circle  $|w| < r_a$  and possesses in the neighbourhood of  $a$  a series expansion of the form

$$(*) \quad w=f(z)=z-a+c_2(z-a)^2+c_3(z-a)^3+\dots$$

We term  $(*)$  the *normed mapping function* associated with the *central point*  $a$ . We define the inner radius of a closed, multiple-point free, continuous curve  $L$  (with respect to a point lying in its interior) as the inner radius of the interior domain of  $L$ .

Let now  $\Re$  be a simply-connected region of the  $z$ -plane, containing the point at infinity  $z=\infty$ . The complement of  $\Re$  is then a closed domain  $\mathfrak{D}$  lying wholly in the finite part of the  $z$ -plane. We define the outer radius of  $\mathfrak{D}$  as follows: We map  $\Re$  conformally onto the exterior of a circle in the  $w$ -plane and in such a manner that the point  $z=\infty$  goes over into  $w=\infty$  and the absolute value of the derivative of the mapping function for  $z=\infty$  (the enlargement ratio at the point at infinity) is equal to 1. The radius of this circle is uniquely determined by the region  $\Re$ . We term it the *outer radius* of  $\mathfrak{D}$  and denote its length by  $\bar{r}$ . There exists a uniquely determined function  $w=f(z)$  which effects this mapping, i.e. that maps  $\Re$  schlicht onto the exterior of the circle  $|w| > \bar{r}$  and possesses in the neighbourhood of the point at infinity a series expansion of the form

$$(**) \quad w=f(z)=z+c_0+\frac{c_1}{z}+\frac{c_2}{z^2}+\dots+\frac{c_n}{z^n}+\dots$$

We term  $(**)$  the *normed mapping function* associated with the point at infinity as central point. By the outer radius of a continuous curve  $L$ , which may consist in part or even wholly of cuts, we mean the outer radius of the closed interior of  $L$ . The region previously denoted by  $\Re$  in this case is the exterior of  $L$ , or the whole plane cut along  $L$  if  $L$  is simply the arc of a curve.<sup>1</sup>

By the mapping of the interior (or exterior) of a simple closed continuous curve  $L$  onto the interior (exterior) of a circle, the *closed interior* (exterior) of  $L$  is made to correspond one-to-one and continuously to the closed interior (exterior) of the circle. (Cf. C. Carathéodory, Math. Ann. 73, pp. 314–320 (1913).)

**97.** Calculate the inner radius  $r_a$  and the outer radius  $\bar{r}$  of the circle  $|z|=\rho$ ,  $\rho>0$ ,  $|a|<\rho$ .

**98.** Calculate the inner radius  $r_a$  of the exterior of the circle  $|z|>\rho$ ,  $a$  finite,  $|a|>\rho$  and the limit  $\lim_{a\rightarrow\infty} r_a$ .

**99.** Calculate  $r_a$  for the sector  $0<\arg z<\vartheta_0$ ,  $0<\vartheta_0\leq 2\pi$ .

**100.** Under a similarity transformation  $z'=hz+k$  with an enlargement ratio  $|h|$  different from zero the inner and the outer radius are magnified in the ratio

<sup>1</sup> More precisely we mean here a continuous curve  $L$  with the following property: That simply connected part of the complement of  $L$  which contains the point at infinity (i.e.  $\Re$ ) has a boundary which coincides completely with  $L$ . Cf. e.g. 101, 105.

1:| $h$ |. I.e. if the region  $\Re$  goes over into  $\Re'$  and the finite image point  $a$  into  $a' = ha + k$  then between the inner radius  $r_{a'}$  of  $\Re'$  with respect to  $a'$  and the inner radius  $r_a$  of  $\Re$  with respect to  $a$  there exists the following relation:

$$r_{a'} = |h|r_a.$$

There is a similar relation for the outer radius.

**101.** The outer radius of a line segment of length  $l$  is

$$\bar{r} = \frac{l}{4}.$$

**102.** The outer radius of an ellipse whose axes are of length  $2a$  and  $2b$ , respectively, is

$$\bar{r} = \frac{2a+2b}{4}.$$

**103.** Calculate the inner radius of an open half-plane with respect to a point lying within it whose distance from the boundary is  $d$ .

**104.** Let  $r_a$  be the inner radius of a region  $\Re$  of the  $z$ -plane, and let the schlicht mapping

$$z' - b = \gamma(z - a) + \gamma_2(z - a)^2 + \dots$$

map  $\Re$  onto a region  $\Re'$  of the  $z'$ -plane. Denoting by  $r'_b$  the inner radius of the region  $\Re'$  with respect to the image point  $z' = b$ , we have

$$r'_b = |\gamma|r_a.$$

A similar result holds for the outer radius in the case of schlicht mappings of the form

$$z' = \gamma z + \gamma_0 + \frac{\gamma_1}{z} + \frac{\gamma_2}{z^2} + \dots$$

**105.** Calculate the outer radius  $\bar{r}$  of the curve which is formed by adding to the circle  $|z| = 1$  the two real line segments  $1 < z \leq a_1$ ,  $-a_2 \leq z < -1$ ,  $a_1 > 1$ ,  $a_2 > 1$ .

**106.** Calculate the inner radius of an infinite parallel strip of width  $D$  with respect to a point lying within it whose least distance from the boundary is  $d$ ,  $2d \leq D$ .

**107.** Let  $a$  be an arbitrary finite point of the region  $\Re$  in the  $z$ -plane. The rational linear transformation  $z' = \frac{1}{z-a}$  maps  $\Re$  into a region  $\Re'$  containing the point at infinity. The inner radius of  $\Re$  with respect to  $a$  is equal to the reciprocal of the outer radius of the complement of  $\Re'$ .

**108.** Consider the region  $\Re$  which is obtained from the unit circle  $|z| < 1$  by removing the two real line segments  $b_1 \leq z < 1$ ,  $-1 < z \leq -b_2$ ,  $0 < b_1 < 1$ ,  $0 < b_2 < 1$ . Calculate the inner radius of  $\Re$  with respect to the origin.

**109.** The inequalities

$$\vartheta_1 \leq \arg \frac{z-z_1}{z-z_2} \leq \vartheta_2, \quad 0 < \vartheta_1 \leq \vartheta_2 < 2\pi, \quad z_1 \neq z_2,$$

determine a domain  $\mathfrak{E}$  in the  $z$ -plane bounded by two circular arcs and with two corners at  $z_1$  and  $z_2$  at which the sides meet at an angle of  $\vartheta_2 - \vartheta_1$ . What is the outer radius of  $\mathfrak{E}$ ? Note the special cases  $\vartheta_1 + \vartheta_2 = 2\pi$ ;  $\vartheta_1 = \vartheta_2$ ;  $\vartheta_1 = \pi/2$ ,  $\vartheta_2 = \pi$ .

**110.** Let  $a$  and  $b$  be points of the region  $\mathfrak{R}$  and let  $f(z)$  denote the normed mapping function associated with the central point  $b$ . Then

$$r_a = \frac{r_b^2 - |f(a)|^2}{r_b |f'(a)|}.$$

**111.** Derive the normed mapping function of the whole plane slit along the real segment  $\frac{1}{2} \leq z < +\infty$  associated with the origin and investigate the variation of the inner radius  $r_a$  as  $a$  runs through the real values from  $-\infty$  to  $\frac{1}{2}$ .

**112.** Let  $L$  be an analytic curve (i.e. let the normed mapping function associated with an arbitrary interior point of  $L$  admit continuation across  $L$  and assume different values for distinct points of  $L$ ). If the central point  $a$  in the interior of  $L$  converges to a point of  $L$ , then the inner radius converges to 0.

**113.** Let  $a$  be a point of the region  $\mathfrak{R}$  such that at  $a$  we obtain a relative maximum of the inner radius  $r_a$ . Then the normed mapping function associated with  $a$

$$f(z) = z - a + c_2(z-a)^2 + c_3(z-a)^3 + \dots$$

is such that  $c_2 = 0$ .

**114.** What is the locus of those points  $a$  of the upper half-plane  $\Im z > 0$  with respect to which the inner radius  $r_a$  of  $\Im z > 0$  is constant?

**115.** Let  $\mathfrak{R}$  be a finite region in the  $z$ -plane,  $a$  an arbitrary point of  $\mathfrak{R}$ , and  $n$  a positive integer. By means of the transformation  $z' = \sqrt[n]{z-a}$  there corresponds to  $\mathfrak{R}$  a region  $\mathfrak{R}'$  “ $n$ -fold symmetric” with respect to the origin. A point  $z'$  belongs to  $\mathfrak{R}'$  if and only if  $z'^n + a$  is a point of  $\mathfrak{R}$ . Between the inner radii  $r_a$  of  $\mathfrak{R}$  with respect to  $a$  and  $r'_0$  of  $\mathfrak{R}'$  with respect to  $z'=0$  we have the relation

$$r'_0 = r_a^{\frac{1}{n}}.$$

A similar result holds for the outer radii in the case of the transformation  $z' = \sqrt[n]{z}$  if the origin belongs to the complement of  $\mathfrak{R}$ .

**116.** Let  $n$  be a positive integer. Cut the plane along the  $n$  rays

$$\sqrt[n]{\frac{1}{4}} \leq |z| < +\infty, \quad \arg z = \frac{2\pi\nu}{n}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n$$

and calculate  $r_a$  for the resulting slit region. To what limiting value does  $r_a$  tend when  $a$  approaches along the line segment  $0 \leq |z| < \sqrt[n]{\frac{1}{4}}$ ,  $\arg z = \frac{2\pi\nu}{n}$  the end point of the corresponding cut?

**117.** Calculate the outer radius of the slit region whose boundary consists of the two straight lines  $-\alpha \leq z \leq \alpha$ ,  $-\beta \leq iz \leq \beta$ ;  $\alpha > 0$ ,  $\beta > 0$ .

**118.** Let  $\mathfrak{R}$  be an arbitrary simply-connected region of the  $z$ -plane, and  $a$  a finite point of  $\mathfrak{R}$ . The normed mapping function  $f(z)$  associated with  $a$  and the inner radius  $r_a$  have the following minimum property: Of all the functions of the form

$$F(z) = z - a + d_2(z-a)^2 + d_3(z-a)^3 + \dots,$$

which are regular in  $\Re$ ,  $|f(z)|$  has the least maximum value in  $\Re$ . This “minimum maximorum” is equal to  $r_a$ . More precisely: If  $M$  is the supremum of  $|F(z)|$  in  $\Re$  then

$$M \geq r_a.$$

The equality sign occurs if and only if  $F(z) = f(z)$ .

A similar result is true if  $\Re$  contains the point at infinity for the mapping function associated with the infinite point as central point and for the outer radius of the complement of  $\Re$ . The circle mapping is characterized by a “maximum minimorum”.

**119.** Let  $\Re$  be a region symmetric with respect to the real axis,  $a$  real. Then the power series expansion of the normed mapping function associated with  $a$  in powers of  $z - a$  has only real coefficients. A similar result holds for the normed mapping function associated with the point at infinity as central point, if  $\Re$  contains the point at infinity.

**120.** Let  $\Re$  be a region which is symmetric with respect to the origin. Then the power series expansion of the normed mapping function associated with the origin contains only odd powers of  $z$ . A similar result holds for the normed mapping function associated with the point at infinity, if  $\Re$  contains the point at infinity.

## § 5. Relations between the Mappings of Different Domains

**121.** Let  $\Re^*$  be a proper sub-region of  $\Re$  and  $r_a$  and  $r_a^*$  the inner radii of  $\Re$  and  $\Re^*$  respectively, associated with the point  $a$  of  $\Re^*$ . Then

$$r_a^* < r_a.$$

A similar result holds for the outer radius.

**122.** Let  $\Re$  be an arbitrary region,  $a$  a finite point of  $\Re$ ,  $r$  the radius of the largest open circular region with center  $a$  contained in  $\Re$  and  $R$  the radius of the smallest open circular region with center  $a$  containing  $\Re$ . Then  $r > 0$ ,  $R \geq r$ ,  $R$  finite or infinite, and

$$r \leq r_a \leq R.$$

The equality sign holds only if  $\Re$  is an open circular region with center  $a$ .

**123.** Let the region  $\Re$  contain the point at infinity, and let  $\mathfrak{D}$  be the complement of  $\Re$ . We denote by  $r$  the radius of the largest closed circular region contained in  $\mathfrak{D}$  and by  $R$  the radius of the smallest closed circular region containing  $\mathfrak{D}$ . Then  $r \geq 0$ ,  $R \geq r$ ,  $R$  finite. Further

$$r \leq \bar{r} \leq R.$$

The equality sign holds only if  $\mathfrak{D}$  is a closed circular domain (closure of a non-empty connected open set).

**\*124.** Let  $l$  denote the length of a closed continuous curve  $L$  without double points. Then

$$2\pi r_a \leq l, \quad 2\pi \bar{r} \leq l,$$

where  $a$  denotes an arbitrary point in the interior of  $L$ ,  $r_a$  the corresponding inner radius of  $L$  and  $\bar{r}$  the outer radius of  $L$ . In both cases equality is attained only for a circle, and in the first case only for a circle with center  $a$ .



**124.1** Let  $l$  denote the length of the perimeter of an ellipse with unequal semi-axes  $a$  and  $b$ . Give two different proofs (with and without the use of conformal mapping) for the inequality

$$l > \pi(a+b).$$

(The right-hand side is a convenient approximation to  $l$  when  $a$  and  $b$  are nearly equal.)

**125.** Let the inner measure of the region  $\mathfrak{R}$  be  $|\mathfrak{R}|_i$ , and let  $a$  be an arbitrary finite point of  $\mathfrak{R}$ . Then

$$|\mathfrak{R}|_i \geq \pi r_a^2.$$

The equality sign holds only for the open disc  $|z-a| < r_a$ .

**126.** Let the complement  $\mathfrak{D}$  of the region  $\mathfrak{R}$  containing the point at infinity be of outer measure  $|\mathfrak{D}|_e$ . Then

$$|\mathfrak{D}|_e \leq \pi \bar{r}^2.$$

The equality sign holds only if  $\mathfrak{D}$  is a circular domain.

**127.** Let the outer radius and the inner radius (with respect to an arbitrary interior point  $a$ ) of a simple closed continuous curve  $L$  be  $\bar{r}$  and  $r_a$  respectively. Then

$$r_a \leq \bar{r}.$$

The equality sign holds if and only if  $L$  is a circle and  $a$  lies at the center of  $L$ .

**128.** Let  $L$  be a simple closed continuous curve containing the origin,  $\bar{r}$  the outer radius of  $L$  and  $r_0$  the inner radius of  $L$  associated with the origin. Let  $P(z)$  be a polynomial whose lowest order term is  $a_k z^k$  and whose highest order term is  $a_n z^n$ ,  $P(z) = a_k z^k + a_{k+1} z^{k+1} + \dots + a_n z^n$ , and let  $M$  denote the maximum of  $|P(z)|$ , as  $z$  describes the curve  $L$ . Then

$$M \geq |a_k| r_0^k, \quad M \geq |a_n| \bar{r}^n.$$

The equality sign holds only if  $L$  is a circle with center at the origin and the polynomial in question is a power of  $z$  multiplied by a constant.

**129.** Let the function  $f(z)$  be regular and have positive real part in the interior of the simple closed continuous curve  $L$ , and be continuous in the closed interior of  $L$ . If the real part of  $f(z)$  vanishes on an arc  $L'$  of  $L$  then the imaginary part of  $f(z)$  varies always in the same sense, namely monotonically decreasing as  $z$  describes the arc  $L'$  in the positive sense. [III 233.]

**130.** Map the strip  $0 < \Im z < D$  onto the circle  $|w| < 1$  in such a way that the point  $z=i$  corresponds to the center of the circle  $w=0$  ( $D > 1$ ). How large is the arc of the boundary of the circle  $|w|=1$  which in this mapping corresponds to the real axis  $\Im z=0$ ? (Obvious for  $D=2$  and  $D=\infty$ .) How does the arc in question vary as  $D$  increases?

**131.** Let two simple closed continuous curves  $L_1$  and  $L_2$  have a finite number of common arcs and let the interior of  $L_1$  be contained in the interior of  $L_2$ . ( $L_1$  consists of an even number of arcs which run alternately in the interior and on the boundary of the region enclosed by  $L_2$ .)

Map first the interior of  $L_1$  and then the interior of  $L_2$  onto the interior of one and the same circle, so that in both cases the same point  $O$  in the interior of  $L_1$

goes over into the center of the circle. The two mappings associate with the distinct segments of  $L_1$  and  $L_2$  well-defined circular arcs as their images. [Last remark preceding 97.]

Prove that the length of the image of any *common* arc of  $L_1$  and  $L_2$  will be smaller in the mapping of the smaller region (bounded by  $L_1$ ) than in the mapping of the larger region (bounded by  $L_2$ ). Example: 130. [129.]

132. Find an interpretation in electrostatics of 131.

133. Let two simple closed, continuous curves  $L_1$  and  $L_2$  have only finitely many common points, and let the two regions enclosed by them have a common region  $\mathfrak{E}$ . Denote by  $O$  a point of  $\mathfrak{E}$  and by  $\mathfrak{E}^*$  that connected part of  $\mathfrak{E}$  which contains  $O$ . Such arcs of  $L_1$  and  $L_2$  as belong to the boundary of  $\mathfrak{E}^*$  are termed "visible" from  $O$ , such arcs as do not belong to the boundary of  $\mathfrak{E}^*$  are termed "hidden" from  $O$ . (The terms "visible" and "hidden" have their usual meaning if  $L_1$  and  $L_2$  are *star-shaped* with respect to  $O$  [cf. III 109].)

Map first the interior of  $L_1$  and then the interior of  $L_2$  onto the interior of the unit circle, in both cases in such a manner that the center of the circle is the image of  $O$ . The images of the "visible" parts of  $L_1$  take up a larger percentage of the boundary of the circle than the images of the "hidden" parts of  $L_2$ . (To visualize this imagine  $L_2$  as a circle with centre  $O$ .) [131.]

134. Let  $\mathfrak{D}$  be a domain,  $\zeta$  an interior point of  $\mathfrak{D}$ , and  $\mathfrak{B}$  the set of the boundary points of  $\mathfrak{D}$  whose distance from  $\zeta$  is not greater than  $\rho$ . Let those arcs of the circle of radius  $\rho$  and with centre  $\zeta$  that do *not* belong to  $\mathfrak{D}$  have total length  $\rho\Omega$ .

Let the function  $f(z)$  be regular and single-valued in the interior of  $\mathfrak{D}$  and continuous on the boundary of  $\mathfrak{D}$ . Further, let  $|f(z)| \leq a$  at points of  $\mathfrak{B}$ ,  $|f(z)| < A$  at the remaining boundary points of  $\mathfrak{D}$ ,  $a < A$ . Then

$$|f(\zeta)| \leq a^{\frac{\Omega}{2\pi}} A^{1 - \frac{\Omega}{2\pi}}.$$

(Sharper than III 276.)

135. The simply connected region  $\mathfrak{R}_n$  lying in the  $z$ -plane is subject to the following conditions:

- (1)  $\mathfrak{R}_n$  is contained in the circle  $|z| < a$ ,  $a > 1$ .
- (2)  $\mathfrak{R}_n$  contains the circle  $|z| < 1$ .
- (3)  $\mathfrak{R}_n$  contains the arc determined by the relations

$$|z| = 1, \quad -\alpha_n < \arg z < \alpha_n, \quad 0 < \alpha_n < \pi.$$

(4) The arc on the periphery of the unit circle complementary to the arc in (3) for which

$$|z| = 1, \quad \alpha_n \leq \arg z \leq 2\pi - \alpha_n,$$

belongs to the boundary of  $\mathfrak{R}_n$ .

Let  $\mathfrak{R}_n$  be mapped one-to-one and conformally onto the unit circle by means of  $w = f_n(z)$ , and in such a manner that  $f_n(0) = 0$ ,  $f'_n(0) > 0$ .

If the unit circle is gradually cut off from the remaining part of  $\mathfrak{R}_n$  as  $n$  increases, i.e. if  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \alpha_n = 0$ , then for  $|z| < 1$

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} f_n(z) = z,$$

independently of the behaviour for large  $n$  of that remaining part of  $\mathfrak{R}_n$ . [Method III 335.]

## § 6. The Koebe Distortion Theorem and Related Topics

**136.** Let the function

$$w = g(z) = z + b_0 + \frac{b_1}{z} + \frac{b_2}{z^2} + \dots$$

be regular for  $|z| > 1$ , and map this region (the exterior of the unit circle) schlicht onto a region  $\mathfrak{R}$  containing the point at infinity. Then

$$|b_1|^2 + 2|b_2|^2 + 3|b_3|^2 + \dots \leq 1.$$

In particular  $|b_1| \leq 1$  and in this last inequality the equality sign holds if and only if  $\mathfrak{R}$  is the whole plane cut along a line segment of length 4.

**137** (continued). For  $|z| > 1$

$$|g'(z)| \leq \frac{1}{1 - \frac{1}{|z|^2}}.$$

The equality sign holds at the point  $\frac{\rho}{\varepsilon}$ ,  $|\varepsilon| = 1$ ,  $\rho > 1$ , if and only if  $g(z)$  has the form

$$g(z) = z + b_0 - \frac{1}{\varepsilon} \left( \rho - \frac{1}{\rho} \right) \frac{1}{\rho \varepsilon z - 1}.$$

What is the nature of the image region in this case?

In the case of the mapping of **136** all the curves in the  $w$ -plane which correspond to the concentric circles of radius  $> 1$  about the origin  $z=0$ , the so-called level curves (circle images), have the same conformal center of gravity  $b_0$  [III 129]. We call  $b_0$  the *conformal center of gravity* of the region  $\mathfrak{R}$ .

**138.** Let the simply connected region  $\mathfrak{R}$  contain the point at infinity and be symmetric with respect to a point  $P$ . Then  $P$  is the conformal center of gravity of  $\mathfrak{R}$ .

**139.** (Continuation of **136**.) If the region  $\mathfrak{R}$  does not contain the origin, then the conformal centre of gravity lies inside the circle of radius 2 centered at the origin, that is  $|b_0| \leq 2$ . The equality sign holds if and only if  $\mathfrak{R}$  is the whole plane cut along a straight line segment of length 4 starting from the origin. [Apply **136** to  $\sqrt{g(z^2)}$ .]

**140** (continued). The distance  $d$  of an arbitrary boundary point of  $\mathfrak{R}$  from the conformal center of gravity is at most 2. In fact  $d < 2$  except in the case of the particular mapping specified in **136**.

**141** (continued). The maximum distance  $D$  between the boundary points of  $\mathfrak{R}$  (diameter of the boundary of  $\mathfrak{R}$ ) lies between the limits 2 and 4, i.e.

$$2 \leq D \leq 4.$$

The equality sign holds for the lower estimate only if  $\mathfrak{R}$  is the exterior of a circle of radius 1, and for the upper estimate only if  $\mathfrak{R}$  is the slit region of **136**.

**142.** Of all continuous arcs which connect two fixed points the straight line has the smallest outer radius.

**143.** Let the region  $\mathfrak{R}$  in **136** have the origin as its conformal center of gravity. Then

$$|g(z)| \leq |z| + \frac{1}{|z|}, \quad |z| > 1.$$

The equality sign holds only for the mapping  $w = z + \frac{e^{i\alpha}}{z}$ ,  $\alpha$  real.

**144** (continued). By the mapping in question no point  $z$  can be displaced by more than  $\frac{3}{|z|}$  from its original position. I.e.

$$|g(z) - z| < \frac{3}{|z|}, \quad |z| > 1.$$

**145.** Investigate the displacement [144] for the mapping of the exterior of the unit circle onto a slit region of a particular kind, which is bounded by the *horseshoe-shaped* curve that consists of three straight line segments and connects the four points

$$a + i\delta, \quad -a + i\delta, \quad -a - i\delta, \quad a - i\delta$$

in that order;  $a > 0$ ,  $\delta > 0$ . Note especially the case where  $a$  tends to 2,  $\delta$  tends to 0, and show by means of this example that the constant 3 in **144** cannot be replaced by any smaller constant.

**146.** Let the function

$$f(z) = z + a_2 z^2 + a_3 z^3 + \dots$$

be regular and schlicht inside the unit circle  $|z| < 1$ . Then

$$|a_2| \leq 2.$$

The equality sign holds only for functions of the form

$$f(z) = \frac{z}{(1 + e^{i\alpha} z)^2}, \quad \alpha \text{ real. (111.)}$$

[Apply **139** to  $(f(z^{-1}))^{-1}$ .]

**147.** Let the function

$$w = f(z) = z + a_2 z^2 + a_3 z^3 + \dots$$

be schlicht in the interior of the circle  $|z| < R$ . If the image region  $\mathfrak{R}$  in the  $w$ -plane does not contain the point  $w = \infty$  then it completely contains the open circular disc  $|w| < \frac{R}{4}$ . In other words, if  $d$  denotes the least distance of the boundary of  $\mathfrak{R}$  from the origin  $z=0$ , then  $d \geq \frac{R}{4}$ . Moreover  $d > \frac{R}{4}$  unless  $\mathfrak{R}$  is the whole plane slit along the segment  $\arg w = \text{const.}$ ,  $\frac{R}{4} \leq |w| < +\infty$ . [Apply **146** to  $f(z)/[1 - h^{-1}f(z)]$  where  $h$  is a boundary point of  $\mathfrak{R}$ .]

**148.** We have the following refinement of **147**: The shortest boundary distance  $d$  satisfies the inequality

$$d \geq \frac{R}{|a_2| + 2}.$$

(Cf. **146**.) Equality sign as in **147**.

**149.** (Continuation of **147.**) We term the straight line connecting two boundary points of  $\Re$  a *principal chord* of  $\Re$  if it passes through the origin. Every principal chord of  $\Re$  has a length of at least  $R$ . The extreme case occurs if and only if  $\Re$  is the whole plane slit along the two straight line segments  $w = \pm |w| e^{i\alpha}$ ,  $\alpha$  real,  $\frac{R}{2} \leq |w| < +\infty$ . (**116.**)

**150.** (Continuation of **146.**) In the interior of the unit circle  $|z| < 1$  we have the inequality

$$\left| \frac{1-|z|^2}{2} \frac{f''(z)}{f'(z)} - z \right| \leq 2.$$

The equality sign holds only if the image region is the plane slit along a straight line. [Transform the unit circle into itself in such a manner that an arbitrary fixed point  $z_0$ ,  $|z_0| < 1$ , goes over into the origin and then apply **146.**]

**151.** (The Koebe distortion theorem.) Let the function

$$f(z) = z + a_2 z^2 + a_3 z^3 + \dots$$

be regular and schlicht inside the unit circle  $|z| < 1$ . Also let  $r$  be a positive number  $r < 1$ . Then in the circular domain  $|z| \leq r$  we have the inequalities

$$\frac{1-r}{(1+r)^3} \leq |f'(z)| \leq \frac{1+r}{(1-r)^3}.$$

The equality sign can occur only for the mappings

$$f(z) = \frac{z}{(1 + e^{i\alpha} z)^2}, \quad \alpha \text{ real},$$

[**150.**]

**152** (continued). In the circular disc  $|z| \leq r$  we have

$$\frac{r}{(1+r)^2} \leq |f(z)| \leq \frac{r}{(1-r)^2}.$$

The equality sign as in **151.**

**153.** We have the following refinement of **152**: For  $|z| \leq r$  we have

$$\frac{r}{1 + |a_2| r + r^2} \leq |f(z)| \leq \frac{r}{(1-r)^2}.$$

The equality sign as in **151.** (Generalization of **148.**) [Cf. solution **148**, also **143.**]

**154.** For odd functions  $f(z) = -f(-z)$  we can obtain the following refinement of **152**:

$$\frac{r}{1+r^2} \leq |f(z)| \leq \frac{r}{1-r^2}.$$

The equality sign holds only for  $f(z) = \frac{z}{1-z^2}$ .

**155** (continued). We have

$$\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} |f(r e^{i\theta})|^2 d\theta \leq \frac{r^2}{1-r^2}.$$

[The measure of the image of  $|z| \leq \rho < r$  is  $\leq \pi \max |f(z)|^2$ ,  $|z| \leq \rho$ ; III **128.**]

**156.** (Continuation of **152.**) Let  $n$  be a positive integer. There exists a function  $\omega_n(r)$  of  $n$  and  $r$  only,  $0 \leq r < 1$ , such that for *any* function  $f(z)$  of the type mentioned in **151** we have in the circular region  $|z| \leq r$  the inequality

$$|f^{(n)}(z)| \leq \omega_n(r).$$

**157** (continued). Let  $n$  be a positive integer,  $n \geq 2$ . There exists a constant  $\omega_n$  depending only on  $n$  such that for *any* function  $f(z)$  of the type mentioned in **151** we have the inequality

$$|a_n| \leq \omega_n.$$

Let  $\omega_n$  be the *smallest* constant of this kind. Then

$$\omega_n \leq \frac{1}{4} \frac{(n+1)^{n+1}}{(n-1)^{n-1}} \quad 1$$

**158** (continued). We have

$$\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} |f(re^{i\theta})| d\theta \leq \frac{r}{1-r} \quad [155.]$$

**159** (continued). We have (refinement of **157**)

$$n \leq \omega_n < en.$$

**160.** For functions

$$f(z) = z + a_2 z^2 + a_3 z^3 + \dots + a_n z^n + \dots,$$

which are schlicht and in absolute value less than  $M$  inside the unit circle  $|z| < 1$  the estimate of **146** can be refined as follows:  $M \geq 1$  ( $M=1$  only for  $f(z)=z$ ) and

$$|a_2| \leq 2 \left(1 - \frac{1}{M}\right).$$

When does the equality sign occur? [Apply **146** to  $\frac{f(z)}{[1 + e^{i\alpha} M^{-1} f(z)]^2}$ .]

**161.** Let the function

$$f(z) = z + a_2 z^2 + a_3 z^3 + \dots + a_n z^n + \dots$$

be regular inside the unit circle  $|z| < 1$  and map the unit circle onto a region which is *star-shaped* with respect to the origin [III **109**]. Then

$$|a_n| \leq n, \quad n=2, 3, 4, \dots$$

The equality sign holds if and only if

$$f(z) = \frac{z}{(1 - e^{i\alpha} z)^2}, \quad \alpha \text{ real.}$$

**162.** Let the function

$$f(z) = z + a_2 z^2 + a_3 z^3 + \dots + a_n z^n + \dots$$

---

<sup>1</sup> This bound is less than  $\frac{e^2}{4} n^2$ .

be regular inside the unit circle  $|z| < 1$  and map the unit circle onto a *convex* region [III 108]. Then

$$|a_n| \leq 1, \quad n=2, 3, 4, \dots$$

The equality sign holds if and only if

$$f(z) = \frac{z}{1 - e^{ia}z};$$

the image region in that case is a half-plane containing the origin, whose boundary line is at a distance  $\frac{1}{2}$  from the origin.

**163.** If the function  $f(z)$  is regular and schlicht inside the unit circle  $|z| < 1$ , then the image of the circular region  $|z| < r$  is a convex region provided  $r \leq 2 - \sqrt{3} = 0.26\dots$ . This number (the *curvature bound*) cannot be replaced by any smaller number.

## Chapter 3. Miscellaneous Problems

### § 1. Various Propositions

**164.** If the function  $f(z)$  is regular, single valued and *bounded* in the strip  $0 \leq \Re z \leq \pi$ , and vanishes there at the points  $z_1, z_2, z_3, \dots, z_n, \dots (z_n = x_n + iy_n)$  then either the series of positive terms

$$e^{-|y_1|} \sin x_1 + e^{-|y_2|} \sin x_2 + e^{-|y_3|} \sin x_3 + \dots + e^{-|y_n|} \sin x_n + \dots$$

is convergent, or  $f(z)$  is identically equal to 0. [III 297.]

**165.** Assume that the coefficient  $f_1(z)$  of the linear homogeneous differential equation

$$y^{(n)} + f_1(z)y^{(n-1)} + f_2(z)y^{(n-2)} + \dots + f_n(z)y = 0$$

is an entire function. The necessary and sufficient condition that the *general solution* of this differential equation be an entire function is that the remaining coefficients  $f_2(z), f_3(z), \dots, f_n(z)$  are also entire functions.

**166.** Let the function  $w = \varphi(z)$  be regular (possibly many-valued) in the annular region  $0 < |z| < \rho$ ,  $\rho > 0$ , and satisfy there identically an equation of the form

$$F_0(z)w^l + F_1(z)w^{l-1} + \dots + F_{l-1}(z)w + F_l(z) = 0,$$

where  $F_0(z), F_1(z), \dots, F_{l-1}(z), F_l(z)$  are regular in a neighbourhood of the point  $z=0$ . If there exists a power series  $c_0 + c_1z + c_2z^2 + \dots$  such that the function  $(\varphi(z) - c_0 - c_1z - c_2z^2 - \dots - c_{n-1}z^{n-1})z^{-n}$  remains bounded in the neighbourhood of  $z=0$  for infinitely many values of  $n$ , then  $\varphi(z)$  is regular in the neighbourhood of  $z=0$ , and we have  $\varphi(z) = c_0 + c_1z + c_2z^2 + \dots + c_nz^n + \dots$ .

**167.** Let the function  $f(z)$  be regular and single-valued for  $R \leq |z| < \infty$ ,  $R > 0$ . Then there exists an integer  $p \geq 0$ , an entire function  $G(z)$  and a power series

$$\psi(z) = \frac{c_{-1}}{z} + \frac{c_{-2}}{z^2} + \frac{c_{-3}}{z^3} + \dots,$$

convergent for  $|z| \geq R$ , such that for  $R \leq |z| < \infty$  we have

$$f(z) = z^{-p} G(z) e^{\psi(z)}.$$

If in the assumption as well as in the conclusion we replaced the inequality  $R \leq |z| < \infty$  by the inequality  $R < |z| < \infty$ , the theorem obtained would be invalid.

**168.** Let  $f(z) = f(x + iy)$  be a meromorphic periodic function of period  $2\pi$  that has in the strip  $0 \leq \Re z < 2\pi$  only a finite number of zeros and poles. Denote by  $M(y)$  the maximum and by  $\mu(y)$  the minimum of  $|f(x + iy)|$  for  $0 \leq x \leq 2\pi$ . If it is the case that

$$\limsup_{|y| \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \log M(y)}{|y|} < 1 \quad \text{or that} \quad \liminf_{|y| \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \log \mu(y)}{|y|} > -1,$$

then  $f(z)$  must be a rational function of  $e^{iz}$ .

**169.** Let  $f(z)$  be an analytic function,  $z = x + iy$ , and let the square of the absolute value of  $f(z)$

$$|f(z)|^2 = \varphi(x, y)$$

be an algebraic function of the real variables  $x$  and  $y$ . Then the function  $f(z)$  is itself an algebraic function of  $z$ .

**170.** There does not exist a function which is regular analytic along the real axis and which assumes for real values of the variable every value in the interior of a fixed circle. In brief: There does not exist an analytic *Peano-curve*.

**171.** Find, if possible,  $n + 1$  analytic functions  $f_1(z), f_2(z), \dots, f_n(z), f(z)$ , which differ from each other *not merely by constant factors*, are regular in a domain  $\mathfrak{D}$  and for which the relation

$$|f_1(z)| + |f_2(z)| + \dots + |f_n(z)| = |f(z)|$$

holds in  $\mathfrak{D}$ .

**172.** Find, if possible, two non-constant analytic functions  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$ , which are regular in a domain  $\mathfrak{D}$  and for which the relation

$$|g(z)| = \Re f(z)$$

holds in  $\mathfrak{D}$ . [III 58.]

**172.1** The modular graph [Vol. I, p.130] of an entire function  $g(z)$  is everywhere convex from below in just two cases: Either when

$$g(z) = (az + b)^n$$

or when

$$g(z) = e^{az+b},$$

where  $a$  and  $b$  are arbitrary complex numbers,  $n$  a non-negative integer. (See the definition preceding III 130.)

**173.** We say that two entire functions  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$  have the same  $a$ -points if the two functions

$$\frac{f(z)-a}{g(z)-a} \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{g(z)-a}{f(z)-a}$$



are both entire. Find two distinct entire functions, which have the same  $a$ -,  $b$ - and  $c$ -points. (Naturally we require  $b \neq c$ ,  $c \neq a$ ,  $a \neq b$ .)

**174.** Does there exist an entire function  $G(z)$  which satisfies the equations

$$G(0)=a_0, \quad G'(1)=a_1, \quad G''(2)=a_2, \quad \dots, \quad G^{(n)}(n)=a_n, \quad \dots$$

if the sequence of numbers  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$  is prescribed arbitrarily? [For the analogous interpolation problem for polynomials cf. VI 75, VI 76.]

**174.1.** Given the numbers

$$z_n; \quad m_n; \quad w_{n,0}, \quad w_{n,1}, \quad \dots, \quad w_{n,m_n-1}$$

for  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$  subject to the conditions:

$$z_k \neq z_l \quad \text{if } k \neq l,$$

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} |z_n| = \infty,$$

$m_n$  is a positive integer, however the  $w_{n,k}$  are unrestricted.

Then there exists an entire function such that

$$f^{(k)}(z_n) = k! w_{n,k}$$

for  $n=0, 1, 2, \dots$ ,  $0 \leq k < m_n$ .

[The condition prescribes the  $m_n$  initial terms of the expansion of  $f(z)$  about the point  $z_n$

$$f(z) = w_{n,0} + w_{n,1}(z - z_n) + \dots + w_{n,m_n-1}(z - z_n)^{m_n-1} + \dots$$

for  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ ]

**174.2.** Suppose that  $F(z)$  and  $G(z)$  are entire functions that have no common zeros. Then there exist two entire functions  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$  such that

$$F(z)f(z) + G(z)g(z) = 1.$$

## § 2. A Method of E. Landau

To deduce the theorem, that a function  $f(z)$ , which is regular and single-valued in a domain  $\Phi$ , assumes its maximum absolute value on the boundary  $L$  of the domain  $\Phi$ , directly from the *Cauchy* theorem

$$f(z) = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \oint_L \frac{f(\xi)}{\xi - z} d\xi, \quad \text{for } z \text{ in the interior of } L,$$

one may proceed as follows: Let  $|f(\xi)| \leq M$  on  $L$ , then we have

$$|f(z)| \leq \frac{M}{2\pi} \int_L \left| \frac{d\xi}{\xi - z} \right| = KM,$$

where the constant  $K$  depends only on the curve  $L$  and on the position of  $z$ , and is independent of the specific choice of the function  $f(z)$ . One may now improve this rough estimate by applying it to the function  $[f(z)]^n$ , where  $n$  is a positive integer, obtaining

$$|f(z)|^n \leq KM^n, \quad |f(z)| \leq K^{\frac{1}{n}} M$$

and then allowing  $n$  to tend to infinity. Then it follows that  $|f(z)| \leq M$ .

This interesting proof shows that a rough estimate may sometimes be transformed into a sharper estimate by making appropriate use of the generality for which the original estimate is valid. [E. Landau; cf. M. Riesz: *Acta Math.* Vol. 40, p. 340, footnote 1 (1916).]

**175.** Let  $f(z) = a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^n + \dots$  be regular for  $|z| < R$  and set  $\mathfrak{M}(r) = |a_0| + |a_1| r + |a_2| r^2 + \dots + |a_n| r^n + \dots$ . Then we have

$$M(r) \leq \mathfrak{M}(r) < \frac{r+\delta}{\delta} M(r+\delta), \quad \delta > 0, \quad r+\delta < R.$$

**176 (continued).** If  $\mathfrak{M}_n(r)$  is defined for the function  $[f(z)]^n$  in the same manner as  $\mathfrak{M}(r)$  for  $f(z)$ ,  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ , then we have

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} [\mathfrak{M}_n(r)]^{\frac{1}{n}} = M(r).$$

**177.** With the aid of II 123, obtain a new proof for the *Hadamard* three-circle theorem [III 304].

**178.** Prove the following generalization of 160: If  $\omega_n$  is defined as in 157, then under the assumptions of 160 we have the following estimate of the coefficients

$$|a_n| \leq \omega_n (1 - M^{1-n}).$$

**179.** Assume the *Bernstein* theorem for trigonometric polynomials [VI 82] in the following imprecise form: There exists an absolute constant  $K$ ,  $K > 0$  with the property that, if  $\varphi(\vartheta)$  denotes a trigonometric polynomial of  $n$ th order whose absolute value does not exceed 1, then we have

$$|\varphi'(\vartheta)| \leq n + K.$$

Find a method of deducing from this estimate the sharper estimate

$$|\varphi'(\vartheta)| \leq n.$$

### § 3. Rectilinear Approach to an Essential Singularity

**180.** There exist entire functions that increase arbitrarily rapidly as  $z \rightarrow \infty$  along a ray. More precisely: If  $\varphi(x)$  is an arbitrary, strictly positive, monotonically increasing function defined for  $x \geq 0$ , there exists an entire function  $g(z)$ , which assumes real values for real  $z$  and satisfies for  $x \geq 0$  the inequality  $g(x) > \varphi(x)$ . (III 290.)

**181.** There exist entire functions that tend to 0 along the positive real axis, but tend to  $\infty$  along any other ray emanating from the origin as  $z \rightarrow \infty$ . Can a rational entire function behave in this manner?

**182.** There exist transcendental entire functions that tend to  $\infty$  along every ray emanating from the origin. — Can this happen uniformly?

**183.** There exist entire functions that are real-valued along the positive real axis and along it tend to  $+\infty$  while tending to 0 along any other ray emanating from the origin. — Can an entire function of finite order behave in this fashion?

**184.** There exist not identically vanishing entire functions that tend to 0 along every ray emanating from the origin.

**185.** There exist entire functions that tend to  $+1$  along all rays running from the origin into the interior of the upper half-plane, and that tend to  $-1$  along all rays running from the origin into the interior of the lower half-plane. The convergence is in fact uniform in every sector  $\varepsilon < \arg z < \pi - \varepsilon$ , or  $-\pi + \varepsilon < \arg z < -\varepsilon$ , where  $\varepsilon > 0$ .

**186.** Let the whole plane be divided into  $n$  sectors by  $n$  rays emanating from the origin. There exists an entire function that tends in these sectors (more precisely, as in **185**) to  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  respectively, where  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  are arbitrarily assigned complex numbers.

**187.** Let the rays emanating from the origin be divided in any manner into two classes. Does there exist, corresponding to every such division, an entire function that tends to 0 along the rays of the first class, and that tends to  $\infty$  along the rays of the second class?

#### § 4. Asymptotic Values of Entire Functions

If an entire function  $g(z)$  which is not a constant tends to a limit  $a$  along a *continuous* curve going to infinity, the number  $a$  is called an *asymptotic value* of  $g(z)$ . For example, 0 is an asymptotic value of  $e^z$ .

**188.** The numbers 0 and  $\infty$  are the only asymptotic values of  $e^z$ .

**189.** The numbers  $\sqrt{\frac{\pi}{2}}, -\sqrt{\frac{\pi}{2}}$  and  $\infty$  are the only asymptotic values of the function  $\int_0^z e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} dx$ .

**190.** Let  $n$  be a positive integer. The integral function of order  $n$

$$z - \frac{z^{2n+1}}{3!(2n+1)} + \frac{z^{4n+1}}{5!(4n+1)} - \dots$$

has exactly  $2n$  distinct finite asymptotic values.

**191.** Let the sequence of positive numbers

$$a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_m, \dots$$

be chosen such that the series

$$g(z) = \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi}} \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} a_m \int_0^{z^{2^m}} e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} dx$$

converges uniformly in every finite domain of the  $z$ -plane and thus represents an entire function  $g(z)$ . [Set for example  $a_m = \exp(-m^{2^m})$ .]

Show that the set of asymptotic values of the entire function  $g(z)$  thus defined has the power of the continuum. More precisely: All numbers of the form

$$\sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \varepsilon_m a_m, \quad \varepsilon_m = +1 \quad \text{or} \quad -1,$$

are asymptotic values.

**192.** If an entire function converges to  $n$  distinct finite asymptotic values along  $n$  distinct rays emanating from the origin, then its order is not less than  $\frac{n}{2}$ .

**193.** For every entire function (that is not a constant) the number  $\infty$  is an asymptotic value.

**194.** The complex number  $a$  is called a *Picard exceptional value* of the transcendental entire function  $g(z)$  if the function  $g(z) - a$  has only a finite number of zeros. If a Picard exceptional value of the entire function  $g(z)$  exists, then it is an asymptotic value of the entire function  $g(z)$ .

### § 5. Further Applications of the Phragmén-Lindelöf Method

**195.** Let  $f(z)$  be a function that can be analytically continued everywhere in the annular region  $0 < |z| < 1$ . If in this process  $f(z)$  and all its derivatives  $f'(z)$ ,  $f''(z)$ , ... remain bounded, then  $f(z)$  is single-valued in this region and regular at the point  $z=0$ .

**196.** If  $g(z)$  is an entire function of genus 0 and  $\varepsilon$  is an arbitrary positive number, then we have

$$|g(z)| < e^{\varepsilon|z|}$$

on all circles with sufficiently large radii, and

$$|g(z)| > e^{-\varepsilon|z|}$$

on certain circles with arbitrarily large radii.

**197.** Let  $M(r)$  be the maximum and  $m(r)$  the minimum of the absolute value of an entire function on the circumference of the circle  $|z|=r$ . If

$$\limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \log M(r)}{\log r} = \lambda$$

and  $\lambda < \frac{1}{2}$ , then we have also

$$\limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \log m(r)}{\log r} = \lambda. \quad [196, \text{III } 332.]$$

**198.** Let  $\lambda_1, \lambda_2, \lambda_3, \dots, \lambda_n, \dots$  be distinct positive numbers such that the series

$$\frac{1}{\lambda_1} + \frac{1}{\lambda_2} + \frac{1}{\lambda_3} + \dots + \frac{1}{\lambda_n} + \dots$$

is divergent. If a function  $h(t)$  which is properly integrable over the interval  $0 \leq t \leq 1$  satisfies the condition

$$\int_0^1 t^{\lambda_n} h(t) dt = 0, \quad n = 1, 2, 3, \dots,$$

then  $h(t) = 0$  at every point of continuity  $t$ . (A generalization of II 139.) [ $\int_0^1 t^{\lambda} h(t) dt$  is an analytic function of  $\lambda$ , III 298.]

**199.** Let  $g(z)$  be a transcendental entire function of order  $\lambda < \frac{1}{2}$ . Let its coefficients be different from 0 and its zeros  $w_1, w_2, w_3, \dots, w_n, \dots$  be distinct,  $w_k \neq w_l$  for  $k \neq l$ . If a function  $h(t)$  which is defined and properly integrable over the interval  $0 \leq t \leq 1$  satisfies the condition

$$\int_0^1 g(w_n t) h(t) dt = 0, \quad n = 1, 2, 3, \dots,$$

then  $h(t) = 0$  at every point of continuity  $t$ . [II 139.]

**200.** Let  $g(z)$  be a transcendental entire function of genus 0 with all its zeros  $w_1, w_2, w_3, \dots, w_n, \dots$ , real and distinct. If a function  $h(t)$  defined and properly integrable in the interval  $0 \leq t \leq 1$  satisfies the condition

$$\int_0^1 g(w_n t) h(t) dt = 0, \quad n = 1, 2, 3, \dots,$$

then  $h(t) = 0$  at every point of continuity  $t$ . [We may, for example, set  $g(z) = J_0(\sqrt{z})$  or  $\cos \pi \sqrt{z}$ .]

**201.** Set

$$a_0 + \frac{a_1}{1!} z + \frac{a_2}{2!} z^2 + \dots + \frac{a_n}{n!} z^n + \dots = F(z).$$

Assume that there exist two positive constants  $\rho$  and  $M$  such that

(1) the sequence  $a_0, a_1 \rho^{-1}, a_2 \rho^{-2}, \dots, a_n \rho^{-n}, \dots$  is bounded, and

(2)  $|F(z)| \leq M$  for all real values of  $z$ .

Then we have for all real values  $z$  also

$$|F'(z)| \leq \rho M,$$

and equality holds only if  $F(z) = A \cos \rho z + B \sin \rho z$ , where  $A, B$  are constants. (A generalization of VI 82.) [III 165.]

**202** (continued). If  $d$  is the distance of the point  $z$  from the real axis ( $d = |\Im z|$ ), then

$$|F(z)| \leq M e^{\rho d}.$$

(Analogue of III 270.)

**203.** Let the entire function  $G(z)$  satisfy the same conditions as the function  $F(z)$  in **201**, and in addition let  $G(z)$  be an odd function,  $G(-z) = -G(z)$ . Then we have for real  $z$

$$\left| \frac{G(z)}{z} \right| \leq \rho M.$$

Equality holds only if  $G(z) = cM \sin \rho z$ ,  $|c| = 1$  and if  $z = 0$ . (Analogue of VI 81.) [III 166.]

**204** (continued). Deduce **201** from **203**.

**205.** Let  $f(z)$  be an entire function of order  $\lambda$ ,  $\lambda \geq \frac{1}{2}$ , that is bounded on the positive real axis. If  $\varepsilon$  denotes an arbitrary positive number, then as  $x$  tends to infinity through positive values we have

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow +\infty} x^{1-\lambda-\varepsilon} f'(x) = 0.$$

## § 6. Supplementary Problems

**\*206.** We assume that the sequence of complex numbers  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_k, \dots$  has the following three properties:

(1) The series

$$\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} z_k, \quad \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} z_k^2, \quad \dots, \quad \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} z_k^n$$

are convergent.

$$(2) |z_1| \geq |z_2| \geq \dots \geq |z_k| \geq \dots$$

(3) There exist two real numbers  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  such that

$$0 < \beta - \alpha < \frac{2\pi n}{n+1}, \quad \alpha \leq \arg z_k \leq \beta, \quad \text{for } k=1, 2, 3, \dots$$

Then  $|z_1|^n + |z_2|^n + \dots + |z_k|^n + \dots$  is convergent.

The conclusion holds under a wider assumption: The series listed in (1) need not be convergent; it is sufficient to assume that their partial sums are bounded. Yet the conclusion becomes invalid if we drop assumption (2) or if we require less than the first part of (3), namely that

$$0 < \beta - \alpha \leq \frac{2\pi n}{n+1}.$$

(Cf. III 36.)

**\*207.** (*Unitary transformations of analytic functions.*) The functions  $f_1(z), f_2(z), \dots, f_n(z); g_1(z), g_2(z), \dots, g_n(z)$  are regular analytic in a region of the  $z$ -plane where

$$|f_1(z)|^2 + |f_2(z)|^2 + \dots + |f_n(z)|^2 = |g_1(z)|^2 + |g_2(z)|^2 + \dots + |g_n(z)|^2.$$

If  $f_1(z), f_2(z), \dots, f_n(z)$  are linearly independent, then so also are  $g_1(z), g_2(z), \dots, g_n(z)$ , and

$$g_\nu(z) = c_{\nu 1} f_1(z) + c_{\nu 2} f_2(z) + \dots + c_{\nu n} f_n(z)$$

for  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, n$ ; the constants  $c_{\nu\lambda}$  form a unitary matrix.

**\*208.** (*On the concept of the order of an entire function.*) We consider the approximation of the entire function  $g(z)$  by polynomials. We define the integer

$$k = k(r, \alpha)$$

(termed the degree of approximation of the function  $g(z)$  on the circle  $|z|=r$  to accuracy  $\alpha$ ) as the degree of the polynomial  $P(z)$  of the *lowest possible degree* for which

$$\int_0^{2\pi} |g(re^{i\varphi}) - P(re^{i\varphi})|^2 d\varphi < \alpha^{-2} \int_0^{2\pi} |g(re^{i\varphi})|^2 d\varphi;$$

( $r > 0, \alpha > 1$ ). Then

$$\lim_{\alpha \rightarrow \infty} \frac{k \log k}{\log \alpha} = \lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log k}{\log r} = \rho,$$

where we keep  $r$  fixed when computing the first limit and  $\alpha$  fixed when computing the second limit;  $\rho$  is the order of  $g(z)$ .

(Cf. III 123. See 51 for the definition of order.)

**\*209.** (*On the values assumed by an entire function at the integers.*) Let  $g(z)$  be an entire function whose growth does not exceed the minimum type of order 1; that is,  $g(z) e^{-\epsilon|z|}$  remains bounded in the whole  $z$ -plane provided that  $\epsilon$  is a fixed positive number. Assume that the sequence

$$\dots, g(-n), \dots, g(-2), g(-1), g(0), g(1), g(2), \dots, g(n), \dots$$

is bounded. Then  $g(z)$  reduces to a constant.

(Cf. III 220 (4), III 254.)

**\*210.** (*Picard's theorem for matrices.*) We consider square matrices with  $n$  rows and  $n$  columns, and let capital letters denote such matrices. Let

$$g(z) = a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \cdots + a_n z^n + \cdots$$

be an entire function and  $Z$  a matrix. Then the series

$$g(Z) = a_0 + a_1 Z + a_2 Z^2 + \cdots + a_n Z^n + \cdots$$

converges to a well-defined matrix.

Given the matrix  $A$ , when does there exist a matrix  $Z$  such that

$$(*) \quad g(Z) = A ?$$

*Answer:* An entire function  $g(z)$  has 0 or 1 or 2 "exceptional values" in the following special sense: A solution of the equation  $(*)$  certainly exists if none of the characteristic roots of  $A$  coincides with an exceptional value of  $g(z)$ . On the other hand, the equation  $(*)$  has no solution for certain matrices  $A$  among whose characteristic roots there are exceptional values of  $g(z)$ .

For instance, the function  $e^z - z$  has no exceptional value,  $e^z$  has one, and  $\sin z$  has two exceptional values, and the equations

$$\sin \begin{pmatrix} z_{11} & z_{12} \\ z_{21} & z_{22} \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \sin \begin{pmatrix} z_{11} & z_{12} \\ z_{21} & z_{22} \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} -1 & -1 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix}$$

admit no solution.

**\*211.** (*Two power series of the same analytic function converging in complementary regions.*) Let  $f(z)$  be a single-valued analytic function which is regular everywhere including the point  $z = \infty$ , except at the point  $z = 1$ . In a neighborhood of the point  $z = 0$  it has the expansion

$$f(z) = a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \cdots + a_n z^n + \cdots,$$

and in a neighborhood of the point  $z = \infty$  the expansion

$$f(z) = b_0 + \frac{b_1}{z} + \frac{b_2}{z^2} + \cdots + \frac{b_n}{z^n} + \cdots.$$

If there exists a constant  $k$  such that both  $a_n n^{-k}$  and  $b_n n^{-k}$  are bounded ( $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ ), then  $f(z)$  is a rational function.

**\*212.** (*A fraction of the Fourier system of functions.*) Let the numbers  $a, b, m_1, m_2, m_3, \dots$  be real, and satisfy

$$0 < m_1 < m_2 < m_3 < \cdots,$$

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{n}{m_n} > \frac{b-a}{2\pi} > 0.$$

Furthermore, let  $f(x)$  be continuous in the interval  $[a, b]$ . Then it follows from

$$\int_a^b f(x) \cos m_n x \, dx = \int_a^b f(x) \sin m_n x \, dx = 0$$

for  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ , that  $f(x)$  vanishes identically. (A fraction of the whole system of Fourier functions is closed over the corresponding fraction of the whole interval.) (Cf. 198.)

## Part Five. The Location of Zeros

### Chapter 1. Rolle's Theorem and Descartes' Rule of Signs

#### § 1. Zeros of Functions, Changes of Sign of Sequences

We investigate in this chapter *real* functions of the real variable  $x$ . In particular we assume that the coefficients  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$  of the polynomials  $a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots + a_nx^n$  and of the power series  $a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots$  which we shall be considering are real. We assume further, unless the contrary is stated, that all functions are *analytic* in the corresponding intervals. The theorems, however, are changed only slightly or not at all if we introduce more general assumptions, e.g. the existence of derivatives up to some order. The zeros in the following are always to be counted according to their *multiplicity*.

We also investigate sequences of real numbers  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$ . These may have finitely or infinitely many terms and the order of the terms is significant. We term the subscript  $m$  an *index of change* if either

$$a_{m-1}a_m < 0, \quad m \geq 1$$

or

$$a_{m-1} = a_{m-2} = \dots = a_{m-k+1} = 0 \quad \text{and} \quad a_{m-k}a_m < 0,$$

$m \geq k \geq 2$ . In the first case  $a_{m-1}$  and  $a_m$ , and in the second case  $a_{m-k}$  and  $a_m$  constitute a *change of sign*. The number of changes of sign of a sequence (= the number of indices of change) is unchanged if the zero terms are deleted and the remaining terms are unaltered and their order preserved. The trivial case of the sequence in which all the terms are  $=0$  will tacitly be excluded. It has incidentally, according to the definition, no changes of sign.

1. The two sequences

$$a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n \quad \text{and} \quad a_n, a_{n-1}, a_{n-2}, \dots, a_0$$

have the same number of indices of change.

2. Omitting terms of a sequence does not increase the number of changes of sign.

3. Inserting zero terms into a sequence does not alter the number of changes of sign. Inserting into a sequence a new term next to an old term with which it agrees in sign again does not alter the number of changes of sign.

4. The sequence

$$a_0, a_0 + a_1, a_1 + a_2, \dots, a_{n-1} + a_n, a_n$$



has not more changes of sign than the sequence  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$ .

**5.** Let the infinite sequence  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots$  have only a finite number of changes of sign, and denote this number by  $C$ . The sequence

$$a_0, a_0 + a_1, a_0 + 2a_1 + a_2, \dots, a_0 + \binom{n}{1}a_1 + \binom{n}{2}a_2 + \dots + a_n, \dots$$

formed from it then has also only finitely many and in fact at most  $C$  changes of sign. [4.]

In a rectangular coordinate system mark the points  $(0, a_0), (1, a_1), (2, a_2), \dots, (n, a_n), \dots$  and join every two successive points by a straight line (whose horizontal projection thus must be  $=1$ ). In the resulting figure the indices of change of the sequence  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$  are quite evident. The zeros of a real analytic function  $f(x)$  are not quite so evident from the graph  $y=f(x)$ . E.g. a double zero cannot be immediately distinguished from a four-fold zero or a three-fold zero from a five-fold zero even in a very accurately drawn graph.

**6.** In an interval where  $\varphi(x) > 0$  the two functions  $f(x)$  and  $f(x)\varphi(x)$  have the same zeros.

**7.** If  $p_0 > 0, p_1 > 0, p_2 > 0, \dots$ , then the two sequences

$$a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots \quad \text{and} \quad a_0 p_0, a_1 p_1, a_2 p_2, \dots$$

have the same indices of change.

**8.** Let the values  $f(a)$  and  $f(b)$  be different from 0. The interval  $a < x < b$  contains an even or an odd number of zeros of  $f(x)$  according as  $f(a)$  and  $f(b)$  have the same or the opposite sign.

**9.** Let  $a_j$  and  $a_k$  be different from 0. The subsequence  $a_j, a_{j+1}, \dots, a_{k-1}, a_k$  has an even or an odd number of changes of sign according as  $a_j$  and  $a_k$  have the same or the opposite sign.

**10.** (*Rolle's Theorem.*) Let  $a$  and  $b$  be successive zeros of  $f(x)$  [ $f(a)=f(b)=0$ ,  $f(x) \neq 0$  for  $a < x < b$ ]. The derivative  $f'(x)$  has an odd number of zeros in the interval  $a < x < b$  (and thus at least one zero).

**11.** Let  $j+1$  and  $k+1$  be successive indices of change of the sequence  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$ . Then the sequence of differences

$$a_{j+1} - a_j, a_{j+2} - a_{j+1}, \dots, a_k - a_{k-1}, a_{k+1} - a_k$$

has an odd number of changes of sign (and thus at least one change of sign).

**12.** If  $f(x)$  has  $Z$  zeros in the interval  $a, b$ , then  $f'(x)$  has not fewer than  $Z-1$  zeros there. This is true whether the interval  $a, b$  is open, closed or half open; it may even reduce to a single point.

**13.** If the sequence

$$a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$$

has  $C$  indices of change, then the sequence

$$a_1 - a_0, a_2 - a_1, \dots, a_n - a_{n-1}$$

has not fewer than  $C-1$  indices of change.

**14.** If  $f(x)$  has  $Z$  zeros in the finite interval  $a < x < b$ , and if one of the two conditions

$$\operatorname{sgn} f(a) = \operatorname{sgn} f'(a) \neq 0, \quad \operatorname{sgn} f(b) = -\operatorname{sgn} f'(b) \neq 0$$

is satisfied, then  $f'(x)$  has not fewer than  $Z$  zeros in  $a, b$ . If both conditions are satisfied then  $f'(x)$  has not fewer than  $Z + 1$  zeros.

**15.** If the finite sequence

$$a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$$

has  $C$  changes of sign, then the sequence

$$a_0, a_1 - a_0, a_2 - a_1, \dots, a_n - a_{n-1}, -a_n$$

formed from it has not fewer than  $C + 1$  changes of sign. (With the exception of the obvious trivial case in which all the terms  $a_i$  of the sequence  $= 0$ .)

**16.** If  $\lim_{x \rightarrow +\infty} f(x) = 0$ , then  $f'(x)$  has not fewer zeros than  $f(x)$  in the interior of the interval  $a, +\infty$ . (A similar result to that for  $+\infty$  of course also holds for  $-\infty$ .)

**17.** If  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} a_n = 0$ , then the infinite sequence

$$a_0, a_1 - a_0, a_2 - a_1, \dots, a_n - a_{n-1}, \dots$$

has more changes of sign than the sequence

$$a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots$$

**18.** Let  $\alpha$  be real, and let  $f(x)$  have  $Z$  zeros in the interval  $0 < x < \infty$ . Then the function

$$\alpha f(x) + f'(x)$$

has at least  $Z - 1$  zeros there. Moreover it has at least  $Z$  zeros if the condition  $\lim_{x \rightarrow +\infty} e^{\alpha x} f(x) = 0$  is satisfied.

**19.** Let  $\alpha > 0$ , and let the infinite sequence  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots$  have  $C$  changes of sign. Then the sequence

$$\alpha a_0, \alpha a_1 - a_0, \alpha a_2 - a_1, \dots, \alpha a_n - a_{n-1}, \dots$$

has at least  $C$  changes of sign. Moreover it has at least  $C + 1$  changes of sign if the condition  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} a_n \alpha^n = 0$  is satisfied.

**20.** If the function  $f(x)$  has  $Z$  zeros in the interval  $0 < x < \infty$ , then the function  $\int_0^x f(t) dt$  has  $Z$  or fewer zeros there.

**21.** If the infinite sequence

$$a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots$$

has  $C$  changes of sign, then the sequence

$$a_0, a_0 + a_1, a_0 + a_1 + a_2, \dots, a_0 + a_1 + a_2 + \dots + a_n, \dots$$

has  $C$  or fewer changes of sign.

## § 2. Reversals of Sign of a Function

We say that the function  $f(x)$  is of *constant sign* in an interval in the following two cases: (1)  $f(x) \leq 0$  in the interval, (2)  $f(x) \geq 0$  in the interval. Assume that the interval  $a < x < b$  can be divided into  $R + 1$  sub-intervals such that

- (1)  $f(x)$  is not identically zero in any sub-interval,
- (2)  $f(x)$  is of constant sign in each sub-interval,
- (3)  $f(x)$  is of opposite sign in adjacent sub-intervals.

Under these three conditions we say that  $f(x)$  has  $R$  *reversals of sign* in the interval  $a < x < b$ . A zero of an analytic function does or does not induce a reversal of sign (is or is not a “crossing point”) according as the multiplicity of the zero is odd or even. However the concept “reversal of sign” can usefully be applied also to certain non-analytic functions.

**22.** Let the function  $f(x)$  be different from 0 and of constant sign both in a certain neighbourhood of the point  $a$  and in a certain neighbourhood of the point  $b$ . The interval  $a < x < b$  contains an even or an odd number of reversals of sign of the function  $f(x)$ , according as  $f(a)$  and  $f(b)$  have the same sign or opposite signs.

**23.** If the function  $f(x)$  has  $R$  reversals of sign in the interval  $0 < x < \infty$ , then the function  $\int_0^x f(t) dt$  has in this interval  $R$  or fewer reversals of sign.

**24.** If  $R$  is the number of reversals of sign and  $Z$  the number of zeros of  $f(x)$  in the same open interval, then  $Z - R$  is a non-negative even number.

**25.** If  $f(a) = f(b) = 0$  and  $f(x) \neq 0$  for  $a < x < b$ , then in the interval  $a < x < b$  there are an odd number of reversals of sign of the derivative  $f'(x)$ .

**26.** Let  $A_1, A_2, \dots, A_n$  be non-zero real numbers and let  $a_1 < a_2 < a_3 < \dots < a_n$ . One can prove in various cases that the rational function

$$f(x) = \frac{A_1}{x - a_1} + \frac{A_2}{x - a_2} + \dots + \frac{A_n}{x - a_n}$$

has only real zeros, in particular in the following cases:

- (1)  $A_1 > 0, A_2 > 0, \dots, A_{n-1} > 0$ ;
- (2)  $A_1 > 0, A_2 > 0, \dots, A_{k-1} > 0, A_{k+1} > 0, \dots, A_n > 0$ ,  
 $A_1 + A_2 + \dots + A_n < 0, 1 < k < n$ .

**27.** The trigonometric polynomial

$$f(x) = a_0 + a_1 \cos x + a_2 \cos 2x + \dots + a_n \cos nx$$

with real coefficients  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  has only real zeros if

$$|a_0| + |a_1| + |a_2| + \dots + |a_{n-1}| < a_n.$$

## § 3. First proof of Descartes' Rule of Signs

By the *changes of sign* and the *indices of change* of the polynomial

$$a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots + a_nx^n$$

or the power series

$$a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + a_3x^3 + \dots$$

we mean the changes of sign and indices of change of the finite or the infinite sequence of coefficients

$$a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n \quad \text{or} \quad a_0, a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots$$

respectively.

**28.** The polynomials  $P(x)$  and  $P(\alpha x)$  have the same number of changes of sign if  $\alpha$  is positive.

**29.** Denote the number of changes of sign of the polynomials

$$\begin{aligned} P(x) &= a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots + a_nx^n, \\ P(-x) &= a_0 - a_1x + a_2x^2 - \dots + (-1)^n a_nx^n \end{aligned}$$

by  $C^+$  and  $C^-$  respectively. We then have

$$C^+ + C^- \leq n.$$

**30.** Let  $\alpha > 0$ . Passing from the polynomial

$$a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots + a_nx^n$$

to the polynomial

$$\begin{aligned} (\alpha - x)(a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots + a_nx^n) \\ = \alpha a_0 + (\alpha a_1 - a_0)x + (\alpha a_2 - a_1)x^2 + \dots - a_nx^{n+1} \end{aligned}$$

the number of changes of sign increases; in fact it increases by an odd number. [For the case  $\alpha = 1$  cf. **15.**]

**31.** Let  $\alpha > 0$ . Passing from the power series

$$a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + a_3x^3 + \dots$$

to the power series

$$(\alpha - x)(a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots) = \alpha a_0 + (\alpha a_1 - a_0)x + (\alpha a_2 - a_1)x^2 + \dots$$

the number of changes of sign does not decrease. In fact it increases if the original series  $a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots$  converges for  $x = \alpha$ .

**32.** Let  $\alpha > 0$ . Passing from the power series

$$a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + a_3x^3 + \dots$$

to the power series

$$(\alpha + x)(a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots) = \alpha a_0 + (\alpha a_1 + a_0)x + (\alpha a_2 + a_1)x^2 + \dots$$

the number of changes of sign does not increase.

**33.** Passing from the power series

$$a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + a_3x^3 + \dots$$

to the power series

$$\frac{a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots}{1 - x} = a_0 + (a_0 + a_1)x + (a_0 + a_1 + a_2)x^2 + \dots$$

the number of changes of sign does not increase.

**34.** Let  $\alpha > 0$ . Passing from the power series

$$a_0 + \frac{a_1}{1!}x + \frac{a_2}{2!}x^2 + \frac{a_3}{3!}x^3 + \dots$$

to the power series

$$e^{ax} \left( a_0 + \frac{a_1}{1!}x + \frac{a_2}{2!}x^2 + \dots \right) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{a_0 a^n + \binom{n}{1} a_1 a^{n-1} + \dots + a_n}{n!} x^n$$

the number of changes of sign does not increase.

**35.** Let  $p_1, p_2, \dots, p_n$  be positive numbers. Set

$$a_0 + \frac{a_1 x}{p_1 - x} + \frac{a_2 x^2}{(p_1 - x)(p_2 - x)} + \dots + \frac{a_n x^n}{(p_1 - x)(p_2 - x) \dots (p_n - x)} \\ = A_0 + A_1 x + A_2 x^2 + \dots$$

(the power series expansion is convergent for sufficiently small values of  $x$ ). The number of changes of sign of the finite sequence  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  is not less than the number of changes of sign of the infinite sequence  $A_0, A_1, A_2, \dots$  [Mathematical induction, **31**.]

**36.** (*Descartes' rule of signs*.) Let  $Z$  be the number of positive zeros of the polynomial  $a_0 + a_1 x + a_2 x^2 + \dots + a_n x^n$  and  $C$  the number of changes of sign of the sequence of its coefficients. We then have

$$C - Z \geq 0 \quad [30.]$$

**37** (continued).  $C - Z$  is an even number.

**38.** Let the radius of convergence of the power series  $a_0 + a_1 x + a_2 x^2 + \dots$  be  $\rho$ , let the number of its zeros in the interval  $0 < x < \rho$  be  $Z$  and let the number of changes of sign in the sequence of its coefficients be  $C$ . Then

$$Z \leq C.$$

Hence, in particular: If  $C$  is finite then  $Z$  is also finite. [Besides **31**, the theory of functions of a complex variable must be used.]

**39.** The power series

$$2 - \frac{x}{1 \cdot 2} - \frac{x^2}{2 \cdot 3} - \frac{x^3}{3 \cdot 4} - \dots$$

has no zeros in its circle of convergence. (The sequence of its coefficients has one change of sign—**37** cannot be extended to power series without some essential additional condition.)

**40.** (Continuation of **38**.) If  $\rho = \infty$  or if  $\rho$  is finite and  $a_0 + a_1 \rho + a_2 \rho^2 + \dots$  is divergent, then, provided  $C$  is finite,  $C - Z$  is a non-negative even number.

**41.** Let the minimum of the real numbers  $\xi_1, \xi_2, \dots, \xi_n$  be denoted by  $\xi_\alpha$  and their maximum by  $\xi_\omega$ . The number of zeros of the polynomial

$$a_0 + a_1(x - \xi_1) + a_2(x - \xi_1)(x - \xi_2) + \dots + a_n(x - \xi_1)(x - \xi_2) \dots (x - \xi_n)$$

in the interval  $\xi_\omega < x < \infty$  is equal to, or less by an even number than, the number of changes of sign of the sequence

$$a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n,$$

and the number of zeros in the interval  $-\infty < x < \xi_\alpha$  is equal to, or less by an even number than, the number of changes of sign of the sequence

$$a_0, -a_1, a_2, -a_3, \dots, (-1)^n a_n.$$

(For  $\xi_1 = \xi_2 = \dots = \xi_n$  equivalent to **36, 37.**) [**35.**]

#### § 4. Applications of Descartes' Rule of Signs

**42.** Let  $\lambda$  be a positive proper fraction,  $n$  a positive integer. The transcendental equation

$$1 + \frac{x}{1!} + \frac{x^2}{2!} + \dots + \frac{x^n}{n!} = \lambda e^x$$

has a single positive root. This increases monotonically to infinity as  $n$  tends to infinity.

**43.** The function  $x^{-5} (e^{\frac{1}{x}} - 1)^{-1}$  of the positive variable  $x$  tends to 0 for  $x=0$  and for  $x=+\infty$  and between these values has a maximum and no minimum.

**43.1.** Let  $R(f)$  denote the number of reversals of sign of the function  $f(x)$  in  $(0, 1)$  and  $Z(K_n)$  the number of zeros of the polynomial  $K_n(x)$  (see introduction to II **144**) in  $(0, 1)$ . Prove that

$$Z(K_n) \leq R(f).$$

**44.** Let the radius of convergence of the power series  $a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots$  be  $\geq 1$ . The number of its zeros in the interval  $0 < x < 1$  does not exceed the number of changes of sign of the sequence

$$a_0, a_0 + a_1, a_0 + a_1 + a_2, \dots, a_0 + a_1 + \dots + a_n, \dots$$

**44.1.** Let  $C$  be the number of changes of sign of the finite sequence

$$a_0, a_0 + a_1, a_0 + a_1 + a_2, \dots, a_0 + a_1 + \dots + a_n,$$

set

$$P(x) = a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots + a_nx^n,$$

and assume that  $P(1)=0$ . Then  $P(x)$  has at most  $C+1$  positive zeros. Show also that the bound  $C+1$  can be attained.

**45.** Let  $\left(\frac{n}{p}\right)$  denote the *Legendre (Jacobi)* symbol, defined for  $p$  an odd prime and  $n$  any number not divisible by  $p$  as  $\left(\frac{n}{p}\right) = 1$  if  $n$  is a *quadratic residue* of  $p$  and  $\left(\frac{n}{p}\right) = -1$  if  $n$  is a *quadratic non-residue* of  $p$  (Hardy-Wright, p. 68). The equation

$$\left(\frac{1}{19}\right)x + \left(\frac{2}{19}\right)x^2 + \left(\frac{3}{19}\right)x^3 + \dots + \left(\frac{18}{19}\right)x^{18} = 0$$

has only one positive root, namely  $x=1$ . [The equation is reciprocal so that it is sufficient to investigate the zeros in the interval  $0 < x < 1$  with the aid of **44, 33.**]

**46.** The equation of degree 162

$$\left(\frac{1}{163}\right)x + \left(\frac{2}{163}\right)x^2 + \left(\frac{3}{163}\right)x^3 + \dots + \left(\frac{162}{163}\right)x^{162} = 0$$

has exactly 5 positive roots which are all simple. [Investigate the point  $x=0.7$ .]

**47.** (Supplement to **36.**) If the polynomial  $a_0 + a_1x + \dots + a_nx^n$  has only real zeros, then  $Z = C$ .

**48.** Let  $\nu_1, \nu_2, \dots, \nu_n$  be integers,  $0 \leq \nu_1 < \nu_2 < \dots < \nu_n$ , and  $0 < \alpha_1 < \alpha_2 < \dots < \alpha_n$ . Then the determinant (a generalization of the *Vandermonde* determinant, which corresponds to the case  $\nu_1 = 0, \nu_2 = 1, \dots, \nu_n = n-1$ )

$$\begin{vmatrix} \alpha_1^{\nu_1} & \alpha_1^{\nu_2} & \dots & \alpha_1^{\nu_n} \\ \alpha_2^{\nu_1} & \alpha_2^{\nu_2} & \dots & \alpha_2^{\nu_n} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ \alpha_n^{\nu_1} & \alpha_n^{\nu_2} & \dots & \alpha_n^{\nu_n} \end{vmatrix} > 0.$$

[First prove that it is  $\neq 0$ , **36.**]

**49.** Let  $a_0 \neq 0, a_n \neq 0$ , and assume that  $2m$  consecutive coefficients of the polynomial  $a_0 + a_1x + \dots + a_nx^n$  vanish, where  $m$  is an integer,  $m \geq 1$ . Then the polynomial has at least  $2m$  non-real zeros.

**50.** Let the polynomial  $P(x)$  have only real zeros, and let  $P(0) = 1$  and  $P(x)$  not a constant. Set

$$\frac{1}{P(x)} = 1 + b_1x + b_2x^2 + \dots + b_nx^n + \dots$$

Then the polynomial  $1 + b_1x + \dots + b_{2m}x^{2m}$  has only non-real zeros. [**49.**]

**51.** Let  $m$  be an integer,  $m \geq 1$ , and

$$S(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n) = \sum x_1^{l_1} x_2^{l_2} \dots x_n^{l_n},$$

where the sum  $\sum$  is taken over all sets of non-negative integers  $l_1, l_2, \dots, l_n$  for which

$$l_1 + l_2 + \dots + l_n = 2m.$$

The homogeneous symmetric function  $S(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n)$  of the  $n$  real variables  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$  is positive definite, i.e.  $> 0$  for all sets of values of  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$  with the exception of the single set  $x_1 = 0, x_2 = 0, \dots, x_n = 0$ .

**52.** Let the polynomial  $P(x) = x^n + \dots$  have only positive zeros. In the power series expansion

$$\frac{1}{P(x)} = \frac{1}{x^n} + \frac{B_n}{x^{n+1}} + \frac{B_{n+1}}{x^{n+2}} + \dots$$

all the coefficients  $B_n, B_{n+1}, \dots$  are positive.

## § 5. Applications of Rolle's Theorem

**53.** The derivative of a polynomial has not more non-real zeros than the polynomial itself.

**54.** Multiple zeros of the derivative of a polynomial with only real zeros are also multiple zeros of the polynomial itself.

**55.** If a polynomial has only real and simple zeros, then its higher derivatives have the same property, and moreover every zero of the  $(\nu+1)$ th derivative lies between two consecutive zeros of the  $\nu$ th.

**56.** The higher derivatives of the function  $(1+x^2)^{-1/2}$  have only real and simple zeros; moreover every zero of the  $\nu$ th derivative lies between two consecutive zeros of the  $(\nu+1)$ th.

**57.** The higher derivatives of the function  $x(1+x^2)^{-1}$  also have the properties described in **56**.

**58.** One may define the *Legendre*, the *Laguerre* and the *Hermite* polynomials by the formulae

$$P_n(x) = \frac{1}{2^n n!} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} (x^2-1)^n, \quad e^{-x} L_n(x) = \frac{1}{n!} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} e^{-x} x^n, \\ e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} H_n(x) = \frac{1}{n!} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}}$$

respectively [VI 84, VI 99, VI 100]. Deduce from this definition that these polynomials have only real and simple zeros, which lie in the interior of the intervals

$$(-1, +1), \quad (0, +\infty), \quad (-\infty, +\infty)$$

respectively. (VI 97, VI 99, VI 100.)

**59.** Let  $q$  be an integer,  $q \geq 2$ . Let

$$\frac{d^{n-1}}{dx^{n-1}} \left( \frac{x^{q-1}}{1+x^q} \right) = \frac{Q_n(x)}{(1+x^q)^n}, \quad \frac{d^n}{dx^n} e^{-x^q} = e^{-x^q} R_n(x).$$

In the complex plane draw  $q$  rays from the origin which divide the plane into equal sectors. Let one of these rays be the positive real axis. Show that the zeros of the polynomials  $Q_n(x)$ ,  $R_n(x)$  lie on these  $q$  rays and are arranged in the same way on each ray and finally that those which are  $\neq 0$  are simple. (The special case  $q=2$  is already covered by **57**, **58**.)

**60.** Let  $\mu, \nu$  be integers satisfying  $0 \leq \mu < \mu + \nu \leq n$ . None of the polynomials

$$a_\mu + \binom{\nu}{1} a_{\mu+1} x + \binom{\nu}{2} a_{\mu+2} x^2 + \cdots + \binom{\nu}{\nu-1} a_{\mu+\nu-1} x^{\nu-1} + a_{\mu+\nu} x^\nu$$

has more nonreal zeros than the polynomial

$$a_0 + \binom{n}{1} a_1 x + \binom{n}{2} a_2 x^2 + \cdots + \binom{n}{n-1} a_{n-1} x^{n-1} + a_n x^n.$$

(Generalization of **53**.)

**61.** Let  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  be positive numbers which are not all equal. Let

$$(x+a_1)(x+a_2) \cdots (x+a_n) = x^n + \binom{n}{1} m_1 x^{n-1} + \binom{n}{2} m_2^2 x^{n-2} + \cdots + m_n^n.$$

The numbers  $m_1, m_2, \dots, m_n$  are to be determined by taking the appropriate roots and are to be chosen positive.  $m_1$  is the arithmetic mean and  $m_n$  the geometric mean of  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$ . Show that

$$m_1 > m_2 > m_3 > \cdots > m_{n-1} > m_n.$$

**62.** Let  $\alpha$  be real and  $P(x)$  a polynomial. The polynomial  $\alpha P(x) + P'(x)$  has not more non-real zeros than the polynomial  $P(x)$  itself. (Generalization of **53**.)

**62.1.** The polynomials

$$s_1^n x + s_2^n x^2 + s_3^n x^3 + \cdots + s_n^n x^n, \quad S_1^n x + S_2^n x^2 + S_3^n x^3 + \cdots + S_n^n x^n$$



have only real, non-positive, simple zeros. [See definitions in the introduction to I 197 and I 186, respectively.]

**63.** Assume that the equation

$$a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots + a_nx^n = 0$$

has only real roots. Then the polynomial

$$a_0P(x) + a_1P'(x) + \dots + a_nP^{(n)}(x)$$

has not more non-real zeros than the polynomial  $P(x)$  itself.

**64.**

$$P(x) - \frac{P''(x)}{1!} + \frac{P^{(IV)}(x)}{2!} - \frac{P^{(VI)}(x)}{3!} + \dots$$

has not more non-real zeros than the polynomial  $P(x)$  itself.

**65.** If the equation

$$a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots + a_nx^n = 0$$

has only real roots, then the following equation

$$a_0 + \frac{a_1}{1!}x + \frac{a_2}{2!}x^2 + \dots + \frac{a_n}{n!}x^n = 0$$

has also only real roots.

**65.1.** (Continuation of 63.) Assume further that  $a_0 \neq 0$  and consider the power series

$$\frac{1}{a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots + a_nx^n} = b_0 + b_1x + b_2x^2 + \dots$$

Then the polynomial

$$b_0P(x) + b_1P'(x) + b_2P''(x) + \dots + b_kP^{(k)}(x) + \dots$$

has not less non-real zeros than the polynomial  $P(x)$  itself.

**66.** Let  $P(x)$  be a polynomial of  $n$ th degree, and let the real number  $\alpha$  lie outside the interval  $[-n, 0]$ . Then  $\alpha P(x) + xP'(x)$  has not more non-real zeros than  $P(x)$ . (A generalization of 53 different from 60 and 62.)

**67.** Let  $Q(x)$  be a polynomial whose zeros are all real and lie outside the interval  $[0, n]$ . Then the equation

$$a_0Q(0) + a_1Q(1)x + a_2Q(2)x^2 + \dots + a_nQ(n)x^n = 0$$

has not more non-real roots than the equation

$$a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots + a_nx^n = 0.$$

**68.** Let  $0 < q < 1$ . The equation

$$a_0 + a_1qx + a_2q^4x^2 + \dots + a_nq^{n^2}x^n = 0$$

has not more non-real roots than the equation

$$a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots + a_nx^n = 0.$$

**69.** Let  $q > 0$ . The equation

$$2a_0 + (q + q^{-1})a_1x + (q^{\sqrt{2}} + q^{-\sqrt{2}})a_2x^2 + \cdots + (q^{\sqrt{n}} + q^{-\sqrt{n}})a_nx^n = 0$$

has not more non-real roots than the equation

$$a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \cdots + a_nx^n = 0.$$

**70.** If the curve  $y=f(x)$  meets a straight line in three distinct points, then between the outermost intersections there lies at least one point of inflection.

**71.** If a function coincides at  $n+1$  points with a polynomial of degree  $n-1$ , then its  $n$ th derivative vanishes at an intermediate point.

**72.** Let  $\alpha$  be a real constant, different from  $0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1$ . The difference

$$(1+x)^\alpha - \left(1 + \frac{\alpha}{1}x + \frac{\alpha(\alpha-1)}{1 \cdot 2}x^2 + \cdots + \frac{\alpha(\alpha-1)\cdots(\alpha-n+2)}{1 \cdot 2 \cdots (n-1)}x^{n-1}\right)$$

vanishes for  $x=0$ , but at no other point in the interval  $(-1, \infty)$ .

**73.** The remainder of the exponential series

$$\frac{x^n}{n!} + \frac{x^{n+1}}{(n+1)!} + \frac{x^{n+2}}{(n+2)!} + \cdots$$

vanishes for  $x=0$ , but for no other real value of  $x$ .

**74.** The  $n$ th partial sum of the exponential series

$$1 + \frac{x}{1!} + \frac{x^2}{2!} + \cdots + \frac{x^n}{n!}$$

has no real zero or one real zero according as  $n$  is even or odd.

**75.** Let the polynomials  $P_1(x), P_2(x), \dots, P_l(x)$  be  $\neq 0$  and of degree  $m_1-1, m_2-1, \dots, m_l-1$  respectively, and let the real constants  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_l$  be distinct. The function

$$g(x) = P_1(x)e^{a_1x} + P_2(x)e^{a_2x} + \cdots + P_l(x)e^{a_lx}$$

has at most  $m_1 + m_2 + \cdots + m_l - 1$  real zeros.

**76.** Let  $\alpha_1 < \alpha_2 < \cdots < \alpha_n, \beta_1 < \beta_2 < \cdots < \beta_n$ . Then the determinant

$$\begin{vmatrix} e^{\alpha_1\beta_1} & e^{\alpha_1\beta_2} & \cdots & e^{\alpha_1\beta_n} \\ e^{\alpha_2\beta_1} & e^{\alpha_2\beta_2} & \cdots & e^{\alpha_2\beta_n} \\ \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots \\ e^{\alpha_n\beta_1} & e^{\alpha_n\beta_2} & \cdots & e^{\alpha_n\beta_n} \end{vmatrix} > 0.$$

(Generalization of **48**.)

## § 6. Laguerre's Proof of Descartes' Rule of Signs

**77.** Let  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \lambda_1, \lambda_2, \dots, \lambda_n$  be real constants,  $\lambda_1 < \lambda_2 < \lambda_3 < \cdots < \lambda_n$ . Denote by  $Z$  the number of real zeros of the entire function

$$F(x) = a_1 e^{\lambda_1 x} + a_2 e^{\lambda_2 x} + \cdots + a_n e^{\lambda_n x}$$

and by  $C$  the number of changes of sign in the sequence of numbers  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$ .

Then  $C-Z$  is a non-negative even integer. (A generalization of **36**, **37** different from **41**: Replace  $e^x$  by  $x$ .)

*Proof.* We may assume without loss of generality that  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  are all different from 0. That  $C-Z$  is even is evident from the fact that as  $x \rightarrow -\infty$  the term  $a_1 e^{\lambda_1 x}$  is the dominant term, and as  $x \rightarrow +\infty$  the term  $a_n e^{\lambda_n x}$  is the dominant term. [**8**, **9**, **37**.] That  $C-Z \geq 0$  may be proved by mathematical induction; we deduce the relation for  $C$  from that for  $C-1$ , with the aid of Rolle's theorem [solution **75**]. Indeed, if there are *no* changes of sign, evidently  $Z$  is also  $=0$  and the statement holds. Assume that it holds in the case that there are  $C-1$  changes of sign.  $F(x)$  has  $C$  changes of sign,  $C \geq 1$ ; e.g. let  $\alpha+1$  be an index of change,  $1 \leq \alpha < n$ ,  $a_\alpha a_{\alpha+1} < 0$ . Choose a number  $\lambda$  in the interval  $\lambda_\alpha < \lambda < \lambda_{\alpha+1}$  and consider the function

$$\begin{aligned} F^*(x) &= e^{\lambda x} \frac{d[e^{-\lambda x} F(x)]}{dx} \\ &= a_1(\lambda_1 - \lambda) e^{\lambda_1 x} + \dots + a_\alpha(\lambda_\alpha - \lambda) e^{\lambda_\alpha x} \\ &\quad + a_{\alpha+1}(\lambda_{\alpha+1} - \lambda) e^{\lambda_{\alpha+1} x} + \dots + a_n(\lambda_n - \lambda) e^{\lambda_n x}. \end{aligned}$$

Let the number of zeros of  $F^*(x)$  be  $Z^*$ . We have [**6**, **12**]

$$Z^* \geq Z - 1.$$

Let the number of changes of sign of the sequence of coefficients

$$-a_1(\lambda - \lambda_1), \quad -a_2(\lambda - \lambda_2), \quad \dots, \quad -a_\alpha(\lambda - \lambda_\alpha), \\ a_{\alpha+1}(\lambda_{\alpha+1} - \lambda), \quad \dots, \quad a_n(\lambda_n - \lambda)$$

be  $C^*$ . Clearly

$$C^* = C - 1.$$

By the assumption of the mathematical induction argument we have

$$C^* \geq Z^*.$$

From the three relations above it follows that

$$C \geq Z,$$

q.e.d.—Was it necessary to assume from the outset that  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  are all  $\neq 0$ ? Could we not also have chosen  $\lambda = \lambda_\alpha$  or  $\lambda = \lambda_{\alpha+1}$ ?

**77.1.** The entire function

$$F(x) = \sum_{k=1}^n (-1)^{n-k} \binom{n}{k} k^x$$

has simple zeros at the points

$$x = 1, 2, 3, \dots, n-1$$

and no other real zeros. (Interpret  $k^x$  as  $e^{x \log k}$ , with the principal value of  $\log k$ .)

**78.** Let  $\lambda_1 < \lambda_2 < \lambda_3 < \dots$ ,  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \lambda_n = \infty$ . In the interior of its region of convergence (a half-plane bounded on the left), the *Dirichlet* series

$$a_1 e^{-\lambda_1 x} + a_2 e^{-\lambda_2 x} + \dots + a_n e^{-\lambda_n x} + \dots$$

has not more real zeros than the number of changes of sign of the sequence of coefficients  $a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots, a_n, \dots$  (Generalization of 38.)

**79.** Let  $m$  and  $n$  be integers and  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \lambda_1, \lambda_2, \dots, \lambda_n$  real numbers that satisfy the conditions

$$m \geq 1; \quad n \geq 2; \quad a_\nu \neq 0, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n; \quad \lambda_1 < \lambda_2 < \dots < \lambda_n.$$

Assume that the polynomial

$$P(x) = a_1(x - \lambda_1)^m + a_2(x - \lambda_2)^m + \dots + a_n(x - \lambda_n)^m$$

does not vanish identically. Show that the number  $Z$  of real zeros of  $P(x)$  does not exceed the number  $C$  of changes of sign of the sequence

$$a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots, a_{n-1}, a_n, (-1)^m a_1$$

[77, 14].

**80.** Denote the number of reversals of sign of the function  $\varphi(\lambda)$  in the interval  $0 < \lambda < \infty$  by  $R$ , and the number of real zeros of the integral

$$F(x) = \int_0^\infty \varphi(\lambda) e^{-\lambda x} d\lambda$$

by  $Z$ . Then we have  $Z \leq R$ .

In the number of zeros  $Z$  we naturally include only the zeros lying in the interior of the region of convergence (a half-plane bounded on the left). [Proof not by application of a limiting process to 77 but by appropriate translation of the proof of 77 to the present case!]

**81.** The integrals

$$\int_0^\infty f(x)x^n dx = M_n, \quad n = 0, 1, 2, 3, \dots,$$

assumed convergent, are called the *moments* of the function  $f(x)$ . Consider the case that not all the moments vanish [II 139, III 153]. Assume e.g.  $M_\mu \neq 0$  and set

- (1)  $a_n = M_n$  if  $M_n \neq 0$ ,
- (2)  $a_n = -\operatorname{sgn} a_{n+1}$  if  $M_n = 0$  and  $n < \mu$ ,
- (3)  $a_n = -\operatorname{sgn} a_{n-1}$  if  $M_n = 0$  and  $n > \mu$ .

(The  $a_n$  are defined by recursion; first of all the sign of  $a_\mu$  must be determined.) The number of reversals of sign of  $f(x)$  is not less than the number of changes of sign of the sequence  $a_0, a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots$  (II 140 is a special case.)

**82.** (Continuation of 80.) The number of positive zeros lying in the interior of the region of convergence does not exceed the number of reversals of sign of the function  $\Phi(\lambda) = \int_0^\lambda \varphi(x) dx$ . (Analogue of 44.)

**83.** (Continuation of 78.) The number of positive zeros lying in the interior of the region of convergence does not exceed the number of changes of sign of the sequence

$$a_1, a_1 + a_2, a_1 + a_2 + a_3, \dots$$

(Generalization of 44.) [80.]

**83.1.** Let  $C$  be the number of changes of sign of the finite sequence

$$a_1, a_1 + a_2, a_1 + a_2 + a_3, \dots, a_1 + a_2 + \dots + a_n,$$

$\lambda_i (i=1, 2, \dots, n)$  real numbers satisfying

$$\lambda_1 < \lambda_2 < \lambda_3 < \dots < \lambda_n,$$

and

$$D(x) = a_1 e^{-\lambda_1 x} + a_2 e^{-\lambda_2 x} + \dots + a_n e^{-\lambda_n x},$$

where we assume that  $D(0)=0$ . Then  $D(x)$  has at most  $C+1$  real zeros.

(Both the hypothesis and the conclusion are stronger than in **83**. Generalization of **44.1**.)

**84.** The number of positive zeros lying within the region of convergence of the factorial series

$$a_0 + \frac{1!a_1}{x} + \frac{2!a_2}{x(x+1)} + \frac{3!a_3}{x(x+1)(x+2)} + \dots$$

does not exceed the number of changes of sign of the sequence

$$a_0, a_0 + a_1, a_0 + a_1 + a_2, \dots$$

[It does not even exceed the number of zeros lying within the interval  $0 < x < 1$  of the power series

$$f(x) = a_0 + a_1 x + a_2 x^2 + \dots; \quad \textbf{80, 44.}]$$

**85.** Let the coefficients  $p_0, p_1, p_2, \dots$  of the non-terminating infinite series

$$F(x) = p_0 + p_1 x + p_2 x^2 + \dots$$

be non-negative, and let its radius of convergence be  $\rho$ . Let  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n$  be real and

$$0 < \alpha_1 < \alpha_2 < \alpha_3 < \dots < \alpha_n \leq 1.$$

The number of zeros of the function

$$a_1 F(\alpha_1 x) + a_2 F(\alpha_2 x) + \dots + a_n F(\alpha_n x)$$

in the interval  $0 < x < \rho$  is not larger than the number of changes of sign of the sequence

$$a_n, a_n + a_{n-1}, a_n + a_{n-1} + a_{n-2}, \dots, a_n + a_{n-1} + \dots + a_2 + a_1 \quad \textbf{[38, 83].}$$

**86 (continued).** If  $0 < \beta_1 < \beta_2 < \dots < \beta_n$  and  $\alpha_n \beta_n$  lies in the interior of the circle of convergence of  $F(x)$ , then the determinant

$$\begin{vmatrix} F(\alpha_1 \beta_1) & F(\alpha_1 \beta_2) & \dots & F(\alpha_1 \beta_n) \\ F(\alpha_2 \beta_1) & F(\alpha_2 \beta_2) & \dots & F(\alpha_2 \beta_n) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ F(\alpha_n \beta_1) & F(\alpha_n \beta_2) & \dots & F(\alpha_n \beta_n) \end{vmatrix} \neq 0.$$

(**76** readily follows from this.)

### § 7. What is the Basis of Descartes' Rule of Signs?

We see from **36, 41, 77, 84, 85** that the sequences of functions

$$\begin{array}{ccccccc} 1, & x, & x^2, & x^3, & \dots, \\ 1, & x - \xi_1, & (x - \xi_1)(x - \xi_2), & \dots, \\ e^{\lambda_1 x}, & e^{\lambda_2 x}, & e^{\lambda_3 x}, & \dots, \\ 1, & \frac{1}{x}, & \frac{1}{x(x+1)}, & \frac{1}{x(x+1)(x+2)}, & \dots, \\ F(\alpha_1 x), & F(\alpha_2 x), & F(\alpha_3 x), & \dots \end{array}$$

considered there have a common property: The number of zeros lying in a certain interval of their linear combinations with constant coefficients never exceeds the number of changes of sign of these coefficients. What is the basis for this frequent validity of Descartes' rule of signs?

**87.** Let the sequence of functions

$$h_1(x), h_2(x), h_3(x), \dots, h_n(x)$$

obey Descartes' rule of signs in the open interval  $a < x < b$ . More precisely: If  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  denote any real numbers which are not all zero, then the number of zeros lying in  $a < x < b$  of the linear combination

$$a_1 h_1(x) + a_2 h_2(x) + \dots + a_n h_n(x)$$

never exceeds the number of changes of sign of the sequence

$$a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n.$$

For this to hold, the following property of the sequence  $h_1(x), h_2(x), \dots, h_n(x)$  is a necessary condition: If  $\nu_1, \nu_2, \dots, \nu_l$  denote integers with  $1 \leq \nu_1 < \nu_2 < \nu_3 < \dots < \nu_l \leq n$ , then the Wronskian determinants [VII, §5]

$$W[h_{\nu_1}(x), h_{\nu_2}(x), h_{\nu_3}(x), \dots, h_{\nu_l}(x)]$$

do not vanish in the interval  $(a, b)$  and further any two Wronskian determinants with the same number  $l$  of rows have the same sign, where  $l = 1, 2, 3, \dots, n-1$ . [Look at multiple zeros!]

**88** (continued). In particular for the validity of Descartes' rule of signs it is necessary that in the interval  $a < x < b$  the quotients

$$\frac{h_2(x)}{h_1(x)}, \frac{h_3(x)}{h_2(x)}, \dots, \frac{h_n(x)}{h_{n-1}(x)}$$

are all positive and are either all monotonically decreasing or all monotonically increasing.

**89** (continued). Let  $1 \leq \alpha \leq n$ . If  $h_1(x), h_2(x), \dots, h_n(x)$  satisfy the determinantal conditions stated in **87**, then so do the  $n-1$  functions

$$\begin{array}{lll} H_1 = -\frac{d}{dx} \frac{h_1}{h_\alpha}, & H_2 = -\frac{d}{dx} \frac{h_2}{h_\alpha}, \dots, & H_{\alpha-1} = -\frac{d}{dx} \frac{h_{\alpha-1}}{h_\alpha}, \\ H_\alpha = \frac{d}{dx} \frac{h_{\alpha+1}}{h_\alpha}, \dots, & H_{n-2} = \frac{d}{dx} \frac{h_{n-1}}{h_\alpha}, & H_{n-1} = \frac{d}{dx} \frac{h_n}{h_\alpha}. \end{array}$$

[VII 58.]

**90** (continued). The criterion given in **87** as a necessary condition for the validity of Descartes' rule of signs is also a sufficient condition [77].

**91.** Verify that the criterion **87** is satisfied by the functions  $e^{\lambda_1 x}, e^{\lambda_2 x}, \dots, e^{\lambda_n x}$ , considered in **77**.

### § 8. Generalizations of Rolle's Theorem

**92.** Let  $0 < a < b$ . If  $f(x)$  vanishes at  $n+1$  points of the interval  $[a, b]$  and if all the zeros of the polynomial with real coefficients  $a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots + a_nx^n$  are real, then at an interior point  $\xi$  of  $[a, b]$

$$a_0f(\xi) + a_1f'(\xi) + a_2f''(\xi) + \dots + a_nf^{(n)}(\xi) = 0. \quad [63.]$$

**93.** (Generalization of Rolle's theorem to homogeneous linear differential expressions.) Let the differential equation of  $n$ th order

$$(*) \quad y^{(n)} + \varphi_1(x)y^{(n-1)} + \varphi_2(x)y^{(n-2)} + \dots + \varphi_n(x)y = 0$$

have  $n-1$  solutions  $h_1(x), h_2(x), \dots, h_{n-1}(x)$  such that, for  $a < x < b$ , we have

$$(**) \quad h_1(x) > 0, \quad \begin{vmatrix} h_1(x) & h_1'(x) \\ h_2(x) & h_2'(x) \end{vmatrix} > 0, \quad \dots, \quad \begin{vmatrix} h_1(x) & h_1'(x) & \dots & h_1^{(n-2)}(x) \\ h_2(x) & h_2'(x) & \dots & h_2^{(n-2)}(x) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ h_{n-1}(x) & h_{n-1}'(x) & \dots & h_{n-1}^{(n-2)}(x) \end{vmatrix} > 0.$$

If in the interval  $a < x < b$  there are  $n+1$  zeros of the function  $f(x)$ , then there is also a point  $\xi$  in the interval such that

$$f^{(n)}(\xi) + \varphi_1(\xi)f^{(n-1)}(\xi) + \varphi_2(\xi)f^{(n-2)}(\xi) + \dots + \varphi_n(\xi)f(\xi) = 0. \quad [VII \ 62.]$$

**94** (continued). The conclusion also holds if the assumption is replaced by the weaker assumption that  $f(x)$  has the same values at  $n+1$  points as a solution of the differential equation (\*). (A generalization of **71** where we are dealing with the equation  $y^{(n)} = 0$ .)

**94.1.** (An analogue of Rolle's theorem for a partial differential operator.) The closed curve  $\mathfrak{C}$  without double points is the boundary of the region  $\mathfrak{R}$ , a part of the  $x, y$ -plane. The function  $f(x, y)$  is continuous in the closure of  $\mathfrak{R}$  (the union of  $\mathfrak{R}$  and  $\mathfrak{C}$ ) and has continuous partial derivatives of the second order in  $\mathfrak{R}$ . If  $f(x, y)$  vanishes along  $\mathfrak{C}$  and also at some interior point of  $\mathfrak{R}$ , then there exists a point  $\xi, \eta$  in  $\mathfrak{R}$  at which

$$\frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y^2} = 0.$$

**95.** (Generalization of the mean-value theorem of differential calculus to a system of functions.) Let

$$x_1 < x_2 < x_3 < \dots < x_n.$$

The ratio of the two determinants

$$\frac{\begin{vmatrix} f_1(x_1) & f_1(x_2) & \dots & f_1(x_n) \\ f_2(x_1) & f_2(x_2) & \dots & f_2(x_n) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ f_n(x_1) & f_n(x_2) & \dots & f_n(x_n) \end{vmatrix}}{\begin{vmatrix} \varphi_1(x_1) & \varphi_1(x_2) & \dots & \varphi_1(x_n) \\ \varphi_2(x_1) & \varphi_2(x_2) & \dots & \varphi_2(x_n) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ \varphi_n(x_1) & \varphi_n(x_2) & \dots & \varphi_n(x_n) \end{vmatrix}}.$$

is equal to the ratio of the two determinants

$$\frac{\begin{vmatrix} f_1(\xi_1) & f_1'(\xi_2) & \dots & f_1^{(n-1)}(\xi_n) \\ f_2(\xi_1) & f_2'(\xi_2) & \dots & f_2^{(n-1)}(\xi_n) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ f_n(\xi_1) & f_n'(\xi_2) & \dots & f_n^{(n-1)}(\xi_n) \end{vmatrix}}{\begin{vmatrix} \varphi_1(\xi_1) & \varphi_1'(\xi_2) & \dots & \varphi_1^{(n-1)}(\xi_n) \\ \varphi_2(\xi_1) & \varphi_2'(\xi_2) & \dots & \varphi_2^{(n-1)}(\xi_n) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ \varphi_n(\xi_1) & \varphi_n'(\xi_2) & \dots & \varphi_n^{(n-1)}(\xi_n) \end{vmatrix}},$$

where  $\xi_1, \xi_2, \dots, \xi_n$  are suitably chosen intermediate points; in fact

$$\xi_1 = x_1, \quad \xi_1 < \xi_2 < x_2, \quad \xi_2 < \xi_3 < x_3, \quad \dots, \quad \xi_{n-1} < \xi_n < x_n.$$

**96.** Assuming  $x_1 < x_2 < x_3 < \dots < x_n$ , we have

$$\begin{vmatrix} f_1(x_1) & f_1(x_2) & \dots & f_1(x_n) \\ f_2(x_1) & f_2(x_2) & \dots & f_2(x_n) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ f_n(x_1) & f_n(x_2) & \dots & f_n(x_n) \end{vmatrix} \\ = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & \dots & 1 \\ \binom{x_1}{1} & \binom{x_2}{1} & \dots & \binom{x_n}{1} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ \binom{x_1}{n-1} & \binom{x_2}{n-1} & \dots & \binom{x_n}{n-1} \end{vmatrix} \cdot \begin{vmatrix} f_1(\xi_1) & f_1'(\xi_2) & \dots & f_1^{(n-1)}(\xi_n) \\ f_2(\xi_1) & f_2'(\xi_2) & \dots & f_2^{(n-1)}(\xi_n) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ f_n(\xi_1) & f_n'(\xi_2) & \dots & f_n^{(n-1)}(\xi_n) \end{vmatrix},$$

where the intermediate points  $\xi_1, \xi_2, \dots, \xi_n$  satisfy the inequalities given in **95**.

**97.**

$$\sum_{v=1}^n \frac{f(x_v)}{(x_v - x_1) \dots (x_v - x_{v-1})(x_v - x_{v+1}) \dots (x_v - x_n)} = \frac{f^{(n-1)}(\xi)}{(n-1)!},$$

where  $\xi$  is a suitable interior point of the smallest interval that contains the  $n$  distinct points  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$ .

**98.**

$$f(x+nh) - \binom{n}{1} f(x+(n-1)h) + \binom{n}{2} f(x+(n-2)h) - \dots \\ + (-1)^n f(x) = h^n f^{(n)}(\xi),$$

where either  $x < \xi < x+nh$  or  $x+nh < \xi < x$ . The special case  $n=1$  is the ordinary mean value theorem.

**99.** (A generalization of the mean-value theorem to systems of functions different from **95**.) Let the functions  $h_1(x), h_2(x), \dots, h_{n-1}(x)$  satisfy the inequalities (\*\*) of **93** and let the function  $f(x)$  be arbitrary. If  $x_1 < x_2 < x_3 < \dots < x_n$ , then there exists a number  $\xi$ ,  $x_1 < \xi < x_n$ , such that

$$\text{sgn} \begin{vmatrix} h_1(x_1) & h_1(x_2) & \dots & h_1(x_n) \\ h_2(x_1) & h_2(x_2) & \dots & h_2(x_n) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ h_{n-1}(x_1) & h_{n-1}(x_2) & \dots & h_{n-1}(x_n) \\ f(x_1) & f(x_2) & \dots & f(x_n) \end{vmatrix} = \text{sgn} \begin{vmatrix} h_1(\xi) & h_1'(\xi) & \dots & h_1^{(n-1)}(\xi) \\ h_2(\xi) & h_2'(\xi) & \dots & h_2^{(n-1)}(\xi) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ h_{n-1}(\xi) & h_{n-1}'(\xi) & \dots & h_{n-1}^{(n-1)}(\xi) \\ f(\xi) & f'(\xi) & \dots & f^{(n-1)}(\xi) \end{vmatrix}$$

[Mathematical induction; use **89**.]

**100.** Deduce **76** from **91**.



## Chapter 2. The Geometry of the Complex Plane and the Zeros of Polynomials

### § 1. Center of Gravity of a System of Points with respect to a Point

**101.** Let  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  be arbitrary points lying in the finite part of the complex plane and let  $m_1, m_2, \dots, m_n$  be non-negative masses whose sum is 1 which are placed at the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  respectively. In any linear transformation of the complex plane that carries the point at infinity into itself, the center of gravity  $\zeta$  of such a mass-distribution is mapped by the *same transformation*, i.e. if we again place the point mass  $m_\nu$  at the image-point  $z'_\nu$  of  $z_\nu$  ( $1 \leq \nu \leq n$ ), then the center of gravity  $\zeta'$  of this new mass distribution is identical with the image of the point  $\zeta$ .

In the sequel (**102–156**) we mean by a “point” of the complex plane an arbitrary finite point or the point at infinity, by a “circle” the circumference of a circle or a straight line—the latter passes through the point at infinity—and by a “circular domain” a domain whose boundary is a circle. A circular domain is either the closed interior or the closed exterior of a circle or a closed half-plane, according as it does not contain the point at infinity or contains it in its interior or on its boundary.

**102.** Let the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n, z$  and the masses  $m_1, m_2, \dots, m_n$  be given. Let  $z$  be different from all the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  while of the latter some may coincide. Let  $m_1 \geq 0, m_2 \geq 0, \dots, m_n \geq 0, m_1 + m_2 + \dots + m_n = 1$ .

Find a point  $\zeta$  situated in such a manner that, in a linear transformation of the plane that maps the  $n+2$  points

$$z_1, z_2, z_3, \dots, z_n; z; \zeta$$

into the points

$$z'_1, z'_2, z'_3, \dots, z'_n; \infty; \zeta'$$

respectively,  $\zeta'$  becomes the center of gravity of the mass-distribution determined by the masses  $m_\nu$  placed at the points  $z'_\nu$  ( $\nu = 1, 2, 3, \dots, n$ ).

There are infinitely many linear transformations that map  $z$  into  $\infty$ ; the point  $\zeta$  however is *independent* of the choice of the underlying transformation.

The point  $\zeta = \zeta_z$ , defined in **102**, which is determined uniquely by the system of points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$ , by the masses  $m_1, m_2, \dots, m_n, m_1 + m_2 + \dots + m_n = 1$ , placed there, and by the “point of reference”  $z$  which must be distinct from all the points  $z_\nu$ , is called the *center of gravity* of the mass distribution  $m_1, m_2, \dots, m_n$  with respect to  $z$ . If  $z$  is the point at infinity,  $z = \infty$ , then  $\zeta_z = \zeta_\infty$  is the ordinary center of gravity.

**103.** Consider all possible mass distributions with total mass 1 over the fixed points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  and let  $z$  be a point distinct from  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$ . The centers of gravity  $\zeta_z$  of all mass distributions of this kind with respect to  $z$  cover a “circular-arc polygon”  $\mathcal{C}_z$ .

**104.** Let  $\mathfrak{C}_z$  be the circular-arc polygon defined in **103** and  $w_1, w_2$  two points of  $\mathfrak{C}_z$ . Consider the circle through  $w_1, w_2$  and  $z$ . The arc of this circle with end-points  $w_1, w_2$ , that does not contain  $z$ , is contained in  $\mathfrak{C}_z$ , in other words  $\mathfrak{C}_z$  is *circularly-convex with respect to  $z$* . (We call  $\mathfrak{C}_z$  the *smallest circularly-convex domain with respect to  $z$*  that contains the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$ .)

**105.** If the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  all belong to a circular domain  $C$  and if the point  $z$  lies outside  $C$ , then the circular-arc polygon  $\mathfrak{C}_z$  [**103**] lies completely inside  $C$ .

Let  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  be arbitrary points and  $z$  a point distinct from these. Let the *same* mass  $1/n$  be placed at each of the points  $z_i$ . In the sequel we consider only the center of gravity  $\zeta = \zeta_z$  of this special mass distribution and call it for brevity *the* center of gravity of the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  with respect to  $z$ .

**106.** Let  $\zeta_z$  be the center of gravity of  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  with respect to  $z$ . Every circle through  $z$  and  $\zeta_z$  *separates* the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$ , i.e. either both circular domains bounded by the circle contain some of the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  in their interior or all the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  lie on the circle.

**107** (continued). If all the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  belong to a circular domain  $C$ , then the points  $z$  and  $\zeta_z$  cannot *both* lie outside  $C$ . If one of them, e.g.  $z$ , lies outside  $C$ , then the other,  $\zeta_z$ , lies in the *interior* of  $C$ , except in the case where all the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  coincide at a boundary point of  $C$  and  $\zeta_z$  then also lies there.

**108.** Let the fixed points  $w_1, w_2, \dots, w_k, z$  be pair-wise distinct. Let the complex numbers  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  take only the  $k$  different values  $w_1, w_2, \dots, w_k$ . The centers of gravity with respect to  $z$  of all systems  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  of this kind lie everywhere dense in the smallest domain, circularly convex with respect to  $z$ , that contains the points  $w_1, w_2, \dots, w_k$ .

**109.** The points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  are fixed and the variable point  $z$  converges to  $z_1$ . To what limiting position does the center of gravity  $\zeta_z$  of the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  with respect to  $z$  tend?

**110.** The center of gravity  $\zeta_z$  of the finite fixed points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  with respect to the variable point  $z$  may for sufficiently large  $z$  be expanded in decreasing powers of  $z$ . Calculate the first two terms of the expansion.

## § 2. Center of Gravity of a Polynomial with respect to a Point. A Theorem of Laguerre

In the sequel (**111–156**) we shall mean by a rational integral function (polynomial) of degree  $n$  a function  $f(z)$  not vanishing identically of the form

$$f(z) = a_0 + \binom{n}{1} a_1 z + \binom{n}{2} a_2 z^2 + \dots + \binom{n}{n-1} a_{n-1} z^{n-1} + a_n z^n.$$

Here  $a_n$  is not necessarily different from 0. In the special case when  $a_n \neq 0$ , we say that  $n$  is the *precise degree* of  $f(z)$ . If  $a_n = a_{n-1} = \dots = a_{n-k+1} = 0$ ,  $a_{n-k} \neq 0$ , we shall say that  $f(z)$  has the  $k$ -fold zero  $z = \infty$ .<sup>1</sup> With this interpretation every rational

<sup>1</sup> By introducing improper elements and using homogeneous coordinates, as would of course be in harmony with the projective character of these questions, the special discussions about the point at infinity and the distinction of cases connected with it could be avoided.

integral function of degree  $n$  has a total of  $n$  zeros, of which some may possibly lie at infinity. Thus there is determined by  $f(z)$  a system of points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$ , in the complex plane, the zeros of  $f(z)$ . Conversely, to every system of  $n$  points there belongs a polynomial, whose coefficients are uniquely determined up to a constant of proportion. We shall often disregard this unimportant constant factor and speak of *the* polynomial, whose zeros are  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$ .

**111.** By the center of gravity  $\zeta$  of a polynomial we mean the center of gravity of its zeros. Express the center of gravity of  $f(z)$  with respect to a variable point  $z$ : (1) in terms of  $f(z)$  and  $f'(z)$ , (2) in terms of the coefficients of  $f(z)$ . Consider the special cases  $z=\infty$  and  $f(z)=z^n$ .

**112.** Let  $\zeta$  be the center of gravity of  $f(z)$  with respect to  $z$ . A necessary and sufficient condition that  $f(z)$  has only real zeros is that the imaginary parts of  $z$  and  $\zeta$  have opposite signs if they do not both vanish however  $z$  may vary. ( $z=\infty$  counts as a real zero.)

**113.** With respect to which points  $z$  of the plane does the center of gravity of  $f(z)$  lie at infinity? What do the statements in **106** and **107** say about these points?

**114.** Let  $f(z)$  be a polynomial of precise degree  $n$ ,  $C$  a circular domain that contains the zeros of  $f(z)$  and  $c \neq 0$ . The zeros of the derivative of the transcendental function  $e^{-\frac{z}{c}} f(z)$  lie either in  $C$  or in  $C+nc$ , i.e. in the circular domain that is obtained from  $C$  by parallel displacement by the vector  $nc$ . [Cf. III **33**; consider the center of gravity of  $f(z)$  with respect to one of the zeros in question.]

**115.** Let  $z_1$  be a zero of the polynomial  $f(z)$  of degree  $n$ ,  $x$  finite and  $x \neq z_1$ , and  $f'(x)=0$ . Then  $f(z)$  has at least one zero in every circle that passes through both the points

$$x \quad \text{and} \quad x-(n-1)(z_1-x).$$

**116.** Let  $f(z)$  be a polynomial of degree  $n$ , whose zeros are all of absolute value  $\geq 1$ . Let  $\alpha_1$  and  $\alpha_2$  be arbitrary positive numbers, such that  $n\alpha_1/\alpha_2 \neq 1$ . Then all the zeros of  $\alpha_1 z f'(z) - \alpha_2 f(z)$  are in absolute value

$$\geq \min \left( 1, \left| 1 - n \frac{\alpha_1}{\alpha_2} \right|^{-1} \right).$$

**117.** Let  $f(z)$  be a polynomial of degree  $n$ , all of whose zeros lie in the annulus  $r \leq |z| \leq R$ . Let  $\alpha_1$  and  $\alpha_2$  be arbitrarily positive numbers such that  $n\alpha_1/\alpha_2 \neq 1$ . Then all the zeros of  $\alpha_1 z f'(z) - \alpha_2 f(z)$  lie in the annulus

$$r \min \left( 1, \left| 1 - n \frac{\alpha_1}{\alpha_2} \right|^{-1} \right) \leq |z| \leq R \max \left( 1, \left| 1 - n \frac{\alpha_1}{\alpha_2} \right|^{-1} \right).$$

**118.** If  $z_1$  is a finite zero of the polynomial  $f(z)$  of degree  $n$ , then the center of gravity with respect to  $z_1$  of the remaining  $n-1$  zeros of  $f(z)$  is

$$= z_1 - \frac{2(n-1)f'(z_1)}{f''(z_1)}.$$

How is this formula to be modified if  $z_1$  is at infinity?

**119.** The  $n$ th *Hermite* polynomial satisfies the differential equation

$$f''(z) - zf'(z) + nf(z) = 0.$$

[VI 100, solution (g).] Show by means of 118 that the Hermite polynomials have only real zeros [VI 100, solution (i)]. [Consider the assumed complex zero with largest imaginary part.]

**120.** The polynomial of degree  $n$  that satisfies the differential equation

$$(1 - z^2)f''(z) - 2zf'(z) + n(n+1)f(z) = 0$$

(the  $n$ th *Legendre* polynomial, cf. VI 90), has only real zeros. (VI 97.)

**121.** *Gauss's* theorem [III 31] is equivalent to the following: If all the zeros of a polynomial  $f(z)$  lie in a circular disc  $C$ , then the zeros of its derivative  $f'(z)$  also lie in  $C$  [113]. Decide whether the following theorem is true or false: If all the zeros of a polynomial  $f(z)$  lie in two circular discs  $C_1, C_2$ , then the zeros of its derivative  $f'(z)$  also lie in  $C_1$  or  $C_2$ .

Let  $C_1$  and  $C_2$  be two circular discs or, more generally, two arbitrary circular domains. Denoting by  $n_1$  and  $n_2$  fixed positive numbers, we call the set of all points

$$z = \frac{n_1 z_2 + n_2 z_1}{n_1 + n_2},$$

where  $z_1$  and  $z_2$  independently run through  $C_1$  and  $C_2$  respectively, a *mean domain* of  $C_1$  and  $C_2$ , and use for it the following notation

$$C = \frac{n_1 C_2 + n_2 C_1}{n_1 + n_2}.$$

$C$  is completely determined by  $C_1, C_2$  and  $n_1, n_2$ . [Cf. H. Minkowski: Werke, Vol. 2, p. 176, Leipzig: B. G. Teubner 1911.]

**122.** Let  $C_1$  and  $C_2$  be two circular discs whose centers are  $z_1^{(0)}, z_2^{(0)}$  and radii  $r_1, r_2$  respectively. Show that then

$$C = \frac{n_1 C_2 + n_2 C_1}{n_1 + n_2}$$

is again a circular disc whose center  $z^{(0)}$  and radius  $r$  are given by the following equations:

$$z^{(0)} = \frac{n_1 z_2^{(0)} + n_2 z_1^{(0)}}{n_1 + n_2}, \quad r = \frac{n_1 r_2 + n_2 r_1}{n_1 + n_2}.$$

$C$  is homothetic to  $C_1$  and  $C_2$  with respect to the same center of similitude. [H. S. M. Coxeter: Introduction to Geometry. New York: John Wiley & Sons 1961, pp. 68–70.]

**123.** Let  $C_1$  and  $C_2$  be two half-planes with parallel boundary lines, one of which contains the other. The mean domain  $C = n_1 C_2 + n_2 C_1 / (n_1 + n_2)$  is then again a half-plane, whose boundary line runs parallel to those of  $C_1$  and  $C_2$  and divides the distance between them in the ratio  $n_1 : n_2$ .

**124.** Let  $f(z) = f_1(z)f_2(z)$ , and  $f_1(z)$  be a polynomial of degree  $n_1$ ,  $f_2(z)$  a polynomial of degree  $n_2$ . Let all the zeros of  $f_1(z)$  lie in the circular domain  $C_1$  and all the zeros of  $f_2(z)$  in the circular domain  $C_2$ . Then the zeros of the derivative  $f'(z)$  lie either in  $C_1$  or in  $C_2$  or in the mean domain

$$C = \frac{n_1 C_2 + n_2 C_1}{n_1 + n_2}.$$

(By degree we mean the precise degree.)

**125.** Let  $f(z)$  be a rational (non-integral) function, whose numerator and denominator have no common factors. Let it have  $n_1$  zeros (poles) which lie in the circular domain  $C_1$  and  $n_2$  poles (zeros) which lie in the circular domain  $C_2$ . (Only finite zeros and poles are considered.) Let  $n_1 \geq n_2$ . Then the zeros of  $f'(z)$  lie either in  $C_1$  or in  $C_2$  or in the domain  $C$  defined by the numbers

$$z = \frac{n_1 z_2 - n_2 z_1}{n_1 - n_2},$$

where  $z_1$  and  $z_2$  independently run through  $C_1$  and  $C_2$ , for which we use the notation

$$C = \frac{n_1 C_2 - n_2 C_1}{n_1 - n_2}.$$

If  $n_1 = n_2$  and the circular domains  $C_1$  and  $C_2$  have no common points, then all the zeros of  $f'(z)$  lie either in  $C_1$  or in  $C_2$ .

**126.** Let  $f(z)$  be a polynomial, and let the equation

$$f(z) = a$$

have all its roots in a convex domain (oval)  $\Phi_1$ . Then all the numbers  $a$  for which this is the case also lie in a convex domain  $\Phi_2$ .

**127.** Let  $f(z)$  be a polynomial and let its  $a$ -points (the zeros of  $f(z) - a$ ) lie in a circular domain  $C_1$  and its  $b$ -points in a circular domain  $C_2$ . If  $n_1, n_2$  are positive numbers and we set  $c = (n_1 b + n_2 a) / (n_1 + n_2)$ , those  $c$ -points of  $f(z)$  that lie neither in  $C_1$  nor in  $C_2$ , lie in the mean domain

$$C = \frac{n_1 C_2 + n_2 C_1}{n_1 + n_2}$$

[We may take  $n_1, n_2$  to be integers.]

### § 3. Derivative of a Polynomial with respect to a Point. A Theorem of Grace

By the *derivative* of a polynomial  $f(z)$  of degree  $n$  with respect to the point  $\zeta$ , denoted by  $A_\zeta f(z)$ , we mean the ordinary derivative if  $\zeta = \infty$ , and

$$A_\zeta f(z) = (\zeta - z)f'(z) + nf(z),$$

if  $\zeta$  is finite.  $A_\zeta f(z)$  is a polynomial of degree  $n - 1$ .<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> When using homogeneous coordinates this expression is called the *first polar*, or, by older authors, *émanant*; cf. Laguerre, *Oeuvres*, Vol. 1, p. 48. Paris: Gauthier-Villars, 1898.

**128.** Let the  $n+1$  coefficients of  $f(z)$  (in the notation of §2 preceding **111**) be  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$ . What are the  $n$  coefficients of  $[A_\zeta f(z)]/n$ ?

**129.** Let  $\zeta$  be arbitrary. Show that the operation  $A_\zeta f(z)$  is distributive: If we denote by  $f_1(z)$  and  $f_2(z)$  two polynomials of degree  $n$ , and by  $c_1$  and  $c_2$  arbitrary constants, then we have

$$A_\zeta[c_1 f_1(z) + c_2 f_2(z)] = c_1 A_\zeta f_1(z) + c_2 A_\zeta f_2(z).$$

**130.** Let  $\zeta$  be arbitrary and  $f(z)$  a polynomial of degree  $n$ ,  $f(z) = g(z)h(z)$  a factorization of  $f(z)$  into the two factors  $g(z)$  and  $h(z)$  of degree  $k$  and  $l$  respectively,  $k+l=n$ . Show that

$$A_\zeta f(z) = g(z)A_\zeta h(z) + h(z)A_\zeta g(z).$$

**131.** Let  $f(z)$  be a polynomial of degree  $n$ ,  $\zeta_1$  and  $\zeta_2$  two arbitrary constants. The operations  $A_{\zeta_1} f(z)$  and  $A_{\zeta_2} f(z)$  are *commutative*, that is to say

$$A_{\zeta_1}[A_{\zeta_2} f(z)] = A_{\zeta_2}[A_{\zeta_1} f(z)] = A_{\zeta_1} A_{\zeta_2} f(z).$$

**132.** Show that  $A_\zeta f(z)$  vanishes identically if and only if all the zeros of  $f(z)$  coincide with  $\zeta$ .

By the *derived system* of the  $n$  points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  with respect to a  $(n+1)$ th point  $\zeta$  we mean the  $n-1$  zeros  $z'_1, z'_2, \dots, z'_{n-1}$  of  $A_\zeta f(z)$ , where  $f(z)$  is the polynomial of degree  $n$  whose zeros are  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$ , all the zeros being correctly counted (§2, preceding **111**). The derived system is completely determined, except in the single exceptional case where the  $n+1$  points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n, \zeta$  all coincide (cf. **132**).

**133.** If  $\zeta$  is finite, then to the derived system with respect to  $\zeta$  in general there belong four different kinds of points:

(1) The finite points distinct from  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n, \zeta$ , with respect to which the center of gravity of  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  is precisely  $\zeta$ .

(2) The multiple zeros of  $f(z)$ , distinct from  $\zeta$ , each with multiplicity reduced by 1.

(3)  $\zeta$  itself only if it is a zero of  $f(z)$  and in that case with the same multiplicity.

(4) The point  $\infty$  if it is at least a double zero of  $f(z)$ ; moreover also if it is not a zero of  $f(z)$  but if  $\zeta$  is the ordinary center of gravity of  $f(z)$ , i.e. the one constructed with respect to  $\infty$ .

**134.** A circular domain, whose boundary contains  $\zeta$  as well as a point of the derived system with respect to  $\zeta$ , itself contains points of the original system.

**135.** If a circular domain contains the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  and does not contain the point  $\zeta$ , then it contains also the derived system of  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  with respect to  $\zeta$ .

**136.** The derived system of the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  lies in the smallest circular-arc polygon, circularly convex with respect to  $\zeta$ , that contains  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$ . (Generalization of III **31**.)

**137.** If  $f(z)$  is of degree  $n$ , then  $(A_\zeta)^{n-1} f(z)$  is of the first degree. Calculate the only zero of  $(A_\zeta)^{n-1} f(z)$ !

**138.** Let

$$f(z) = a_0 + \binom{n}{1} a_1 z + \binom{n}{2} a_2 z^2 + \cdots + \binom{n}{n-1} a_{n-1} z^{n-1} + a_n z^n$$

be an arbitrary polynomial of degree  $n$  and let  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n$  be arbitrary points in the complex plane. The expression

$$A(\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n) f(z) = \frac{1}{n!} A_{\zeta_1} A_{\zeta_2} \dots A_{\zeta_n} f(z)$$

is a symmetric multilinear function of the variables  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n$ , which we can write as follows:

$$A(\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n) f(z) = a_0 \Sigma_0 + a_1 \Sigma_1 + a_2 \Sigma_2 + \cdots + a_{n-1} \Sigma_{n-1} + a_n \Sigma_n.$$

Here  $\Sigma_0, \Sigma_1, \Sigma_2, \dots, \Sigma_{n-1}, \Sigma_n$  are the elementary symmetric functions of  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n$ :

$$\Sigma_0 = 1, \quad \Sigma_1 = \zeta_1 + \zeta_2 + \cdots + \zeta_n,$$

$$\Sigma_2 = \zeta_1 \zeta_2 + \zeta_1 \zeta_3 + \cdots + \zeta_{n-1} \zeta_n, \quad \dots, \quad \Sigma_n = \zeta_1 \zeta_2 \dots \zeta_n.$$

If the last  $k$  of the numbers  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n$  (and only these) lie at infinity, then we set  $\Sigma_0 = \Sigma_1 = \cdots = \Sigma_{k-1} = 0$ ,  $\Sigma_k = 1$ ,  $\Sigma_{k+1} = \zeta_1 + \zeta_2 + \cdots + \zeta_{n-k}$ ,  $\Sigma_{k+2} = \zeta_1 \zeta_2 + \zeta_1 \zeta_3 + \cdots + \zeta_{n-k-1} \zeta_{n-k}$ ,  $\dots$ ,  $\Sigma_n = \zeta_1 \zeta_2 \dots \zeta_{n-k}$ .

**139.** Let

$$f(z) = a_0 + \binom{n}{1} a_1 z + \binom{n}{2} a_2 z^2 + \cdots + \binom{n}{n-1} a_{n-1} z^{n-1} + a_n z^n$$

be an arbitrary polynomial of degree  $n$  with zeros  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  and

$$g(z) = b_0 + \binom{n}{1} b_1 z + \binom{n}{2} b_2 z^2 + \cdots + \binom{n}{n-1} b_{n-1} z^{n-1} + b_n z^n$$

an arbitrary polynomial of degree  $n$  with zeros  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n$ . Calculate  $A(\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n) f(z)$  and  $A(z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n) g(z)$ .

If the two polynomials in **139** are related in such a manner that

$$A(\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n) f(z) = 0$$

or, equivalently [solution **139**],  $A(z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n) g(z) = 0$ , then the two polynomials  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$  are termed *apolar*. The term suggests the vanishing of the  $n$ th polar  $A_{\zeta_1} A_{\zeta_2} \dots A_{\zeta_n} f(z)$ . The condition of apolarity is

$$a_0 b_n - \binom{n}{1} a_1 b_{n-1} + \binom{n}{2} a_2 b_{n-2} - \cdots + (-1)^{n-1} \binom{n}{n-1} a_{n-1} b_1 + (-1)^n a_n b_0 = 0.$$

[**139.**] The two systems  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  and  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n$  are also termed mutually apolar.

**140.** What is the geometrical significance of the apolarity of  $z_1$  and  $\zeta_1$ , and that of  $z_1, z_2$  and  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2$ ?

**141.** Which are the systems  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n$  that are apolar to the system consisting of the roots of the equation  $z^n - 1 = 0$ ?

**142.** Let  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  be an arbitrary system of points. There are  $n$  systems  $\zeta, \zeta, \dots, \zeta$  of coincident points that are apolar to the given system. Which are they?

**143.** The polynomial of degree  $n$

$$f(z) = 1 - z + cz^n$$

is apolar to any system of numbers whose sum is  $n$  and product is 0.

**144.** Let  $f(z)$  be an arbitrary polynomial of degree  $n$ , all of whose zeros lie in the circular domain  $C$ . If  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_k, k < n$ , are arbitrary points lying outside  $C$ , then all the zeros of the polynomial of degree  $n - k, A_{\zeta_1} A_{\zeta_2} \dots A_{\zeta_k} f(z)$  lie in  $C$ .

**145.** Let the two polynomials  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$  of degree  $n$  be apolar to each other. Every circular domain that contains all the zeros of one polynomial also contains at least one zero of the other.

**146.** Let the two polynomials  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$  of degree  $n$  be apolar to each other. The two smallest convex polygons that contain all the zeros of  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$  respectively have at least one common point. More generally, the two smallest circular-arc polygons that are circularly convex with respect to the same point and that contain all the zeros of  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$  respectively, also have at least one common point.

**147.** The polynomial

$$1 - z + cz^n$$

always has one zero in the circle  $|z| \leq 2$ .

**148.** The polynomial

$$1 - z + cz^n$$

always has one zero in the circle  $|z - 1| \leq 1$ .

**149.** The polynomial of  $k + 1$  terms

$$1 - z + c_2 z^{\nu_2} + c_3 z^{\nu_3} + \dots + c_k z^{\nu_k}, \quad 1 = \nu_1 < \nu_2 < \nu_3 < \dots < \nu_k$$

always has one zero in the circle

$$|z| \leq \left[ \left(1 - \frac{1}{\nu_2}\right) \left(1 - \frac{1}{\nu_3}\right) \dots \left(1 - \frac{1}{\nu_k}\right) \right]^{-1},$$

and hence in the circle

$$|z| \leq k.$$

(Generalization of **147**.)

**150.** If a polynomial of degree  $n$  assumes the same value at two points  $a$  and  $b, a \neq b$ , then its derivative has at least one zero in the circular disc with center at the midpoint of the line segment  $ab$  and radius  $(|a - b|/2) \cot(\pi/n)$ . (Analogue of Rolle's theorem in the complex domain.)

**151.** Let

$$f(z) = a_0 + \binom{n}{1} a_1 z + \binom{n}{2} a_2 z^2 + \dots + \binom{n}{n-1} a_{n-1} z^{n-1} + a_n z^n$$



be a polynomial of degree  $n$  all of whose zeros lie in a circular domain  $C$ . Also let

$$g(z) = b_0 + \binom{n}{1}b_1z + \binom{n}{2}b_2z^2 + \cdots + \binom{n}{n-1}b_{n-1}z^{n-1} + b_nz^n$$

be a polynomial of degree  $n$  with zeros  $\beta_1, \beta_2, \dots, \beta_n$ . Every zero  $\gamma$  of the polynomial

$$h(z) = a_0b_0 + \binom{n}{1}a_1b_1z + \binom{n}{2}a_2b_2z^2 + \cdots + \binom{n}{n-1}a_{n-1}b_{n-1}z^{n-1} + a_nb_nz^n$$

formed by “composition” of  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$  then has the form

$$\gamma = -\beta_\nu k,$$

where  $\nu$  denotes a suitably chosen index and  $k$  a suitably chosen point in  $C$ . (Here we must set  $\infty \cdot \infty = \infty$  and  $0 \cdot \infty = \text{indeterminate}$ .)

**152.** Let the zeros of the polynomials  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$  of degree  $n$  all lie in the unit circle  $|z| \leq 1$ , and the zeros of at least one of the two polynomials in fact in  $|z| < 1$ . Then also all the zeros of the polynomial of degree  $n$  formed from  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$  by composition [151] lie in the interior of the unit circle  $|z| < 1$ .

**153.** Let the polynomial  $f(z)$  of degree  $n$  have all its zeros in a convex domain  $\mathfrak{C}$  that contains the origin. Let the polynomial  $g(z)$  of the same degree have only real zeros which lie in the interval  $-1, 0$ . The polynomial  $h(z)$  of degree  $n$  derived from the two polynomials by composition [151] then also has all its zeros in  $\mathfrak{C}$ .

**154.** If all the zeros of the polynomial

$$f(z) = a_0 + \binom{n}{1}a_1z + \binom{n}{2}a_2z^2 + \cdots + \binom{n}{n-1}a_{n-1}z^{n-1} + a_nz^n$$

of degree  $n$  lie in the real interval  $-a, a$ , and those of the polynomial

$$g(z) = b_0 + \binom{n}{1}b_1z + \binom{n}{2}b_2z^2 + \cdots + \binom{n}{n-1}b_{n-1}z^{n-1} + b_nz^n$$

of degree  $n$  in the interval  $-b, 0$  (or  $0, b$ ) then the zeros of the polynomial

$$h(z) = a_0b_0 + \binom{n}{1}a_1b_1z + \binom{n}{2}a_2b_2z^2 + \cdots + \binom{n}{n-1}a_{n-1}b_{n-1}z^{n-1} + a_nb_nz^n$$

of degree  $n$  lie in the interval  $-ab, ab$ . ( $a, b$  are positive numbers.)

**155.** Let all the zeros of the polynomial

$$a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \cdots + a_nz^n$$

of degree  $n$  be real and those of the polynomial

$$b_0 + b_1z + b_2z^2 + \cdots + b_nz^n$$

of degree  $n$  be real and of the same sign. Then all the zeros of the polynomial

$$a_0b_0 + a_1b_1z + a_2b_2z^2 + \cdots + a_nb_nz^n$$

are also real. ( $z = \infty$  counts as a real zero.)

**156.** Under the assumptions of **155**, all the zeros of the polynomial

$$a_0 b_0 + 1! a_1 b_1 z + 2! a_2 b_2 z^2 + \cdots + n! a_n b_n z^n$$

are real.

### Chapter 3. Miscellaneous Problems

#### § 1. Approximation of the Zeros of Transcendental Functions by the Zeros of Rational Functions

**157.** Deduce from

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left(1 + \frac{iz}{n}\right)^n = \cos z + i \sin z,$$

that  $\cos z$  and  $\sin z$  have no non-real zeros.

**158.** Deduce from

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left(1 - \frac{z^2}{n}\right)^n = e^{-z^2},$$

that no derivative of  $e^{-z^2}$  has non-real zeros.

**159.** The Bessel function of order 0

$$J_0(z) = 1 - \frac{1}{1!1!} \left(\frac{z}{2}\right)^2 + \frac{1}{2!2!} \left(\frac{z}{2}\right)^4 - \frac{1}{3!3!} \left(\frac{z}{2}\right)^6 + \cdots$$

has no non-real zeros. One can obtain from the four different representations

$$(a) J_0(z) = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (-1)^n \left(1 + \frac{z^2}{4n^2}\right)^n P_n\left(\frac{z^2 - 4n^2}{z^2 + 4n^2}\right) \quad [\text{VI } 85],$$

$$(b) J_0(z) = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} L_n\left(\frac{z^2}{4n}\right) \quad [\text{VI } 99, \text{ solution (b)}],$$

$$(c) J_0(z) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} e^{iz \sin \theta} d\theta \quad [\text{III } 148, 56]$$

$$(d) J_0(z) = \frac{2}{\pi} \int_0^1 \frac{\cos zt}{\sqrt{1-t^2}} dt \quad [\text{III } 205]$$

four different proofs of this result.

**160.** Let  $q$  be an integer,  $q \geq 2$ . The entire function

$$F(z) = 1 + \frac{z}{q!} + \frac{z^2}{(2q)!} + \frac{z^3}{(3q)!} + \cdots$$

has no non-real zeros. One can obtain from **59** two different proofs of this result.

**161.** Let  $\alpha \geq 0$ ,  $0 < \alpha_1 \leq \alpha_2 \leq \alpha_3 \leq \cdots$ , and  $1/\alpha_1 + 1/\alpha_2 + 1/\alpha_3 + \cdots$  be convergent. The transcendental entire function

$$g(z) = e^{-\alpha z} \left(1 - \frac{z}{\alpha_1}\right) \left(1 - \frac{z}{\alpha_2}\right) \left(1 - \frac{z}{\alpha_3}\right) \cdots$$

may be represented as the limit of a sequence of polynomials with only real positive zeros.

**162 (continued).** If

$$g(z) = 1 + \frac{a_1}{1!} z + \frac{a_2}{2!} z^2 + \frac{a_3}{3!} z^3 + \dots,$$

then the polynomials

$$1 + \binom{n}{1} a_1 z + \binom{n}{2} a_2 z^2 + \dots + \binom{n}{n-1} a_{n-1} z^{n-1} + a_n z^n, \quad n=1, 2, 3, \dots$$

have only real, positive zeros [63].

**163 (continued).** In the interval  $0 < x \leq \alpha_1$

$$g(x) < 1$$

and furthermore we have there more generally

$$1 + \frac{a_1}{1!} x + \frac{a_2}{2!} x^2 + \dots + \frac{a_{2m-1}}{(2m-1)!} x^{2m-1} < g(x) \\ < 1 + \frac{a_1}{1!} x + \frac{a_2}{2!} x^2 + \dots + \frac{a_{2m}}{(2m)!} x^{2m}, \quad m=1, 2, 3, \dots$$

[Thus  $g(x)$  is enveloped by its Maclaurin series for  $0 < x \leq \alpha_1$ ; **55, 72.**]

**164 (continued).** Assume  $\alpha < 1$ . The entire function of  $z$  defined by the integral

$$\int_0^\infty e^{-t^2} g(-t^2) \cos zt \, dt$$

has only real zeros [63].

**165.** Let  $\alpha, \beta, \beta_1, \beta_2, \beta_3, \dots$  be real,  $\alpha \geq 0, \beta_v \neq 0$ , and the series  $1/\beta_1^2 + 1/\beta_2^2 + 1/\beta_3^2 + \dots$  convergent. The transcendental entire function

$$G(z) = e^{-\alpha z^2 + \beta z} \left(1 - \frac{z}{\beta_1}\right) e^{\frac{z}{\beta_1}} \left(1 - \frac{z}{\beta_2}\right) e^{\frac{z}{\beta_2}} \dots$$

may be represented as the limit of a sequence of polynomials with only real zeros.

**166 (continued).** If

$$G(z) = 1 + \frac{b_1}{1!} z + \frac{b_2}{2!} z^2 + \frac{b_3}{3!} z^3 + \dots,$$

then

$$b_m^2 + b_{m+1}^2 > 0, \quad m=1, 2, 3, \dots \quad [49.]$$

**167 (continued).** If  $G(z)$  has no positive zeros and  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  are real numbers, then the polynomial

$$a_0 G(0) + a_1 G(1)z + a_2 G(2)z^2 + \dots + a_n G(n)z^n$$

can have not more non-real zeros than the polynomial

$$a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^n.$$

[68, 69 are special cases.]

**168.** Prove from **167** that the Bessel function  $J_0(z)$  has no non-real zeros [II 31].

**169.** Prove from **167** that the entire functions considered in **160** have no non-real zeros.

**170.** Let  $\alpha$  be an even integer,  $\alpha \geq 2$ . Then the integral

$$\int_0^{\infty} e^{-t^\alpha} \cos zt \, dt = F_\alpha(z)$$

represents an entire function that has no non-real zeros. [**167.**]

**171** (continued). If we have only  $\alpha > 1$ , then the integral still represents an entire function. If  $\alpha$  is *not* an even integer, this function has only finitely many real zeros.

**171.1.** We make the following assumptions:

The polynomial

$$a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \cdots + a_m z^m$$

of degree  $m$  has only positive zeros.

The entire function  $G(z)$  is either defined as in **165** or it is equal to the function defined in **165** multiplied by  $z$ .  $G(z)$  has precisely  $s$  zeros in the interval  $[0, m]$ ; these zeros are simple and the distance between any two of them is not less than 1;  $s \leq m$ .

Then the polynomial

$$a_0 G(0) + a_1 G(1)z + a_2 G(2)z^2 + \cdots + a_m G(m)z^m$$

has precisely  $m-s$  positive zeros. [**67, 167.**]

**171.2.** We make the following assumptions:

The entire function

$$g(z) = a_0 + \frac{a_1}{1!} z + \frac{a_2}{2!} z^2 + \frac{a_3}{3!} z^3 + \cdots$$

is a limit of polynomials with only positive zeros, but not itself a polynomial [**161.**]

The entire function  $G(z)$  is either defined as in **165** or it is equal to the function defined in **165** multiplied by  $z$ ; it has precisely  $s$  non-negative zeros which are simple and the distance between any two of them is not less than 1. (We obtain the present  $G(z)$  from the  $G(z)$  of **171.1** by making  $m$  arbitrarily large.)

Then the entire function

$$a_0 G(0) + \frac{a_1 G(1)}{1!} z + \frac{a_2 G(2)}{2!} z^2 + \cdots$$

has precisely  $s$  non-positive zeros.

**171.3.** If  $\nu \geq 0$  the entire function

$$z^{\frac{\nu}{2}} J_{-\nu}(2z^{1/2}) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-z)^n}{n!} \frac{1}{\Gamma(n+1-\nu)}$$

has precisely  $[\nu]$  non-positive zeros. (This contains the result of **159.**)

**171.4.** Let  $k, l, m$  and  $q$  be non-negative integers,

$$0 \leq k < l, \quad k + ql \leq m < k + (q+1)l.$$

If all the zeros of the polynomial

$$b_0 + b_1 z + b_2 z^2 + \cdots + b_m z^m$$

are negative, then the zeros of

$$b_k + b_{k+l} z + b_{k+2l} z^2 + \cdots + b_{k+ql} z^q$$

are also all negative. (This implies, for  $n \rightarrow \infty$ , the result of **160**.)

**171.5.** If all the zeros of the polynomial

$$b_0 + \frac{b_1}{1!} z + \frac{b_2}{2!} z^2 + \cdots + \frac{b_m}{m!} z^m$$

are negative, then the zeros of

$$b_k + \frac{b_{k+l}}{1!} z + \frac{b_{k+2l}}{2!} z^2 + \cdots + \frac{b_{k+ql}}{q!} z^q$$

are also all negative;  $k, l, m$  and  $q$  are subject to the same conditions as in **171.4**.

**172.** The equation

$$\tan z - z = 0$$

has only real roots. [26.]

**173.** Let  $f(t)$  be twice continuously differentiable,  $f(t) > 0$ ,  $f'(t) < 0$ ,  $f''(t) < 0$  for  $0 \leq t \leq 1$ . Then the even entire function

$$F(z) = \int_0^1 f(t) \cos zt \, dt$$

has infinitely many, and in fact only real, zeros. (Related to but different from **III 205**.) [26, **III 165**.]

**174.** Let  $\varphi(t)$  be properly integrable for  $0 \leq t \leq 1$ . If we have

$$\int_0^1 |\varphi(t)| \, dt \leq 1,$$

then the entire function

$$F(z) = \sin z - \int_0^1 \varphi(t) \sin zt \, dt$$

has only real zeros. [27.]

**175.** Let  $f(t)$  be real and continuously differentiable for  $0 \leq t \leq 1$ . If we have

$$|f(1)| \geq \int_0^1 |f'(t)| \, dt,$$

then the entire function

$$F(z) = \int_0^1 f(t) \cos zt \, dt$$

has only real zeros. (The condition is satisfied in particular if  $f(0) \geq 0$ ,  $f'(t) \geq 0$  for  $0 \leq t \leq 1$ ; cf. **III 205**.)

**176.** Let  $a \geq 2$ . The entire function

$$F(z) = 1 + \frac{z}{a} + \frac{z^2}{a^2} + \frac{z^3}{a^3} + \cdots + \frac{z^n}{a^{n^2}} + \cdots$$

as well as all the partial sums of its power series, has only real negative simple zeros. [III 200.]

**177.** Let the function  $f(t)$  be continuously differentiable and positive for  $0 < t < 1$ , and also let  $\int_0^1 f(t) dt$  exist. The entire function defined by the integral

$$\int_0^1 f(t) e^{zt} dt = F(z)$$

has no zeros

in the half-plane  $\Re z \geq 0$ , if  $f'(t) > 0$ ,

in the half-plane  $\Re z \leq 0$ , if  $f'(t) < 0$ .

[Not analogously to III 205 through a limiting process from III 22, but by appropriate translation of the proof of III 22.]

**178.** Deduce III 189 from 177.

**179.** The remainder of the exponential series

$$\frac{z^{n+1}}{(n+1)!} + \frac{z^{n+2}}{(n+2)!} + \frac{z^{n+3}}{(n+3)!} + \cdots$$

vanishes for  $z=0$ , but otherwise at no point of the half-plane  $\Re z \leq n$ , if  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ ;  $n=0$  is an exception: Here the zeros all lie on the boundary of the half-plane  $\Re z \leq 0$ . (This contains 73.) [177.]

**180.** If  $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \left| \frac{a_{n+1}}{a_n} \right|^2$  is convergent, then

$$a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \cdots + a_n z^n + \cdots = F(z)$$

is an entire function. If we denote the zeros of  $F(z)$  by  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n, \dots$ , then

$$\frac{1}{|z_1|^2} + \frac{1}{|z_2|^2} + \cdots + \frac{1}{|z_n|^2} + \cdots$$

is convergent.

**181.** If the zeros of a polynomial with real coefficients are all real and simple, then in the interval between two successive zeros lies only one zero of the derivative. Is this theorem also true for transcendental entire functions?

**182.** Let the degree of the polynomial  $H(x)$  be  $\geq 3$ . If

$$F(x) = e^{H(x)},$$

then at least one of the two functions  $dF/dx$  and  $d^2F/dx^2$  has not only real zeros.

## § 2. Precise Determination of the Number of Zeros by Descartes' Rule of Signs

Along with the polynomial

$$f(z) = a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \cdots + a_m z^m$$



respectively, in the open interval  $a < z < b$ . We have the following inequalities:

$$\begin{aligned} \mathfrak{F}_0^\infty &\leq \mathfrak{P}_0^\infty, & \mathfrak{F}_{-\infty}^0 &\geq \mathfrak{P}_{-\infty}^0, \\ \mathfrak{F}_0^1 &\leq \mathfrak{Q}_0^\infty, & \mathfrak{F}_{-\infty}^0 &\geq \mathfrak{Q}_{-1+(m-1)\omega}^0, \\ \mathfrak{F}_0^\infty &\leq \mathfrak{R}_0^{1+(m-1)\omega}, & \mathfrak{F}_{-1}^0 &\geq \mathfrak{R}_{-\infty}^0, & \mathfrak{F}_{-\infty}^{-1} &\geq \mathfrak{R}_{1+(m-1)\omega}^\infty. \end{aligned}$$

Here we have assumed throughout that  $\omega > 0$ ; in the inequalities in the second line we require moreover that  $(m-1)\omega < 1$ , and in the last inequality of the first column we require that  $\omega^{-1}$  be an integer. [38, 80.]

**186** (continued). Assuming that  $f(z)$  does not vanish at the end-points of the corresponding interval (that is at  $z=0$ ,  $z=1$ ,  $z=-1$  respectively) we can add to the above inequalities the statement that the difference between the two sides is an even number (possibly 0).—Why must no additional assumptions be made concerning the point  $z = +\infty$ ?

**187.** The three power series considered in **183** have the following properties:

(1) They have not fewer changes of sign than the polynomial  $f(z)$  has zeros in the interior of the intervals

$$(0, +\infty), \quad (0, 1), \quad (0, +\infty),$$

respectively.

(2) The number of changes of sign decreases or remains unaltered as  $k$  increases.

(3) The number of changes of sign *attains* the number of zeros of  $f(z)$  in the corresponding interval, if  $k$  is sufficiently large.

**188.** Along with the real polynomial  $f(z)$  of degree  $m$ , consider the fourth associated polynomial

$$J(z, \omega) = f(m\omega) - \binom{m}{1} f(\overline{m-1}\omega)z + \binom{m}{2} f(\overline{m-2}\omega)z^2 - \cdots + (-1)^m f(0)z^m,$$

$\omega > 0$ . Analogously to the notation of **185**, let  $\mathfrak{F}_a^b$  denote the number of zeros of  $J(z, \omega)$  in the open interval  $a < z < b$ . Then we have the inequalities

$$\mathfrak{F}_{m\omega}^\infty \leq \mathfrak{F}_0^1, \quad \mathfrak{F}_{-\infty}^0 \leq \mathfrak{F}_1^\infty, \quad \mathfrak{F}_0^{m\omega} \geq \mathfrak{F}_{-\infty}^0.$$

If we assume that  $f(0) \geq 0$ ,  $f(m\omega) \geq 0$ , then in addition we can assert that the difference between the two sides is an even number.

**189.** The number of zeros of the real polynomial  $f(z)$  of degree  $m$  in the interval  $m\omega < z < \infty$  is not greater than the number of zeros of the polynomial

$$\Delta^m f(0) + \binom{m}{1} \Delta^{m-1} f(0)z + \binom{m}{2} \Delta^{m-2} f(0)z^2 + \cdots + f(0)z^m$$

in the interval  $0 < z < 1$ ; here we use the notation

$$\Delta^\nu f(0) = f(\nu\omega) - \binom{\nu}{1} f(\overline{\nu-1}\omega) + \binom{\nu}{2} f(\overline{\nu-2}\omega) - \cdots + (-1)^\nu f(0),$$

$$\nu = 0, 1, 2, \dots, m.$$

**189.1.** The polynomial

$$f(x) = a_0 + a_1 x + a_2 x^2 + a_3 x^3 + \cdots + a_m x^m$$



with real coefficients  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_m$  has not more zeros in the interval  $0 < x < 1$  than the polynomial

$$S(x) = a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + a_3x^3 + \dots + a_mx^{m^2}$$

has in the interval  $0 < x < 1$ , even if in the case of the latter only distinct zeros with odd multiplicity are taken into account.

**189.2** (continued). The entire function

$$D(x) = a_1 1^{-x} + a_2 2^{-x} + a_3 3^{-x} + \dots + a_m m^{-x}$$

has not more zeros in the interval  $0 < x < \infty$  than the polynomial  $f(x) - a_0$  has in the interval  $0 < x < 1$ , even if in the case of the latter only distinct zeros with odd multiplicity are taken into account.

**189.3.** Let  $F(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_m)$  denote a homogeneous polynomial with real coefficients in the variables  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_m$  and assume that

$$F(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_m) > 0$$

where

$$x_1 \geq 0, \quad x_2 \geq 0, \quad \dots, \quad x_m \geq 0, \quad x_1 + x_2 + \dots + x_m > 0.$$

Then the coefficients of the polynomial

$$(x_1 + x_2 + \dots + x_m)^k F(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_m)$$

are non-negative for all sufficiently large positive integers  $k$ . (The particular case  $m=2$  coincides with a particular case of **187** (3) concerning the third expression considered in **183** when  $\mathfrak{F}_0^\circ = 0$ .)

### § 3. Additional Problems on the Zeros of Polynomials

**190.<sup>1</sup>** We can represent any given polynomial as a quotient of two polynomials such that the denominator has no changes of sign and the number of changes of sign of the numerator is equal to the number of positive zeros of the given polynomial.

**191.** Let the polynomial  $f(x)$  of degree  $m$  be such that, if  $P(x)$  is an arbitrary polynomial,  $P(x)f(x)$  has at least  $m$  more changes of sign than  $P(x)$ . For this it is necessary and sufficient that  $f(x)$  has only real positive zeros.

**192.** Let the polynomial  $f(x)$  be such that, if  $P(x)$  is an arbitrary polynomial,  $P(x)f(x) + P'(x)$  has not more non-real zeros than  $P(x)$ .

For this it is necessary and sufficient, that  $f(x) = a - bx$ , where  $a$  is arbitrary,  $b \geq 0$ .

**193.** If the polynomial  $f(x)$  has the property that for all positive  $p$  the equation  $f(x) + p = 0$  has only real roots, then  $f(x)$  is at most of the second degree. If the roots of the same equation are all real and all of the same sign, then  $f(x)$  is of the first degree.

This is evident geometrically; we require a proof based upon other principles.

<sup>1</sup> In **190-195** we are concerned with polynomials with real coefficients.

**194.** The expression

$$a_0^2 b_2^2 - a_0 a_1 b_1 b_2 + a_0 a_2 b_1^2 - 2a_0 a_2 b_0 b_2 + a_1^2 b_0 b_2 - a_1 a_2 b_0 b_1 + a_2^2 b_0^2$$

formed from the real constants  $a_0, a_1, a_2, b_0, b_1, b_2$ , is negative if and only if the two polynomials

$$f(x) = a_0 x^2 + a_1 x + a_2, \quad g(x) = b_0 x^2 + b_1 x + b_2$$

have real and simple zeros that separate each other, i.e. that lie in such a manner that the two zeros of one polynomial contain between them one and only one zero of the other polynomial.

**195.** Let  $P(x)$  be a polynomial with only real zeros. Then in general there exists no primitive function of  $P(x)$  that has only real zeros. More precisely: If  $n$  denotes the precise degree of  $P(x)$ , determine a real number  $a$  such that the polynomial of degree  $n+1$

$$Q(x) = \int_a^x P(x) dx$$

has a maximum number of real zeros. Then we can assert that this maximum number is

$$\begin{aligned} &= 2 \quad \text{for } n=1 \\ &\geq 3 \quad \text{for } n=2, 4, 6, 8, \dots, \\ &\geq 4 \quad \text{for } n=3, 5, 7, 9, \dots \end{aligned}$$

and we cannot assert more than this, for the equality sign can actually hold for given  $n$  for a suitable  $P(x)$ .

**196.** Let  $L$  be the maximum of the absolute values of the coefficients of the polynomial

$$f(z) = z^n + a_1 z^{n-1} + a_2 z^{n-2} + \dots + a_n,$$

and let  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  be the zeros of  $f(z)$ . Then we have

$$(1 + |z_1|)(1 + |z_2|) \dots (1 + |z_n|) \leq 2^n \sqrt{n+1} L. \quad [\text{II } 52.]$$

**196.1.** Consider the polynomials  $P(z)$ ,  $Q(z)$ ,  $R(z)$  and

$$S(z) = a_0 z^n + a_1 z^{n-1} + \dots + a_\nu z^{n-\nu} + \dots + a_n.$$

Assume that

- $P(z)$  has real coefficients,
- $Q(z)$  has only negative zeros,
- $R(z)$  has only real zeros,
- $S(z)$  has only zeros whose absolute value equals 1.

Then

$$a_0 P(z + ni) + \dots + a_\nu P(z + (n-2\nu)i) + \dots + a_n P(z - ni)$$

has no more non-real zeros than  $P(z)$ ,

$$a_0 Q(niz) + \dots + a_\nu Q((n-2\nu)iz) + \dots + a_n Q(-niz)$$

has only real zeros, and

$$a_0 R(ni)z^n + \dots + a_\nu R((n-2\nu)i)z^{n-\nu} + \dots + a_n R(-ni)$$

has only zeros whose absolute value equals 1.

## Part Six. Polynomials and Trigonometric Polynomials

### § 1. Tchebychev Polynomials

Setting  $\cos \vartheta = x$ , the expressions

$$T_n(x) = \cos n\vartheta, \quad U_n(x) = \frac{1}{n+1} T'_{n+1}(x) = \frac{\sin (n+1)\vartheta}{\sin \vartheta}, \quad n=0, 1, 2, \dots$$

are polynomials in  $x$  of degree  $n$  (the Tchebychev polynomials); the leading coefficient of  $T_n(x)$  is equal to  $2^{n-1}$ , and that of  $U_n(x)$  is equal to  $2^n$ ,  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ . We list the first five polynomials of both kinds:

	$T_n(x)$	$U_n(x)$
$n=1$	$x$	$2x$
$n=2$	$2x^2-1$	$4x^2-1$
$n=3$	$4x^3-3x$	$8x^3-4x$
$n=4$	$8x^4-8x^2+1$	$16x^4-12x^2+1$
$n=5$	$16x^5-20x^3+5x$	$32x^5-32x^3+6x$

**1.** The zeros of  $T_n(x)$  and  $U_n(x)$  are all real and distinct and lie in the interior of the interval  $-1, 1$ . Determine these zeros.

**2.** Prove that the following relations hold:

$$\begin{aligned} T_{n+1}(x) &= xT_n(x) - (1-x^2)U_{n-1}(x), \\ U_n(x) &= xU_{n-1}(x) + T_n(x), \quad n=1, 2, 3, \dots \end{aligned}$$

**3.** The polynomials  $T_n(x)$  and  $U_n(x)$  satisfy the following differential equations:

$$\begin{aligned} (1-x^2)T_n''(x) - xT_n'(x) + n^2T_n(x) &= 0, \\ (1-x^2)U_n''(x) - 3xU_n'(x) + n(n+2)U_n(x) &= 0. \end{aligned}$$

**4.**  $T_n(x)$  and  $U_n(x)$  satisfy the following orthogonality relations:

$$\left. \begin{aligned} \int_{-1}^1 \frac{1}{\sqrt{1-x^2}} T_m(x)T_n(x) dx &= 0, \\ \int_{-1}^1 \sqrt{1-x^2} U_m(x)U_n(x) dx &= 0, \end{aligned} \right\} \quad m, n=0, 1, 2, \dots; \quad m \neq n.$$

Evaluate these integrals for  $m=n$ .

5.  $T_n(x)$  and  $U_n(x)$  satisfy the identities

$$\frac{T_n(x)}{\sqrt{1-x^2}} = \frac{(-1)^n}{1 \cdot 3 \cdot 5 \dots (2n-1)} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} (1-x^2)^{n-\frac{1}{2}},$$

$$\sqrt{1-x^2} U_n(x) = \frac{(-1)^n(n+1)}{1 \cdot 3 \cdot 5 \dots (2n+1)} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} (1-x^2)^{n+\frac{1}{2}}.$$

6. Let  $f(x)$  be a function defined in the interval  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$  with a continuous  $n$ th derivative in this interval. Then we have

$$\int_0^\pi f(\cos \vartheta) \cos n\vartheta d\vartheta = \frac{1}{1 \cdot 3 \cdot 5 \dots (2n-1)} \int_0^\pi f^{(n)}(\cos \vartheta) \sin^{2n} \vartheta d\vartheta.$$

7. For  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ ,  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$ , we have the inequalities

$$|T_n(x)| \leq 1, \quad |U_n(x)| \leq n+1.$$

In the first inequality we have equality for precisely  $n+1$  values of  $x$ , namely at the  $n-1$  zeros of  $U_{n-1}(x)$  and, in addition, at  $x=-1$  and  $x=1$ . In the second inequality we have equality only for  $x=-1$  and  $x=1$ .

## § 2. General Problems on Trigonometric Polynomials

An expression of the form

$$g(\vartheta) = \lambda_0 + \lambda_1 \cos \vartheta + \mu_1 \sin \vartheta + \lambda_2 \cos 2\vartheta + \mu_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \dots \\ + \lambda_n \cos n\vartheta + \mu_n \sin n\vartheta.$$

is termed a *trigonometric polynomial* of order  $n$ . If all the  $\mu_r$  are equal to zero, then  $g(\vartheta)$  is termed a *cosine polynomial* of order  $n$ . If all the  $\lambda_r$  are equal to zero, then  $g(\vartheta)$  is termed a *sine polynomial* of order  $n$ .

8. A cosine polynomial of order  $n$  may always be written in the form  $P(\cos \vartheta)$ , where  $P(x)$  is a polynomial of degree  $n$ . The converse is also true.

9. A sine polynomial of order  $n$  may always be written in the form  $\sin \vartheta P(\cos \vartheta)$ , where  $P(x)$  is a polynomial of degree  $n-1$ . The converse is also true.

10. The product of two trigonometric polynomials of order  $m$  and  $n$  respectively is a trigonometric polynomial of order  $m+n$ .

11. A trigonometric polynomial of order  $n$  with real coefficients  $\lambda_r, \mu_r$ ,  $r=0, 1, 2, \dots, s=1, 2, \dots$ ,

$$g(\vartheta) = \lambda_0 + \lambda_1 \cos \vartheta + \mu_1 \sin \vartheta + \lambda_2 \cos 2\vartheta + \mu_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \dots \\ + \lambda_n \cos n\vartheta + \mu_n \sin n\vartheta \quad (\vartheta \text{ real})$$

may be written in the form

$$g(\vartheta) = e^{-in\vartheta} G(e^{i\vartheta}),$$

where  $G(z) = u_0 + u_1 z + u_2 z^2 + \dots + u_{2n} z^{2n}$  denotes a polynomial of degree  $2n$  which remains unchanged if one forms the reciprocal polynomial and simultaneously replaces the coefficients by their complex conjugates:

$$G(z) = \bar{u}_{2n} + \bar{u}_{2n-1} z + \bar{u}_{2n-2} z^2 + \dots + \bar{u}_0 z^{2n} = z^{2n} \bar{G}(z^{-1}).$$

Calculate the coefficients  $u_0, u_1, u_2, \dots, u_{2n}$ .

**12.** Denote by  $G(z)$  a polynomial of degree  $2n$  satisfying the identity

$$z^{2n} \bar{G}(z^{-1}) = G(z).$$

Then for  $\vartheta$  real

$$e^{-in\vartheta} G(e^{i\vartheta}) = g(\vartheta)$$

is a trigonometric polynomial in  $\vartheta$  of order  $n$  with real coefficients.

**13.** Let  $G(z)$  be a polynomial of degree  $2n$  and

$$z^{2n} \bar{G}(z^{-1}) = G(z).$$

How are the zeros of  $G(z)$  distributed in the complex plane?

**14.** A trigonometric polynomial of order  $n$  with real coefficients

$$g(\vartheta) = \lambda_0 + \lambda_1 \cos \vartheta + \mu_1 \sin \vartheta + \lambda_2 \cos 2\vartheta + \mu_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \dots \\ + \lambda_n \cos n\vartheta + \mu_n \sin n\vartheta,$$

in which  $\lambda_n$  and  $\mu_n$  are not both zero, has exactly  $2n$  zeros, if both real and complex values are admitted and multiple zeros are counted according to their multiplicity. [ $\vartheta$  and  $\vartheta + 2\pi$  are regarded as not distinct.]

**15.** Determine all trigonometric polynomials of order  $n$

$$g(\vartheta) = \lambda_0 + \lambda_1 \cos \vartheta + \mu_1 \sin \vartheta + \lambda_2 \cos 2\vartheta + \mu_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \dots \\ + \lambda_n \cos n\vartheta + \mu_n \sin n\vartheta,$$

which have real coefficients and satisfy identically in  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  the relation

$$\sum_{v=0}^n g\left(\alpha - \frac{v\pi}{n+1}\right) g\left(\frac{v\pi}{n+1} - \beta\right) = g(\alpha - \beta).$$

### § 3. Some Special Trigonometric Polynomials

$$\mathbf{16.} \quad \frac{1}{2} + \cos \vartheta + \cos 2\vartheta + \dots + \cos n\vartheta = \frac{\sin \frac{2n+1}{2} \vartheta}{2 \sin \frac{\vartheta}{2}},$$

$$\cos \vartheta + \cos 2\vartheta + \cos 3\vartheta + \dots + \cos n\vartheta = \frac{\sin \frac{n}{2} \vartheta \cos \frac{n+1}{2} \vartheta}{\sin \frac{\vartheta}{2}},$$

$$\cos \vartheta + \cos 3\vartheta + \cos 5\vartheta + \dots + \cos (2n-1)\vartheta = \frac{\sin 2n\vartheta}{2 \sin \vartheta},$$

$$\sin \vartheta + \sin 2\vartheta + \sin 3\vartheta + \dots + \sin n\vartheta = \frac{\sin \frac{n}{2} \vartheta \sin \frac{n+1}{2} \vartheta}{\sin \frac{\vartheta}{2}}.$$

**17.**

$$\frac{\sin \vartheta}{\sin \vartheta} + \frac{\sin 3\vartheta}{\sin \vartheta} + \frac{\sin 5\vartheta}{\sin \vartheta} + \dots + \frac{\sin (2n-1)\vartheta}{\sin \vartheta} = \left( \frac{\sin n\vartheta}{\sin \vartheta} \right)^2.$$

What may be deduced from this for  $\vartheta=0$ ?

18.

$$\frac{n+1}{2} + n \cos \vartheta + (n-1) \cos 2\vartheta + \dots + \cos n\vartheta = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{\sin(n+1)\frac{\vartheta}{2}}{\sin \frac{\vartheta}{2}} \right)^2.$$

19. Where do the zeros of the following trigonometric polynomials lie:

$$\begin{aligned} &\frac{1}{2} + \cos \vartheta + \cos 2\vartheta + \dots + \cos n\vartheta, \quad \cos \vartheta + \cos 2\vartheta + \dots + \cos n\vartheta, \\ &\cos \vartheta + \cos 3\vartheta + \cos 5\vartheta + \dots + \cos(2n-1)\vartheta, \\ &\sin \vartheta + \sin 2\vartheta + \dots + \sin n\vartheta, \quad \sin \vartheta + \sin 3\vartheta + \dots + \sin(2n-1)\vartheta, \\ &\frac{n+1}{2} + n \cos \vartheta + (n-1) \cos 2\vartheta + \dots + \cos n\vartheta \quad ? \end{aligned}$$

20. Derive the identity:

$$\cos \vartheta + \cos 2\vartheta + \dots + \cos n\vartheta = \frac{1}{2} \sin(n+1)\vartheta \cot \frac{\vartheta}{2} - \cos^2 \frac{n+1}{2} \vartheta.$$

21. Show that

$$\sin \vartheta + \sin 2\vartheta + \dots + \sin n\vartheta + \frac{\sin(n+1)\vartheta}{2}$$

is non-negative for  $0 \leq \vartheta \leq \pi$ .

22. The arithmetic means of the partial sums of the series

$$\frac{1}{2} + \cos \vartheta + \cos 2\vartheta + \cos 3\vartheta + \dots + \cos n\vartheta + \dots$$

are non-negative for all  $\vartheta$ ; they converge as  $n$  tends to infinity uniformly to 0 if  $\varepsilon \leq \vartheta \leq 2\pi - \varepsilon$ ,  $\varepsilon > 0$ .

23. The trigonometric polynomial

$$A(n, \vartheta) = \sin \vartheta + \frac{\sin 2\vartheta}{2} + \frac{\sin 3\vartheta}{3} + \dots + \frac{\sin n\vartheta}{n}$$

has in the interval  $0 \leq \vartheta \leq \pi$  at each of the points

$$\frac{\pi}{n+1}, \quad 3 \frac{\pi}{n+1}, \quad 5 \frac{\pi}{n+1}, \quad \dots, \quad (2q-1) \frac{\pi}{n+1}$$

(and only at these points) a relative maximum, and at each of the points

$$\frac{2\pi}{n}, \quad 2 \frac{2\pi}{n}, \quad 3 \frac{2\pi}{n}, \quad \dots, \quad (q-1) \frac{2\pi}{n}$$

(and only at these points) a relative minimum, where  $q = [(n+1)/2]$ .24 (continued). The maxima of  $A(n, \vartheta)$  in the interval  $0 \leq \vartheta \leq \pi$  decrease monotonically, so that the absolute maximum of  $A(n, \vartheta)$  in the whole interval  $0 \leq \vartheta \leq \pi$  is equal to  $A(n, \pi/(n+1))$ . [20.]25 (continued). The maxima  $A(n, \pi/(n+1))$  increase monotonically with  $n$ , and we have

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} A\left(n, \frac{\pi}{n+1}\right) = \int_0^{\pi} \frac{\sin \vartheta}{\vartheta} d\vartheta = 1.8519 \dots$$

**26. The trigonometric polynomial**

$$B(n, \vartheta) = \cos \vartheta + \frac{\cos 2\vartheta}{2} + \frac{\cos 3\vartheta}{3} + \cdots + \frac{\cos n\vartheta}{n}$$

has in the interval  $0 \leq \vartheta \leq \pi$  at each of the points

$$0, \quad \frac{2\pi}{n}, \quad 2\frac{2\pi}{n}, \quad \dots, \quad p\frac{2\pi}{n}$$

(and only at these points) a relative maximum, and at each of the points

$$\frac{2\pi}{n+1}, \quad 2\frac{2\pi}{n+1}, \quad 3\frac{2\pi}{n+1}, \quad \dots, \quad q\frac{2\pi}{n+1}$$

(and only at these points) a relative minimum, where  $p = [n/2]$ ,  $q = [(n+1)/2]$ .

**27 (continued).** The trigonometric polynomial  $B(n, \vartheta)$  assumes its least value for  $\vartheta = [(n+1)/2] 2\pi/(n+1)$ . [21.]

**28.** For  $0 \leq \vartheta \leq 2\pi$  and  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$

$$B(n, \vartheta) = \cos \vartheta + \frac{\cos 2\vartheta}{2} + \frac{\cos 3\vartheta}{3} + \cdots + \frac{\cos n\vartheta}{n} \geq -1.$$

**§ 4. Some Problems on Fourier Series**

Let  $f(\vartheta)$  be a periodic function of period  $2\pi$ , properly integrable in the interval  $0 \leq \vartheta \leq 2\pi$ . The constants

$$a_n = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} f(\vartheta) \cos n\vartheta \, d\vartheta, \quad b_n = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} f(\vartheta) \sin n\vartheta \, d\vartheta, \quad n=0, 1, 2, \dots; \quad b_0=0,$$

are termed the *Fourier coefficients*, and the formally constructed series

$$a_0 + 2a_1 \cos \vartheta + 2b_1 \sin \vartheta + 2a_2 \cos 2\vartheta + 2b_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \cdots \\ + 2a_n \cos n\vartheta + 2b_n \sin n\vartheta + \cdots$$

the *Fourier series* of  $f(\vartheta)$ . If  $f(\vartheta)$  is of bounded variation, then this series is convergent to the sum

$$\frac{f(\vartheta+0) + f(\vartheta-0)}{2}.$$

**29.** Let  $f(\vartheta)$  ( $\vartheta$  real) be a real-valued periodic function,  $f(\vartheta+2\pi)=f(\vartheta)$ . Each of the following equations (or pairs of equations respectively) characterizes a special symmetry property of the graph of the curve  $y=f(x)$ :

- (1)  $f(-\vartheta)=f(\vartheta)$ ,
- (2)  $f(-\vartheta)=-f(\vartheta)$ ,
- (3)  $f(\vartheta+\pi)=-f(\vartheta)$ ,
- (4a)  $f(-\vartheta)=f(\vartheta)$ ,  $f(\vartheta+\pi)=-f(\vartheta)$ ,
- (4b)  $f(-\vartheta)=-f(\vartheta)$ ,  $f(\vartheta+\pi)=-f(\vartheta)$ ,
- (5)  $f(\vartheta+\pi)=f(\vartheta)$ .

Show that the existence of such a symmetry property is equivalent to the vanishing of certain (infinitely many) Fourier coefficients.

**30.** What is the Fourier series of a trigonometric polynomial  $f(\vartheta)$  of order  $n$ ?

**31.** Let  $n$  and  $\nu$  be positive integers,  $0 \leq \nu \leq n$ . Then

$$\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} \left(2 \cos \frac{\vartheta}{2}\right)^n \cos \left(\frac{n}{2} - \nu\right) \vartheta d\vartheta = \binom{n}{\nu}.$$

**32.** Let the series of numbers

$$a_0, a_1, b_1, a_2, b_2, \dots, a_n, b_n, \dots$$

be such that the "trigonometric series"

$$a_0 + 2a_1 \cos \vartheta + 2b_1 \sin \vartheta + 2a_2 \cos 2\vartheta + 2b_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \dots \\ + 2a_n \cos n\vartheta + 2b_n \sin n\vartheta + \dots$$

is uniformly convergent for all values of  $\vartheta$  and therefore represents a periodic continuous function  $f(\vartheta)$  of period  $2\pi$ . What is the Fourier series of  $f(\vartheta)$ ?

**33.** 
$$\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{\pi} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\sin 2\pi nx}{n} = \begin{cases} x - [x], & \text{if } x \text{ is not an integer,} \\ \frac{1}{2}, & \text{if } x \text{ is an integer.} \end{cases}$$

**34.** Show that

$$|\sin \vartheta| = \frac{2}{\pi} - \frac{4}{\pi} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\cos 2n\vartheta}{4n^2 - 1} = \frac{8}{\pi} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\sin^2 n\vartheta}{4n^2 - 1}.$$

**35.** The constants

$$\rho_m = \frac{2}{\pi} \int_0^{\frac{\pi}{2}} \frac{|\sin m\vartheta|}{\sin \vartheta} d\vartheta, \quad m = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$

(which are closely related to the so-called Lebesgue constants of the Fourier series) increase steadily with  $m$ . They may be represented in the following form:

$$\rho_m = \frac{16}{\pi^2} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\frac{1}{1} + \frac{1}{3} + \frac{1}{5} + \dots + \frac{1}{2nm-1}}{4n^2 - 1}.$$

[Substitute for  $|\sin m\vartheta|$  the series of **34** and apply **17**.]

**36.** Let  $f(\vartheta)$  ( $\vartheta$  real) be a real-valued periodic function of period  $\pi$ , and in addition an "even function", i.e.  $f(-\vartheta) = f(\vartheta)$ . If  $f(\vartheta)$  is concave in the interval  $0 \leq \vartheta \leq \pi$  [Vol. I p. 65], then its Fourier series has the form

$$c_0 - c_1 \cos 2\vartheta - c_2 \cos 4\vartheta - \dots - c_n \cos 2n\vartheta - \dots,$$

where all the coefficients  $c_1, c_2, \dots, c_n, \dots$  are non-negative.

**37.** Let the function  $f(\vartheta)$  of **36** satisfy in addition the condition  $f(0) = 0$ . Further let  $\vartheta^{-p} f(\vartheta)$  be bounded,  $p > 0$ . Then the sequence

$$\rho_m = \int_0^{\frac{\pi}{2}} \frac{f(m\vartheta)}{\sin \vartheta} d\vartheta, \quad m = 1, 2, 3, \dots,$$

increases monotonically with  $m$ . [A generalization of **35**.]



**38.** Let  $M_n$  denote the maximum of

$$I(n, \vartheta) = \frac{|\sin \vartheta|}{1} + \frac{|\sin 2\vartheta|}{2} + \frac{|\sin 3\vartheta|}{3} + \dots + \frac{|\sin n\vartheta|}{n}$$

for all values of  $\vartheta$ . Then we have the inequalities

$$\frac{2}{\pi} \sum_{\nu=1}^n \frac{1}{\nu} < M_n < \frac{2}{\pi} \sum_{\nu=1}^n \frac{1}{\nu} + \frac{2}{\pi} \quad [34, 28.]$$

### § 5. Real Non-negative Trigonometric Polynomials

**39.** Let  $x_0, x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$  be arbitrary complex numbers,  $x_0 \neq 0, x_n \neq 0$ . The expression

$$|x_0 + x_1 z + x_2 z^2 + \dots + x_n z^n|^2, \quad z = e^{i\vartheta}, \quad (\vartheta \text{ real}),$$

represents a real non-negative trigonometric polynomial of order precisely  $n$ . Calculate the coefficients of this trigonometric polynomial.

**40.** If the real trigonometric polynomial of  $n$ th order

$$g(\vartheta) = \lambda_0 + \lambda_1 \cos \vartheta + \mu_1 \sin \vartheta + \lambda_2 \cos 2\vartheta + \mu_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \dots + \lambda_n \cos n\vartheta + \mu_n \sin n\vartheta, \quad (\lambda_i, \mu_i \text{ real}, 0 \leq i \leq n, 1 \leq j \leq n)$$

can assume only non-negative values for all real  $\vartheta$ , then it may be represented in the following form:

$$g(\vartheta) = |h(z)|^2, \quad z = e^{i\vartheta}, \quad (\vartheta \text{ real}),$$

where  $h(z) = x_0 + x_1 z + x_2 z^2 + \dots + x_n z^n$  is a polynomial of  $n$ th degree. [Factorize the polynomial  $G(z)$  considered in **11** into linear factors.]

**41.** If  $g(\vartheta)$  ( $\vartheta$  real) denotes a real non-negative cosine polynomial, then one can always find a polynomial  $h(z) = x_0 + x_1 z + x_2 z^2 + \dots + x_n z^n$  with only *real* coefficients such that we have

$$g(\vartheta) = |h(z)|^2, \quad z = e^{i\vartheta}.$$

**42.** Show that the representation of a real non-negative trigonometric polynomial as given in **40** for real  $\vartheta$  is in general possible in several ways.

**43.** Show that in **40** there always exists a representation such that  $h(z)$  satisfies the following conditions:

- (1)  $h(z)$  is different from 0 for  $|z| < 1$ ;
- (2)  $h(0)$  is real and positive.

Here it is assumed that  $g(\vartheta)$  is not identically zero.

### § 6. Real Non-negative Polynomials

**44.** If a polynomial is real and non-negative for all real  $x$  then it may be written in the form  $[A(x)]^2 + [B(x)]^2$ , where  $A(x)$  and  $B(x)$  are suitable polynomials with only real coefficients.

**45.** Every polynomial which is real and non-negative for non-negative real values of  $x$ , may be written in the form

$$[A(x)]^2 + [B(x)]^2 + x\{[C(x)]^2 + [D(x)]^2\},$$

where  $A(x)$ ,  $B(x)$ ,  $C(x)$ ,  $D(x)$  denote polynomials with only real coefficients.

**46.** Every polynomial of degree  $n$  which can assume only real and non-negative values for  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$  may be represented in the form

$$[A(x)]^2 + (1-x^2)[B(x)]^2,$$

where  $A(x)$  and  $B(x)$  are polynomials of  $n$ th and  $(n-1)$ th degrees, respectively, with only real coefficients. **[41.]**

**47.** Every polynomial  $P(x)$  of  $n$ th degree which can assume only real and non-negative values for  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$  may be written in the form

$$[A(x)]^2 + (1-x)[B(x)]^2 + (1+x)[C(x)]^2 + (1-x^2)[D(x)]^2$$

and in fact in such a manner that all the four terms are at most of  $n$ th degree.

If  $P(x)$  is of degree  $2m$ , there exists a representation for which  $B(x)=C(x)=0$ ,  $A(x)$  is of degree  $m$  and  $D(x)$  of degree  $m-1$ .

**48.** Can every polynomial  $P(x)$  of degree  $n$  which is real and positive for  $-1 < x < 1$  be represented in the form

$$P(x) = \sum A(1-x)^\alpha(1+x)^\beta,$$

where  $A \geq 0$ ,  $\alpha + \beta \leq n$ , and  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  are non-negative integers?

**49.** Every polynomial  $P(x)$  which is real and positive in the interval  $-1 < x < 1$ , can be represented in the form

$$P(x) = \sum A(1-x)^\alpha(1+x)^\beta,$$

where  $A \geq 0$ , and  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  are non-negative integers.

## § 7. Maximum-Minimum Problems on Trigonometric Polynomials

**50.** Let

$$g(\vartheta) = \lambda_0 + \lambda_1 \cos \vartheta + \mu_1 \sin \vartheta + \lambda_2 \cos 2\vartheta + \mu_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \dots \\ + \lambda_n \cos n\vartheta + \mu_n \sin n\vartheta$$

( $\vartheta$  real) be a real non-negative trigonometric polynomial of  $n$ th order, and let the constant term in  $g(\vartheta)$  be equal to 1, i.e.

$$\lambda_0 = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} g(\vartheta) d\vartheta = 1.$$

Then

$$g(\vartheta) \leq n+1.$$

The equality sign here holds only if

$$\begin{aligned} g(\vartheta) &= \frac{1}{n+1} |1+z+z^2+\dots+z^n|^2 \\ &= 1 + 2 \frac{n}{n+1} \cos(\vartheta - \vartheta_0) + 2 \frac{n-1}{n+1} \cos 2(\vartheta - \vartheta_0) + \\ &\quad \dots + 2 \frac{1}{n+1} \cos n(\vartheta - \vartheta_0), \quad z = e^{i(\vartheta - \vartheta_0)} \end{aligned}$$

and  $\vartheta = \vartheta_0$  (or  $\vartheta = \vartheta_0 + 2k\pi$ ,  $k=0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \dots$ ).

**51 (continued).** We have

$$\lambda_n^2 + \mu_n^2 \leq 1.$$

The equality sign here holds only for

$$g(\vartheta) = 1 + \cos n(\vartheta - \vartheta_0).$$

**52 (continued).** We have

$$\lambda_1^2 + \mu_1^2 \leq 4 \cos^2 \frac{\pi}{n+2}.$$

**53.** The geometric mean [II 48] of a real and non-negative trigonometric polynomial  $g(\vartheta)$  ( $\vartheta$  real) which does not vanish identically is

$$e^{\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} \log g(\vartheta) d\vartheta} = |h(0)|^2 = [h(0)]^2,$$

where  $g(\vartheta) = |h(e^{i\vartheta})|^2$  is the "standard representation" of  $g(\vartheta)$  defined in 43.

**54.** Let the real non-negative trigonometric polynomial of order  $n$  which does not vanish identically

$$\begin{aligned} g(\vartheta) &= \lambda_0 + \lambda_1 \cos \vartheta + \mu_1 \sin \vartheta + \lambda_2 \cos 2\vartheta + \mu_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \dots \\ &\quad + \lambda_n \cos n\vartheta + \mu_n \sin n\vartheta \end{aligned}$$

( $\vartheta$  real) have the geometric mean 1. Then

$$g(\vartheta) \leq 4^n.$$

The equality sign here holds only for

$$g(\vartheta) = \left( 2 \cos \frac{\vartheta - \vartheta_0}{2} \right)^{2n}$$

and for  $\vartheta = \vartheta_0$  (or  $\vartheta = \vartheta_0 + 2k\pi$ ,  $k=0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \dots$ ).

**55 (continued).** The arithmetic mean of  $g(\vartheta)$  is

$$\lambda_0 = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} g(\vartheta) d\vartheta \leq \binom{2n}{n}.$$

When does the equality sign hold?

**56 (continued).**

$$\sqrt{\lambda_\nu^2 + \mu_\nu^2} \leq 2 \binom{2n}{n+\nu}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, 3, \dots, n.$$

When does the equality sign hold here?

**57.** A real trigonometric polynomial without a constant term

$$g(\vartheta) = \lambda_1 \cos \vartheta + \mu_1 \sin \vartheta + \lambda_2 \cos 2\vartheta + \mu_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \cdots \\ + \lambda_n \cos n\vartheta + \mu_n \sin n\vartheta$$

cannot have the same sign for all real  $\vartheta$  unless it is identically zero. This theorem is to be proved *without* the use of integral calculus.

**58.** Let  $-m$  and  $M$  be the minimum and maximum, respectively, of a real trigonometric polynomial of  $n$ th order of the form

$$g(\vartheta) = \lambda_1 \cos \vartheta + \mu_1 \sin \vartheta + \lambda_2 \cos 2\vartheta + \mu_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \cdots + \lambda_n \cos n\vartheta + \mu_n \sin n\vartheta,$$

( $\vartheta$  real)  $m \geq 0$ ,  $M \geq 0$ . [57.] Then we have

$$M \leq nm, \quad m \leq nM.$$

**59.** The first mean-value theorem of integral calculus may be strengthened for real trigonometric polynomials as follows: Let  $g(\vartheta)$  be a real trigonometric polynomial of  $n$ th order and let  $m$  be the minimum and  $M$  the maximum of  $g(\vartheta)$  ( $\vartheta$  real). Then we have

$$m + \frac{M-m}{n+1} \leq \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} g(\vartheta) d\vartheta \leq M - \frac{M-m}{n+1}.$$

**60.** Let  $-m$  be the minimum and  $M$  the maximum of a real trigonometric polynomial of  $n$ th order

$$g(\vartheta) = \lambda_0 + \lambda_1 \cos \vartheta + \mu_1 \sin \vartheta + \lambda_2 \cos 2\vartheta + \mu_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \cdots \\ + \lambda_n \cos n\vartheta + \mu_n \sin n\vartheta,$$

( $\vartheta$  real). Then either  $m$  or  $M$  is greater than  $\sqrt{\lambda_n^2 + \mu_n^2}$ . We have  $m = M = \sqrt{\lambda_n^2 + \mu_n^2}$  only if  $g(\vartheta) = c \cos n(\vartheta - \vartheta_0)$ .

**61.** Compound  $n$  simple harmonic motions with periods in the ratio

$$1 : \frac{1}{2} : \frac{1}{3} : \cdots : \frac{1}{n}$$

and with arbitrary phases. The greatest displacement of the resulting motion is then equal to at least the arithmetic mean of the amplitudes of the separate simple harmonic motions.

With the notation of **58**, we are dealing with the inequality:

$$M \geq \frac{\sqrt{\lambda_1^2 + \mu_1^2} + \sqrt{\lambda_2^2 + \mu_2^2} + \cdots + \sqrt{\lambda_n^2 + \mu_n^2}}{n}.$$

(Strengthening of **50**.)

## § 8. Maximum-Minimum Problems on Polynomials

**62.** Let  $P(x)$  be a polynomial of degree  $n$  with leading coefficient 1. Then the maximum of  $|P(x)|$  in the interval  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$  is equal to at least  $1/2^{n-1}$ . If  $|P(x)| \leq 1/2^{n-1}$  for  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$ , then  $P(x)$  differs only by a constant factor from the polynomial  $T_n(x)$  defined at the beginning of Part VI. [60.]

Consider the set of all polynomials of degree  $n$  whose leading coefficient is equal to 1, i.e. the polynomials

$$P(x) = x^n + a_1 x^{n-1} + a_2 x^{n-2} + \dots + a_n$$

with arbitrary complex coefficients  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$ . Denote by  $\mu_n(\alpha, \beta)$  the minimum of the maxima of all  $|P(x)|$  in  $\alpha \leq x \leq \beta$ . The theorem of 62 may then be formulated as follows: For  $\alpha = -1, \beta = 1$  this "minimum maximorum" is equal to

$$\mu_n(-1, 1) = \frac{1}{2^{n-1}}.$$

**63.** We have

$$\mu_n(\alpha, \beta) = 2 \left( \frac{\beta - \alpha}{4} \right)^n = 2 \left( \frac{l}{4} \right)^n.$$

The necessary and sufficient condition in order that there exist polynomials with leading coefficient 1 which assume arbitrarily small values in a prescribed interval is therefore that the length  $l$  of this interval is less than 4.

**64.** Let the independent variable  $x$  range through the two intervals of equal length which are formed from the interval  $\alpha \leq x \leq \beta$  by removing from it the interval of length  $d$  with center  $(\alpha + \beta)/2$ ;  $d < \beta - \alpha = l$ . Let  $\mu_n$  be the greatest lower bound of the maxima of all polynomials of degree  $n$  with leading coefficient 1. Then we have

$$\mu_n = 2 \left( \frac{l^2 - d^2}{16} \right)^{\frac{n}{2}},$$

if  $n$  is even, and

$$d \left( \frac{l^2 - d^2}{16} \right)^{\frac{n-1}{2}} \leq \mu_n \leq l \left( \frac{l^2 - d^2}{16} \right)^{\frac{n-1}{2}}$$

if  $n$  is odd. [63.]

**65.** Consider the set of all polynomials of degree  $n$  of the form

$$Q(z) = z^n + b_1 z^{n-1} + b_2 z^{n-2} + \dots + b_n$$

with arbitrary complex coefficients  $b_1, b_2, \dots, b_n$ . The maximum of  $|Q(z)|$  on the unit circle  $|z| = 1$  is greater than or equal to 1 and is equal to 1 only if  $Q(z) = z^n$ .

**66.** One can give the following geometric formulation to 63 and 65: Take  $n$  fixed points  $P_1, P_2, \dots, P_n$  in a plane, and let  $P$  be a variable point in that plane. The function of the point  $P$  given by

$$\overline{PP_1} \cdot \overline{PP_2} \cdot \dots \cdot \overline{PP_n}$$

(where  $\overline{PP_i}$  is the distance between the points  $P$  and  $P_i$ ) assumes on every straight line segment of length  $l$  a maximum value greater than or equal to  $2(1/4)^n$  and on every circle of radius  $r$  a maximum value greater than or equal to  $r^n$ . The only possible extreme cases are those in which the points  $P_1, P_2, \dots, P_n$  are distributed on the given line segment in the same way as the zeros of the Tchebychev polynomial  $T_n(x)$  [1] in the interval  $-1, 1$  or in which the  $n$  points all coincide with the centre of the circle.

Prove that the same assertion holds if the points  $P_1, P_2, \dots, P_n$  are arbitrarily distributed in space.

### § 9. The Lagrange Interpolation Formula

Let  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$  be arbitrary distinct real or complex numbers. Set

$$\begin{aligned} f(x) &= a_0(x-x_1)(x-x_2)\dots(x-x_n), \quad a_0 \neq 0, \\ f_\nu(x) &= \frac{1}{f'(x_\nu)} \frac{f(x)}{x-x_\nu} \\ &= \frac{(x-x_1)\dots(x-x_{\nu-1})(x-x_{\nu+1})\dots(x-x_n)}{(x_\nu-x_1)\dots(x_\nu-x_{\nu-1})(x_\nu-x_{\nu+1})\dots(x_\nu-x_n)}, \quad \nu=1, 2, \dots, n. \end{aligned}$$

Every polynomial of degree  $n-1$  may be represented by means of its values at the points  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$  as follows:

$$(*) \quad P(x) = P(x_1)f_1(x) + P(x_2)f_2(x) + \dots + P(x_n)f_n(x)$$

(the *Lagrange interpolation formula*). The polynomials  $f_\nu(x)$  are called the *basis polynomials* of the interpolation.

**67.** Let the polynomial of  $n$ th degree

$$f(x) = a_0x^n + a_1x^{n-1} + \dots + a_{n-1}x + a_n$$

have only distinct zeros  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$ . Then we have

$$\sigma_k = \sum_{\nu=1}^n \frac{x_\nu^k}{f'(x_\nu)} = \begin{cases} 0, & \text{if } 0 \leq k \leq n-2, \\ a_0^{-1}, & \text{if } k = n-1. \end{cases}$$

Furthermore  $\sigma_k$  is independent of  $a_n$  for  $k = n, n+1, \dots, 2n-2$  and is linear in  $a_n$  with coefficient  $-a_0^{-2}$  for  $k = 2n-1$ .

**68** (continued). We have

$$\sum_{\nu=1}^n \frac{kx_\nu^{k-1}f'(x_\nu) - x_\nu^k f''(x_\nu)}{[f'(x_\nu)]^3} = \begin{cases} 0, & \text{if } 0 \leq k \leq 2n-2, \\ a_0^{-2}, & \text{if } k = 2n-1. \end{cases}$$

**69** (continued). Let  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$  be different from 0 and  $-1$ . Prove that

$$\sum_{\nu=1}^n \frac{x_\nu^n f(x_\nu^{-1})}{f'(x_\nu)(1+x_\nu)} = (-1)^{n-1} (1 - x_1 x_2 \dots x_n).$$

**70.** Let  $x_0, x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$  be arbitrary integers,  $x_0 < x_1 < x_2 < \dots < x_n$ . Every polynomial of  $n$ th degree of the form

$$x^n + a_1x^{n-1} + a_2x^{n-2} + \dots + a_n$$

assumes at the points  $x_0, x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$  values, at least one of which is of absolute value  $\geq n!/2^n$ .

**71.** If one chooses the zeros of  $T_n(x)$  [1], i.e. the numbers  $x_\nu = \cos(2\nu-1)\pi/(2n)$ ,  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, n$ , as interpolation points, then the basis polynomials are

$$f_\nu(x) = \frac{(-1)^{\nu-1} \sqrt{1-x_\nu^2}}{n} \frac{T_n(x)}{x-x_\nu}, \quad \nu=1, 2, \dots, n.$$

Hence every polynomial  $P(x)$  of degree  $n-1$  may be represented as follows:

$$P(x) = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\nu=1}^n (-1)^{\nu-1} \sqrt{1-x_\nu^2} P(x_\nu) \frac{T_n(x)}{x-x_\nu}.$$

The square roots are to be taken everywhere as positive.

**72.** If one chooses the zeros of  $U_n(x)$  [1], that is the numbers

$$x_\nu = \cos \nu \frac{\pi}{n+1}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n,$$

as interpolation points, then the basis polynomials are

$$f_\nu(x) = (-1)^{\nu-1} \frac{1-x_\nu^2}{n+1} \frac{U_n(x)}{x-x_\nu}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n.$$

Hence every polynomial of degree  $n-1$  may be represented as follows:

$$P(x) = \frac{1}{n+1} \sum_{\nu=1}^n (-1)^{\nu-1} (1-x_\nu^2) P(x_\nu) \frac{U_n(x)}{x-x_\nu}.$$

**73.** If one chooses the zeros of  $U_{n-1}(x)$  ( $x^2-1$ ), that is the numbers

$$x_\nu = \cos \nu \frac{\pi}{n}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n-1,$$

and in addition  $x_0 = 1, x_n = -1$  as interpolation points, then the basis polynomials  $f_0(x), f_1(x), f_2(x), \dots, f_n(x)$  are the following:

$$f_\nu(x) = \frac{(-1)^\nu}{n} \frac{U_{n-1}(x)(x^2-1)}{x-x_\nu}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n-1,$$

$$f_0(x) = \frac{1}{2n} U_{n-1}(x)(x+1), \quad f_n(x) = \frac{(-1)^n}{2n} U_{n-1}(x)(x-1).$$

Hence every polynomial  $P(x)$  of degree  $n$  may be represented in the following form:

$$P(x) = \frac{1}{2n} U_{n-1}(x) [P(1)(x+1) + (-1)^n P(-1)(x-1)] \\ + \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\nu=1}^{n-1} (-1)^\nu P(x_\nu) \frac{U_{n-1}(x)(x^2-1)}{x-x_\nu}.$$

**74.** If one chooses the  $n$ th roots of unity  $\varepsilon_\nu = e^{\frac{2\pi i \nu}{n}}, \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n$ , as interpolation points, then the basis polynomials are

$$f_\nu(x) = \frac{\varepsilon_\nu x^n - 1}{n x - \varepsilon_\nu}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n.$$

Hence for an arbitrary polynomial  $P(x)$  of degree  $n-1$  we have the representation

$$P(x) = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\nu=1}^n \varepsilon_\nu P(\varepsilon_\nu) \frac{x^n - 1}{x - \varepsilon_\nu}.$$

**75.** Let the polynomials  $P(x)$  and  $Q(x)$  be both of degree  $n$ , and let  $x_0, x_1,$

$x_2, \dots, x_n$  be any  $n+1$  distinct or in part coinciding real or complex numbers. From the  $n+1$  equations

$$P(x_0) = Q(x_0), \quad P'(x_1) = Q'(x_1), \quad P''(x_2) = Q''(x_2), \quad \dots, \quad P^{(n)}(x_n) = Q^{(n)}(x_n)$$

it follows that we have identically

$$P(x) = Q(x).$$

**76.** It is possible, and in fact in a unique manner, to determine, corresponding to  $n+1$  arbitrary given numbers  $c_0, c_1, c_2, \dots, c_n$ , a polynomial  $P(x)$  of degree  $\leq n$  such that

$$P(0) = c_0, \quad P'(1) = c_1, \quad P''(2) = c_2, \dots, \quad P^{(n)}(n) = c_n$$

[75]. This polynomial  $P(x)$  may be represented in the form

$$P(x) = P(0)A_0(x) + P'(1)A_1(x) + P''(2)A_2(x) + \dots + P^{(n)}(n)A_n(x),$$

where  $A_0(x), A_1(x), \dots, A_n(x)$  are arithmetically determined polynomials, independent of the arbitrarily assigned numbers  $c_0 = P(0), c_1 = P'(1), \dots, c_n = P^{(n)}(n)$ . (They may be thought of as the "basis polynomials" of this interpolation, which is essentially different from the Lagrange interpolation.)

#### § 10. The Theorems of S. Bernstein and A. Markov

**77.** For the set of all polynomials of degree  $n-1$ ,  $P(x) = a_0x^{n-1} + a_1x^{n-2} + \dots + a_{n-1}$ , which satisfy in the interval  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$  the inequality

$$\sqrt{1-x^2}|P(x)| \leq 1,$$

the maximum value that  $|a_0|$  can assume is equal to  $2^{n-1}$ , i.e.

$$|a_0| \leq 2^{n-1}.$$

The equality sign holds if and only if  $P(x) = \gamma U_{n-1}(x)$ ,  $|\gamma| = 1$ . [71]

**78.** Deduce from 73 a new proof of 62.

**79.** Deduce from 74 a new proof of 65.

**80.** Consider the set of all polynomials  $P(x)$  of degree  $n-1$  which satisfy in the interval  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$  the inequality

$$\sqrt{1-x^2}|P(x)| \leq 1.$$

Then we have

$$|P(x)| \leq n, \quad -1 \leq x \leq 1.$$

The equality sign holds only if  $P(x) = \gamma U_{n-1}(x)$  with  $|\gamma| = 1$  and  $x = \pm 1$ .

**81.** Prove the following generalization of the second inequality in 7: Let

$$S(\vartheta) = \mu_1 \sin \vartheta + \mu_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \mu_3 \sin 3\vartheta + \dots + \mu_n \sin n\vartheta$$

be an arbitrary sine polynomial of  $n$ th order with real coefficients for which we have  $|S(\vartheta)| \leq 1$ . Then

$$\left| \frac{S(\vartheta)}{\sin \vartheta} \right| \leq n.$$

The equality sign holds only for  $S(\vartheta) = \pm \sin n\vartheta$ .



**82.** Let the trigonometric polynomial of  $n$ th order with real coefficients

$$g(\vartheta) = \lambda_0 + \lambda_1 \cos \vartheta + \mu_1 \sin \vartheta + \lambda_2 \cos 2\vartheta + \mu_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \dots \\ + \lambda_n \cos n\vartheta + \mu_n \sin n\vartheta$$

satisfy for all real  $\vartheta$  the inequality

$$|g(\vartheta)| \leq 1.$$

Then we have

$$|g'(\vartheta)| \leq n.$$

[Consider  $S(\vartheta) = [g(\vartheta_0 + \vartheta) - g(\vartheta_0 - \vartheta)]/2$ ,  $\vartheta_0 = 0$ .]

**83.** Let the polynomial  $P(x)$  of  $n$ th degree satisfy in the interval  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$  the inequality  $|P(x)| \leq 1$ . Then we have

$$|P'(x)| \leq n^2.$$

The equality sign holds only if  $P(x) = \gamma T_n(x)$ ,  $|\gamma| = 1$ ,  $x = \pm 1$ . [Consider  $P(\cos \vartheta)$ .]

## § 11. Legendre Polynomials and Related Topics

We define the *Legendre polynomials*

$$P_0(x), P_1(x), P_2(x), \dots, P_n(x),$$

by the following conditions:

(1)  $P_n(x)$  is of  $n$ th degree, has real coefficients,<sup>1</sup> and satisfies

$$\int_{-1}^1 P_n(x) x^\nu dx = 0, \quad \nu = 0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1; \quad n \geq 1;$$

(2)  $P_n(x)$  satisfies

$$\int_{-1}^1 [P_n(x)]^2 dx = \frac{2}{2n+1}, \quad n = 0, 1, 2, \dots;$$

(3) the coefficient of  $x^n$  in  $P_n(x)$  is positive,  $n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$

The first condition implies that, if  $K(x)$  denotes an arbitrary polynomial of degree  $n-1$ , then the equation

$$\int_{-1}^1 P_n(x) K(x) dx = 0$$

holds. From this it follows that  $P_n(x)$  is uniquely determined by (1), apart from a constant factor. For if  $P_n^*(x)$  were another polynomial with the same property, then  $aP_n(x) - bP_n^*(x)$ , where  $a, b$  are constants,  $a \neq 0$ ,  $b \neq 0$ , would also have this property. Choosing  $a$  and  $b$  such that  $aP_n(x) - bP_n^*(x)$  is of degree  $n-1$ , it would then follow from

$$\int_{-1}^1 [aP_n(x) - bP_n^*(x)]^2 dx \\ = a \int_{-1}^1 P_n(x) [aP_n(x) - bP_n^*(x)] dx - b \int_{-1}^1 P_n^*(x) [aP_n(x) - bP_n^*(x)] dx = 0,$$

<sup>1</sup> The requirement that the coefficients be real can be omitted if certain details are appropriately amended. Cf. also 98, 99, 100.

that  $aP_n(x) - bP_n^*(x) = 0$ . From (2) it then follows that  $|a| = |b|$  and from (3) that  $a = b$ .

The integral conditions (1), (2) may be combined in the following form:

$$\int_{-1}^1 P_m(x)P_n(x) dx = \begin{cases} 0, & \text{if } m \geq n, \\ \frac{2}{2n+1}, & \text{if } m=n; \quad m, n=0, 1, 2, \dots \end{cases}$$

(the *orthogonality condition*).

**84.**  $P_n(x)$  is, apart from a constant factor, equal to the  $n$ th derivative of  $(x^2-1)^n$ :

$$P_n(x) = \frac{1}{2^n n!} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} (x^2-1)^n \quad (\text{Rodrigues' formula}).$$

**85.** We have

$$(1-t)^n P_n\left(\frac{1+t}{1-t}\right) = 1 + \binom{n}{1} t + \binom{n}{2} t^2 + \binom{n}{3} t^3 + \dots + \binom{n}{n-1} t^{n-1} + t^n.$$

**86.**  $P_n(x)$  may be represented in the following integral form:

$$P_n(x) = \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^\pi (x + \sqrt{x^2-1} \cos \varphi)^n d\varphi \quad (\text{Laplace's formula}).$$

**87.** Between three successive Legendre polynomials there holds the following recurrence relation:

$$P_n(x) = \frac{2n-1}{n} x P_{n-1}(x) - \frac{n-1}{n} P_{n-2}(x), \quad n=2, 3, 4, \dots$$

**88.** There exists a unique polynomial  $S_n(x)$  of  $n$ th degree with real coefficients such that the equation

$$\int_{-1}^1 S_n(x) K(x) dx = K(1)$$

is satisfied for all polynomials  $K(x)$  of  $n$ th degree. Express  $S_n(x)$  and  $(1-x)S_n(x)$  as a linear combination of Legendre polynomials. [Express  $K(x)$  similarly.]

**89 (continued).** The polynomials

$$S_0(x), S_1(x), S_2(x), \dots, S_n(x), \dots$$

satisfy the orthogonality condition

$$\int_{-1}^1 (1-x)S_m(x)S_n(x) dx = \begin{cases} 0, & \text{if } m \geq n, \\ \frac{n+1}{2}, & \text{if } m=n; \quad m, n=0, 1, 2, \dots \end{cases}$$

**90.**  $P_n(x)$  satisfies a homogeneous linear differential equation of second order

$$(1-x^2)P_n''(x) - 2xP_n'(x) + n(n+1)P_n(x) = 0.$$

**91.** For sufficiently small  $w$ , we have identically in  $w$  and  $x$

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{1-2xw+w^2}} = P_0(x) + P_1(x)w + P_2(x)w^2 + \dots + P_n(x)w^n + \dots$$

(Generating function for the Legendre polynomials.)

**92.** Deduce **84**, **86**, **87**, **90** directly from **91**. (**91** may also be regarded as offering a definition of the Legendre polynomials, and in fact a "centrally located" definition: From here there are particularly convenient paths leading to most of the properties of the Legendre polynomials.)

**93.**  $P_n(\cos \vartheta)$  is a cosine polynomial with non-negative coefficients. Determine these coefficients.

Deduce from this the following inequality:

$$|P_n(x)| \leq 1, \quad -1 \leq x \leq 1.$$

For  $n > 0$  the equality sign holds only if  $x = 1$  or  $x = -1$ .

**94.** Let  $x > 1$ . The sequence

$$P_0(x), P_1(x), P_2(x), \dots, P_n(x), \dots$$

increases monotonically.

**95.** The sum of the first  $n$  Legendre polynomials is non-negative in the interval  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$ :

$$P_0(x) + P_1(x) + P_2(x) + \dots + P_n(x) \geq 0, \quad -1 \leq x \leq 1.$$

The equality sign holds only if  $n$  is odd and  $x = -1$ . [III 157.]

**96.** The sum of the first  $n$  Legendre polynomials

$$P_0(x) + P_1(x) + P_2(x) + \dots + P_n(x)$$

is positive for every value of  $x$  if  $n$  is even; it has its only change of sign at the point  $x = -1$  if  $n$  is odd. [94.]

**97.** The  $n$ th Legendre polynomial  $P_n(x)$  has only real, simple zeros all of which lie in the interior of the interval  $-1, 1$ . [II 140.]

**98.** Generalize the theorems in **84-91**, **97** for the *Jacobi (hypergeometric) polynomials*

$$P_0^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x), P_1^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x), P_2^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x), \dots, P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x), \dots, \quad \alpha, \beta > -1,$$

defined by the following conditions:

(1), (2)  $P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x)$  is of degree  $n$ , has real coefficients and orthogonality property

$$\int_{-1}^1 (1-x)^\alpha (1+x)^\beta P_m^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) dx = \begin{cases} 0, & \text{if } m \neq n, \\ \frac{2^{\alpha+\beta+1}}{2n+\alpha+\beta+1} \frac{\Gamma(n+\alpha+1)\Gamma(n+\beta+1)}{\Gamma(n+1)\Gamma(n+\alpha+\beta+1)}, & \text{if } m=n; \quad m, n=0, 1, 2, \dots \end{cases}$$

(for  $n=0$  the above expression is to be taken as:

$$2^{\alpha+\beta+1} \frac{\Gamma(\alpha+1)\Gamma(\beta+1)}{\Gamma(\alpha+\beta+2)});$$

(3) the coefficient of  $x^n$  in  $P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x)$  is positive.

Some cases already encountered, corresponding to special values of  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ , are collected in the following table:

$\alpha =$	0,	1,	$-\frac{1}{2},$	$\frac{1}{2},$
$\beta =$	0,	0,	$-\frac{1}{2},$	$\frac{1}{2},$

$$P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) = P_n(x), \frac{2}{n+1} S_n(x), \frac{1 \cdot 3 \dots (2n-1)}{2 \cdot 4 \dots 2n} T_n(x), 2 \frac{1 \cdot 3 \dots (2n+1)}{2 \cdot 4 \dots (2n+2)} U_n(x).$$

Cf. p. 85,                      89,                      4,                      4.

(The coefficient of  $T_n(x)$  must be replaced by 1 for  $n=0$ ).

**99.** Prove the analogues of **84**, **85**, **87–91**, **97** for the *generalized Laguerre polynomials*

$$L_0^{(\alpha)}(x), L_1^{(\alpha)}(x), L_2^{(\alpha)}(x), \dots, L_n^{(\alpha)}(x), \dots, \quad \alpha > -1,$$

defined by the following conditions:

(1), (2)  $L_n^{(\alpha)}(x)$  is of degree  $n$ , has real coefficients and orthogonality property

$$\int_0^\infty e^{-x} x^\alpha L_m^{(\alpha)}(x) L_n^{(\alpha)}(x) dx = \begin{cases} 0, & \text{for } m \neq n, \\ \Gamma(\alpha+1) \binom{n+\alpha}{n}, & \text{for } m=n; \quad m, n=0, 1, 2, \dots; \end{cases}$$

(3) the coefficient of  $x^n$  in  $L_n^{(\alpha)}(x)$  has the sign  $(-1)^n$ .

**100.** Prove the analogues of **84**, **87**, **88**, **90**, **91**, **97** for the *Hermite polynomials*

$$H_0(x), H_1(x), H_2(x), \dots, H_n(x), \dots$$

defined by the following conditions:

(1), (2)  $H_n(x)$  is of degree  $n$ , has real coefficients and orthogonality property

$$\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} H_m(x) H_n(x) dx = \begin{cases} 0, & \text{for } m \neq n, \\ \sqrt{2\pi} \frac{n!}{n!}, & \text{for } m=n; \quad m, n=0, 1, 2, \dots; \end{cases}$$

(3) the coefficient of  $x^n$  in  $H_n(x)$  has the sign  $(-1)^n$ .

**101.** If  $P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x)$  and  $L_n^{(\alpha)}(x)$  are the functions defined in **98** and **99**, respectively, then we have

$$\lim_{\beta \rightarrow +\infty} P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(1-\varepsilon) = L_n^{(\alpha)}(x),$$

if  $\varepsilon$  converges to 0 as  $\beta$  increases in such a manner that

$$\lim_{\beta \rightarrow +\infty} \varepsilon \beta = 2x.$$

**102.** If  $L_n^{(\alpha)}(x)$  and  $H_n(x)$  are the functions defined in **99** and **100**, respectively, then we have

$$H_{2q}(x) = \frac{(-1)^q}{1 \cdot 3 \cdot 5 \dots (2q-1)} L_q^{(-\frac{1}{2})}\left(\frac{x^2}{2}\right),$$

$$H_{2q+1}(x) = \frac{(-1)^{q+1}}{1 \cdot 3 \cdot 5 \dots (2q+1)} x L_q^{(\frac{1}{2})}\left(\frac{x^2}{2}\right), \quad q=0, 1, 2, \dots$$

### § 12. Further Maximum–Minimum Problems on Polynomials

**103.** Let  $P(x)$  be an arbitrary polynomial of  $n$ th degree with real coefficients satisfying

$$\int_{-1}^1 [P(x)]^2 dx = 1.$$

Then for  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$  we have

$$|P(x)| \leq \frac{n+1}{\sqrt{2}}.$$

The equality sign here holds if and only if either

$$P(x) = \pm \frac{\sqrt{2}}{n+1} S_n(x) \quad [\text{88}] \quad \text{and} \quad x=1$$

or

$$P(x) = \pm \frac{\sqrt{2}}{n+1} S_n(-x) \quad \text{and} \quad x=-1$$

( $n > 0$ ). [The integral of  $[P(x)]^2$  is a quadratic form in  $n+1$  variables. Choose these variables in such a manner that the quadratic form becomes a sum of  $n+1$  squares.]

**104.** Let  $P(x)$  be an arbitrary polynomial of  $n$ th degree with real coefficients satisfying

$$\int_{-1}^1 (1-x)[P(x)]^2 dx = 1.$$

Then we have

$$|P(1)| \leq \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \binom{n+2}{2}, \quad |P(-1)| \leq \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \sqrt{\binom{n+2}{2}}.$$

These bounds cannot be replaced by any smaller bounds.

**105.** Let  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  be constants,  $\alpha > -1$ ,  $\beta > -1$ , and  $P(x)$  an arbitrary polynomial of  $n$ th degree with real coefficients satisfying

$$\int_{-1}^1 (1-x)^\alpha (1+x)^\beta [P(x)]^2 dx = 1.$$

Determine the maximum of  $|P(1)|$  and  $|P(-1)|$ , as  $P(x)$  ranges through the set of all polynomials of the specified kind. How do these maximum values behave for large values of  $n$ ?

**106.** Let  $\alpha$  be a constant,  $\alpha > -1$ . Determine the maximum of  $|P(0)|$  for all polynomials  $P(x)$  of  $n$ th degree which satisfy the condition

$$\int_0^\infty e^{-x} x^\alpha [P(x)]^2 dx = 1.$$

How does this maximum behave for large values of  $n$ ?

**107.** Determine the maximum of  $|P(0)|$  for all polynomials  $P(x)$  of  $n$ th degree, which satisfy the condition

$$\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} [P(x)]^2 dx = 1.$$

How does this maximum behave for large values of  $n$ ?

**108.** Let  $P(x)$  be a polynomial of  $n$ th degree which assumes only non-negative values in the interval  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$ , and which satisfies

$$\int_{-1}^1 P(x) dx = 1.$$

Then we have

$$P(1) \leq \begin{cases} \frac{q(q+1)}{2} & \text{for odd } n; \quad n=2q-1, \\ \frac{(q+1)^2}{2} & \text{for even } n, \quad n=2q. \end{cases}$$

The same estimate holds for  $P(-1)$ . These bounds cannot be replaced by any smaller bounds.

**109.** The first mean-value theorem of integral calculus may be strengthened for polynomials of  $n$ th degree as follows: Let  $P(x)$  be a polynomial of  $n$ th degree and  $m$  the minimum,  $M$  the maximum of  $P(x)$  in the interval  $a \leq x \leq b$ . Then we have

$$m + \frac{M-m}{\alpha_n} \leq \frac{1}{b-a} \int_a^b P(x) dx \leq M - \frac{M-m}{\alpha_n},$$

where  $\alpha_n = q(q+1)$  for odd  $n$ ,  $n=2q-1$ , and  $\alpha_n = (q+1)^2$  for even  $n$ ,  $n=2q$ .

**110.** Let  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  be constants,  $\alpha > -1$ ,  $\beta > -1$ , and  $P(x)$  a polynomial of  $n$ th degree which assumes only non-negative values in the interval  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$  and which satisfies

$$\int_{-1}^1 (1-x)^\alpha (1+x)^\beta P(x) dx = 1.$$

Then we have

$$P(1) \leq \begin{cases} \frac{1}{2^{\alpha+\beta+1}} \frac{\Gamma(q+\alpha+1)\Gamma(q+\alpha+\beta+2)}{\Gamma(\alpha+1)\Gamma(\alpha+2)\Gamma(q)\Gamma(q+\beta+1)} & \text{for odd } n, \quad n=2q-1, \\ \frac{1}{2^{\alpha+\beta+1}} \frac{\Gamma(q+\alpha+2)\Gamma(q+\alpha+\beta+2)}{\Gamma(\alpha+1)\Gamma(\alpha+2)\Gamma(q+1)\Gamma(q+\beta+1)} & \text{for even } n, \quad n=2q. \end{cases}$$

These bounds cannot be replaced by any smaller bounds.

The corresponding bounds for  $P(-1)$  are obtained by interchanging  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ .

**111.** Let  $\alpha$  be a constant,  $\alpha > -1$ , and  $P(x)$  a polynomial of  $n$ th degree which assumes only non-negative values for non-negative values of  $x$ , and which satisfies

$$\int_0^\infty e^{-x} x^\alpha P(x) dx = 1.$$

Then we have

$$P(0) \leq \frac{\Gamma(p+\alpha+2)}{\Gamma(\alpha+1)\Gamma(\alpha+2)\Gamma(p+1)}, \quad p = \left[ \frac{n}{2} \right].$$

This bound cannot be replaced by any smaller bound.

**112.** Let  $P(x)$  be a polynomial of  $n$ th degree, which is non-negative for non-negative values of  $x$ , and which satisfies

$$\int_0^{\infty} e^{-x} P(x) dx = 1.$$

Then we have

$$P(0) \leq \left[ \frac{n}{2} \right] + 1.$$

**113 (continued).** Let  $\xi$  be an arbitrary non-negative number. Then we have

$$e^{-\xi} P(\xi) \leq \left[ \frac{n}{2} \right] + 1.$$

## Part Seven. Determinants and Quadratic Forms

### § 1. Evaluation of Determinants. Solution of Linear Equations

**1.** Let the  $n$  vertices of a polyhedron be numbered in a definite order. Define a determinant of  $n$ th order as follows:

If the  $\lambda$ th and the  $\mu$ th vertices are the two end-points of an edge of the polyhedron, let  $a_{\lambda\mu} = a_{\mu\lambda} = 1$ .

If the line joining the  $\lambda$ th and the  $\mu$ th vertices is not an edge of the polyhedron, let  $a_{\lambda\mu} = 0$ . In particular  $a_{\lambda\lambda} = 0$ ,  $\lambda = 1, 2, \dots, n$ .

Show that the value of this determinant is independent of the manner of numbering the vertices. Form and calculate the determinants for the regular tetrahedron, hexahedron and octahedron.

**1.1** (continued). If exactly  $p$  edges end in each vertex the determinant is divisible by  $p$ .

**2.** Calculate

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & \dots & 1 \\ b_1 & a_1 & a_1 & \dots & a_1 \\ b_1 & b_2 & a_2 & \dots & a_2 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ b_1 & b_2 & b_3 & \dots & a_n \end{vmatrix}$$

**3.** Prove the identity:

$$\left| \frac{1}{a_\lambda + b_\mu} \right|_1^n = \frac{\prod_{j>k}^{1,2,\dots,n} (a_j - a_k)(b_j - b_k)}{\prod_{\lambda,\mu}^{1,2,\dots,n} (a_\lambda + b_\mu)}$$

**4.** Denoting the determinant of the quadratic form

$$\sum_{\lambda=1}^n \sum_{\mu=1}^n \frac{x_\lambda x_\mu}{\lambda + \mu}$$

by  $D_n$ , we have

$$D_n = \frac{[1!2!\dots(n-1)!]^3 n!}{(n+1)!(n+2)!\dots(2n)!}$$

Also calculate the determinant  $D_n(\alpha)$  of the quadratic form

$$\sum_{\lambda=1}^n \sum_{\mu=1}^n \frac{x_\lambda x_\mu}{\lambda + \mu + \alpha}, \quad \alpha > -2.$$

**5.**

$$|(a_\lambda - b_\mu)^{n-1}|_1^n = \prod_{\nu=1}^{n-1} (n-\nu)^{n-2\nu} \prod_{j>k}^{1,2,\dots,n} (a_j - a_k)(b_j - b_k).$$



**6.** Derive Theorem V 86 from Theorem V 48 by means of a transformation of the determinant  $|F(\alpha_\lambda \beta_\mu)|$ .

**7.** Setting  $f(x) = (r_1 - x)(r_2 - x) \dots (r_n - x)$ , we have

$$\begin{vmatrix} r_1 & a & a & \dots & a \\ b & r_2 & a & \dots & a \\ b & b & r_3 & \dots & a \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ b & b & b & \dots & r_n \end{vmatrix} = \frac{af(b) - bf(a)}{a - b}.$$

[Add to all the  $n^2$  elements the variable  $x$ . The determinant formed in this way is a linear function of  $x$  and as such can be determined from two particular values.]

**8.** Set  $\Delta = ad - bc$ . Then the functional determinant

$$\frac{\partial(a\Delta, b\Delta, c\Delta, d\Delta)}{\partial(a, b, c, d)} = 3\Delta^4.$$

**9.** Prove that  $\rho - 2$  is a divisor of the expression

$$\begin{vmatrix} \rho & \frac{l}{m} + \frac{m}{l} & \frac{n}{l} + \frac{l}{n} \\ \frac{l}{m} + \frac{m}{l} & \rho & \frac{m}{n} + \frac{n}{m} \\ \frac{n}{l} + \frac{l}{n} & \frac{m}{n} + \frac{n}{m} & \rho \end{vmatrix}, \quad l \neq 0, \quad m \neq 0, \quad n \neq 0.$$

Determine the remaining factors.

**10.** The determinant

$$|1, x_\nu, x_\nu^2, \dots, x_\nu^{n-q-1}, x_\nu^{n-q+1}, \dots, x_\nu^{n-1}, x_\nu^n|, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n$$

is an alternating rational entire function of the  $n$  numbers  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$  and thus divisible by the product of differences

$$\prod_{j>k}^{1, 2, \dots, n} (x_j - x_k).$$

Show that the quotient  $S_q$  is equal to the  $q$ th elementary symmetric function of the  $n$  numbers  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$ .

**11.** Let the numbers  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  be different from 0. Then we have identically in  $z$

$$a_0 \begin{vmatrix} z + \frac{a_1}{a_0} & \frac{a_2}{a_1} & \frac{a_3}{a_2} & \dots & \frac{a_{n-1}}{a_{n-2}} & \frac{a_n}{a_{n-1}} \\ -\frac{a_1}{a_0} & z & 0 & \dots & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -\frac{a_2}{a_1} & z & \dots & 0 & 0 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & \dots & -\frac{a_{n-1}}{a_{n-2}} & z \end{vmatrix} = a_0 z^n + a_1 z^{n-1} + \dots + a_n.$$

**11.1.** Let  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, b_0, b_1, b_2, \dots$  denote constants,  $z$  a variable. Suppose that  $a_0 \neq 0$  and that we have identically

$$(a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots)(b_0 + b_1 z + b_2 z^2 + \dots) = 1.$$

Then

$$a_0^{n+1} b_n = (-1)^n \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & a_0 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ a_2 & a_1 & a_0 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ a_3 & a_2 & a_1 & a_0 & \dots & 0 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ a_n & a_{n-1} & a_{n-2} & a_{n-3} & \dots & a_1 \end{vmatrix}.$$

(This serves as a method of computing the reciprocal of a given power series. The supposed identity may be merely formal; no considerations of convergence are involved.)

**11.2.** Show that

$$\begin{vmatrix} a-x & 1 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ \binom{a}{2} & a-x & 1 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ \binom{a}{3} & \binom{a}{2} & a-x & 1 & \dots & 0 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ \binom{a}{n} & \binom{a}{n-1} & \binom{a}{n-2} & \binom{a}{n-3} & \dots & a-x \end{vmatrix} \\ = \binom{a+n-1}{n} - \binom{2a+n-2}{n-1} x + \binom{3a+n-3}{n-2} x^2 - \dots + (-1)^n x^n.$$

**11.3.** Show that

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1-x & 1 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ \frac{1}{2!} & 1-x & 1 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ \frac{1}{3!} & \frac{1}{2!} & 1-x & 1 & \dots & 0 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ \frac{1}{n!} & \frac{1}{(n-1)!} & \frac{1}{(n-2)!} & \frac{1}{(n-3)!} & \dots & 1-x \end{vmatrix} \\ = \frac{1}{n!} - \frac{2^{n-1}}{(n-1)!} x + \frac{3^{n-2}}{(n-2)!} x^2 - \frac{4^{n-3}}{(n-3)!} x^3 + \dots + (-1)^n x^n.$$

**12.** Let  $a_1, a_2, a_3, b_1, b_2, b_3, c$  be real numbers. The system

$$\begin{aligned} -a_3 x_2 + a_2 x_3 &= b_1, \\ a_3 x_1 - a_1 x_3 &= b_2, \\ -a_2 x_1 + a_1 x_2 &= b_3, \\ a_1 x_1 + a_2 x_2 + a_3 x_3 &= c \end{aligned}$$

can be consistent in two different ways. In one case the unknowns  $x_1, x_2, x_3$  are completely undetermined, in the other case they are completely determined.



The second part may be simplified in the case of second-order determinants in the following manner:

Associate with the elements

$$\begin{array}{cc} a_{11} & a_{12} \\ a_{21} & a_{22} \end{array} \quad \text{the signs} \quad \begin{array}{cc} + & + \\ - & + \end{array} \quad \text{respectively.}$$

Then form the products prescribed in the first part from the elements, each with its fixed associated sign.

Now prove that a corresponding simplification is impossible in the case of a determinant of order higher than two, i.e. it is impossible to associate with the  $n^2$  elements  $n^2$  fixed signs in such a way that, if we form the products prescribed in the first part of the expansion rule from the elements each with its associated sign, we automatically obtain the correct sign in all the products.

## § 2. Power Series Expansion of Rational Functions

In 17-34 we consider the *Hankel* (or *recurrent*) determinants

$$\begin{vmatrix} a_n & a_{n+1} & a_{n+2} & \dots & a_{n+r-1} \\ a_{n+1} & a_{n+2} & a_{n+3} & \dots & a_{n+r} \\ a_{n+2} & a_{n+3} & a_{n+4} & \dots & a_{n+r+1} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ a_{n+r-1} & a_{n+r} & a_{n+r+1} & \dots & a_{n+2r-2} \end{vmatrix} = A_n^{(r)},$$

formed from the coefficients of the power series

$$a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^n + \dots;$$

$a_n$  is the leading entry,  $r$  is the number of rows.

**17.** Let the power series  $a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots$  represent a rational function whose denominator is of precise degree  $q$  and whose numerator is of precise degree  $p-1$ . Assume that the numerator and the denominator have no common divisor. Setting  $d = \max(0, p-q)$  we have

$$A_d^{(q+1)} = A_{d+1}^{(q+1)} = A_{d+2}^{(q+1)} = \dots = 0.$$

**18.** Let  $d, q$  be non-negative integers. If we have

$$\begin{array}{ccccccc} A_d^{(q)} \neq 0, & A_{d+1}^{(q)} \neq 0, & A_{d+2}^{(q)} \neq 0, & A_{d+3}^{(q)} \neq 0, & \dots \\ A_{d+1}^{(q+1)} = 0, & A_{d+2}^{(q+1)} = 0, & A_{d+3}^{(q+1)} = 0, & \dots \end{array}$$

then the power series may be represented as the quotient of two polynomials, where the denominator is of degree  $q$  and the numerator is of degree  $\leq q+d-1$ . [Investigate the dependence of the linear forms

$$L_n(x) = a_n x_0 + a_{n+1} x_1 + a_{n+2} x_2 + \dots + a_{n+q} x_q.]$$

**19.** 
$$A_n^{(r)} A_{n+2}^{(r)} - A_{n+1}^{(r+1)} A_{n+2}^{(r-1)} = (A_{n+1}^{(r)})^2.$$

**20.** If we have

$$A_m^{(q+1)} = A_{m+1}^{(q+1)} = A_{m+2}^{(q+1)} = A_{m+3}^{(q+1)} = \dots = A_{m+t-1}^{(q+1)} = 0,$$

then the  $t$  determinants  $A_{m+1}^{(a)}$ ,  $A_{m+2}^{(a)}$ ,  $A_{m+3}^{(a)}$ , ...,  $A_{m+t}^{(a)}$  are either all  $=0$ , or all  $\neq 0$ .

**21.** The triangular array

$$\begin{array}{cccccccc}
 A_0^{(1)} & A_1^{(1)} & A_2^{(1)} & A_3^{(1)} & A_4^{(1)} & * & * & * & * \\
 & A_0^{(2)} & A_1^{(2)} & A_2^{(2)} & * & * & * & * & * \\
 & & A_0^{(3)} & * & * & * & A_{n+2}^{(r-1)} & * & * \\
 & & & * & * & A_n^{(r)} & A_{n+1}^{(r)} & A_{n+2}^{(r)} & * \\
 & & & & * & * & A_n^{(r+1)} & * & *
 \end{array}$$

is arranged so that a right angle opening upwards and bisected by the vertical contains only minors of the determinant standing at the vertex of the angle.

**22.** In the array **21**  $A_n^{(r)}$  and  $A_{n+1}^{(r)}$  constitute a *horizontal pair*,  $A_{n+1}^{(r)}$  and  $A_n^{(r+1)}$  constitute a *vertical pair*,  $A_n^{(r)}$  and  $A_{n+1}^{(r+1)}$  constitute a *diagonal pair*,  $A_{n+1}^{(r)}$  and  $A_{n+2}^{(r+1)}$  also form a diagonal pair, *cross-wise* to  $A_n^{(r)}$  and  $A_{n+1}^{(r+1)}$ .

(1) If a diagonal pair vanishes, then the diagonal pair cross-wise to it also vanishes.

(2) If a horizontal pair vanishes, then either the horizontal pair lying above it or the one lying below it also vanishes.

(3) If a vertical pair vanishes, then either the neighbouring vertical pair on the left or the one on the right also vanishes.

Theorems (1), (2), (3) also hold on the slanting boundary line of the array **21**.

**23.** If of the infinitely many determinants

$$A_0^{(k+1)}, A_1^{(k+1)}, A_2^{(k+1)}, \dots, A_n^{(k+1)}, \dots$$

only finitely many are different from 0, then the power series  $a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \dots + a_nz^n + \dots$  represents a rational function whose denominator is of degree not greater than  $k$ . [**20, 18.**]

**24.** If of the infinitely many determinants

$$A_0^{(1)}, A_0^{(2)}, A_0^{(3)}, \dots, A_0^{(n)}, \dots$$

only finitely many are different from 0, then the power series  $a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \dots + a_nz^n + \dots$  represents a rational function.

**25.** If of the infinitely many determinants

$$\begin{array}{ccccccc}
 A_0^{(1)}, & A_1^{(2)}, & A_2^{(3)}, & A_3^{(4)}, & \dots, & A_n^{(n+1)}, & \dots \\
 & A_1^{(1)}, & A_2^{(2)}, & A_3^{(3)}, & \dots, & A_n^{(n)}, & \dots
 \end{array}$$

only finitely many are different from 0, then the power series  $a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \dots + a_nz^n + \dots$  represents a rational function.

**26.** Show that the sufficient criteria given in **23, 24, 25** for the power series  $a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \dots + a_nz^n + \dots$  to represent a rational function are also necessary.

An infinite matrix

$$\begin{array}{cccc} a_{00} & a_{01} & a_{02} & \dots \\ a_{10} & a_{11} & a_{12} & \dots \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \end{array}$$

is said to be of *finite rank*  $r$  if all determinants of order  $r+1$  contained in it vanish but not all those of order  $r$ .

In the infinite Hankel matrix  $\mathfrak{H}$

$$(\mathfrak{H}) \quad \begin{array}{cccc} a_0 & a_1 & a_2 & \dots \\ a_1 & a_2 & a_3 & \dots \\ a_2 & a_3 & a_4 & \dots \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \end{array}$$

( $a_{\lambda\mu} = a_{\lambda+\mu}$ ) we term the rank just defined also the *gross rank* of  $\mathfrak{H}$ . By striking out the first  $k$  columns (or rows) we obtain from  $\mathfrak{H}$  the matrix  $\mathfrak{H}_k$

$$(\mathfrak{H}_k) \quad \begin{array}{cccc} a_k & a_{k+1} & a_{k+2} & \dots \\ a_{k+1} & a_{k+2} & a_{k+3} & \dots \\ a_{k+2} & a_{k+3} & a_{k+4} & \dots \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \end{array}$$

whose rank we shall denote by  $r_k$ . We have  $\mathfrak{H}_0 = \mathfrak{H}$ ,  $r_0 = r$ ,  $r_0 \geq r_1 \geq r_2 \geq \dots$ . The minimum of the sequence of numbers  $r_0, r_1, r_2, \dots$ , which is necessarily attained after finitely many steps, we term the *net rank* of  $\mathfrak{H}$ .

**27.** The rank of the matrix  $\mathfrak{H}$  is finite if and only if the power series  $a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \dots + a_nz^n + \dots$  represents a rational function.

**28.** The gross rank of  $\mathfrak{H}$  is equal to the order of the *last* non-vanishing determinant in the infinite sequence

$$A_0^{(1)}, A_0^{(2)}, A_0^{(3)}, A_0^{(4)}, \dots$$

If this is  $A_0^{(p)}$  then the net rank is equal to the order of the *first* non-vanishing determinant in the finite sequence

$$A_1^{(p)}, A_2^{(p-1)}, A_3^{(p-2)}, \dots, A_p^{(1)}.$$

(The net rank = 0 if these  $p$  determinants all vanish.)

**29.** The net rank of  $\mathfrak{H}$  (assumed finite) is equal to the degree of the denominator of the rational function represented by  $a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \dots + a_nz^n + \dots$ . The rational function is a proper fraction if and only if the gross rank is equal to the net rank. If the gross rank is greater than the net rank, then the gross rank exceeds the degree of the numerator by one. (The numerator and the denominator of the rational function are assumed to have no common divisors; the degree here is the precise degree.)

**30. The power series**

$$a_0 + \frac{a_1 z}{1!} + \frac{a_2 z^2}{2!} + \dots + \frac{a_n z^n}{n!} + \dots$$

satisfies a linear homogeneous differential equation with constant coefficients if and only if the determinants

$$A_0^{(1)}, A_0^{(2)}, A_0^{(3)}, \dots, A_0^{(n)}, \dots,$$

apart from a finite number, all vanish.

**31.** Let  $Q_n(z)$  be a polynomial of degree  $n$ ,  $Q_n(0)=1, n=0, 1, 2, \dots$ . For brevity set

$$a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots = f(z), \quad Q_k(z)f(z) = \square_k a_0 + \square_k a_1 z + \square_k a_2 z^2 + \dots, \\ Q_k(z)Q_l(z)f(z) = \square_k \square_l a_0 + \square_k \square_l a_1 z + \square_k \square_l a_2 z^2 + \dots$$

( $\square_k \square_l a_n$  is a homogeneous linear expression in  $a_n, a_{n-1}, a_{n-2}, \dots, a_{n-k-l}$ ).

We have

$$A_0^{(n+1)} = \begin{vmatrix} a_0 & \square_1 a_1 & \dots & \square_n a_n \\ \square_1 a_1 & \square_1 \square_1 a_2 & \dots & \square_1 \square_n a_{n+1} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ \square_n a_n & \square_n \square_1 a_{n+1} & \dots & \square_n \square_n a_{2n} \end{vmatrix}.$$

**32.** Let  $a_0/z + a_1/z^2 + a_2/z^3 + \dots$  be the power series expansion of a rational function whose denominator (with no common divisors with the numerator) is  $z^q - c_1 z^{q-1} - c_2 z^{q-2} - \dots - c_q$ . Between the matrices

$$\mathfrak{A}_m = \begin{bmatrix} a_m & a_{m+1} & \dots & a_{m+q-1} \\ a_{m+1} & a_{m+2} & \dots & a_{m+q} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ a_{m+q-1} & a_{m+q} & \dots & a_{m+2q-2} \end{bmatrix}, \quad \mathfrak{E} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 & c_q \\ 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 & c_{q-1} \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 & c_{q-2} \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & \dots & 0 & c_{q-3} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 1 & c_1 \end{bmatrix}$$

there exists the relation

$$\mathfrak{A}_m = \mathfrak{A}_0 \mathfrak{E}^m, \quad m=0, 1, 2, \dots$$

Let the rank of the infinite matrix  $\mathfrak{M}$  with finitely many ( $=m$ ) rows

$$(\mathfrak{M}) \quad \begin{matrix} a_{10} & a_{11} & a_{12} & \dots & a_{1n} & \dots \\ a_{20} & a_{21} & a_{22} & \dots & a_{2n} & \dots \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ a_{m0} & a_{m1} & a_{m2} & \dots & a_{mn} & \dots \end{matrix}$$

be denoted by  $r_0$  and let the rank of the matrix that is formed from  $\mathfrak{M}$  by deleting the first  $n$  columns (in whose left upper corner we have the element  $a_{1n}$ ) be  $r_n$ . We have  $r_0 \geq r_1 \geq r_2 \geq \dots$ , and we term  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} r_n$  the *net rank* of  $\mathfrak{M}$ .





**36.** Consider the two symmetric matrices

$$\begin{pmatrix} a_{11} & a_{12} & \dots & a_{1n} \\ a_{21} & a_{22} & \dots & a_{2n} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ a_{n1} & a_{n2} & \dots & a_{nn} \end{pmatrix}, \quad \begin{pmatrix} e^{a_{11}} & e^{a_{12}} & \dots & e^{a_{1n}} \\ e^{a_{21}} & e^{a_{22}} & \dots & e^{a_{2n}} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ e^{a_{n1}} & e^{a_{n2}} & \dots & e^{a_{nn}} \end{pmatrix}.$$

If the quadratic form corresponding to the matrix  $(a_{\lambda\mu})$  is positive, then the quadratic form corresponding to  $(e^{a_{\lambda\mu}})$  is also positive. If moreover among the rows of  $(a_{\lambda\mu})$  there are no two identical, then the form corresponding to  $(e^{a_{\lambda\mu}})$  is in fact definite. [V 76.]

**37.** Let the power series

$$p_0 + p_1x + p_2x^2 + \dots = F(x)$$

have no negative coefficients and converge for  $x = a_{11}, a_{12}, \dots, a_{nn}$ . If the quadratic form corresponding to the symmetric matrix  $(a_{\lambda\mu})$  of order  $n$  is positive, then the quadratic form corresponding to  $(F(a_{\lambda\mu}))$  is also positive. If moreover there are among the coefficients  $p_0, p_2, p_4, \dots$  at least  $n$  different from 0 and if of the rows of  $(a_{\lambda\mu}^2)$  no two are identical, then the form corresponding to  $(F(a_{\lambda\mu}))$  is in fact definite.

**38.** Let the real numbers  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{2n}$  have the following property: If  $f(x)$  denotes an arbitrary polynomial, with real coefficients of degree at most  $2n$ , that does not vanish identically and does not take a negative value for any real value of  $x$ , then also

$$a_0f(x) + \frac{a_1}{1!}f'(x) + \frac{a_2}{2!}f''(x) + \dots + \frac{a_{2n}}{(2n)!}f^{(2n)}(x) \geq 0 \quad (\text{or } > 0)$$

for all real values of  $x$ .

Show that for this to be true it is necessary and sufficient that the quadratic form

$$\sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n a_{\lambda+\mu} x_\lambda x_\mu$$

is positive (or positive definite, respectively).

**39.** Let the numbers  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_n$ ,  $n \geq 1$  have the following property: If  $f(x)$  is an arbitrary polynomial with real coefficients of degree at most  $n$ , that does not vanish identically and is non-negative for non-negative values of  $x$ , then also

$$a_0f(x) + \frac{a_1}{1!}f'(x) + \frac{a_2}{2!}f''(x) + \dots + \frac{a_n}{n!}f^{(n)}(x) \geq 0 \quad (\text{or } > 0)$$

for all non-negative values of  $x$  ( $x$  real).

Show that for this to be true it is necessary and sufficient that the two quadratic forms

$$\sum_{\lambda=0}^{\lfloor \frac{n}{2} \rfloor} \sum_{\mu=0}^{\lfloor \frac{n}{2} \rfloor} a_{\lambda+\mu} x_\lambda x_\mu, \quad \sum_{\lambda=0}^{\lfloor \frac{n-1}{2} \rfloor} \sum_{\mu=0}^{\lfloor \frac{n-1}{2} \rfloor} a_{\lambda+\mu+1} x_\lambda x_\mu$$

are positive (or positive definite, respectively).

**40.** Let the numbers  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, n \geq 1$  have the following property: If  $f(x)$  denotes a polynomial with real coefficients of degree  $\leq n$  that does not vanish identically and is non-negative in the interval  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$ , then also

$$a_0 f(x) + \frac{a_1}{1!} f'(x) + \frac{a_2}{2!} f''(x) + \dots + \frac{a_n}{n!} f^{(n)}(x) \geq 0$$

for  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$ . Show that the only set of numbers  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  of this kind is determined by the conditions

$$a_0 \geq 0, \quad a_1 = a_2 = \dots = a_n = 0.$$

**41.** Let the two quadratic forms

$$\sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n a_{\lambda+\mu} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu}, \quad \sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n b_{\lambda+\mu} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu}$$

be positive. If we set

$$c_v = a_0 b_v + \binom{v}{1} a_1 b_{v-1} + \binom{v}{2} a_2 b_{v-2} + \dots + a_v b_0,$$

then the quadratic form

$$\sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n c_{\lambda+\mu} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu}$$

is also positive, and it is in fact definite if at least one of the two preceding forms is definite and the other not identically vanishing.

**42.** Let

$$c_v = a_0 b_v + \binom{v}{1} a_1 b_{v-1} + \binom{v}{2} a_2 b_{v-2} + \dots + a_v b_0.$$

From the positiveness of the four quadratic forms

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{\lambda=0}^m \sum_{\mu=0}^m a_{\lambda+\mu} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu}, & \quad \sum_{\lambda=0}^{m-1} \sum_{\mu=0}^{m-1} a_{\lambda+\mu+1} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu}, \\ \sum_{\lambda=0}^m \sum_{\mu=0}^m b_{\lambda+\mu} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu}, & \quad \sum_{\lambda=0}^{m-1} \sum_{\mu=0}^{m-1} b_{\lambda+\mu+1} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu} \end{aligned}$$

follows the positiveness of the following two forms:

$$\sum_{\lambda=0}^m \sum_{\mu=0}^m c_{\lambda+\mu} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu}, \quad \sum_{\lambda=0}^{m-1} \sum_{\mu=0}^{m-1} c_{\lambda+\mu+1} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu}.$$

Furthermore, from the positiveness of the four quadratic forms

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{\lambda=0}^m \sum_{\mu=0}^m a_{\lambda+\mu} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu}, & \quad \sum_{\lambda=0}^m \sum_{\mu=0}^m a_{\lambda+\mu+1} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu}, \\ \sum_{\lambda=0}^m \sum_{\mu=0}^m b_{\lambda+\mu} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu}, & \quad \sum_{\lambda=0}^m \sum_{\mu=0}^m b_{\lambda+\mu+1} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu} \end{aligned}$$

follows the positiveness of the following two forms:

$$\sum_{\lambda=0}^m \sum_{\mu=0}^m c_{\lambda+\mu} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu}, \quad \sum_{\lambda=0}^m \sum_{\mu=0}^m c_{\lambda+\mu+1} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu}.$$

**43.** Let  $\vartheta$  be real and let the complex numbers

$c_{-n}, c_{-n+1}, \dots, c_{-1}, c_0, c_1, \dots, c_{n-1}, c_n, \quad c_{-\nu} = \bar{c}_{\nu}, \quad \nu=0, 1, 2, \dots, n$   
have the following property: If

$$\begin{aligned} g(\vartheta) &= \alpha_0 + 2(\alpha_1 \cos \vartheta + \beta_1 \sin \vartheta + \alpha_2 \cos 2\vartheta + \beta_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \dots \\ &\quad + \alpha_n \cos n\vartheta + \beta_n \sin n\vartheta) \\ &= \sum_{\nu=-n}^n \gamma_{\nu} e^{-i\nu\vartheta}, \\ \gamma_{\nu} &= \bar{\gamma}_{-\nu} = \alpha_{\nu} + i\beta_{\nu}, \quad \nu=0, 1, 2, \dots, n; \quad \beta_0=0, \end{aligned}$$

denotes an arbitrary trigonometric polynomial of degree at most  $n$ , that does not vanish identically and does not have a negative value for any value of  $\vartheta$ , let

$$\sum_{\nu=-n}^n c_{\nu} \gamma_{\nu} e^{-i\nu\vartheta} \geq 0 \quad (\text{or } > 0).$$

Show that for this to be true, it is necessary and sufficient that the Hermitian form

$$\sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n c_{\mu-\lambda} x_{\lambda} \bar{x}_{\mu}$$

is positive (or positive definite, respectively).

**43.1.** Let  $G(z)$  be an entire function that takes real values for real  $z$ , with  $G(0)=1$ , and

$$-\frac{G'(z)}{G(z)} = s_1 + s_2 z + s_3 z^2 + \dots + s_m z^{m-1} + \dots.$$

If  $G(z)$  has infinitely many zeros, all real, and is of the form V 165, then, for  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ ,

$$\begin{vmatrix} s_2 & s_3 & s_4 & \dots & s_{n+1} \\ s_3 & s_4 & s_5 & \dots & s_{n+2} \\ s_4 & s_5 & s_6 & \dots & s_{n+3} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ s_{n+1} & s_{n+2} & s_{n+3} & \dots & s_{2n} \end{vmatrix} > 0.$$

(If  $G(z)$  of V 165 has only a finite number of zeros, then only a finite number of these recurrent determinants can be  $\neq 0$  [27].)

**43.2.** Let  $G(z)$  be an entire function of the form V 165, but not of the form  $e^{\beta z}$ , and

$$\frac{1}{G(z)} = c_0 + \frac{c_1}{1!} z + \frac{c_2}{2!} z^2 + \frac{c_3}{3!} z^3 + \dots.$$

Then, for  $n=0, 1, 2, \dots$ ,

$$\begin{vmatrix} c_0 & c_1 & c_2 & \dots & c_n \\ c_1 & c_2 & c_3 & \dots & c_{n+1} \\ c_2 & c_3 & c_4 & \dots & c_{n+2} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ c_n & c_{n+1} & c_{n+2} & \dots & c_{2n} \end{vmatrix} > 0.$$

[38, V 65.1.]

## § 4. Miscellaneous Problems

**44.** Let the  $n^2$  elements  $a_{\lambda\mu}$  of a determinant of  $n$ th order be independent variables. Show that, of the  $n!$  terms  $\pm a_{1k_1} a_{2k_2} \dots a_{nk_n}$  in the expansion of the determinant, only  $N = n^2 - 2n + 2$  are independent, and determine  $N$  terms by means of which all the remaining terms may be expressed rationally.

**45.** In the expansion of a symmetric  $n$ th order determinant (with arbitrary elements) let  $s'_n$  be the number of distinct positive terms and  $s''_n$  the number of distinct negative terms. For  $s_n = s'_n + s''_n$  we have already in the works of Cayley the recurrence relation

$$s_{n+1} = (n+1)s_n - \binom{n}{2}s_{n-2}.$$

Show that for  $d_n = s'_n - s''_n$  we have the recurrence relation

$$d_{n+1} = -(n-1)d_n - \binom{n}{2}d_{n-2},$$

and that

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{n^{1/2}s_n}{n!} = \frac{e^{3/4}}{\sqrt{\pi}}, \quad \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{(-1)^{n-1}n^{3/2}d_n}{n!} = \frac{e^{-3/4}}{2\sqrt{\pi}}.$$

**46.** In the expansion of a symmetric  $n$ th order determinant  $|a_{\lambda\mu}|$ , in which the  $n$  elements  $a_{\lambda\lambda}$  in the leading diagonal are equal to zero, let  $\sigma'_n$  be the number of distinct positive terms and  $\sigma''_n$  the number of distinct negative terms. Setting

$$\sigma_n = \sigma'_n + \sigma''_n, \quad \delta_n = \sigma'_n - \sigma''_n,$$

we have

$$\sigma_{n+1} = n\sigma_n + n\sigma_{n-1} - \binom{n}{2}\sigma_{n-2}, \quad \delta_{n+1} = -n\delta_n - n\delta_{n-1} - \binom{n}{2}\delta_{n-2}$$

and

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{n^{1/2}\sigma_n}{n!} = \frac{e^{-1/4}}{\sqrt{\pi}}, \quad \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{(-1)^{n-1}n^{3/2}\delta_n}{n!} = \frac{e^{1/4}}{2\sqrt{\pi}}.$$

**46.1.** Let the capital letters  $A, B, \dots, I, \dots, Z$  denote  $n \times n$  matrices. In particular, let  $I$  denote the identity matrix with entries 1 along the main diagonal and 0 elsewhere, and  $Z$  denote the matrix in which all entries are 1. Show that

$$Z \cdot Z = nZ.$$

**46.2 (continued).** If all the entries of  $A$  are positive numbers,

$$A \cdot B = I,$$

and  $n > 1$ , then there are among the entries of  $B$  at least  $n$  positive numbers and at least  $n$  negative numbers.

Prove this, and show by examples that the two bounds for the number of positive entries,  $n$  and  $n^2 - n$ , can be attained.

**47.** Denote the difference product  $\prod_{j < k}^{1, 2, \dots, n} (x_j - x_k)$  by  $\Delta$ . It is well known that an expression of the form

$$\Phi = \frac{1}{\Delta} \sum \pm \varphi(x_{\lambda_1}, x_{\lambda_2}, \dots, x_{\lambda_n})$$

is a symmetric function of  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$ . Here the sum is to be taken over all the  $n!$  permutations of  $1, 2, \dots, n$  and for the even permutations the positive sign is to be chosen and for the odd permutations the negative sign. Prove that, if

$$\varphi = \prod_{v=1}^n \frac{1}{1 - x_1 x_2 \dots x_v},$$

then

$$\Phi = \frac{1}{\prod_{v=1}^n (1 - x_v) \prod_{j < k}^{1, 2, \dots, n} (1 - x_j x_k)}.$$

**48.** Let the characteristic equation of the matrix  $\|a_{\lambda\mu}\|$ ,  $\lambda, \mu = 1, 2, \dots, n$ ,

$$\chi(z) = \begin{vmatrix} a_{11} - z & a_{12} & \dots & a_{1n} \\ a_{21} & a_{22} - z & \dots & a_{2n} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ a_{n1} & a_{n2} & \dots & a_{nn} - z \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

have the roots  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n$ , that need not necessarily be all distinct. Denote the minors of order  $n-1$  of  $\chi(z)$  by  $\chi_{\lambda\mu}(z)$ . Prove that the characteristic equation of the matrix  $\chi_{\lambda\mu}(z)$  has the roots

$$\zeta_\rho = \frac{\chi(z)}{\alpha_\rho - z}, \quad \rho = 1, 2, \dots, n.$$

**49.** The linear transformations

$$S_\alpha: \quad y_p = \frac{\sin \alpha \pi}{n+1} \sum_{q=0}^n \frac{x_q}{\sin \frac{\pi}{n+1} (p-q+\alpha)}, \quad p=0, 1, \dots, n,$$

$\alpha$  arbitrary, form a group in the following sense: We have

$$S_\alpha S_\beta = S_{\alpha+\beta}.$$

**50.** Let  $g(\vartheta)$  be a trigonometric polynomial of order at most  $n$ , with purely real coefficients. Determine the conditions that  $g(\vartheta)$  must satisfy, in order that the linear transformations

$$S_\alpha: \quad y_p = \sum_{q=0}^n x_q g\left(\frac{\pi}{n+1} (p-q+\alpha)\right), \quad p=0, 1, \dots, n,$$

$\alpha$  arbitrary, form a group in the following sense: We have

$$S_\alpha S_\beta = S_{\alpha+\beta}.$$



In the sequel, **54.1–54.4**, we consider infinite triangular matrices

$$\begin{pmatrix} a_{11} & & & \\ a_{21} & a_{22} & & \\ a_{31} & a_{32} & a_{33} & \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \end{pmatrix}$$

It is understood that all elements above the principal diagonal are 0. An equation between such matrices is regarded as valid if, and only if, it is valid between the corresponding submatrices with  $n^2$  elements obtained by deleting all rows and columns except the first  $n$ , for  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$

**54.1.** Prove the relation, involving binomial coefficients,

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & & & \\ 1 & 1 & & \\ 1 & 2 & 1 & \\ 1 & 3 & 3 & 1 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & & & \\ -1 & 1 & & \\ 1 & -2 & 1 & \\ -1 & 3 & -3 & 1 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & & & \\ 0 & 1 & & \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \end{pmatrix}.$$

**54.2.** Prove the relation, involving Stirling numbers  $s_k^n$  and  $S_k^n$  of the first and second kind respectively (see the introductions to I 197 and I 186),

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & & & \\ 1 & 1 & & \\ 1 & 3 & 1 & \\ 1 & 7 & 6 & 1 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & & & \\ -1 & 1 & & \\ 2 & -3 & 1 & \\ -6 & 11 & -6 & 1 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & & & \\ 0 & 1 & & \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \end{pmatrix}.$$

In other words, the matrices  $(S_k^n)$  and  $((-1)^{n-k}s_k^n)$  are inverse to each other.

**54.3.** Prove

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & & & & \\ 1 & -1 & & & \\ 1 & -2 & 1 & & \\ 1 & -3 & 3 & -1 & \\ 1 & -4 & 6 & -4 & 1 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \end{pmatrix}^2 = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & & & & \\ 0 & 1 & & & \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & & \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \end{pmatrix}.$$

[I 34.1, 54.1.]

**54.4.** Generalizing **54.3**, find all infinite sequences of numbers  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$  such that the system of relations

$$y_n = a_n x_0 - \binom{n}{1} a_{n-1} x_1 + \binom{n}{2} a_{n-2} x_2 - \dots + (-1)^n a_0 x_n,$$

$n=0, 1, 2, 3, \dots$ , should imply the same system with the roles of  $x$  and  $y$  reversed, that is,

$$x_n = a_n y_0 - \binom{n}{1} a_{n-1} y_1 + \binom{n}{2} a_{n-2} y_2 - \dots + (-1)^n a_0 y_n$$

for  $n=0, 1, 2, 3, \dots$  [I 34.1.]

## § 5. Determinants of Systems of Functions

We term the determinant

$$\begin{vmatrix} f_1(x) & f_1'(x) & f_1''(x) & \dots & f_1^{(n-1)}(x) \\ f_2(x) & f_2'(x) & f_2''(x) & \dots & f_2^{(n-1)}(x) \\ f_3(x) & f_3'(x) & f_3''(x) & \dots & f_3^{(n-1)}(x) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ f_n(x) & f_n'(x) & f_n''(x) & \dots & f_n^{(n-1)}(x) \end{vmatrix} = W[f_1(x), f_2(x), \dots, f_n(x)]$$

the *Wronskian* determinant of the system of functions  $f_1(x), f_2(x), \dots, f_n(x)$ .

**55.** If  $c_{\lambda\mu}$  are constants, then we have

$$\begin{aligned} W(c_{11}f_1 + c_{12}f_2 + \dots + c_{1n}f_n, c_{21}f_1 + c_{22}f_2 + \dots + c_{2n}f_n, \dots, \\ c_{n1}f_1 + c_{n2}f_2 + \dots + c_{nn}f_n) = |c_{\lambda\mu}|_1^n \cdot W(f_1, f_2, \dots, f_n). \end{aligned}$$

**56.**

$$W[f_1(\varphi(x)), f_2(\varphi(x)), \dots, f_n(\varphi(x))] = \varphi'(x)^{\frac{n(n-1)}{2}} W[f_1(y), f_2(y), \dots, f_n(y)],$$

setting  $y = \varphi(x)$  on the right-hand side.

**57.**  $W(\varphi f_1, \varphi f_2, \dots, \varphi f_n) = \varphi^n W(f_1, f_2, \dots, f_n).$

**58.**  $\frac{1}{f_1^n} W(f_1, f_2, \dots, f_n) = W\left[\left(\frac{f_2}{f_1}\right)', \left(\frac{f_3}{f_1}\right)', \dots, \left(\frac{f_n}{f_1}\right)'\right].$

**59.**  $\frac{d}{dx} \frac{W(f_1, \dots, f_{n-2}, f_n)}{W(f_1, \dots, f_{n-2}, f_{n-1})} = \frac{W(f_1, \dots, f_{n-2})W(f_1, \dots, f_{n-2}, f_{n-1}, f_n)}{[W(f_1, \dots, f_{n-2}, f_{n-1})]^2}.$

**60.** If  $W(f_1, f_2, \dots, f_{n-1}, f_n)$  vanishes at every point and  $W(f_1, f_2, \dots, f_{n-1})$  at no point of the interval  $a, b$ , then there exist  $n-1$  constants  $c_1, c_2, \dots, c_{n-1}$  such that in the whole interval  $a, b$

$$f_n(x) = c_1 f_1(x) + c_2 f_2(x) + \dots + c_{n-1} f_{n-1}(x).$$

**61.** If  $f_1(x), f_2(x), \dots, f_n(x)$  are  $n$  linearly independent solutions of the homogeneous linear  $n$ th order differential equation

$$y^{(n)} + \varphi_1(x)y^{(n-1)} + \varphi_2(x)y^{(n-2)} + \dots + \varphi_n(x)y = 0,$$

then we have for an arbitrary function  $y$

$$y^{(n)} + \varphi_1(x)y^{(n-1)} + \varphi_2(x)y^{(n-2)} + \dots + \varphi_n(x)y \equiv \frac{W(f_1, f_2, \dots, f_n, y)}{W(f_1, f_2, \dots, f_n)}.$$

**62 (continued).** Set

$$1 = W_0, \quad f_1 = W_1, \quad W(f_1, f_2) = W_2, \quad \dots, \quad W(f_1, f_2, \dots, f_n) = W_n.$$

Then we have for an arbitrary function  $y$

$$\begin{aligned} y^{(n)} + \varphi_1(x)y^{(n-1)} + \varphi_2(x)y^{(n-2)} + \dots + \varphi_n(x)y \\ \equiv \frac{W_n}{W_{n-1}} \cdot \frac{d}{dx} \frac{W_{n-1}^2}{W_{n-2}W_n} \dots \frac{d}{dx} \frac{W_2^2}{W_1W_3} \cdot \frac{d}{dx} \frac{W_1^2}{W_0W_2} \cdot \frac{d}{dx} \frac{y}{W_1} \end{aligned}$$



This representation of the linear differential expression, in terms of  $n$  independent solutions of the homogeneous differential equation, is analogous to the factorization of a polynomial of degree  $n$  in terms of its  $n$  zeros.

**63.** Let  $f_1(x), f_2(x), \dots, f_n(x)$  be continuous real functions, defined in the interval  $a, b$ . The determinant

$$\left| \int_a^b f_\lambda(x) f_\mu(x) dx \right|_{\lambda, \mu=1, 2, \dots, n}$$

is never negative. It vanishes if and only if between the functions  $f_1(x), f_2(x), \dots, f_n(x)$  there exists a homogeneous linear relation with constant coefficients, not all 0.

**64 (continued).** The determinant

$$\begin{vmatrix} \int_a^b (f_2^2 + f_3^2 + \dots + f_n^2) dx & - \int_a^b f_1 f_2 dx & \dots & - \int_a^b f_1 f_n dx \\ - \int_a^b f_2 f_1 dx & \int_a^b (f_1^2 + f_3^2 + \dots + f_n^2) dx & \dots & - \int_a^b f_2 f_n dx \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ - \int_a^b f_n f_1 dx & - \int_a^b f_n f_2 dx & \dots & \int_a^b (f_1^2 + f_2^2 + \dots + f_{n-1}^2) dx \end{vmatrix}$$

is never negative. It vanishes if and only if the functions  $f_1(x), f_2(x), \dots, f_n(x)$  differ from one another only by constant factors, or, in other words, if they are all multiples of one of them.

**65 (continued).** The determinant

$$\left| e^{\int_a^b f_\lambda(x) f_\mu(x) dx} \right|_{\lambda, \mu=1, 2, \dots, n}$$

is never negative. It vanishes if and only if among the functions  $f_1(x), f_2(x), \dots, f_n(x)$  there are two identically equal.

**66.** A theorem mentioned in passing by Gauss in his *Theoria combinationis observationum* [Werke, Vol. 4, p. 12, cf. the last two lines of Art. 11] may be generalized as follows:

Let  $f(x)$  be defined for  $x > 0$ , non-increasing there,  $f(x) \geq 0$ , but not identically  $= 0$ . Moreover let the real numbers  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  be distinct. Assuming the existence of all the integrals that occur, the determinant

$$\left| (a_\lambda + a_\mu + 1) \int_0^\infty x^{a_\lambda + a_\mu} f(x) dx \right|_{\lambda, \mu=1, 2, \dots, n}$$

is never negative. It is  $= 0$  if and only if  $f(x)$  is a piecewise constant function with not more than  $n-1$  jump discontinuities.

Let the function  $f(\vartheta)$  be properly integrable in the interval  $0 \leq \vartheta < 2\pi$ . Let its Fourier series [VI § 4] be

$$f(\vartheta) \sim a_0 + 2 \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (a_n \cos n\vartheta + b_n \sin n\vartheta).$$

The *Hermite* forms

$$T_n(f) = \sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n c_{\mu-\lambda} x_\lambda \bar{x}_\mu$$

formed from the constants  $c_0 = a_0$ ,  $c_n = a_n + ib_n$ ,  $c_{-n} = \bar{c}_n$ ,  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ , are called the *Toeplitz* forms associated with  $f(\vartheta)$ . (Cf. 43).

**67.** Form the Toeplitz forms that belong to the following functions:

$$f(\vartheta) = c = \text{const.}, \quad f(\vartheta) = a_0 + 2(a_1 \cos \vartheta + b_1 \sin \vartheta),$$

$$f(\vartheta) = \frac{1-r^2}{1-2r \cos \vartheta + r^2}, \quad 0 < r < 1.$$

**68.** If the function  $f(\vartheta)$  is positive in the interval  $0 \leq \vartheta < 2\pi$ , then all its associated Toeplitz forms are positive definite. More precisely: If  $f(\vartheta)$  lies between the bounds  $m \leq f(\vartheta) \leq M$  in the interval  $0 \leq \vartheta < 2\pi$ , then we have

$$m \leq T_n(f) \leq M,$$

provided that the variables  $x_0, x_1, \dots, x_n$  satisfy the condition  $T_n(1) = 1$ . The equality sign can hold here only if  $f(\vartheta) = \text{const.}$  at every point of continuity of  $f(\vartheta)$ .

**69.** Calculate the determinant  $D_n(f)$  of the form  $T_n(f)$  for the functions in **67** and show that, if  $f(\vartheta)$  is everywhere positive,

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sqrt[n+1]{D_n(f)} = e^{\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} \log f(\vartheta) d\vartheta} = \mathfrak{G}(f).$$

**70.** Let  $f(\vartheta)$  be a trigonometric polynomial of first order and let  $h$  be a parameter. The determinant  $D_n(f-h)$  of the Toeplitz form  $T_n(f-h)$  associated with  $f(\vartheta) - h$  is a polynomial of degree  $n+1$  in  $h$  with only real zeros. Calculate these zeros.

**71** (continued). The zeros  $h_{0n}, h_{1n}, \dots, h_{nn}$  of  $D_n(f-h)$  all lie between the minimum and the maximum of  $f(\vartheta)$ , that is  $m \leq h_{vn} \leq M$ , if  $m \leq f(\vartheta) \leq M$  in the interval  $0, 2\pi$ . Moreover if  $F(h)$  denotes an arbitrary properly integrable function in the interval in  $m \leq h \leq M$ , then we have

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{F(h_{0n}) + F(h_{1n}) + \dots + F(h_{nn})}{n+1} = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} F[f(\vartheta)] d\vartheta.$$

**72.** Let the Hermitian form

$$\sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n c_{\lambda-\mu} x_\lambda \bar{x}_\mu, \quad c_{-v} = \bar{c}_v,$$

be positive definite. Then all the zeros of the polynomial

$$\begin{vmatrix} c_0 & c_1 & c_2 & \dots & c_n \\ c_{-1} & c_0 & c_1 & \dots & c_{n-1} \\ c_{-2} & c_{-1} & c_0 & \dots & c_{n-2} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ c_{-n+1} & c_{-n+2} & c_{-n+3} & \dots & c_1 \\ 1 & z & z^2 & \dots & z^n \end{vmatrix}$$

lie in the interior of the unit circle.

# Part Eight. Number Theory\*

## Chapter 1. Arithmetical Functions

### § 1. Problems on the Integral Parts of Numbers

Let  $x$  be a real number. Denote by  $[x]$  the *integral part* of  $x$ , i.e. the integer that satisfies the inequalities

$$[x] \leq x < [x] + 1.$$

We have for example

$$[\pi] = 3, \quad [2] = 2, \quad [-0.73] = -1.$$

1. Let  $n$  be an integer and  $x$  arbitrary. We then have

$$[x+n] = [x] + n.$$

2. In the expansion of a determinant of  $n$ th order, the product of the elements in the secondary diagonal (from north-east to south-west) has the sign  $(-1)^{\lfloor \frac{n}{2} \rfloor}$ .

3. We have

$$[2x] - 2[x] = 0 \quad \text{or} \quad 1,$$

according as

$$x - [x] < \frac{1}{2} \quad \text{or} \quad \geq \frac{1}{2}.$$

4. If  $0 < \alpha < 1$ , then we have

$$[x] - [x - \alpha] = 0 \quad \text{or} \quad 1$$

according as

$$x - [x] \geq \alpha \quad \text{or} \quad < \alpha.$$

5. Let  $x$  be a number that does not lie at the mid-point between two consecutive integers. Express the integer nearest to  $x$  in terms of the symbol  $[ ]$ .

6. One may term  $[x]$  the integer *left-adjacent* to  $x$ . Express the integer *right-adjacent* to  $x$  in terms of the symbol  $[ ]$ . (Postal rates and other such rates are often based on the right-adjacent integer.)

---

\* Number theory is concerned with the integers

$$\dots, -3, -2, -1, 0, 1, 2, 3, \dots$$

(mainly, although not exclusively, see Chap. 4). Throughout the present Part VIII we shall sometimes omit to mention that a number under consideration is an integer (or, more specifically, a positive or a non-negative integer) if this is sufficiently clear from the context or from the notation; thus  $n$  usually denotes an integer.

7. Prove that

$$\begin{aligned} [\alpha] + [\beta] & \text{ either } = [\alpha + \beta], \text{ or } = [\alpha + \beta] - 1, \\ [\alpha] - [\beta] & \text{ either } = [\alpha - \beta], \text{ or } = [\alpha - \beta] + 1. \end{aligned}$$

8. We have

$$[2\alpha] + [2\beta] \geq [\alpha] + [\alpha + \beta] + [\beta].$$

9. Let  $n$  be a positive integer,  $x$  arbitrary; then we have

$$[x] + \left[x + \frac{1}{n}\right] + \left[x + \frac{2}{n}\right] + \cdots + \left[x + \frac{n-1}{n}\right] = [nx].$$

10. Let  $n$  be a positive integer,  $x$  arbitrary. We have

$$\left[\frac{[nx]}{n}\right] = [x].$$

11. Let  $m$  be a positive integer. The highest power of 2 that is a divisor of

$$[(1 + \sqrt{3})^{2m+1}]$$

is  $2^{m+1}$ .

## § 2. Counting Lattice Points

12. Let  $a$  and  $n$  be positive integers. The number of those of the numbers  $1, 2, 3, \dots, n$  that are divisible by  $a$  is  $\left[\frac{n}{a}\right]$ .

13. How many zeros does the function  $\sin x$  have in the interval  $a < x \leq b$ ? How many does it have in the interval  $a \leq x < b$ ?

14. Let  $0 \leq \alpha \leq \pi$ . Denote by  $V_n(\alpha)$  the number of changes of sign in the sequence

$$1, \cos \alpha, \cos 2\alpha, \dots, \cos (n-1)\alpha, \cos n\alpha.$$

Then we have

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{V_n(\alpha)}{n} = \frac{\alpha}{\pi}.$$

15. Let  $\vartheta$  be an irrational number,  $0 < \vartheta < 1$  and  $g_n = 0$  or  $1$ , according as  $[n\vartheta]$  and  $[(n-1)\vartheta]$  are equal or different. Show that

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{g_1 + g_2 + \cdots + g_n}{n} = \vartheta.$$

16. What is the number  $N(r, a, \alpha)$  of zeros of the entire function  $e^z - ae^{i\alpha}$  in the circular disc  $|z| \leq r$ ? ( $r, a, \alpha$  real constants,  $r > 0, a > 0$ .)

17. Let  $a$  and  $b$  be integers,  $f(x)$  a function defined in  $a \leq x \leq b$ ,  $f(x) > 0$ . Using the symbol  $[ ]$  find an expression for the number of *lattice points* (points with integral coordinates, cf. introduction to I 60.9) that are situated in the part of the plane bounded by the inequalities

$$a \leq x \leq b, \quad 0 < y \leq f(x).$$

**18.** Let  $p$  and  $q$  be positive integers with no common divisor different from 1, i.e.  $p, q$  relatively prime. By counting lattice points prove the formula

$$\left[\frac{q}{p}\right] + \left[\frac{2q}{p}\right] + \left[\frac{3q}{p}\right] + \dots + \left[\frac{(p-1)q}{p}\right] = \frac{(p-1)(q-1)}{2}.$$

**19.** If  $p$  and  $q$  are odd positive integers with no common divisor, then with

$$\frac{p-1}{2} = p', \quad \frac{q-1}{2} = q',$$

$$\left(\left[\frac{q}{p}\right] + \left[\frac{2q}{p}\right] + \dots + \left[\frac{p'q}{p}\right]\right) + \left(\left[\frac{p}{q}\right] + \left[\frac{2p}{q}\right] + \dots + \left[\frac{q'p}{q}\right]\right) = p'q'.$$

**20.** Let  $p$  be a prime number of the form  $4n+1$ . We then have

$$[\sqrt{p}] + [\sqrt{2p}] + [\sqrt{3p}] + \dots + \left[\sqrt{\frac{p-1}{4}p}\right] = \frac{p^2-1}{12}.$$

### § 3. The Principle of Inclusion and Exclusion

**21.** Consider a set of  $N$  objects. Let  $N_\alpha$  be the number of those objects that have a certain property  $\alpha$ ,  $N_\beta$  the number of those that have the property  $\beta$ , ...,  $N_\kappa$  and  $N_\lambda$  the number of those that have the property  $\kappa$  and  $\lambda$  respectively. Similarly let  $N_{\alpha\beta}$ ,  $N_{\alpha\gamma}$ , ...,  $N_{\alpha\beta\gamma}$ , ...,  $N_{\alpha\beta\gamma\dots\kappa\lambda}$  denote the number of those objects that have *simultaneously* the properties  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ ,  $\alpha$  and  $\gamma$ , ...,  $\alpha$ ,  $\beta$  and  $\gamma$ , ...,  $\alpha$ ,  $\beta$ ,  $\gamma$ , ...,  $\kappa$  and  $\lambda$ , respectively. Then the number  $N_0$  of those objects that have *none* of the properties  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma, \dots, \kappa, \lambda$ , is given by

$$\begin{aligned} & N - N_\alpha - N_\beta - N_\gamma - \dots - N_\kappa - N_\lambda \\ & \quad + N_{\alpha\beta} + N_{\alpha\gamma} + \dots + N_{\kappa\lambda} \\ & \quad - N_{\alpha\beta\gamma} - \dots \\ & \quad \dots \\ & \quad \pm N_{\alpha\beta\gamma\dots\kappa\lambda}. \end{aligned}$$

The principle stated by **21** deserves another proof which, although needing some introduction, exhibits more clearly the underlying basic set-theoretical (logical) ideas. We consider a finite or infinite set  $U$  (the "universe of discourse"). The *characteristic function*  $A(x)$  of a subset  $A$  of  $U$  is a function of the variable element  $x$  of  $U$ :

$$A(x) = 1 \quad \text{or} \quad 0$$

according as  $x$  does, or does not, belong to  $A$ . The characteristic function of  $U$  has the constant value 1 ( $U$  thus stands also for unity) and the characteristic function of the empty set (the null set) has the constant value 0.

The characteristic functions of the subsets  $A, B, C, \dots$  will be denoted by  $A(x), B(x), C(x), \dots$ , respectively. If there is no danger of misunderstanding, we may simplify the notation by writing  $A$  for  $A(x)$ , etc., that is, by using the same symbol for a subset and its characteristic function.

$A$  is a subset of  $B$  if, and only if,

$$A(x) \leq B(x)$$

for all values of  $x$ , or, more simply,  $A \leq B$ .

If  $U$  is a finite set, the number of elements of the subset  $A$  is  $\Sigma A(x)$ , where the summation is extended over all the elements of  $U$ .

**21.1.** What is the characteristic function of

- (1) the complement of  $A$ ,
- (2) the intersection of  $A$  and  $B$ ,
- (3) the union of  $A$  and  $B$ ?

**21.2.** Give another proof for **21**.

**22.** Assume that we have  $n$  objects,  $n > 1$ . Let these all have property  $\alpha$  with the exception of the first object, all property  $\beta$  with the exception of the second object, ..., and all property  $\lambda$  with the exception of the last  $n$ th object. What do we obtain from **21** applied to this case?

**22.1.** Prove I 189 by a combinatorial argument [21, I 192].

**22.2.** Prove I 208 by a combinatorial argument.

**22.3.** Prove that

$$\tilde{S}_k^n = S_k^n - \binom{n}{1} S_{k-1}^n + \binom{n}{2} S_{k-2}^n - \cdots + (-1)^n S_{k-n}^0.$$

[See definitions in Part I, Chap. 4, § 3; if the condition  $1 \leq k \leq n$  is not satisfied,  $S_k^n$  must be interpreted as having the value 0].

**23.** How many of the  $n!$  terms in the expansion of a determinant of the  $n$ th order remain, if all the elements of the principal diagonal are set equal to 0? [Observe **21**: Let those terms have property  $\alpha$  that contain  $a_{11}$  as a factor, etc.]

**24.** Let  $a, b, c, \dots, k, l$  be positive integers any two of which are relatively prime. How many numbers are there among the numbers  $1, 2, 3, \dots, n$ , that are not divisible by any of the numbers  $a, b, c, \dots, k, l$ ? [12.]

**25.** Let the different prime factors of the number  $n$  be denoted by  $p, q, r, \dots$ . The number of numbers less than  $n$  that have no common divisors different from 1 with  $n$  is equal to

$$n \left(1 - \frac{1}{p}\right) \left(1 - \frac{1}{q}\right) \left(1 - \frac{1}{r}\right) \cdots$$

This number is generally denoted by  $\varphi(n)$  (the *Euler* function). We set  $\varphi(1) = 1$ ;  $\varphi(n)$  is thus the number of those numbers  $\leq n$  that are relatively prime to  $n$ . This is the case for  $n \geq 1$ , since 1 has no common divisors different from 1 with itself.

**26.** Assume that we have any  $N$  objects, that, as in **21**, can have the properties  $\alpha, \beta, \dots, \kappa, \lambda$ . Associate with each individual object a *value*. Denote by  $W_\alpha$  the total value (the sum of the values) of those objects that have property  $\alpha$ ,  $W_\beta$  the total value of those with property  $\beta$ , etc. Similarly let  $W_{\alpha\beta}, W_{\alpha\gamma}, \dots, W_{\alpha\beta\gamma}, \dots, W_{\alpha\beta\gamma \dots \kappa\lambda}$  denote the total value of those objects that have *simultaneously* the properties  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ ,  $\alpha$  and  $\gamma$ , ...,  $\alpha, \beta$  and  $\gamma$ , ...,  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma$ , ...,  $\kappa$  and  $\lambda$ , respectively. If

$W$  is the total value of all the objects, then the total value of those objects that have *none* of the properties  $\alpha, \beta, \dots, \kappa, \lambda$  is equal to

$$\begin{aligned} & W - W_\alpha - W_\beta - W_\gamma - \dots - W_\kappa - W_\lambda \\ & + W_{\alpha\beta} + W_{\alpha\gamma} + \dots + W_{\kappa\lambda} \\ & - W_{\alpha\beta\gamma} - \dots \\ & \dots \\ & \pm W_{\alpha\beta\gamma\dots\kappa\lambda}. \end{aligned}$$

**27.** Let  $n > 1$ ; and  $r_1, r_2, \dots, r_{\phi(n)}$  be the numbers less than  $n$  that have no common divisors different from 1 with  $n$ . We then have

$$r_1^2 + r_2^2 + \dots + r_{\phi(n)}^2 = \frac{\varphi(n)}{3} \left( n^2 + \frac{(-1)^\nu}{2} pqr \dots \right),$$

where  $p, q, r, \dots$  are the different prime factors of  $n$ , and  $\nu$  is their number.

**27.1.** The number  $N_0$  sought in **21** is

$$\begin{aligned} & \leq N \\ & \geq N - N_\alpha - N_\beta - N_\gamma - \dots - N_\kappa - N_\lambda \\ & \leq N - N_\alpha - N_\beta - N_\gamma - \dots - N_\kappa - N_\lambda + N_{\alpha\beta} + N_{\alpha\gamma} + \dots + N_{\kappa\lambda}. \\ & \dots \dots \dots \end{aligned}$$

Briefly, in a somewhat extended meaning of the term (see the introduction to I **140** and I **144**), the expression given in **21** "envelops"  $N_0$ .

**27.2.** Let  $l$  stand for the number of properties considered in **21**.

Define

$$\begin{aligned} S_0 &= N, \\ S_1 &= N_\alpha + N_\beta + N_\gamma + \dots + N_\kappa + N_\lambda, \\ S_2 &= N_{\alpha\beta} + N_{\alpha\gamma} + \dots + N_{\kappa\lambda}, \\ & \dots \dots \dots \\ S_l &= N_{\alpha\beta\gamma\dots\kappa\lambda}, \end{aligned}$$

and let  $s_k$  denote the number of those objects that possess precisely  $k$  of the  $l$  properties considered,  $0 \leq k \leq l$ .

It is easily seen (recognize the relation to binomial coefficients) that

$$\begin{aligned} S_0 &= s_0 + s_1 + s_2 + s_3 + \dots + s_l, \\ S_1 &= s_1 + 2s_2 + 3s_3 + \dots + ls_l, \\ S_2 &= s_2 + 3s_3 + \dots + \binom{l}{2}s_l, \\ S_3 &= s_3 + \dots + \binom{l}{3}s_l, \\ & \dots \dots \dots \\ S_l &= s_l. \end{aligned}$$

Hence prove that

$$\begin{aligned}
 s_0 &= S_0 - S_1 + S_2 - S_3 + \cdots + (-1)^l S_l, \\
 s_1 &= S_1 - 2S_2 + 3S_3 - \cdots + (-1)^{l-1} l S_l, \\
 s_2 &= S_2 - 3S_3 + \cdots + (-1)^{l-2} \binom{l}{2} S_l, \\
 s_3 &= S_3 + \cdots + (-1)^{l-3} \binom{l}{3} S_l, \\
 &\dots\dots\dots \\
 s_l &= S_l.
 \end{aligned}$$

The first line just restates the result of 21. [VII 54.1.]

#### § 4. Parts and Divisors

Let  $n$  be a non-negative integer. By a *part* of  $n$  we mean any non-negative integer that is  $\leq n$ . The numbers 0 and  $n$  are termed “improper parts” of  $n$ . The number 0 contains only itself as a part and in fact as an improper one.

Let  $n$  be a positive integer. By a *divisor* of  $n$  we mean any positive integer that divides  $n$  without remainder. The numbers 1 and  $n$  are termed “improper divisors”. The number 1 contains only itself as a divisor and in fact as an improper one.

Let  $m$  and  $n$  be non-negative integers. By the *greatest common part* of  $m$  and  $n$  we mean that number whose parts are identical with the common parts of  $m$  and  $n$ . It is the smaller of the two numbers  $m$  and  $n$  or equal to both if they are equal. It is denoted by  $\min(m, n)$ .

Let  $m$  and  $n$  be positive integers. By the *greatest common divisor* of  $m$  and  $n$  we mean that number whose divisors are identical with the common divisors of  $m$  and  $n$ . It is denoted by  $(m, n)$ .

By  $\min(l, m, n, \dots)$  we denote in general the smallest of the numbers  $l, m, n, \dots$ , and by  $(l, m, n, \dots)$  we denote the greatest common divisor of the numbers  $l, m, n, \dots$ .

There exists a smallest number, among whose parts are contained those of  $m$  as well as those of  $n$ . It is the larger of the two numbers  $m$  and  $n$  or equal to both if they are equal. It is denoted by  $\max(m, n)$ .

There exists a smallest number among whose divisors are contained those of  $m$  as well as those of  $n$ . It is termed the *least common multiple* of  $m$  and  $n$ .

Let  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$  be any numbers. By  $\sum_{t \leq n} a_t$  we mean the sum taken over all the parts of  $n$  (including the improper parts 0 and  $n$ );  $\sum_{t \leq n} a_t = \sum_{t=0}^n a_t$ .

Let  $a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots$  be any numbers. By  $\sum_{d|n} a_d$  we mean the sum taken over all the divisors of  $n$  (including the improper divisors 1 and  $n$ ). E.g.  $\sum_{d|6} a_d = a_1 + a_2 + a_3 + a_6$ .

**28.** Let  $a, b, c, \dots, k, l$  be any non-negative integers. We have

$$\begin{aligned}
 \max(a, b, c, \dots, k, l) &= a + b + c + \cdots + k + l \\
 &\quad - \min(a, b) - \min(a, c) - \cdots - \min(k, l) \\
 &\quad + \min(a, b, c) + \cdots \\
 &\quad \dots\dots\dots \\
 &\quad \pm \min(a, b, c, \dots, k, l).
 \end{aligned}$$



**29.** The least common multiple  $M$  of the positive integers  $a, b, c, \dots, k, l$  may be represented as follows:

$$M = abc \dots kl(a, b)^{-1}(a, c)^{-1} \dots (k, l)^{-1}(a, b, c) \dots (a, b, c, \dots, k, l)^{\pm 1}.$$

**30.** We have

$$1 = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & \dots & 0 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & \dots & 1 \end{vmatrix}^2 = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & \dots & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 2 & 2 & \dots & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 & 3 & \dots & 3 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 & 4 & \dots & 4 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ 1 & 2 & 3 & 4 & \dots & n+1 \end{vmatrix}.$$

The general element of the first determinant  $\eta_{\lambda\mu} = 1$ , if  $\mu$  is a (proper or improper) part of  $\lambda$ , otherwise it  $= 0$  ( $\lambda, \mu = 0, 1, \dots, n$ ); in the second determinant the general element  $c_{\lambda\mu}$  is equal to the number of common parts of  $\lambda$  and  $\mu$ , i.e. the smaller of the two numbers  $\lambda+1$  and  $\mu+1$  ( $\lambda, \mu = 0, 1, \dots, n$ ).

**31.** Prove that  $|c_{\lambda\mu}|$  is equal to 1, where  $|c_{\lambda\mu}|$  denotes the determinant whose general element  $c_{\lambda\mu}$  is equal to the number of common divisors of  $\lambda$  and  $\mu$ , in other words to the number of divisors of the greatest common divisor of  $\lambda$  and  $\mu$ , where  $\lambda, \mu = 1, 2, \dots, n$ .

**32.** Let  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_n$  be arbitrary,  $A_\nu = \sum_{t \leq \nu} a_t$ ,  $\nu = 0, 1, \dots, n$ . We have

$$\begin{vmatrix} A_0 & A_0 & A_0 & A_0 & \dots & A_0 \\ A_0 & A_1 & A_1 & A_1 & \dots & A_1 \\ A_0 & A_1 & A_2 & A_2 & \dots & A_2 \\ A_0 & A_1 & A_2 & A_3 & \dots & A_3 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ A_0 & A_1 & A_2 & A_3 & \dots & A_n \end{vmatrix} = a_0 a_1 a_2 \dots a_n.$$

The general element  $c_{\lambda\mu}$  of the determinant is  $= A_r$ , where  $r = \min(\lambda, \mu)$ ,  $\lambda, \mu = 0, 1, \dots, n$ . (Generalization of 30.)

**33.** Let  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  be arbitrary,  $A_\nu = \sum_{t \leq \nu} a_t$ ,  $\nu = 1, 2, \dots, n$ . We have

$$\begin{vmatrix} A_1 & A_1 & A_1 & A_1 & \dots & A_1 \\ A_1 & A_2 & A_1 & A_2 & \dots & A_{(2,n)} \\ A_1 & A_1 & A_3 & A_1 & \dots & A_{(3,n)} \\ A_1 & A_2 & A_1 & A_4 & \dots & A_{(4,n)} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ A_1 & A_{(n,2)} & A_{(n,3)} & A_{(n,4)} & \dots & A_n \end{vmatrix} = a_1 a_2 a_3 \dots a_n.$$

The general element  $c_{\lambda\mu}$  of the determinant is  $= A_r$ , where  $r = (\lambda, \mu)$ ,  $\lambda, \mu = 1, 2, \dots, n$ . (Generalization of 31.)

**34.** If  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$  are arbitrary and  $A_n = \sum_{t \leq n} a_t$ ,  $n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$ , then we clearly have

$$a_0 = A_0, \quad a_1 = A_1 - A_0, \quad a_2 = A_2 - A_1, \dots, \quad a_n = A_n - A_{n-1}, \quad \dots$$

If  $a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots$  are arbitrary and  $A_n = \sum_{t \leq n} a_t$ ,  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ , then we have

$$\begin{aligned} a_1 &= A_1, & a_2 &= A_2 - A_1, & a_3 &= A_3 - A_1, & a_4 &= A_4 - A_2, \\ a_5 &= A_5 - A_1, & a_6 &= A_6 - A_3 - A_2 + A_1, & & & \dots \end{aligned}$$

and in general

$$a_n = \sum_{t|n} \mu(t) A_{\frac{n}{t}}, \quad n=1, 2, 3, \dots,$$

where  $\mu(n)$  is the Möbius function (see definition in § 5 preceding 38).

**35.** Denote by  $\psi(y)$  an arbitrary function defined for  $0 \leq y \leq 1$ . Let

$$g(n) = \sum_{v=1}^n \psi\left(\frac{v}{n}\right), \quad f(n) = \sum_{(r,n)=1} \psi\left(\frac{r}{n}\right),$$

where the last sum is extended over the numbers  $r$  that are  $\leq n$  and are relatively prime to  $n$ . We then have

$$f(n) = \sum_{t|n} \mu(t) g\left(\frac{n}{t}\right) = \sum_{t|n} \mu\left(\frac{n}{t}\right) g(t).$$

**36.** As is well known, we have

$$\prod_{v=1}^n (x - e^{\frac{2\pi i v}{n}}) = x^n - 1.$$

Set

$$\prod_{(r,n)=1} (x - e^{\frac{2\pi i r}{n}}) = K_n(x),$$

where the product is extended over those numbers  $r$  that are  $\leq n$  and relatively prime to  $n$ . ( $K_n(x)$  is termed the  $n$ th *cyclotomic polynomial*.) The zeros of  $x^n - 1$  are the  $n$ th roots of unity, the zeros of  $K_n(x)$  are the *primitive*  $n$ th roots of unity. Derive the formula

$$K_n(x) = \prod_{t|n} (x^{\frac{n}{t}} - 1)^{\mu(t)}.$$

**37.** If  $\mu(n)$  is the Möbius function, then we have

$$\sum_{(r,n)=1} e^{\frac{2\pi i r}{n}} = \mu(n).$$

## § 5. Arithmetical Functions, Power Series, Dirichlet Series

By an *arithmetical function*  $f(n)$  we mean a function defined for  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ . In this general sense defining an “arithmetical function” is equivalent to defining an arbitrary infinite sequence of numbers. Some functions of this kind that are of special significance in number theory are the following:

$\varphi(n)$  (the *Euler function*), the number of numbers less than  $n$  that are relatively prime to  $n$ ;  $\varphi(1)=(1)$  [25];

$\tau(n) = \sum_{t|n} 1$ , the number of divisors of  $n$ ;

$\sigma(n) = \sum_{t|n} t$ , the sum of the divisors of  $n$ ;

$\sigma_\alpha(n) = \sum_{t|n} t^\alpha$ , the sum of the  $\alpha$ th powers of the divisors of  $n$ ;  $\sigma_1(n) = \sigma(n)$ ,  $\sigma_0(n) = \tau(n)$ ;

$\nu(n)$ , the number of distinct prime factors of  $n$ ;

$\mu(n)$  (the *Möbius function*),  $\mu(1)=1$ ,  $\mu(n)=0$ , if  $n$  is divisible by a square (apart from 1) and  $\mu(n)=(-1)^{\nu(n)}$  in all other cases;

$\lambda(n)$  (the *Liouville function*),  $\lambda(1)=1$ ,  $\lambda(n)=(-1)^k$  where  $k$  is the number of prime factors of  $n$  (counting multiple factors according to multiplicity);

$\Lambda(n)$  (the *Mangoldt function*),  $\Lambda(n)=\log p$  if  $n=p^m$  is a power of a prime number, and otherwise  $\Lambda(n)=0$ .

**38.** Construct a table of these functions from  $n=1$  to  $n=10$ . (In the case of  $\sigma_\alpha(n)$  for  $\alpha=0, 1, 2$ .)

**38.1.** Study the table in **38** and prove that:

(1) If  $n > 2$ , then  $\varphi(n)$  is even.

(2)  $\varphi(n)=1$  only for  $n=1$  and  $2$ .

(3)  $\varphi(n)=2$  only for  $n=3, 4$  and  $6$ .

(4)  $\tau(n)$  is odd or even according as  $n$  is, or is not, a perfect square.

(5)  $\sigma(n)$  is odd if  $n$  is a perfect square multiplied by 1 or 2. Is it odd in any other case?

Continue to explore the table in **38**, extend it successively, try to guess further results and attempt to prove or disprove your guesses.

Consider power series of the form

$$a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \cdots + a_nz^n + \cdots = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_nz^n$$

together with the corresponding *Dirichlet series* of the form

$$a_11^{-s} + a_22^{-s} + \cdots + a_nn^{-s} + \cdots = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_nn^{-s}.$$

Power series are the appropriate tool for *additive* number theory (cf. I, Chap. 1), while Dirichlet series are the appropriate tool for *multiplicative* number theory<sup>1</sup>.

The *Cauchy product* of two power series

$$\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_kz^k \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} b_lz^l = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} c_nz^n$$

is defined by

$$c_n = \sum_{k+l=n} a_kb_l = \sum_{t \leq n} a_tb_{n-t}$$

[I 34]. Here  $t$  runs through all the parts of  $n$ , including the improper parts 0 and  $n$ . The *Dirichlet product* of two Dirichlet series

$$\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} a_kk^{-s} \sum_{l=1}^{\infty} b_ll^{-s} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} c_nn^{-s}$$

is defined by

$$c_n = \sum_{kl=n} a_kb_l = \sum_{t|n} a_tb_{\frac{n}{t}}.$$

Here  $t$  runs through all the divisors of  $n$ , including the improper divisors 1 and  $n$ .

<sup>1</sup> In this chapter we do not consider questions of convergence. In the case of absolute convergence all the calculations are valid.

If all the coefficients of a power series are set equal to 1, then we obtain the geometric series

$$1 + z + z^2 + \cdots + z^n + \cdots = \frac{1}{1-z}.$$

If all the coefficients of a Dirichlet series are set equal to 1, then we obtain the *Riemann zeta function*

$$1^{-s} + 2^{-s} + 3^{-s} + \cdots + n^{-s} + \cdots = \zeta(s).$$

**39.** The number of parts of  $n$  is  $\sum_{t \leq n} 1 = n+1$ . The number of divisors of  $n$  is  $\sum_{t|n} 1 = \tau(n)$ . We have

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (n+1)z^n = \frac{1}{(1-z)^2}, \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \tau(n)n^{-s} = \zeta(s)^2.$$

**40.** The  $n$ th coefficients in the expansion of the products

$$\frac{1}{1-z} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n z^n \quad \text{and} \quad \zeta(s) \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n n^{-s}$$

are

$$\sum_{t \leq n} a_t \quad \text{and} \quad \sum_{t|n} a_t$$

respectively.

**41.** Show that

$$\begin{aligned} 1-z &= \frac{1}{1+z+z^2+\cdots+z^n+\cdots}, \\ \mu(1)1^{-s} + \mu(2)2^{-s} + \mu(3)3^{-s} + \cdots + \mu(n)n^{-s} + \cdots \\ &= \frac{1}{1^{-s} + 2^{-s} + 3^{-s} + \cdots + n^{-s} + \cdots} = \frac{1}{\zeta(s)}. \end{aligned}$$

**42.** Let us set as in **32**:  $\sum_{t \leq n} a_t = A_n$ ,  $n=0, 1, 2, \dots$ . Then we have

$$\begin{aligned} (A_0 + A_1 z + A_2 z^2 + \cdots + A_n z^n + \cdots)(1-z) \\ = a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \cdots + a_n z^n + \cdots. \end{aligned}$$

Now set as in **33**:  $\sum_{t|n} a_t = A_n$ ,  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ . Then we have

$$\begin{aligned} (A_1 1^{-s} + A_2 2^{-s} + A_3 3^{-s} + \cdots + A_n n^{-s} + \cdots) \\ \times (\mu(1)1^{-s} + \mu(2)2^{-s} + \mu(3)3^{-s} + \cdots + \mu(n)n^{-s} + \cdots) \\ = a_1 1^{-s} + a_2 2^{-s} + a_3 3^{-s} + \cdots + a_n n^{-s} + \cdots. \end{aligned}$$

## § 6. Multiplicative Arithmetical Functions

By a *multiplicative arithmetical function*  $f(n)$  we mean an arithmetical function such that  $f(1)=1$ , and that satisfies for relatively prime numbers  $m$  and  $n$  the equation

$$f(m)f(n) = f(mn).$$

**43.** Show that

$$n^a, \quad \sigma_a(n), \quad 2^{v(n)}, \quad \mu(n), \quad \lambda(n), \quad \varphi(n)$$

are multiplicative arithmetical functions. [For  $\varphi(n)$  observe **25**.]

**44.** Let  $n = p_1^{k_1} p_2^{k_2} \dots p_v^{k_v}$ , where  $p_1, p_2, \dots, p_v$  are distinct prime numbers. Then we have

$$\sigma_a(n) = \frac{1 - p_1^{a(k_1+1)}}{1 - p_1^a} \cdot \frac{1 - p_2^{a(k_2+1)}}{1 - p_2^a} \dots \frac{1 - p_v^{a(k_v+1)}}{1 - p_v^a};$$

for example

$$\sigma(n) = \frac{1 - p_1^{k_1+1}}{1 - p_1} \cdot \frac{1 - p_2^{k_2+1}}{1 - p_2} \dots \frac{1 - p_v^{k_v+1}}{1 - p_v}, \quad \tau(n) = (k_1 + 1)(k_2 + 1) \dots (k_v + 1).$$

**45.** Show that, for  $n > 30$ , we have

$$\varphi(n) > \tau(n).$$

**46.** Let  $a, b, c, d, \dots, k, l$  be positive integers,  $M$  their least common multiple, let  $(a, b), (a, c), \dots, (a, b, c), \dots$  denote as usual the greatest common divisors of  $a$  and  $b, a$  and  $c, \dots, a, b$  and  $c, \dots$  respectively. If  $f(n)$  is a multiplicative function, then we have

$$f(M)f((a, b))f((a, c)) \dots f((k, l))f((a, b, c, d)) \dots = f(a)f(b) \dots f(l)f((a, b, c)) \dots$$

(On the right-hand side we have those  $f(n)$  for which  $n$  is the greatest common divisor of an odd number of the numbers  $a, b, c, \dots, k, l$ .) [29 is the special case  $f(n) = n$ .]

**47.** Let  $f(n)$  be a multiplicative arithmetical function. Then we have

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} f(n)n^{-s} = \prod_p (1 + f(p)p^{-s} + f(p^2)p^{-2s} + f(p^3)p^{-3s} + \dots),$$

where the infinite product is extended over all prime numbers  $p$  and formed by taking products only of finitely many factors different from  $1^{-s}$ .

**48.**

$$\zeta(s) = \prod_p \frac{1}{1 - p^{-s}}.$$

**49.** Show that

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \sigma_a(n)n^{-s} &= \zeta(s)\zeta(s-a), & \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} 2^{v(n)}n^{-s} &= \frac{\zeta(s)^2}{\zeta(2s)}, \\ \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \lambda(n)n^{-s} &= \frac{\zeta(2s)}{\zeta(s)}, & \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \varphi(n)n^{-s} &= \frac{\zeta(s-1)}{\zeta(s)}. \end{aligned}$$

[43, 44, 25.]

**50.** Let  $a(n)$  be the greatest odd divisor of  $n$ . Then we have

$$a(1)1^{-s} + a(2)2^{-s} + a(3)3^{-s} + \dots + a(n)n^{-s} + \dots = \frac{1 - 2^{1-s}}{1 - 2^{-s}} \zeta(s-1).$$

**51.** Prove that

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \Lambda(n)n^{-s} = -\frac{\zeta'(s)}{\zeta(s)}.$$

**52.**

$$\sum_{t|n} \mu(t) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{for } n=1, \\ 0 & \text{for } n>1. \end{cases}$$

53.

$$\sum_{t|n} \lambda(t) = \begin{cases} 1, & \text{if } n \text{ is a square,} \\ 0, & \text{if } n \text{ is not a square.} \end{cases}$$

54.

$$\sum_{t|n} \varphi(t) = n.$$

55.

$$\sum_{t|n} \frac{\mu(t)}{t} = \frac{\varphi(n)}{n}.$$

56.

$$\sum_{t|n} \Lambda(t) = \log n.$$

57.

$$\begin{vmatrix} (1, 1) & (1, 2) & \dots & (1, n) \\ (2, 1) & (2, 2) & \dots & (2, n) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ (n, 1) & (n, 2) & \dots & (n, n) \end{vmatrix} = \varphi(1)\varphi(2)\dots\varphi(n).$$

**58.** Consider all possible factorizations of an even integer of the form  $n = \alpha\beta$ , such that  $\alpha$  is odd (possibly 1) and  $\beta$  is even. Then

$$\sum \beta - \sum \alpha$$

is equal to the sum of the divisors of  $n/2$ .

**58.1.** Let  $P(n, k)$  denote the number of decompositions of  $n$  into a product of  $k$  factors; only positive integers greater than 1 are admissible as factors, and two decompositions are regarded as equal if, and only if, they involve the same factors in the same order. For instance,  $P(12, 2) = 4$  and  $P(12, 3) = 3$  since

$$\begin{aligned} 12 &= 2 \cdot 6 = 6 \cdot 2 = 3 \cdot 4 = 4 \cdot 3 \\ &= 3 \cdot 2 \cdot 2 = 2 \cdot 3 \cdot 2 = 2 \cdot 2 \cdot 3. \end{aligned}$$

Show that, for  $n \geq 2$ ,

$$\mu(n) = -P(n, 1) + P(n, 2) - P(n, 3) + \dots,$$

the difference between the number of “even” and “odd” decompositions, that is, decompositions into an even and an odd number of factors, respectively. For instance

$$\mu(12) = -1 + 4 - 3 = 0.$$

**58.2 (continued).** Show that

$$P(n, 1) - \frac{1}{2}P(n, 2) + \frac{1}{3}P(n, 3) - \dots$$

equals  $1/m$  if  $n = p^m$ , the  $m$ th power of a prime number  $p$ , but equals 0 if  $n$  is divisible by more than one prime. In the case  $n = 12$  we have

$$1 - \frac{4}{2} + \frac{3}{3} = 0.$$

**58.3 (continued).** If  $n$  is the product of  $m$  different prime factors, then

$$P(n, k) = k! S_k^m$$

[introduction to I 186].

**58.4.** If  $p$  is a prime and  $m$  a positive integer, then

$$P(p^m, k) = \binom{m-1}{k-1}.$$

(For this particular case, verify **58.1** by using the binomial theorem; also cf. **58.2** with I **38**.)

**58.5.** For  $n > 1$  let  $Q(n)$  denote the number of different decompositions of the integer  $n$  into a product of integers greater than 1; two decompositions are not regarded as different if they involve the same factors, and so the order of factors does not matter (in contrast to **58.1**); define  $Q(1) = 1$ . For instance  $Q(12) = 4$ . If  $n$  is the product of  $m$  different prime factors, then

$$Q(n) = T_m$$

[introduction to I **186**].

**58.6** (continued). Show that

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} Q(n)n^{-s} = \exp \left( \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (\zeta(ns) - 1)/n \right).$$

**58.7.** Let  $n$  be a positive integer.

$$n = 2^{l_1} p_1^{k_1} p_2^{k_2} \dots p_{\mu}^{k_{\mu}} q_1^{l_1} q_2^{l_2} \dots q_{\nu}^{l_{\nu}},$$

where  $2, p_1, \dots, p_{\mu}, q_1, \dots, q_{\nu}$  are distinct primes,

$$p_1 \equiv \dots \equiv p_{\mu} \equiv 1, \quad q_1 \equiv \dots \equiv q_{\nu} \equiv 3 \pmod{4}.$$

Set

$$\delta(n) = (k_1 + 1)(k_2 + 1) \dots (k_{\mu} + 1)$$

if  $l_1, l_2, \dots, l_{\nu}$  are all even, and

$$\delta(n) = 0$$

otherwise. Show that  $\delta(n)$  is, in fact, the difference between the numbers of two different kinds of divisors of  $n$ :

$$\delta(n) = \sum_{t'|n} (-1)^{(t'-1)/2},$$

where the summation is extended over the odd divisors  $t'$  of  $n$ .

( $4\delta(n)$  is the number of lattice points on the circle

$$x^2 + y^2 = n.$$

This fact was discovered by Gauss.)

**58.8.** Which of the functions  $P(n, 2), P(n, 3), \dots, Q(n)$  and  $\delta(n)$  are multiplicative?

**59.** Let  $f(n)$  and  $g(n)$  be multiplicative arithmetical functions. Then the arithmetical function

$$h(n) = \sum_{t|n} f(t) g\left(\frac{n}{t}\right)$$

is also multiplicative.





$$(4) \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \Phi(n)n^{-s} = \frac{\zeta(s-2)}{\zeta(s)},$$

Prove (1), (2), (3) independently of each other directly from the definition. Show further that:

$$\begin{aligned} (1) \rightarrow (4), \quad (2) \rightarrow (4), \quad (3) \rightarrow (4), \\ (4) \rightarrow (1), \quad (4) \rightarrow (2), \quad (4) \rightarrow (3).^1 \end{aligned}$$

## §7. Lambert Series and Related Topics

**65.** From the identity

$$\zeta(s) \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n n^{-s} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} A_n n^{-s}$$

it follows that

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{a_n x^n}{1-x^n} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} A_n x^n$$

and conversely, where  $a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots, A_1, A_2, A_3, \dots$  are constants. (The series occurring on the left-hand side of the second equation is called a *Lambert series*.)

**66.** The two identities

$$\zeta(s)(1-2^{1-s}) \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n n^{-s} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} B_n n^{-s}, \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{a_n x^n}{1+x^n} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} B_n x^n$$

are equivalent.

**67.** Assume that between the numbers  $a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots$ , and  $A_1, A_2, A_3, \dots$  the same relation subsists as in **65**. Then

$$\prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{n}{x} \sin \frac{x}{n} \right)^{a_n} = \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \left( 1 - \frac{x^2}{n^2 \pi^2} \right)^{A_n}.$$

**68.** Assume that between the numbers  $a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots$  and  $B_1, B_2, B_3, \dots$  the same relation subsists as in **66**. Then

$$\prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{x}{2n} \cot \frac{x}{2n} \right)^{a_n} = \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \left( 1 - \frac{x^2}{n^2 \pi^2} \right)^{B_n}.$$

**68.1.** Define

$$f(x) + f(2x) + \dots + f(nx) + \dots = F(x).$$

Then, with the notation of **65**,

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n F(nx) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} A_n f(nx).$$

(How is this result related to **65** and **67**?)

---

<sup>1</sup> I.e. from (1) follows (4), from (2) follows (4), and so on.

**68.2.** Define

$$f(x) - f(2x) + \cdots + (-1)^{n-1}f(nx) + \cdots = G(x).$$

Then, with the notation of **66**,

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n G(nx) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} B_n f(nx).$$

(How is this result related to **66** and **68**?)

**68.3.** Each of the following two equations implies the other:

$$F(x) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} f(nx),$$

$$f(x) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mu(n) F(nx).$$

**69.** Show that

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\mu(n)x^n}{1-x^n} \quad \text{and} \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\varphi(n)x^n}{1-x^n}$$

are rational functions of  $x$ . What functions?

**70.**

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\lambda(n)x^n}{1-x^n} = x + x^4 + x^9 + x^{16} + x^{25} + \cdots.$$

**71.** Show that

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\mu(n)x^n}{1+x^n} = x - 2x^2, \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\phi(n)x^n}{1+x^n} = x \frac{1+x^2}{(1-x^2)^2}.$$

**72.**

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \lambda(n) \frac{x^n}{1+x^n} &= x - 2x^2 + x^4 - 2x^8 + x^9 + x^{16} - 2x^{18} + x^{25} - \cdots \\ &= \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} b_n x^n, \end{aligned}$$

where  $b_n = 1$  if  $n$  is a square,  $b_n = -2$  if  $n$  is twice a square, and in all other cases  $b_n = 0$ .

**72.1.**

$$\prod_1^{\infty} (1-x^n)^{\frac{\mu(n)}{n}} = e^{-x}, \quad \prod_1^{\infty} (1-x^n)^{\frac{\phi(n)}{n}} = e^{-\frac{x}{1-x}}.$$

**73.**

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \Phi(n) \frac{x^n}{1-x^n} &= x \frac{1+x}{(1-x)^3}, \\ \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \Phi(n) \frac{x^n}{1+x^n} &= x \frac{1+2x+6x^2+2x^3+x^4}{(1-x^2)^3}. \end{aligned} \quad [64].$$

**74.**

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \tau(n)x^n = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{x^n}{1-x^n} = x \frac{1+x}{1-x} + x^4 \frac{1+x^2}{1-x^2} + x^9 \frac{1+x^3}{1-x^3} + \cdots.$$

**74.1.**

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \delta(n)x^n = \frac{x}{1-x} - \frac{x^3}{1-x^3} + \frac{x^5}{1-x^5} - \frac{x^7}{1-x^7} + \dots \quad [58.7].$$

**\*75.**

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \sigma(n)x^n &= \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n \frac{x^n}{1-x^n} \\ &= \frac{x}{(1-x)^2} + \frac{x^2}{(1-x^2)^2} + \frac{x^3}{(1-x^3)^2} + \dots \end{aligned}$$

**75.1.**

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \sigma(n)x^n = \frac{x+2x^2-5x^5-7x^7+\dots}{1-x-x^2+x^5+x^7-\dots} \quad [I 54].$$

**75.2.**

$$3 \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \sigma(n)x^n = \frac{3x-15x^3+42x^6-90x^{10}+\dots}{1-3x+5x^3-7x^6+9x^{10}-\dots}$$

**75.3.**

$$\sigma(n) = \sigma(n-1) + \sigma(n-2) - \sigma(n-5) - \sigma(n-7) + \dots$$

The terms on the right-hand side are of the form

$$(-1)^{k-1} \sigma\left(n - \frac{3k^2 \pm k}{2}\right), \quad \text{where } 1 \leq \frac{3k^2 \pm k}{2} \leq n.$$

Where the symbol  $\sigma(0)$ , till now undefined, occurs, substitute for it  $n$ .

**75.4.**

$$\sigma(n) = 3\sigma(n-1) - 5\sigma(n-3) + 7\sigma(n-6) - 9\sigma(n-10) + \dots$$

The terms on the right-hand side are of the form

$$(-1)^{k-1} (2k+1) \sigma\left(n - \frac{k(k+1)}{2}\right), \quad \text{where } 1 \leq \frac{k(k+1)}{2} \leq n.$$

Where the symbol  $\sigma(0)$  occurs, substitute for it  $n/3$ .

**75.5.** Using the definition of  $p(n)$ , the number of partitions of  $n$ , in A I 20.1, prove that

$$\sigma(n) + \sigma(n-1) + 2\sigma(n-2) + \dots + p(n-1)\sigma(1) = \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} p(k)\sigma(n-k) = np(n).$$

**76.** The expression

$$\frac{1}{1-q} + \frac{p}{1-qx} + \frac{p^2}{1-qx^2} + \frac{p^3}{1-qx^3} + \dots$$

is unaltered, if  $p$  and  $q$  are interchanged.

**77.**

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{x}{1+x^2} + \frac{x^2}{1+x^4} + \frac{x^3}{1+x^6} + \frac{x^4}{1+x^8} + \dots \\ = \frac{x}{1-x} - \frac{x^3}{1-x^3} + \frac{x^5}{1-x^5} - \frac{x^7}{1-x^7} + \dots \end{aligned}$$

**78.**

$$\begin{aligned}\frac{x}{1-x} &= \frac{x}{1-x^2} + \frac{x^2}{1-x^4} + \frac{x^4}{1-x^8} + \frac{x^8}{1-x^{16}} + \cdots \\ &= \frac{x}{1+x} + \frac{2x^2}{1+x^2} + \frac{4x^4}{1+x^4} + \frac{8x^8}{1+x^8} + \cdots.\end{aligned}$$

**§ 8. Further Problems on Counting Lattice Points****79.** We have

$$\tau(1) + \tau(2) + \tau(3) + \cdots + \tau(n) = \left[ \frac{n}{1} \right] + \left[ \frac{n}{2} \right] + \left[ \frac{n}{3} \right] + \cdots + \left[ \frac{n}{n} \right].$$

[Both sides represent the number of lattice points in the region satisfying  $x > 0$ ,  $y > 0$ ,  $xy \leq n$ .]<sup>1</sup>

**80.** If  $\nu = [\sqrt{n}]$ , we have

$$\tau(1) + \tau(2) + \tau(3) + \cdots + \tau(n) = 2 \left[ \frac{n}{1} \right] + 2 \left[ \frac{n}{2} \right] + \cdots + 2 \left[ \frac{n}{\nu} \right] - \nu^2.$$

**80.1.** Let  $U(n)$  denote the least common multiple of the numbers  $1, 2, 3, \dots, n$ . Show that

$$\Lambda(1) + \Lambda(2) + \Lambda(3) + \cdots + \Lambda(n) = \log U(n).$$

**80.2.** Define  $\pi(x)$  to be the number of primes which do not exceed  $x$ . Thus

$$\pi(1) = 0, \quad \pi(10) = 4, \quad \pi(100) = 25.$$

Show that

$$\Lambda(1) + \Lambda(2) + \cdots + \Lambda(n) \leq \pi(n) \log n.$$

**81.** Let

$$\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} a_k k^{-s} \sum_{l=1}^{\infty} b_l l^{-s} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} c_n n^{-s}.$$

Then between the sums of the coefficients

$$\begin{aligned}a_1 + a_2 + \cdots + a_n &= A_n, & b_1 + b_2 + \cdots + b_n &= B_n, \\ c_1 + c_2 + \cdots + c_n &= \Gamma_n,\end{aligned}$$

we have the following relation:

$$\Gamma_n = \sum_{r=1}^n a_r B_{\left[ \frac{n}{r} \right]} = \sum_{s=1}^n b_s A_{\left[ \frac{n}{s} \right]}.$$

**82.**

$$\log n! = \sum_{p \leq n} \log p \left( \left[ \frac{n}{p} \right] + \left[ \frac{n}{p^2} \right] + \left[ \frac{n}{p^3} \right] + \cdots \right),$$

<sup>1</sup> The analogy (part, divisor) presented in 28-42 could here be pursued somewhat further.

where the summation is to be extended over all prime numbers  $p$  that do not exceed  $n$ . [Apply **81** to the Dirichlet product

$$-\zeta'(s) = \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} A(k)k^{-s} \left[ \sum_{l=1}^{\infty} l^{-s} \right]$$

**83.** With the notation of **81** we have also

$$\Gamma_n = \sum_{r=1}^v a_r B_{\left[\frac{n}{r}\right]} + \sum_{s=1}^v b_s A_{\left[\frac{n}{s}\right]} - A_v B_v,$$

where we have set  $v = [\sqrt{n}]$ .

## Chapter 2. Polynomials with Integral Coefficients and Integral-Valued Functions

### § 1. Integral Coefficients and Integral-Valued Polynomials

A polynomial

$$P(x) = a_0 x^m + a_1 x^{m-1} + \cdots + a_{m-1} x + a_m$$

is termed *a polynomial with integral coefficients* if all its coefficients  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{m-1}, a_m$  are integers. The polynomial  $P(x)$  is called *integral-valued* if its values at the integers  $P(0), P(1), P(2), \dots, P(n), \dots$  are integers. If a polynomial has integral coefficients, then it also is integral-valued.

**84.** The polynomial

$$\frac{x(x-1)(x-2)\cdots(x-m+1)}{1 \cdot 2 \cdot 3 \cdots m} = \binom{x}{m}$$

is integral-valued, but it does not have integral coefficients if  $m \geq 2$ .

**85.** Every polynomial  $P(x)$  of degree  $m$  may be expressed in the form

$$P(x) = b_0 \binom{x}{m} + b_1 \binom{x}{m-1} + \cdots + b_{m-1} \binom{x}{1} + b_m.$$

$P(x)$  is integral-valued if and only if the numbers  $b_0, b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}, b_m$  are integers.

**86.** If the polynomial  $P(x)$  of degree  $m$  is integral-valued, then  $m!P(x)$  has integral coefficients.

**87.** If a polynomial of degree  $m$  assumes integral values for  $m+1$  consecutive integral values of the variable, then it assumes integral values for all integral values of the variable.

**88.** Every *odd* polynomial  $P(x)$  of degree  $2m-1$  may be written in the form

$$P(x) = c_1 \binom{x}{1} + c_2 \binom{x+1}{3} + c_3 \binom{x+2}{5} + \cdots + c_m \binom{x+m-1}{2m-1}.$$

$P(x)$  is integral-valued if and only if the numbers  $c_1, c_2, \dots, c_{m-1}, c_m$  are integers.

**89.** Every *even* polynomial  $P(x)$  of degree  $2m$  may be written in the form

$$P(x) = d_0 + d_1 \frac{x}{1} \binom{x}{1} + d_2 \frac{x}{2} \binom{x+1}{3} + \cdots + d_m \frac{x}{m} \binom{x+m-1}{2m-1}.$$

$P(x)$  is integral-valued if and only if the numbers  $d_0, d_1, d_2, \dots, d_{m-1}, d_m$  are integers.

**90.** There exist polynomials with integral coefficients of degree  $m$ , whose absolute value is equal to 1 at  $m+1$  integral points if  $m \leq 3$ , but there exist no such polynomials if  $m \geq 4$ . [VI 70.]

**91.** If a rational integral function (a polynomial) of degree  $m$  assumes rational values at  $m+1$  integral points, then its coefficients are rational numbers.

**92.** If a rational function that is not a polynomial assumes rational values at all positive integral points, then it is the quotient of two relatively prime polynomials with integral coefficients.

**93.** If a rational function has integral values for infinitely many integral values of the variable, then it is a rational *integral* function (a polynomial).

## § 2. Integral-Valued Functions and their Prime Divisors

**94.** In the sequence

$$2^1+1, 2^2+1, 2^4+1, 2^8+1, \dots, 2^{2^n}+1, \dots$$

the terms are pairwise relatively prime. (We can deduce from this that there exist infinitely many primes.)

**95.** In the sequence of numbers

$$a, a+d, a+2d, \dots, a+nd, \dots \quad (a, d \text{ integers, } d \geq 0),$$

there exist several, in fact infinitely many, terms with the same prime factors.

**96.** In the sequence

$$5, 11, 17, 23, 29, 35, \dots, 6n-1, \dots$$

every term has a prime factor that is  $\equiv -1 \pmod{6}$ .

**97.** Let  $P(x)$  be an integral-valued polynomial. Is it possible that all the terms of the sequence of numbers

$$P(1), P(2), P(3), \dots, P(n), \dots$$

are prime numbers? (With the particular choice of  $P(x) = x^2 - x + 41$  the first 40 terms are prime numbers, as Euler noted.)

If the function  $f(x)$  is such that the values

$$f(0), f(1), f(2), \dots, f(n), \dots$$

are all integral, then  $f(x)$  is termed *integral-valued*. E.g.  $2^x$  is integral-valued. A rational function that is not a polynomial cannot be integral-valued [93]. A prime number  $p$  is termed a *prime divisor* of the integral-valued function  $f(x)$  if there exists an integer  $n$ ,  $n \geq 0$ , such that  $f(n) \geq 0$  and  $f(n) \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$ .  $2^x$  has only the single prime divisor 2. By 94 the function  $2^x + 1$  has infinitely many prime divisors.

**98.** The prime divisors of the polynomial  $x^2 + 1$  are 2, 5, 13, 17, ..., i.e. 2 and the odd prime numbers of the form  $4n+1$ ; the prime numbers of the form  $4n+3$  are not prime divisors of  $x^2 + 1$ .

**99.** Determine the prime divisors of  $x^2 + 15$ .

**100.** There are infinitely many prime numbers that are not prime divisors of a given irreducible polynomial of second degree with integral coefficients. [To be proved with the aid of deeper fundamental results. Cf. footnote to **110**.]

**101.** If an integral-valued polynomial that does not vanish identically has a rational zero, then every prime number is a prime divisor of the polynomial with the possible exception of finitely many primes.

**102.** Every prime number is a prime divisor of the polynomial

$$x^6 - 11x^4 + 36x^2 - 36,$$

which has no rational zeros.

**103.** An odd prime divisor of  $K_m(x)$ , the  $m$ th cyclotomic polynomial [36], is either a divisor of  $m$  or  $\equiv 1 \pmod{m}$ . [**104**.]

**104.** If  $p$  is a prime number,  $p > 2$ ,  $p$  not a divisor of  $m$  and  $K_m(a) \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$ , then  $a$  is relatively prime to  $p$  and  $m$  is the order of  $a \pmod{p}$ , i.e.  $m$  is the smallest integer such that  $a^m \equiv 1 \pmod{p}$ .

**105.** There are infinitely many prime numbers of the form  $6n-1$ . [Consider the prime factors of  $6P-1$ , where  $P=5 \cdot 11 \cdot 17 \cdot 23 \cdot 29 \cdot 41 \dots$  is the product of all primes of the form  $6n-1$  that are already known.]

**106.** There are infinitely many prime numbers of the form  $4n-1$ .

**107.** Let  $a, b, c$  be integers,  $a \geq 0, b \geq 2, c \geq 0$ . The integral-valued function  $ab^x + c$  has infinitely many prime divisors. [ $ab^x + c$  is periodic modulo  $n$  for every  $n$  that is relatively prime to  $b$ ; the absolute value of the function  $ab^x + c$  tends to infinity.]

**108.** Let  $P(x)$  be an integral-valued polynomial that is not a constant. Then  $P(x)$  has infinitely many prime divisors.

**109.** The fact stated in **108** may be expressed as follows: If  $P(x)$  is an integral-valued polynomial that is not a constant, then not all the terms of the sequence of numbers

$$P(0), P(1), P(2), \dots, P(n), \dots$$

can be constructed from finitely many prime numbers. Is it possible that *infinitely many* terms of the sequence can be constructed from finitely many prime numbers?

**110.** Let  $m$  be a positive integer. In the arithmetical progression

$$1, 1+m, 1+2m, 1+3m, \dots$$

there are infinitely many prime numbers.<sup>1</sup>

**111.** Let the two integral-valued non-constant polynomials  $P(x)$  and  $Q(x)$  be relatively prime. Then there exist arbitrarily large integers  $n$  such that the least common multiple of the numbers  $P(n)$  and  $Q(n)$  contains prime factors that are not contained in their greatest common divisor.

**112.** Let  $P(x)$  be an *irreducible* integral-valued polynomial that is not a constant.

---

<sup>1</sup> **105, 106, 110** are special cases of the important theorem proved by Dirichlet: In every arithmetic progression whose first term and common difference have no common divisors there occur infinitely many prime numbers.

(See § 3, introduction to problem 116.) Then there exist arbitrarily large integers  $n$ , such that in  $P(n)$  there occurs at least one simple prime factor  $p$ ; i.e.  $P(n) \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$ ,  $P(n) \not\equiv 0 \pmod{p^2}$ .

**113.** Let  $P(x)$  be an integral-valued polynomial. Let the zero of  $P(x)$  of *smallest multiplicity* have multiplicity  $m$ . (Then all the prime factors of  $P(n)$ , with the possible exception of finitely many, must when raised to the power  $m$  also be factors of  $P(n)$ ,  $n=0, 1, 2, \dots$ ) There exist arbitrarily large integers  $n$  such that in  $P(n)$  at least one prime factor occurs *not more than  $m$  times*.

**114.** If the polynomial  $P(x)$  assumes for every positive integer  $x$  a value that is the square of an integer, then  $P(x)$  is the square of a polynomial. (Analogous results are true for higher powers.)

**115.** Let  $b_1, b_2, \dots, b_k$  be distinct positive integers,  $0 < b_1 < b_2 < \dots < b_k$  and  $P_1(x), P_2(x), \dots, P_k(x)$  polynomials with integral coefficients. Then the function

$$P_1(x)b_1^x + P_2(x)b_2^x + \dots + P_k(x)b_k^x$$

has infinitely many prime divisors.

### § 3. Irreducibility of Polynomials

A polynomial of degree  $n$  with rational coefficients is termed *reducible*, if it is the product of two polynomials, each of which is of degree  $< n$  and has rational coefficients. Every polynomial is either reducible or *irreducible*; in the former case it is the product of irreducible polynomials.

**116.** If a polynomial with integral coefficients is reducible, then it is the product of polynomials *with integral coefficients* of lower degree.

**117.** A polynomial with integral coefficients  $f(x)$  cannot vanish at an integral value of  $x$ , if  $f(0)$  and  $f(1)$  are both odd.

**118.** If the polynomial  $P(x)$  of degree  $n$  with integral coefficients assumes at  $n$  distinct integral values of  $x$  values that are all different from 0 and in absolute value less than

$$\frac{\left(n - \left\lfloor \frac{n}{2} \right\rfloor\right)!}{2^{n - \left\lfloor \frac{n}{2} \right\rfloor}},$$

then  $P(x)$  is irreducible. [VI 70.]

**119.** The bound given in 118 may be replaced by

$$\left(\frac{d}{2}\right)^{n - \left\lfloor \frac{n}{2} \right\rfloor} \left(n - \left\lfloor \frac{n}{2} \right\rfloor\right)!,$$

where  $d$  is the minimum distance between any two of the  $n$  integral values of  $x$  where  $P(x)$  assumes the integral values considered.

**120.** In order that the value of the polynomial  $P(x)$  with integral coefficients should be equal to a prime number for infinitely many integral values of  $x$ ,  $P(x)$  must be irreducible and the greatest common divisor of the coefficients of  $P(x)$  must be 1. The converse of this obvious statement is not true. The polynomial

$$x(x - (n! + 1))(x - 2(n! + 1)) \dots (x - (n - 1)(n! + 1)) + n! = x^n + \dots$$



is irreducible but it does not represent a prime number for any integral value of  $x$ , if  $n \geq 3$ .

**121.** Let  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  be distinct integers. Prove that the function

$$(x-a_1)(x-a_2)\dots(x-a_n)-1$$

is always irreducible.

**122 (continued).** Investigate the cases in which

$$(x-a_1)(x-a_2)\dots(x-a_n)+1$$

is reducible.

**123 (continued).** The function

$$(x-a_1)^2(x-a_2)^2\dots(x-a_n)^2+1$$

is irreducible.

**124 (continued).** The function

$$(x-a_1)^4(x-a_2)^4\dots(x-a_n)^4+1$$

is also irreducible.

**125 (continued).** If  $F(z)=z^4+Az^3+Bz^2+Az+1$  is a positive definite irreducible polynomial with integral coefficients, then

$$F((x-a_1)(x-a_2)\dots(x-a_n))$$

is reducible only if  $F(z)=z^4-z^2+1$  (the 12th cyclotomic polynomial) and  $(x-a_1)(x-a_2)\dots(x-a_n)=(x-\alpha)(x-\alpha-1)(x-\alpha-2)$  where  $\alpha$  is an integer.

**126 (continued).** If  $A$  is positive and integral, then

$$A(x-a_1)^4(x-a_2)^4\dots(x-a_n)^4+1$$

is reducible only if  $A/4$  is the fourth power of an integer.

**127.** Let  $P(x)$  be a polynomial with integral coefficients and assume that there exists an integer  $n$  such that the following three conditions are satisfied:

- (1) The zeros of  $P(x)$  lie in the half-plane  $\Re x < n - \frac{1}{2}$ .
- (2)  $P(n-1) \neq 0$ .
- (3)  $P(n)$  is a prime number.

Then  $P(x)$  is irreducible.

**128.** Let

$$p = a_0 a_1 \dots a_m = a_0 10^m + a_1 10^{m-1} + \dots + a_m$$

be a prime number expressed in the decimal system,  $0 \leq a_v \leq 9$ ,  $v=0, 1, \dots, m$ ;  $a_0 \geq 1$ . Then the polynomial

$$a_0 x^m + a_1 x^{m-1} + \dots + a_{m-1} x + a_m$$

is irreducible. [127, III 24.]

**129.** Let  $r$  and  $s$  be odd prime numbers, such that

$$r \equiv 1 \pmod{8} \quad \text{and} \quad \left(\frac{r}{s}\right) = \left(\frac{s}{r}\right) = 1.$$

(For definition of the Legendre symbol  $\left(\frac{n}{p}\right)$  see V 45.) Such prime numbers are for example  $r=41$  and  $s=5$ . The polynomial  $P(x)=$

$$\begin{aligned} & (x-\sqrt{r}-\sqrt{s})(x-\sqrt{r}+\sqrt{s})(x+\sqrt{r}-\sqrt{s})(x+\sqrt{r}+\sqrt{s}) \\ & = x^4 - 2(r+s)x^2 + (r-s)^2 \\ (1) \quad & = (x^2 + r - s)^2 - 4rx^2 \\ (2) \quad & = (x^2 - r + s)^2 - 4sx^2 \\ (3) \quad & = (x^2 - r - s)^2 - 4rs \end{aligned}$$

is irreducible but it is "reducible" (it can be expressed as the product of two factors of the 2nd degree) *modulo m*, where  $m$  is an arbitrary integer, as can be shown in an elementary manner by formulae (1), (2) and (3).

## Chapter 3. Arithmetical Aspects of Power Series

### § 1. Preparatory Problems on Binomial Coefficients

**130.** The product of any  $m$  consecutive integers is divisible by the product of the first  $m$  positive integers.

**131.** The product of  $m$  integers in arithmetic progression is divisible by  $m!$  if the common difference of the progression is prime to  $m!$ .

**132.** The product of the differences of any  $m$  integers is divisible by the product of the differences of the first  $m$  positive integers. (The product of the differences of  $m$  variables  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_m$ ,  $\prod_{1 \leq i < j \leq m} (x_i - x_j)$ , consists of  $\frac{1}{2}m(m-1)$  factors.) [Solution V 96.]

**133.** For what integers  $n$  is  $(n-1)!$  not divisible by  $n$ ? For what integers  $n$  is  $(n-1)!$  not divisible by  $n^2$ ?

**134.** What is the exponent of the highest power of a prime number  $p$  that is a divisor of  $n!$ ?

**135.** In how many zeros does  $1000!$  end when expressed in the decimal system?

**136.** Let  $a$  and  $b$  be positive integers. Then the integer  $2a! 2b!$  is divisible by  $a! (a+b)! b!$ .

**137.** If  $h$  and  $n$  are positive integers, then  $(hn)! / [(h!)^n n!]$  is an integer.

### § 2. On Eisenstein's Theorem

A power series in ascending powers of  $z$

$$a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^n + \dots$$

is termed a power series *with rational coefficients*, if the coefficients  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots$  are rational numbers, and it is termed a power series *with integral coefficients* if its coefficients  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots$  are all rational integers. A power series with rational coefficients may be expressed in the form

$$\frac{s_0}{t_0} + \frac{s_1}{t_1} z + \frac{s_2}{t_2} z^2 + \dots + \frac{s_n}{t_n} z^n + \dots$$

where  $s_n, t_n$  are rational integers,  $(s_n, t_n) = 1$ ,  $t_n \geq 1$ ;  $s_n$  is the numerator and  $t_n$  the denominator of the  $n$ th coefficient.

**138.** Let  $s$  be an integer,  $t$  a positive integer,  $(s, t) = 1$ . Show that only prime factors of  $t$  divide the denominators of the coefficients of the power series with rational coefficients

$$(1+z)^{\frac{s}{t}} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{s}{t} \left(\frac{s}{t} - 1\right) \cdots \left(\frac{s}{t} - n + 1\right) \frac{z^n}{n!}$$

**139.** Let  $p$  be a prime factor of  $t$  and let  $p^{\alpha}, p^{\alpha_0}, p^{\alpha_1}, \dots, p^{\alpha_n}, \dots$  respectively be the highest powers of  $p$  that divide  $t, t_0, t_1, \dots, t_n, \dots$ , where  $t_n$  denotes the denominator of the  $n$ th coefficient in the power series expansion of  $(1+z)^{\frac{s}{t}}$ ;  $(s, t) = 1$ . Calculate  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (\alpha_n/n)$ .

We term the function  $f(z)$  an *algebraic* function, if it satisfies an equation of the form

$$P_0(z)[f(z)]^l + P_1(z)[f(z)]^{l-1} + \cdots + P_{l-1}(z)f(z) + P_l(z) = 0$$

where  $P_0(z), P_1(z), \dots, P_l(z)$  are polynomials,  $P_0(z) \neq 0$ .

The proper perspective for evaluating the particular result contained in **138**, **139** is given by the following general theorem due to *Eisenstein*:

“If the power series with rational coefficients

$$a_1z + a_2z^2 + a_3z^3 + \cdots + a_nz^n + \cdots$$

represents an algebraic function of  $z$ , then there exists an integer  $T$ , such that

$$a_1Tz + a_2T^2z^2 + a_3T^3z^3 + \cdots + a_nT^nz^n \cdots$$

has integral coefficients.” [153.]

**140.** Find the smallest integer  $T$  with the property that all the coefficients of the power series expansion  $(1+Tz)^{\frac{s}{t}}$  are integers.

**141.** Prove Eisenstein’s theorem in the simplest special case, namely for *rational* functions.

We say that the power series

$$\frac{s_0}{t_0} + \frac{s_1}{t_1}z + \frac{s_2}{t_2}z^2 + \cdots + \frac{s_n}{t_n}z^n + \cdots$$

with rational coefficients ( $s_n, t_n$  integers,  $t_n \geq 1$ ,  $(s_n, t_n) = 1$ ) satisfies the *Eisenstein condition*, if there exists an integer  $T$  such that  $T^n$  is divisible by  $t_n$  for  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$

**142.** If two power series  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$  with rational coefficients satisfy the Eisenstein condition, then the series  $f(z) + g(z)$ ,  $f(z) - g(z)$ ,  $f(z)g(z)$ , also satisfy the condition, and also  $f(z)/g(z)$  (assuming  $g(0) \geq 0$ ) and  $f(g(z))$  (assuming  $g(0) = 0$ ).

**143.** If the two power series with rational coefficients

$$a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \cdots + a_nz^n + \cdots, \quad b_0 + b_1z + b_2z^2 + \cdots + b_nz^n + \cdots$$

satisfy the Eisenstein condition, then the series

$$a_0b_0 + a_1b_1z + a_2b_2z^2 + \cdots + a_nb_nz^n + \cdots$$

also satisfies the condition.

**144.** Show that the Eisenstein condition is equivalent to the following pair of simultaneous conditions:

(1) The denominators  $t_1, t_2, t_3, \dots, t_n, \dots$  contain only finitely many different prime numbers.

(2)  $(\log t_n)/n$  is bounded,  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$

**145.** Expand the two functions

$$\frac{1}{1-z} + \frac{1}{2-z} + \frac{1}{4-z} + \dots + \frac{1}{2^n-z} + \dots,$$

$$\frac{z}{2-z} + \frac{z^2}{2^4-z^2} + \frac{z^3}{2^9-z^3} + \dots + \frac{z^n}{2^{n^2}-z^n} + \dots$$

in powers of  $z$ . Do the power series obtained satisfy the two conditions (1), (2) in **144**? Are the functions represented algebraic?

**146.** By a *hypergeometric series* we mean a series of the form

$$F(\alpha, \beta, \gamma; z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\alpha(\alpha+1) \dots (\alpha+n-1) \cdot \beta(\beta+1) \dots (\beta+n-1)}{1 \cdot 2 \dots n \cdot \gamma(\gamma+1) \dots (\gamma+n-1)} z^n.$$

If  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  are rational numbers but not both integers, and if  $\gamma$  is a positive integer, then it is possible to choose a positive integer  $T$  such that all the coefficients in the hypergeometric series  $F(\alpha, \beta, \gamma; Tz)$  become integers. (The function

$$\frac{2}{\pi} \int_0^1 \frac{dx}{\sqrt{(1-x^2)(1-zx^2)}} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \left( \frac{\frac{1}{2}(\frac{1}{2}+1) \dots (\frac{1}{2}+n-1)}{1 \cdot 2 \dots n} \right)^2 z^n$$

for example is not an algebraic function [I 90]: the Eisenstein condition is necessary but *not sufficient* for a function to be algebraic.)

**147.** Assume that  $\alpha \neq \gamma$ ,  $\beta \neq \gamma$  and  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma$  are not all rational, but all the coefficients in the hypergeometric series  $F(\alpha, \beta, \gamma; z)$  are rational. Then  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  are the roots of an irreducible quadratic equation with rational coefficients.

**148.** In the case discussed in **147**,  $F(\alpha, \beta, \gamma; z)$  does not represent an algebraic function of  $z$ . Prove this from Eisenstein's theorem!

### § 3. On the Proof of Eisenstein's Theorem

**149.** A *rational function* (quotient of two polynomials), whose expansion in ascending powers of  $z$  has only rational numbers as coefficients, is the quotient of two polynomials with rational coefficients.

**150.** Let the power series  $f(z)$  with rational coefficients satisfy an equation of the form

$$P_0(z)[f(z)]^l + P_1(z)[f(z)]^{l-1} + \dots + P_{l-1}(z)f(z) + P_l(z) = 0;$$

where  $P_0(z), P_1(z), \dots, P_l(z)$  are polynomials,  $P_0(z) \neq 0$ . Show that  $f(z)$  also satisfies an equation of the same form, where the polynomials occurring in it have coefficients that are *rational integers*.

**151.** Let the power series with rational coefficients

$$y = a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^n + \dots$$

satisfy an algebraic differential equation, i.e. an equation of the form

$$R(z, y, y', y'', \dots, y^{(r)}) = 0,$$

where  $R$  denotes a rational entire function (multinomial) of its  $r+2$  arguments. Show that  $y$  must satisfy an equation of the form

$$R^*(z, y, y', y'', \dots, y^{(r)}) = 0,$$

where  $R^*$  denotes a rational entire function with *integral* coefficients.

**152.** Let the functions  $f(z) = c_0 + c_1 z + c_2 z^2 + \dots$ ,  $F_0(z), F_1(z), F_2(z), \dots, F_l(z)$  ( $F_0(z) \neq 0$ ) be regular in a neighbourhood of the origin and related by the equation

$$F_0(z)[f(z)]^l + F_1(z)[f(z)]^{l-1} + \dots + F_{l-1}(z)f(z) + F_l(z) = 0.$$

Then the power series

$$f^*(z) = c_m + c_{m+1}z + c_{m+2}z^2 + \dots,$$

if  $m$  is suitably chosen, satisfies an equation of the form

$$G_0(z)[f^*(z)]^k + G_1(z)[f^*(z)]^{k-1} + \dots + G_{k-1}(z)f^*(z) + G_k(z) = 0,$$

where  $k \leq l$ ,  $G_0(0) = G_1(0) = \dots = G_{k-2}(0) = 0$ ,  $G_{k-1}(0) \neq 0$ ,  $G_0(z) \neq 0$  and  $G_\kappa(z)$ ,  $\kappa = 0, 1, 2, \dots, k$ , is a rational entire expression with integral coefficients in  $F_0(z), F_1(z), \dots, F_l(z), z, c_0, c_1, \dots, c_{m-1}$ , possibly divided by a power of  $z$ . (Function-theoretic preparation for **153**, **154**.)

**153.** If the power series  $P_0(z), P_1(z), \dots, P_l(z)$  with rational coefficients satisfy the Eisenstein condition, and if the power series  $f(z)$  with rational coefficients satisfies the equation

$$P_0(z)[f(z)]^l + P_1(z)[f(z)]^{l-1} + \dots + P_{l-1}(z)f(z) + P_l(z) = 0,$$

then  $f(z)$  also satisfies the Eisenstein condition.

**154.** Let  $s_n$  and  $t_n$  be integers,  $(s_n, t_n) = 1$ ,  $t_n \geq 1$ , and denote the greatest prime factor that divides  $t_n$  by  $P_n$ . We say that the power series

$$\frac{s_0}{t_0} + \frac{s_1}{t_1}z + \frac{s_2}{t_2}z^2 + \dots + \frac{s_n}{t_n}z^n + \dots$$

satisfies the Tchebychev condition if  $P_n/n$  is bounded, and the Hurwitz condition if  $\log P_n / \log n$  is bounded,  $n = 2, 3, 4, \dots$ . For the Tchebychev condition as well as for the Hurwitz condition analogous theorems to **142**, **143**, and **153** hold.

#### § 4. Power Series with Integral Coefficients Associated with Rational Functions

**155.** We term the power series with integral coefficients

$$a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^n + \dots$$

*primitive* if the numbers  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots$  have no common divisor apart from  $\pm 1$ . Prove that the product of two primitive power series is a primitive power series.

**156.** If the power series with integral coefficients

$$a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \cdots + a_nz^n + \cdots$$

represents a rational function, then it can be expressed in the form  $P(z)/Q(z)$ , where  $P(z)$  and  $Q(z)$  are polynomials with integral coefficients and  $Q(0)=1$ . [155.]

**157.** Let

$$\vartheta = 0. a_1a_2a_3, \dots a_n \dots = \frac{a_1}{10} + \frac{a_2}{10^2} + \frac{a_3}{10^3} + \cdots + \frac{a_n}{10^n} + \cdots$$

be a positive number  $\leq 1$  expressed in the decimal system,  $0 \leq a_v \leq 9$ ,  $v=1, 2, 3, \dots$ . The power series with integral coefficients

$$a_1z + a_2z^2 + a_3z^3 + \cdots + a_nz^n + \cdots$$

represents a rational function if  $\vartheta$  is rational, and does not represent a rational function if  $\vartheta$  is irrational.

**158.** Let there be only finitely many distinct numbers in the infinite sequence of numbers  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots$ . Then the power series

$$a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \cdots + a_nz^n + \cdots$$

represents a rational function if and only if the sequence of coefficients after a certain number of terms is periodic.

**159.** Let  $l$  be an integer,  $l \geq 0$ , and  $P(z)$  a polynomial with integral coefficients. In the power series expansion of  $P(z)(1-z)^{-l-1}$  the coefficients are integers that form a *periodic* sequence modulo any prime number  $p$ ; the length of the period is a power of  $p$ .

**160.** Let  $D$  be an integer and not divisible by the odd prime number  $p$ . The coefficients in the power series expansion of  $[(D-1)z]/[(1-Dz)(1-z)]$  are periodic mod  $p$ , where the length of the period is a proper or an improper divisor of  $p-1$ .

**161.** Let the integers  $D$  and  $p$  be as in 160. In the power series expansion of  $(1-Dz^2)^{-1}$  the coefficients are periodic mod  $p$ . The length of the period is always a divisor of  $2(p-1)$ . It is or is not a divisor of  $p-1$  according to  $\left(\frac{D}{p}\right) = +1$  or  $-1$ .

**162.** The sequence of Fibonacci numbers (cf. VII 53) is periodic mod  $m$ , where  $m$  is any integer. Calculate the length of the period for all prime numbers less than 30.

**163.** In a power series expansion with integral coefficients that represents a rational function the coefficients, after a certain number of terms, form a *periodic* sequence mod  $m$  ( $m$  arbitrary).

**164.** The algebraic function  $1/\sqrt{1-4z}$  yields on expansion in powers of  $z$  a power series with integral coefficients. These coefficients are for no odd prime number  $p$  periodic mod  $p$ . (163 cannot be extended to algebraic functions.)

## § 5. Function-Theoretic Aspects of Power Series with Integral Coefficients

**165.** The radius of convergence of a non-terminating power series with integral coefficients is  $\leq 1$ .

**166.** A non-terminating power series with integral coefficients that is convergent in the interior of the unit circle cannot represent a bounded function there.

**167.** If a power series with integral coefficients represents an algebraic function that is not a rational function, then its radius of convergence is  $< 1$ .

**168.** In **167** the upper bound 1 is the best possible. In other words: If  $\varepsilon > 0$ , then there exists a power series with integral coefficients that represents an algebraic function that is not a rational function and whose radius of convergence is  $> 1 - \varepsilon$ .

**169.** Let the coefficients of the polynomial

$$P(x) = a_0 x^r + a_1 x^{r-1} + \cdots + a_{r-1} x + a_r, \quad a_0 \neq 0, \quad r \geq 1$$

be real. The analytic function defined by the power series

$$[P(0)] + [P(1)]z + [P(2)]z^2 + \cdots + [P(n)]z^n + \cdots$$

is

(1) a rational function, if the  $r$  numbers  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_{r-1}$  are all rational,

(2) not a rational function, if the  $r$  numbers  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_{r-1}$ , are not all rational.

(Cf. II **168.**) [I **85.**]

**170.** If the sequence of non-negative integers

$$a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots, a_n, \dots$$

is bounded and contains infinitely many terms that are different from 0, then the series

$$a_1 \frac{z}{1-z} + a_2 \frac{z^2}{1-z^2} + a_3 \frac{z^3}{1-z^3} + \cdots + a_n \frac{z^n}{1-z^n} + \cdots$$

does not represent a rational function.

**171.** If the sequence

$$a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots, a_n, \dots$$

satisfies the same assumptions as in **170**, then the series

$$a_1 \frac{z}{1+z} + a_2 \frac{z^2}{1+z^2} + a_3 \frac{z^3}{1+z^3} + \cdots + a_n \frac{z^n}{1+z^n} + \cdots$$

does not represent a rational function.

**172.** Denote by  $Q_n$  the “cross sum” of the number  $n$ , i.e. the sum of its digits. E.g. we have  $Q_{137} = 1 + 3 + 7 = 11$ . The power series

$$Q_1 z + Q_2 z^2 + Q_3 z^3 + \cdots + Q_n z^n + \cdots$$

has the unit circle as its natural boundary.

**173.** In an infinite table of logarithms let the logarithms of all the positive integers  $1, 2, 3, \dots$  be written underneath each other in their natural order, in such a fashion that decimal places of the same order appear in the same vertical column. If we interpret the digits in any vertical column as the coefficients of a power series, then we obtain a power series that cannot be analytically continued.

In a different formulation we are required to prove the following theorem:

Let  $j$  be an integer and in the decimal representation of  $\log 1, \log 2, \log 3, \dots, \log n, \dots$  let the  $j$ th digit after the decimal point be denoted by  $d_1, d_2, d_3, \dots, d_n, \dots$  respectively. Then the analytic function defined by the power series

$$d_1 z + d_2 z^2 + d_3 z^3 + \dots + d_n z^n + \dots$$

has as its natural boundary the circle  $|z|=1$ .

## § 6. Power Series with Integral Coefficients in the Sense of Hurwitz

The power series

$$a_0 + \frac{a_1}{1!} z + \frac{a_2}{2!} z^2 + \dots + \frac{a_n}{n!} z^n + \dots$$

is termed a power series with integral coefficients in the sense of *Hurwitz*, or with *H-integral coefficients* for short, if  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots$  are rational integers. [A. Hurwitz, Math. Ann. Vol. 51, pp. 196–226 (1899).]

**174.** If  $f(z)$  is a power series with H-integral coefficients, then

$$\frac{df(z)}{dz} \quad \text{and} \quad \int_0^z f(z) dz$$

are also power series with H-integral coefficients.

**175.** If  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$  are power series with H-integral coefficients, then

$$f(z) + g(z), \quad f(z) - g(z), \quad f(z)g(z)$$

are also power-series with H-integral coefficients, and under the further assumption that  $g(0) = \pm 1$  also

$$\frac{f(z)}{g(z)}.$$

**176.** If  $f(z)$  is a power series with H-integral coefficients and  $f(0)=0$ , then

$$\frac{[f(z)]^m}{m!}$$

is also a power series with H-integral coefficients,  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$  [174].

**177.** If  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$  are power series with H-integral coefficients and  $f(0)=0$ , then  $g[f(z)]$  is also a power series with H-integral coefficients.

**178.** The function  $\varphi(z)$ , well defined by the differential equation

$$\left(\frac{d\varphi(z)}{dz}\right)^2 = 1 - [\varphi(z)]^4$$

and the initial conditions  $\varphi(0)=0, \varphi'(0)>0$ , may be expanded in a power series with H-integral coefficients.

By a *congruence* between two power series with H-integral coefficients

$$a_0 + \frac{a_1}{1!} z + \frac{a_2}{2!} z^2 + \dots + \frac{a_n}{n!} z^n + \dots \equiv b_0 + \frac{b_1}{1!} z + \frac{b_2}{2!} z^2 + \dots + \frac{b_n}{n!} z^n + \dots \pmod{m}$$



we mean the infinite set of congruences between the coefficients

$$a_0 \equiv b_0 \pmod{m}, \quad a_1 \equiv b_1 \pmod{m}, \dots, \quad a_n \equiv b_n \pmod{m}, \dots$$

**179.**

$$(e^z - 1)^3 \equiv 2 \left( \frac{z^3}{3!} + \frac{z^5}{5!} + \frac{z^7}{7!} + \dots \right) \pmod{4}.$$

**180.** For every prime number  $p$ , we have

$$(e^z - 1)^{p-1} \equiv - \left( \frac{z^{p-1}}{(p-1)!} + \frac{z^{2(p-1)}}{(2p-2)!} + \frac{z^{3(p-1)}}{(3p-3)!} + \dots \right) \pmod{p}.$$

**181.** For every composite number  $m$  greater than 4 we have

$$(e^z - 1)^{m-1} \equiv 0 \pmod{m}.$$

**182.** The *Bernoulli* numbers  $B_n$  are defined as the coefficients in the power series expansion

$$\frac{z}{e^z - 1} = 1 - \frac{z}{2} + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{n-1} B_n}{(2n)!} z^{2n}$$

(I 154). We have

$$\begin{aligned} B_1 &= \frac{1}{6} = 1 - \frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{3}, & B_2 &= \frac{1}{30} = -1 + \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{3} + \frac{1}{5}, \\ B_3 &= \frac{1}{42} = 1 - \frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{3} - \frac{1}{7}, & B_4 &= \frac{1}{30} = -1 + \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{3} + \frac{1}{5}, \\ B_5 &= \frac{5}{66} = 1 - \frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{3} - \frac{1}{11}, & B_6 &= \frac{691}{2730} = -1 + \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{3} + \frac{1}{5} + \frac{1}{7} + \frac{1}{13}, \\ B_7 &= \frac{7}{6} = 2 - \frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{3}, & B_8 &= \frac{3617}{510} = 6 + \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{3} + \frac{1}{5} + \frac{1}{17}. \end{aligned}$$

In general we have

$$B_n = G_n + (-1)^n \left( \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{3} + \frac{1}{\alpha} + \frac{1}{\beta} + \frac{1}{\gamma} + \dots \right),$$

where  $G_n$  is an integer and  $2, 3, \alpha, \beta, \gamma, \dots$  denote those prime numbers that exceed by one the divisors of  $2n$ . [Expand first  $z$  and then  $z/(e^z - 1)$  in ascending powers of  $(e^z - 1)$  and apply **179–181**.]

**183.** The coefficients  $C_n$  in the series

$$\frac{z}{\varphi(z)} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{C_n}{(4n)!} z^{4n},$$

where  $\varphi(z)$  denotes the function defined in **178**, are rational numbers and moreover the denominator of  $C_n$  is not divisible by any square other than 1 and is divisible only by such prime numbers as are  $\equiv 1 \pmod{4}$ . [Expand first  $z$  and then  $z/\varphi(z)$  in ascending powers of  $\varphi(z)$ .]

**184.** The differential equation

$$\left(\frac{d\wp(z)}{dz}\right)^2 = 4[\wp(z)]^3 - 4\wp(z)$$

has a well-defined solution of the form

$$\wp(z) = \frac{1}{z^2} + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{D_n}{(4n)!} z^{4n-2}.$$

( $\wp(z)$  is a particular elliptic function, termed a “lemniscate function”; its period-parallelogram is a square.) The numbers  $D_n$  are rational, and moreover the denominator of  $D_n$  is not divisible by any square other than 1, and is divisible only by such prime numbers as are  $\equiv 1 \pmod{4}$ . [Show that  $\wp(z) = [\varphi(z)]^{-2}$ , cf. **183**. Expand first  $z^2$  and then  $z^2[\wp(z)]^{-2}$  in ascending powers of  $\varphi(z)$ ;  $z^2$  as a function of  $\varphi(z)$  satisfies a linear differential equation of second order.]

**185.** If a power series with H-integral coefficients  $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (a_n/n!)z^n$  satisfies a homogeneous linear differential equation with constant coefficients, then the sequence of coefficients  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots$  is periodic mod  $m$  after a certain number of terms, where  $m$  is an arbitrary integer. [Examples of this are found already in **179**, **180**.]

**186.** The power series

$$y = 1 + \frac{2x}{1!} + \frac{6x^2}{2!} + \frac{20x^3}{3!} + \dots + \binom{2n}{n} \frac{x^n}{n!} + \dots$$

shows that theorem **185** cannot without further assumptions be extended to homogeneous linear differential equations whose coefficients are polynomials.

**187.** If a transcendental entire function  $g(z)$  has a power series expansion with H-integral coefficients, then we have for the maximum modulus (IV Chap. 1) of  $g(z)$

$$\limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} M(r) e^{-r\sqrt{r}} \geq \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}}$$

## § 7. The Values at the Integers of Power Series that Converge about $z = \infty$

**188.** Let the power series in descending powers of  $z$

$$b_m z^m + b_{m-1} z^{m-1} + \dots + b_1 z + b_0 + \frac{b_{-1}}{z} + \frac{b_{-2}}{z^2} + \frac{b_{-3}}{z^3} + \dots$$

converge outside some circle. Let the numbers  $b_1, b_2, \dots, b_m$  be rational. If the series assumes integral values for infinitely many integral values of  $z$ , then  $b_0$  is rational and

$$b_{-1} = b_{-2} = b_{-3} = \dots = 0.$$

(Generalization of **93**.) [Hurwitz-Courant, p. 30.]

**189.** The series

$$\sqrt{2z^2+1} = \sqrt{2}z + \frac{\sqrt{2}}{4z} - \frac{\sqrt{2}}{32z^3} + \frac{\sqrt{2}}{128z^5} - \frac{5\sqrt{2}}{2048z^7} + \dots$$

represents an integer for infinitely many integral values of  $z$ .

**190.** Deduce **114** from **188**.

**191.** Let the power series

$$F(z) = b_m z^m + b_{m-1} z^{m-1} + \dots + b_1 z + b_0 + \frac{b_{-1}}{z} + \frac{b_{-2}}{z^2} + \frac{b_{-3}}{z^3} + \dots$$

that is not everywhere divergent represent integers for all sufficiently large integral values of  $z$ . Then  $F(z)$  is an integral-valued polynomial.

**192.** If two polynomials are such that they assume integral values at the same points of the complex plane, then either their sum or their difference is a constant. (This constant is naturally an integer.)

**193.** If a polynomial  $g(x)$  assumes real values for all values of  $x$  for which a second polynomial  $f(x)$  assumes values belonging to a set of real numbers that is unbounded from above and from below, then  $g(x)$  is in fact always real whenever  $f(x)$  is real. (If  $f(x)$  is of odd degree, then the assumption that the set of numbers is unbounded from above or from below is sufficient.) For we then have the identity

$$g = \varphi(f),$$

where  $\varphi(y)$  is a polynomial in  $y$  with real coefficients. (From this result we easily obtain **192**.)

## Chapter 4. Some Problems on Algebraic Integers

### § 1. Algebraic Integers. Fields

A real or complex number  $\alpha$  is called an *algebraic number* if it is the zero of a polynomial with integral coefficients (introduction to chapter 2), i.e. if there exist rational integers  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, a_0 \neq 0$ , such that

$$(E) \quad a_0 \alpha^n + a_1 \alpha^{n-1} + a_2 \alpha^{n-2} + \dots + a_{n-1} \alpha + a_n = 0.$$

If  $a_0 = 1$ , then  $\alpha$  is called an *algebraic integer*, or an “integer” for short, as we shall use the term in **194–237**. There are thus irrational and also complex integers. The rational integers are the usual integers

$$\dots, -3, -2, -1, 0, 1, 2, 3, \dots$$

If an algebraic integer happens to be a rational number it is necessarily a rational (ordinary) integer (Hardy-Wright, p. 178). If  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  are algebraic numbers, then

$$\alpha + \beta, \quad \alpha - \beta, \quad \alpha\beta, \quad \frac{\alpha}{\beta}$$

are also algebraic numbers, where in the last case we suppose  $\beta \neq 0$ . The algebraic numbers form a *field*. If  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  are algebraic integers, then

$$\alpha + \beta, \quad \alpha - \beta, \quad \alpha\beta$$

are also algebraic integers. The algebraic integers form an *integral domain*.

**194.** If  $\alpha$  is an integer, then  $\sqrt{\alpha}$  is also an integer.

**195.** If  $r$  and  $s$  are rational numbers and  $r+s\sqrt{-1}$  is an integer, then  $r$  and  $s$  must be rational integers.

**196.** If  $r$  and  $s$  are rational numbers and  $r+s\sqrt{-5}$  is an integer, then  $r$  and  $s$  must be rational integers.

**197.** If  $r$  and  $s$  are rational numbers and  $r+s\sqrt{-3}$  is an integer, then  $2r$  and  $2s$  must be rational integers and  $2r \equiv 2s \pmod{2}$ ;  $r$  and  $s$  need not necessarily be rational integers.

**197.1.** If both  $\vartheta/\pi$  and  $\cos \vartheta$  are rational, then  $\cos \vartheta$  must have one of the following five values:

$$1, \frac{1}{2}, 0, -\frac{1}{2}, -1.$$

**197.2.** Consider the interior angle included between two contiguous faces of a regular solid and call it

$$T, H, O, D, \text{ or } I$$

according as the solid is a

tetra-, hexa-, octa-, dodeca-, or icosahedron (a hexahedron is a cube). Show that the ratios

$$\frac{T}{H}, \frac{O}{H}, \frac{D}{H}, \frac{I}{H}$$

are irrational.

[Show first, using appropriate spherical triangles, that  $\cos T = \frac{1}{3}$ ,  $\cos H = 0$ ,  $\cos O = -\frac{1}{3}$ ,  $\cos 2D = -\frac{3}{5}$ ,  $\cos 2I = \frac{1}{5}$ .]

The numbers  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m$  are called *linearly dependent* if there exist rational integers  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_m$  not all zero such that

$$a_1\alpha_1 + a_2\alpha_2 + \dots + a_m\alpha_m = 0.$$

If no relation of this kind exists then  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m$  are called *linearly independent*.

Thus, if  $\beta \neq 0$ , the numbers  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  are linearly dependent or independent according as  $\alpha/\beta$  is rational or irrational. The number  $\alpha$  is algebraic if there exists an  $n$  (a positive rational integer) such that  $1, \alpha, \alpha^2, \dots, \alpha^n$  are linearly dependent.

**197.3.** The numbers (angles)  $T, H$  and  $O$  are linearly dependent; in fact

$$T - 2H + O = 0$$

(see **197.2**; it can be also proved by elementary geometry). Yet  $T$  and  $O$  are linearly independent.

**197.4** (continued). Show that  $T, H, D$  and  $I$  are linearly independent.

Also  $H, O, D$  and  $I$  are linearly independent, and any linear homogeneous relation with rational coefficients between  $T, H, O, D$  and  $I$  can differ only trivially (that is, only by a numerical factor) from the one given in **197.3**.

**197.5.** If both  $\vartheta/\pi$  and  $\tan^2 \vartheta$  are rational then  $\tan^2 \vartheta$  must have one of the following five values (regarding  $\infty = 1/0$  as "rational").

$$0, \frac{1}{3}, 1, 3, \frac{1}{6}.$$

**197.6.** With the exception of the four cases  $n=1, 2, 4$ , and  $8$ ,  $\tan 2\pi/n$  is irrational for all positive rational integers  $n$ .

Algebraic numbers that are zeros of the same *irreducible* polynomial [introduction to Chapter 2, § 3] are termed *conjugate* to one another [Hecke p. 65, Hardy-Wright pp. 230-1]. Algebraic numbers that are zeros of an irreducible polynomial of degree  $n$  are themselves said to be of *degree*  $n$ . The rational numbers are of degree 1 and conjugate only to themselves.

**198.** There are only finitely many integers of given degree  $n$  that together with their conjugates lie in a fixed circle  $|z| < k$  of the complex plane.

**199.** The only integer that together with all its conjugates lies in the open unit circle is the number 0.

**200.** Let all the zeros of a polynomial with rational integral coefficients and leading coefficient 1 lie in the closed unit circle. Such a zero must lie either at the center or on the boundary of the unit circle and in the latter case it must be a root of unity. [I.e. it must satisfy an equation of the form  $x^h = x^k$ , where  $h, k$  are rational integers,  $0 < h < k$ ; **198.**]

**201.** If the integer  $\alpha$  together with all its conjugates is real and in absolute value  $< 2$ , then  $\alpha = 2 \cos 2\pi p/q$ , where  $p$  and  $q$  are rational integers.

The set of all numbers that can be expressed as rational functions of an algebraic number  $\vartheta$  with rational coefficients is called an *algebraic number field*, or simply "a field", or more precisely the field *generated by*  $\vartheta$ . The degree of the generating number  $\vartheta$  is termed *the degree of the field*. Thus for example the field generated by a number of the second degree is called a quadratic field, or more precisely a real quadratic field or a complex quadratic field according as the generating number is real or complex.

**202.** The irrational integers

$$\sqrt{-1}, \quad \sqrt{-3}, \quad \sqrt{-5}$$

generate three distinct complex quadratic number fields, in which the integers have the forms

$$a + b\sqrt{-1}, \quad a + b \frac{1 + \sqrt{-3}}{2}, \quad a + b\sqrt{-5}$$

respectively, where  $a$  and  $b$  are *rational* integers.

**203.** A set  $\mathfrak{S}$  of complex (or real) numbers is called a "discontinuous integral domain" if it has the following two properties:

(1) If  $\zeta'$  and  $\zeta''$  belong to the set  $\mathfrak{S}$ , then  $\zeta' + \zeta''$ ,  $\zeta' - \zeta''$ , and  $\zeta'\zeta''$  also belong to the set  $\mathfrak{S}$ .

(2) The point 0 is not a point of accumulation of the set of numbers  $\mathfrak{S}$ . (By (1) the number  $0 = \zeta' - \zeta'$  belongs to the set  $\mathfrak{S}$ .)

A discontinuous integral domain consists either of all or of some of the integers of a complex quadratic number field. (E.g. only of the numbers  $0, \pm 6, \pm 12, \pm 18, \dots$  or only of the single number 0.)

## § 2. Greatest Common Divisor

We say that the integer  $\alpha$  is *divisible* by the integer  $\vartheta$  if there exists an integer  $\kappa$  (the quotient) such that  $\alpha = \kappa\vartheta$ . We also say that “ $\vartheta$  is a divisor of  $\alpha$ ” or “ $\vartheta$  divides  $\alpha$ ”, etc. Integers that are divisors of 1 are called *units*.  $\vartheta$  is termed a *greatest common divisor* (abbreviated to g.c. divisor) of the  $m$  integers  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m$  if there exist  $2m$  integers  $\kappa_1, \kappa_2, \dots, \kappa_m, \lambda_1, \lambda_2, \dots, \lambda_m$  such that

$$\alpha_1 = \kappa_1\vartheta, \quad \alpha_2 = \kappa_2\vartheta, \dots, \quad \alpha_m = \kappa_m\vartheta, \quad \alpha_1\lambda_1 + \alpha_2\lambda_2 + \dots + \alpha_m\lambda_m = \vartheta.$$

Two integers  $\alpha, \beta$  whose g.c. divisor = 1 are termed *relatively prime*.

**204.** If we were to designate as “integers” not all integers but only those that belong to the field generated by  $\sqrt{-5}$ , then the two numbers 3 and  $1+2\sqrt{-5}$  would have *no* g.c. divisor in the sense of the above definition. I.e. it is impossible to find in the field generated by  $\sqrt{-5}$ , to which the numbers 3 and  $1+2\sqrt{-5}$  belong, five integers  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma, \delta, \vartheta$  such that the equations

$$3 = \alpha\vartheta, \quad 1 + 2\sqrt{-5} = \beta\vartheta, \quad 3\gamma + (1 + 2\sqrt{-5})\delta = \vartheta$$

hold simultaneously. [Investigate the least values of  $(a+b\sqrt{-5})(a-b\sqrt{-5})$ , for  $a, b$  rational integers; **202.**]

**205** (continued). The squares  $3^2=9$  and  $(1+2\sqrt{-5})^2=-19+4\sqrt{-5}$  have a g.c. divisor, even under the restricted definition of “integer” given in **204**.

**206** (continued). Find the g.c. divisor of 3 and  $1+2\sqrt{-5}$  (which is not contained in the field generated by  $\sqrt{-5}$ !). [**194.**]

The deep theorem that any two integers *have* a g.c. divisor [Hecke, p. 121] is *not* to be used in the problems which follow.

**207.** If  $\vartheta$  is a g.c. divisor of  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m$ , then  $\vartheta$  is divisible by every common divisor of  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m$ .

**208.** Let  $\vartheta$  be a g.c. divisor of the numbers  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m$ , and  $\vartheta'$  another g.c. divisor of the same numbers  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m$ . Then  $\vartheta'/\vartheta$  is a unit.

**209.** If  $\vartheta$  is a g.c. divisor of  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m$ , then  $\gamma\vartheta$  is a g.c. divisor of  $\gamma\alpha_1, \gamma\alpha_2, \dots, \gamma\alpha_m$ .

**210.** If  $\alpha$  is relatively prime to  $\beta\gamma$ , then  $\alpha$  is relatively prime to  $\beta$  as well as to  $\gamma$ .

**211.** If  $\alpha$  is relatively prime to  $\beta$  as well as to  $\gamma$ , then  $\alpha$  is also relatively prime to  $\beta\gamma$ .

**212.** If  $\alpha$  is relatively prime to  $\beta$ , then a g.c. divisor of  $\alpha$  and  $\gamma$  is also a g.c. divisor of  $\alpha$  and  $\beta\gamma$ .

**213.** If  $\delta$  is a g.c. divisor of  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ , then  $\delta^n$  is a g.c. divisor of  $\alpha^n$  and  $\beta^n$ ,  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$

**214.** If  $\delta$  is a g.c. divisor of  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ , then  $\sqrt[n]{\delta}$  is a g.c. divisor of  $\sqrt[n]{\alpha}$  and  $\sqrt[n]{\beta}$ ,  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$

**215.** If the  $m$  numbers  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m$  are *coprime* (pairwise relatively prime),

that is if the g.c. divisor of any two of them is 1, and if  $\mu = \alpha_1 \alpha_2 \dots \alpha_m$ , then 1 is a g.c. divisor of the  $m$  numbers

$$\frac{\mu}{\alpha_1}, \frac{\mu}{\alpha_2}, \dots, \frac{\mu}{\alpha_m}.$$

**216.** All rational prime numbers, with the exception of finitely many, are relatively prime to a given integer  $\alpha$ ,  $\alpha \neq 0$ .

**217.** Let the integers  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  be rational and let  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n$  be the  $n$  zeros of the polynomial  $x^n + a_1 x^{n-1} + a_2 x^{n-2} + \dots + a_{n-1} x + a_n$ . Then  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n$  have a g.c. divisor  $\delta$ ; in fact  $\delta = \sqrt[n]{d}$ , where  $N = n!$  and  $d$  is the g.c. divisor of

$$a_1^{\frac{N}{1}}, a_2^{\frac{N}{2}}, a_3^{\frac{N}{3}}, \dots, a_n^{\frac{N}{n}}.$$

By the *norm* of  $\alpha$ , denoted by  $N(\alpha)$ , where  $\alpha$  is a number belonging to a given field  $K$  of  $n$ th degree, we mean the product of its  $n$  *conjugates*, each distinct conjugate being represented  $q$  times if the degree of  $\alpha$  is  $n/q$  [Hecke, p. 81]. The term “conjugate” is used here in a different sense to that of the explanatory comments preceding **198** [Hecke, p. 65, 70].

**218.** If  $\alpha, \beta$  belong to  $K$  and  $\alpha$  is a divisor of  $\beta$ , then  $N(\alpha)$  is a divisor of  $N(\beta)$ .

**219.** Let the field  $K$  be such that every pair of integers  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  belonging to  $K$  have a g.c. divisor belonging to  $K$ , in the sense that there exist five more integers  $\alpha', \beta', \gamma, \delta, \vartheta$  in  $K$  such that

$$\alpha = \alpha' \vartheta, \quad \beta = \beta' \vartheta, \quad \alpha \gamma + \beta \delta = \vartheta.$$

(Not always the case! Cf. **204**.) For this to be the case we have the following necessary and sufficient condition: If  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  are integers in  $K$  and such that  $\alpha$  is not a divisor of  $\beta$  nor  $\beta$  a divisor of  $\alpha$ , then there exist in  $K$  two integers  $\xi, \eta$  such that we have simultaneously

$$0 < |N(\alpha\xi + \beta\eta)| < |N(\alpha)|, \quad 0 < |N(\alpha\xi + \beta\eta)| < |N(\beta)|.$$

(If  $a$  and  $b$  are rational integers satisfying  $|a| > |b|$ , and  $b$  is not a divisor of  $a$ , then the remainder on dividing  $a$  by  $b$ , i.e.  $r = a \cdot 1 - b[a/b]$ , has the property required here of  $\alpha\xi + \beta\eta$ .)

**220.** Any two numbers of the field generated by  $\sqrt{-1}$  have a g.c. divisor belonging to the same field.

### § 3. Congruences

Let  $\alpha, \beta$  and  $\mu$  be integers. That  $\alpha - \beta$  is divisible by  $\mu$  is expressed as in the theory of rational numbers in terms of a *congruence* relation by writing

$$\alpha \equiv \beta \pmod{\mu}.$$

**221.** The congruence relation between two algebraic integers with respect to a given modulus is *symmetric* and *transitive*. That is we have the following:

From $\alpha \equiv \beta \pmod{\mu}$	it follows that	$\beta \equiv \alpha \pmod{\mu}.$
From $\alpha \equiv \beta, \beta \equiv \gamma \pmod{\mu}$	it follows that	$\alpha \equiv \gamma \pmod{\mu}.$

**222.** From

$$\alpha \equiv \beta, \quad \gamma \equiv \delta \pmod{\mu}$$

it follows that

$$\alpha + \gamma \equiv \beta + \delta, \quad \alpha - \gamma \equiv \beta - \delta, \quad \alpha\gamma \equiv \beta\delta \pmod{\mu}.$$

**223.** If 1 is the g.c. divisor of  $\alpha$  and  $\mu$ , and  $\mu$  is not a unit, then

$$\alpha \not\equiv 0 \pmod{\mu}.$$

**224.** Let  $\alpha, \beta, \dots$  be integers,  $f(x, y, \dots)$  a polynomial with rational integral coefficients and  $p$  a rational prime number. Then we have

$$(f(\alpha, \beta, \dots))^p \equiv f(\alpha^p, \beta^p, \dots) \pmod{p}.$$

**225.** Let

$$\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m; \quad \omega_1, \omega_2, \dots, \omega_m$$

( $\alpha_k \neq 0, \omega_k \neq 0, \omega_k \neq \omega_l$  for  $k \geq l; k, l = 1, 2, 3, \dots, m$ ) be integers. Then not all the numbers

$$\frac{\alpha_1 \omega_1^n + \alpha_2 \omega_2^n + \dots + \alpha_m \omega_m^n}{n}, \quad n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$

can be integers. [Consider suitable prime numbers  $p$  and set  $n = p, 2p, 3p, \dots, rp$ ; **216, 224.**]

**226.** The zeros of the cyclotomic polynomial  $K_m(x)$  [36] are also zeros of  $x^m - 1$ , and thus integers. They are given by  $\alpha^{r_1}, \alpha^{r_2}, \dots, \alpha^{r_h}$  if we set  $e^{\frac{2\pi i}{m}} = \alpha$ ,  $\varphi(m) = h$  (cf. introduction to chapter 1, § 5), and  $r_1, r_2, \dots, r_h$  form a reduced remainder system mod  $m$ , i.e. if the rational integers  $r_1, r_2, \dots, r_h$  are all relatively prime to  $m$  and pair-wise not congruent (mod  $m$ ).—Is  $K_m(x)$  reducible or irreducible?

*Solution:* Let us consider that factor  $f(x)$  among the irreducible factors of  $K_m(x)$  with integral coefficients [116] that has  $\alpha$  among its zeros. The zeros of  $f(x)$ , i.e. the integers conjugate to  $\alpha$ , are all of the form  $\alpha^n$ , where  $n$  is an integer, and their number is  $\leq h$  [in fact  $< h$  if  $K_m(x)$  is reducible]. In any case for an arbitrary rational integer  $n$  we have

$$(*) \quad |f(\alpha^n)| \leq 2^h,$$

since the absolute value of each factor of  $f(\alpha^n)$ , being a chord of the unit circle, is  $\leq 2$ . Now let  $p$  be a prime number. Since  $f(\alpha) = 0$ , we obtain [224]

$$f(\alpha^p) \equiv (f(\alpha))^p \equiv 0 \pmod{p}.$$

Thus  $f(\alpha^p)/p$  is an integer. Its conjugates are also integers of the form  $f(\alpha^{np})/p$ . Hence if  $p > 2^h$ , all the conjugates of  $f(\alpha^p)/p$  are by (\*) in absolute value  $< 1$ , and hence [199]  $f(\alpha^p) = 0$ , and we have shown that  $\alpha^p$  is also a zero of  $f(x)$ .

By a theorem of Dirichlet [footnote to 110] all the  $\varphi(m) = h$  arithmetical progressions

$$\begin{aligned} & r_1, r_1 + m, r_1 + 2m, \dots; \\ & r_2, r_2 + m, r_2 + 2m, \dots; \\ & \dots\dots\dots \\ & r_h, r_h + m, r_h + 2m, \dots \end{aligned}$$



contain infinitely many prime numbers. Hence in particular we can construct a reduced system of remainders mod  $m$ , consisting of prime numbers which are all  $> 2^h$ . Then, by the preceding, the factor  $f(x)$  of  $K_m(x)$  must have all the zeros  $\alpha^{r_1}, \alpha^{r_2}, \dots, \alpha^{r_h}$  of  $K_m(x)$  as zeros and the same degree as  $K_m(x)$  and in fact must be identical with  $K_m(x)$ . Thus  $K_m(x)$  is irreducible.

**227.** By modifying the preceding argument give a proof of the irreducibility of the cyclotomic polynomial  $K_m(x)$  without using the Dirichlet theorem concerning arithmetical progressions. It can be avoided by a more laborious but also more elementary construction of the reduced system of remainders mod  $m$ .

**227.1.** If the rational integers  $m$  and  $n$  are relatively prime and  $n \geq 3$ , then  $2 \cos(2\pi m/n)$  is an algebraic integer of degree  $\varphi(n)/2$ .

**227.2 (continued).** From this result derive **197.1 [38.1]**.

#### § 4. Arithmetical Aspects of Power Series

**228.** If the expansion of a rational function both in ascending as well as in descending powers of  $z$  is a series with rational integral coefficients, then its poles different from 0 and  $\infty$  lie at units.

**229.** Let a power series (in ascending powers) be convergent in the unit circle and represent a non-integral rational function. If its coefficients are rational integers, then its poles lie at roots of unity. [**156, 200.**]

**230.** If the power series

$$\alpha_0 + \frac{\alpha_1}{z} + \frac{\alpha_2}{z^2} + \dots + \frac{\alpha_n}{z^n} + \dots$$

represents a rational function and its coefficients  $\alpha_0, \alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots$  are algebraic integers, then the poles of the function are also algebraic integers.

**231.** If

$$\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m, \quad \omega_1, \omega_2, \dots, \omega_m$$

$$(\alpha_k \neq 0, \quad \omega_k \neq 0, \quad \omega_k \neq \omega_l \text{ for } k \geq l; \quad k, l = 1, 2, \dots, m)$$

are algebraic integers, then the coefficients in the power series expansion of

$$\frac{\alpha_1}{1 - \omega_1 z} + \frac{\alpha_2}{1 - \omega_2 z} + \dots + \frac{\alpha_m}{1 - \omega_m z}$$

are also algebraic integers. However, the same is not true of the expansion that is obtained from it by term-by-term integration.

**232.** Let  $f(z)$  be represented by a power series with rational coefficients and let its derivative  $f'(z)$  be a rational function.  $f(z)$  is rational if its power series satisfies the Eisenstein condition (cf. introduction to **142**) and transcendental if it does not.

**233.** Let the algebraic function  $f(z)$  be defined by the equation

$$P_0(z)[f(z)]^l + P_1(z)[f(z)]^{l-1} + \dots + P_{l-1}(z)f(z) + P_l(z) = 0,$$

where  $P_0(z), P_1(z), \dots, P_l(z)$  are polynomials with algebraic coefficients. If  $\alpha$  is an algebraic number, then the coefficients in the expansion of  $f(z)$  in powers of  $(z - \alpha)$  are also algebraic numbers. [Special case: If  $z = \alpha$  is a regular point of  $f(z)$ , then  $f(\alpha)$  is an algebraic number.]

**234.** Let a rational entire function  $F(z, y)$  of the two variables  $z, y$  with rational coefficients be termed *irreducible* if it cannot be factorized into the product of two entire functions with rational coefficients that are both of lower degree with respect to  $y$ .

If  $F(z, y)$  is irreducible, then either no solution  $y$  of the equation

$$F(z, y) = 0$$

is a rational function of  $z$ , or all solutions are rational functions of  $z$ .

[Moreover: either no solution is a rational *entire* function of  $z$  or all solutions are rational entire functions of  $z$ .—Note **233** and the chief characteristic of irreducible equations: the roots of an irreducible equation have the bad habit of always bringing the whole family on a visit. Cf. Hecke, p. 64, Theorem 49.]

**235.** If the coefficients in the power series expansion of an algebraic function are algebraic numbers, then these coefficients all belong to a *finite* field (i.e. to a field generated by a single algebraic number, cf. introduction to **202**). [**151**, **152**.]

**236** (continued). If the power series in question is

$$\alpha_0 + \alpha_1 z + \alpha_2 z^2 + \dots,$$

then there exists an integer  $\tau$  such that all the numbers  $\alpha_1 \tau, \alpha_2 \tau^2, \alpha_3 \tau^3, \dots$  are integers. (Generalization of Eisenstein's theorem.)

**237.** Let the series in descending powers of  $z$

$$a_m z^m + a_{m-1} z^{m-1} + \dots + a_1 z + a_0 + \frac{a_{-1}}{z} + \frac{a_{-2}}{z^2} + \frac{a_{-3}}{z^3} + \dots$$

be convergent outside some circle, and let its values for infinitely many rational integral values of  $z$  be rational integral. If the coefficients  $a_m, a_{m-1}, \dots, a_1, a_0, a_{-1}, a_{-2}, \dots$  are all rational numbers, then the series represents a rational entire function (it terminates, **188**); if the coefficients all belong to a finite field, then the power series represents an algebraic function. (Example: **189**.)

## Chapter 5. Miscellaneous Problems

### § 1. Lattice Points in Two and Three Dimensions

In problems **237.1–244** we shall consider a rectangular coordinate system in the plane, and we shall term a point of the plane a *lattice point* if both its coordinates are rational integers.

**237.1.** The three sides of a triangle are of lengths  $l, m$ , and  $n$  respectively. The numbers  $l, m$  and  $n$  are positive integers satisfying

$$l \leq m \leq n.$$

Find the number of different triangles of this kind with longest side of given length  $n$ . [Count lattice points.]

**237.2.** The number of lattice points on the periphery of a circle whose radius is  $\sqrt{n}$  and whose center is at the origin depends on the nature of the prime factors of  $n$ . Verify the proposition of Gauss quoted in 58.7 for  $n \leq 10$  and for some larger integers.

**238.** All three vertices of an equilateral triangle cannot be lattice points.

**238.1.** A polygon is equiangular, has  $n$  sides, and all its vertices are lattice points. Then  $n$  is either 4 or 8.

**238.2.** A regular polygon has  $n$  sides and all its vertices are lattice points. Then  $n=4$ .

**239.** How thick must the trunks of the trees in a regularly spaced circular forest grow if they are to block completely the view from the center?

Let  $s$  be a given positive integer. Let every lattice point  $p, q$  that satisfies the inequality  $1 \leq p^2 + q^2 \leq s^2$  be the center of a circle of radius  $r$ . If  $r$  is sufficiently small, there exist rays running from the point 0, 0 to infinity without meeting the circles described above (the forest is transparent); such rays no longer exist if  $r$  is sufficiently large (for  $r = \frac{1}{2}$  the circles touch). Let  $r = \rho$  be the value of  $r$  which divides the two cases (limit of transparency). Then we have

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{s^2+1}} \leq \rho < \frac{1}{s}$$

**240.** In the plane draw the *widest possible* infinite straight "path", contained between two parallels and avoiding all the lattice points, that makes an angle equal to  $\arctan x$  with the  $y$ -axis. Denoting the width of this path by  $\varphi(x)$ , determine  $f(x) = \varphi(x)\sqrt{1+x^2}$ .

**241.** Two lattice points  $x, y$  and  $x', y'$  are termed congruent mod  $n$ , if

$$x \equiv x' \pmod{n}, \quad y \equiv y' \pmod{n}.$$

Among any  $kn^2 + 1$  distinct lattice points there are always  $k+1$  that are congruent mod  $n$ .

**242.** In the plane consider a domain of area (Jordan content)  $F$ . It may contain no lattice points, but can always be moved parallel to itself so that  $[F] + 1$  lattice points lie in it.

**243.** The lattice points in the closed first quadrant are *enumerable*. I.e. there exist functions  $f(x, y)$  defined for ordered pairs of non-negative integers  $x, y$  that combine the following two properties:

(1) The values assumed by  $f(x, y)$  form the set of numbers 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, ...

(2) The function  $f(x, y)$  takes different values at distinct points; i.e. if  $x, y, x', y'$  are integers,  $x \geq 0, y \geq 0, x' \geq 0, y' \geq 0, (x-x')^2 + (y-y')^2 > 0$ , then  $f(x, y) \neq f(x', y')$ .

There even exist *rational entire* functions  $f(x, y)$  that enumerate the lattice points, i.e. that have the properties (1) (2). An example is the function

$$\begin{aligned} f(x, y) &= \frac{1}{2}(x^2 + 2xy + y^2 + 3x + y + 2) \\ &= \binom{x+y+1}{2} + x + 1 \end{aligned}$$

and the function arising from it by interchanging  $x$  and  $y$  [the lattice points are counted successively on the line segments

$$x+y=0, \quad x+y=1, \quad x+y=2, \quad \dots, \quad x \geq 0, \quad y \geq 0$$

Let  $f(x, y)$  be a rational entire function of degree  $m$

$$f(x, y) = \varphi_0(x, y) + \varphi_1(x, y) + \dots + \varphi_m(x, y),$$

where  $\varphi_\mu(x, y)$  denotes a rational entire homogeneous function of degree  $\mu$ . If  $f(x, y)$  enumerates the lattice points, then clearly  $\varphi_m(x, y) \geq 0$  for  $x \geq 0, y \geq 0$ . If  $\varphi_m(x, y) > 0$  for  $x \geq 0, y \geq 0, x+y > 0$  and  $f(x, y)$  enumerates the lattice points, then the degree of  $f(x, y)$  is

$$m=2.$$

[The number of lattice points contained inside the contour line  $f(x, y) = \text{const.}$  is related to the enclosed area.]

**244.** Consider the square domain  $\frac{1}{2} \leq x \leq n + \frac{1}{2}, \frac{1}{2} \leq y \leq n + \frac{1}{2}$  as a "chess board with  $n^2$  squares", i.e. by means of straight lines parallel to the axis divide it into  $n^2$  squares of unit area. The "problem of the  $n$  queens" requires us to choose from the  $n^2$  lattice points that constitute the centers of the  $n^2$  squares  $n$  lattice points  $(x_1, y_1), (x_2, y_2), \dots, (x_n, y_n)$  that satisfy the  $2n(n-1)$  inequalities

$$x_\mu \neq x_\nu, \quad y_\mu \neq y_\nu, \quad x_\mu - x_\nu \neq y_\mu - y_\nu, \quad x_\mu - x_\nu \neq -(y_\mu - y_\nu),$$

where  $\mu \neq \nu; \mu, \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n$ . Replace the inequalities by the more restrictive "incongruence relations"

$$x_\mu \not\equiv x_\nu, \quad y_\mu \not\equiv y_\nu, \quad x_\mu - x_\nu \not\equiv y_\mu - y_\nu, \quad x_\mu - x_\nu \not\equiv -(y_\mu - y_\nu)$$

(mod  $n$ ) and show that these have a solution if and only if  $n$  is relatively prime to 6.

In problems **244.1–244.4**, we shall consider a rectangular system of coordinates in three-dimensional space and we shall term a point a *lattice point* if all three of its coordinates are rational integers.

**244.1.** A regular polygon has  $n$  sides and all its vertices are lattice points. Then  $n$  is equal to 3, 4 or 6.

**244.2 (continued).** Give examples showing that the three cases  $n=3, 4$  and 6 can actually occur.

**244.3.** All the vertices of a regular polyhedron are lattice points. Then the polyhedron is either a cube or a tetrahedron or an octahedron.

**244.4 (continued).** Give examples showing that the three cases mentioned above can actually occur.

## § 2. Miscellaneous Problems

**245.** Let  $q$  denote an odd prime number and let  $r_1, r_2, \dots, r_q$  and  $s_1, s_2, \dots, s_q$  be two complete systems of residues mod  $q$ . Then the  $q$  numbers  $r_1 s_1, r_2 s_2, \dots, r_q s_q$  do *not* form a complete system of residues mod  $q$ .

$$1^{\lambda} + 2^{\lambda} + 3^{\lambda} + \cdots + n^{\lambda} \equiv -\frac{n}{p} \text{ or } 0 \pmod{p^n},$$

**247.** Let  $p$  be the smallest prime number that divides  $n$ . Then there exist two complete systems of residues mod  $n$

$$\begin{array}{cccc} r_1, & r_2, & \dots, & r_n, \\ s_1, & s_2, & \dots, & s_n \end{array}$$

$$\begin{array}{ccccccc} r_1 + s_1, & r_2 + s_2, & \dots, & r_n + s_n, \\ r_1 + 2s_1, & r_2 + 2s_2, & \dots, & r_n + 2s_n, \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ r_1 + (p-2)s_1, & r_2 + (p-2)s_2, & \dots, & r_n + (p-2)s_n \end{array}$$
$$r_1 + (p-1)s_1, \quad r_2 + (p-1)s_2, \quad \dots, \quad r_n + (p-1)s_n$$

**247.1.** If  $p$  is a prime number, then

$$\begin{array}{ccccccc} \binom{p}{1}, & \binom{p}{2}, & \binom{p}{3}, & \dots, & \binom{p}{p-1}, \\ s_2^p, & s_3^p, & \dots, & s_{p-1}^p, \\ S_2^p, & S_3^p, & \dots, & S_{p-1}^p \end{array}$$

**247.2.** If  $p$  is an odd prime, the coefficients of the Tchebychev polynomial  $T_p(x)$  (defined at the beginning of Part Six) are all divisible by  $p$ , with the exception of the leading coefficient which is equal to  $2^{p-1}$ .

**249.** A number in the sequence  $2, 3, 4, \dots, n$  ( $n > 2$ ) is relatively prime to all the other numbers if and only if it is a prime number that exceeds  $n/2$ . (That such a prime number always exists for  $n > 2$  was proved by Tchebychev. Cf. *Oeuvres*, Vol. 1, p. 63, St. Petersburg 1899.)

$$\frac{1}{1} + \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{3} + \cdots + \frac{1}{n}$$

for  $n > 1$  are not equal to an integer. This follows directly from the Tchebychev theorem [249], but is to be proved *without* using that theorem.

**251.** The sum of two or more *consecutive* terms of the harmonic series, i.e. a sum of the form

$$\frac{1}{n} + \frac{1}{n+1} + \cdots + \frac{1}{m}, \quad n=1, 2, 3, \dots; \quad n < m,$$

cannot be an integer. If it is written in the form of a fraction in its lowest terms, then its denominator is even and its numerator is odd.

**252.** If the positive integer  $n$  is divisible by all numbers that are  $\leq \sqrt{n}$ , then  $n$  is either 24 or a divisor of 24.

More generally show by an elementary argument the following: If  $0 < \alpha < 1$ , then there exist only a finite number of positive integers  $n$  such that  $n$  is divisible by  $1, 2, 3, \dots, [n^\alpha]$ .

**253.** Let  $Q$  be a prime number and relatively prime to  $10P$ . The arithmetic mean of the digits in a period of the expression of  $P/Q$  as a decimal fraction is 4.5 if and only if the length of the period is an even number.

**254.** The number  $n=2^h+1$ ,  $h \geq 2$  is a prime number if and only if

$$3^{\frac{n-1}{2}} \equiv -1 \pmod{n}.$$

**255.** The following theorem given by *Euler* as a conjecture is true:  
The Diophantine equation

$$4xyz - x - y - t^2 = 0$$

has no solution in *positive* integers  $x, y, z, t$ .

**256.** If the prime number  $q \geq 11$ , then there always exist positive odd prime numbers  $p_1, p_2, p_3, p_4$ , not necessarily distinct, that are all smaller than  $q$ , and satisfy the equations

$$\left(\frac{p_1}{q}\right) = +1, \quad \left(\frac{p_2}{q}\right) = -1,$$

$$\left(\frac{q}{p_3}\right) = +1, \quad \left(\frac{q}{p_4}\right) = -1$$

respectively.  $\left[\left(\frac{p_1}{q}\right)\right]$  etc., are *Legendre* symbols defined in V 45.]

**257.** The decimal fraction

$$0.23571113171923\dots$$

(formed by writing consecutively all the prime numbers) is irrational. [249, 110.]

**258.** The number

$$e = 1 + \frac{1}{1!} + \frac{1}{2!} + \frac{1}{3!} + \frac{1}{4!} + \cdots$$

is irrational.

**259.** The number  $e$  is not only irrational, but it is also not an algebraic number of the second degree, i.e. it cannot satisfy an equation of the form

$$ae + be^{-1} + c = 0,$$

where  $a, b, c$  are integers and are not all  $=0$ .

**260.** If the Euler (Mascheroni) constant  $C = -\Gamma'(1)$  were a rational number, then  $\Gamma'(n+1)$  would have to be an integer for all integers  $n$  from some point onward.

**260.1.** The number

$$\lambda = \frac{\log 3}{\log 2}$$

is irrational.

**260.2.** The numbers  $a$  and  $b$  are positive;  $a$  may be rational or irrational and the same holds for  $b$ , and so there are four possible cases. Show by means of examples that  $a^b$  can be rational or irrational in each of these four cases (eight examples are required).

**261.** The question whether the number  $\pi$  has the property that the arithmetic mean of its first  $n$  decimal places converges to 4.5 must be left unresolved. If however the number  $\pi$  has this property then the number  $4-\pi$  has the same property.

**262.** Denote by  $q_n$  the denominator of the  $n$ th Bernoulli number  $B_n$  [182]. Then we have

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sqrt[n]{\frac{q_1 q_2 q_3 \cdots q_n}{(2n)!}} = \frac{1}{2}.$$

**262.1.** If  $\zeta(s)$  denotes the Riemann zeta-function defined in the introduction to 39,

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (\zeta(2) + \zeta(3) + \cdots + \zeta(n+1) - n) = 1.$$

**262.2.**

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( \frac{1}{2} \zeta(2) + \frac{1}{3} \zeta(3) + \cdots + \frac{1}{n} \zeta(n) - \log n \right) = 0.$$

**263.** Let the arithmetic function  $f(n)$  be multiplicative [introduction to Ch. 1, § 6] and converge to 0 as  $n$  tends to infinity *through the prime numbers and the powers of prime numbers*. Then  $f(n)$  also satisfies the stronger requirement that

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} f(n) = 0.$$

as  $n$  tends to infinity through *all* positive integers.

**264.** For every given positive number  $\delta$ ,

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{n^{1-\delta}}{\varphi(n)} = 0, \quad \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\tau(n)}{n^\delta} = 0.$$

**265.** Let the quadratic polynomial  $ax^2 + bx + c$  with integral coefficients be represented by the lattice point  $a, b, c$  of a three-dimensional cubic lattice. Let the number of those lattice points that lie in the cube

$$-n \leq a \leq n, \quad -n \leq b \leq n, \quad -n \leq c \leq n$$

and correspond to a *reducible* polynomial be  $r_n$ . Prove that

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{r_n}{(2n+1)^3} = 0.$$

(It is in a certain sense the “normal case” for a quadratic polynomial to be irreducible.)

**266.** The probability that a polynomial with integral coefficients of given degree is reducible is equal to 0. More precisely: Let  $h$  be an integer,  $h \geq 2$ , and let  $r_n$  denote the number of those lattice points of  $(h+1)$ -dimensional space that lie in the cube

$$-n \leq a_0 \leq n, \quad -n \leq a_1 \leq n, \quad \dots, \quad -n \leq a_h \leq n$$

and correspond to a *reducible* polynomial  $a_0x^h + a_1x^{h-1} + \dots + a_h$ . Then we have

$$r_n = O(n^h \log^2 n).$$

(This result generalizes and improves **265.**) [II 46.]



## Part Nine. Geometric Problems

### § 1. Some Geometric Problems

**1.** If we throw a heavy convex polyhedron with arbitrary interior mass distribution onto a horizontal floor then it will come to rest in a stable position on one of its faces. That is there exists for an arbitrary point  $P$  lying in the interior of the convex polyhedron one face  $F$  (at least) with the following property: The perpendicular dropped from  $P$  onto the plane in which  $F$  lies has its foot in the interior of the face  $F$ . Give a purely geometrical proof free from mechanical considerations for the existence of the face  $F$ .

**1.1.** The intersection of a plane  $\pi$  with a circular cone is an ellipse. Let  $S$  denote the area of the part of the conical surface between the ellipse and the vertex of the cone,  $p$  and  $q$  the distances of the vertex from the two endpoints of the major axis of the ellipse, and finally  $\alpha$  the angle included between the axis of the cone and any generator. Prove that

$$S = \pi \frac{p+q}{2} \sqrt{pq} \sin \alpha.$$

**1.2.** Two spheres, one of radius  $r$ , the other of radius  $R$ , are externally tangent to each other. We denote by  $B$  the smallest convex solid containing both spheres (a tight bag containing two balls). Let  $V$  stand for the volume of  $B$ ,  $S$  for the area of its surface, and  $M$  for its Minkowski constant (surface integral of the mean curvature). Prove that

$$V = \frac{4\pi}{3} \frac{R^5 - r^5}{R^2 - r^2},$$

$$S = 4\pi \frac{R^4 - r^4}{R^2 - r^2},$$

$$M = 4\pi \frac{R^3 - r^3}{R^2 - r^2}.$$

**1.3.** A lampshade has the shape of a frustum of a right circular cone. Its perimeter is  $P$  at the bottom,  $p$  at the top, its slant height is  $s$ , and the inclination  $i$  of the slant height to the bottom plane is  $\geq 60^\circ$ ;  $P \geq p$ . Show that such a lampshade can be cut out in one piece from a rectangular sheet of paper of dimensions  $P$  and  $s + [p(P-p)]/8s$ . There will even be paper left over for a flap to glue the ends together, except in the extreme case where  $P=p$ ,  $i=\pi/2$ , and no paper will be wasted.

**1.4.** The numbers  $a$  and  $b$  are positive and  $f(x)$  is a non-linear function such that

$$f(0)=0, \quad f(a)=b \quad \text{and} \quad f(x) \geq 0, \quad f''(x) \geq 0$$

in the interval  $[0, a]$ . Prove that

$$2\pi \int_0^a f(x)[1 + (f'(x))^2]^{1/2} dx < \pi b(a^2 + b^2)^{1/2}.$$

(The inequality becomes intuitively obvious when both sides are interpreted as areas of surfaces of revolution.)

**2.** If on a circular field a given quantity of wheat is piled up, then the maximum slope of the resulting heap is smallest when it forms a right circular cone. Prove the analytic formulation of this fact, i.e. the following theorem:

Let the function  $f(x, y)$  possess both the partial derivatives

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial x} = f_x'(x, y), \quad \frac{\partial f}{\partial y} = f_y'(x, y).$$

If  $f(x, y)=0$  on the boundary of the unit circle  $x^2 + y^2 = 1$ , then there exists a point  $\xi, \eta$  in the unit circle such that

$$\sqrt{[f_x'(\xi, \eta)]^2 + [f_y'(\xi, \eta)]^2} > \frac{3}{\pi} \iint f(x, y) dx dy,$$

where the double integral is extended over the unit circle.

**3.** If a point mass traverses a unit length in unit time moving from rest to rest, then at some point between the two rest points it must experience an acceleration of magnitude greater than 4. Demonstrate this fact analytically.

**4.** If a curve viewed from the point  $O$  appears everywhere convex, then it subtends a visual angle  $< 180^\circ$ ; if it appears everywhere concave and extends to infinity it subtends a visual angle  $> 180^\circ$ .

Let  $O$  be the origin of a system of polar coordinates  $r, \varphi$  and  $r=1/f(\varphi)$  the equation of the curve, where  $f(x)$  is twice differentiable. In calculating the radius of curvature we are led to the following two theorems:

(1) If the function  $f(x) > 0$  in the interval  $a \leq x \leq a + \pi$ , then there exists a point  $\xi, a < \xi < a + \pi$ , such that

$$f(\xi) + f''(\xi) > 0.$$

(2) If  $f(x) > 0, f(x) + f''(x) > 0$  for  $a < x < b$  and  $f(a) = f(b) = 0$ , then  $b - a > \pi$ .

Prove these theorems by purely analytical methods.

Let  $\mathfrak{C}$  be a closed convex curve with continuous curvature in the plane. Let the *support function* of  $\mathfrak{C}$  (i.e. the support function of the convex domain  $\mathfrak{D}$  enclosed by  $\mathfrak{C}$ , cf. III preceding 112) be denoted by  $h(\varphi)$  and let the radius of curvature of  $\mathfrak{C}$  at the point where the direction of the tangent is  $\varphi + \pi/2$  be denoted by  $r(\varphi)$ . The function  $h(\varphi)$  is twice continuously differentiable and  $r(\varphi)$  is continuous. We have

$$r(\varphi) = h(\varphi) + h''(\varphi).$$

For the area  $a$  of  $\mathfrak{C}$  (i.e. the area of  $\mathfrak{D}$ ) and for the length  $l$  of  $\mathfrak{C}$  we have the formulae:

$$a = \frac{1}{2} \int_0^{2\pi} h(\varphi) r(\varphi) d\varphi, \quad l = \int_0^{2\pi} h(\varphi) d\varphi.$$

**5.** On a closed convex curve with continuous curvature there are always at least three different pairs of points with the following property: The tangents at the two points of a pair are parallel and the curvature of the curve at the two points is the same.

**6.** If a convex curve of circumference  $l$  and of area  $a$  can roll unimpeded in the interior of another convex curve of circumference  $L$  and area  $A$ , then we have  $lL \leq 2\pi(a + A)$ .

In the  $x, y, z$  space let  $\mathfrak{S}$  be a closed, convex surface with continuous curvature. The expression  $x \cos \alpha + y \cos \beta + z \cos \gamma$  where  $\cos^2 \alpha + \cos^2 \beta + \cos^2 \gamma = 1$ , has in the convex domain  $\mathfrak{D}$  enclosed by  $\mathfrak{S}$  a precisely determined maximum  $h(\alpha, \beta, \gamma)$ . The quantity  $h(\alpha, \beta, \gamma)$  is a function of the direction  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma$  and is called the *support function* of  $\mathfrak{D}$ . The plane

$$x \cos \alpha + y \cos \beta + z \cos \gamma - h(\alpha, \beta, \gamma) = 0$$

is a tangent plane (*plane of support*) of the surface  $\mathfrak{S}$ , and in fact that tangent plane whose normal outward from  $\mathfrak{S}$  has direction cosines  $\cos \alpha, \cos \beta, \cos \gamma$ . Let  $r$  and  $r'$  be the two principal radii of curvature at the point of tangency. We may regard the quantities  $h, r, r'$  as functions of a variable point  $\omega$  on the unit sphere. They are continuous functions of  $\omega$ . If  $V, S$  and  $M$  denote the volume, the surface area and the integral of the mean curvature of  $\mathfrak{S}$ , respectively, then we have the formulae

$$\begin{aligned} V &= \frac{1}{3} \iint h r r' d\omega, \\ S &= \iint r r' d\omega = \frac{1}{2} \iint h(r + r') d\omega, \\ M &= \frac{1}{2} \iint (r^{-1} + r'^{-1}) r r' d\omega = \iint h d\omega, \end{aligned}$$

where the integration is extended over the unit sphere whose element of area is denoted by  $d\omega$ .  $M$  is customarily termed the *Minkowski constant* of  $\mathfrak{S}$ , or of the solid enclosed by  $\mathfrak{S}$ .

**7.** Denote the volume, the surface area and the integral of the mean curvature of two convex surfaces by  $v, s, m$  and  $V, S, M$  respectively. If the first body can roll unimpeded in the interior of the second, then we have the inequalities

$$\begin{aligned} mS + sM &\leq 12\pi(V + v), \\ mS - sM &\leq 4\pi(V - v). \end{aligned}$$

**8.** Every closed surface is in equilibrium under the action of uniform pressure applied from all sides. In order to show this, prove that the following formulae hold for every closed surface:

$$\begin{aligned} \iint \cos \alpha dS &= 0, & \iint \cos \beta dS &= 0, & \iint \cos \gamma dS &= 0, \\ \iint (y \cos \gamma - z \cos \beta) dS &= 0, & \iint (z \cos \alpha - x \cos \gamma) dS &= 0, \\ \iint (x \cos \beta - y \cos \alpha) dS &= 0. \end{aligned}$$

Here  $\cos \alpha$ ,  $\cos \beta$ ,  $\cos \gamma$  are the direction cosines of the outward normal and  $dS$  is the element of surface area.

**9.** If on every element  $dS$  of a closed, rigid surface with continuous curvature there acts a force of magnitude  $\frac{1}{2}(1/R_1 + 1/R_2)dS$  in the direction of the inward normal, where  $R_1$  and  $R_2$  are the two principal radii of curvature, then the surface is in equilibrium.

**10** (continued). If the magnitude of the force acting on  $dS$  in the direction of the inward normal is  $(1/R_1 R_2) dS$  (i.e. proportional to the Gaussian curvature rather than to the mean curvature as in the preceding problem), then the surface is also in equilibrium.

**11.** At every edge  $e$  of a rigid polyhedron there acts a force  $F$ . The point of application of  $F$  is the mid-point of  $e$ .  $F$  is perpendicular to  $e$  and lies in the plane that bisects the interior angle included by the two faces of the polyhedron meeting in  $e$ . The magnitude of  $F$  is  $l|\cos(\alpha/2)|$ , where  $l$  denotes the length of  $e$  and  $\alpha$  the interior angle at the edge  $e$  considered above. Finally  $F$  is directed inwards or outwards according as the edge  $e$  is convex or re-entrant, i.e. according to the sign of  $\cos(\alpha/2)$ . Under the system of all the forces  $F$  the polyhedron is in equilibrium.

**12.** If at every element  $ds$  of a closed, rigid space curve with continuous curvature there acts a force in the direction of the positive principal normal of magnitude  $ds/r$ , where  $r$  denotes the radius of curvature, then the curve is in equilibrium.

**13.** Imagine a unit vector drawn from the origin of a coordinate system in the direction of the tangent at each point of a continuously differentiable space curve. The end-points of these unit vectors generate the *spherical image* of the space curve. If the space curve is closed, then its spherical image will be intersected by every great circle of the unit sphere.

**14.** Let the function  $f(x)$  be defined in the interval  $a \leq x \leq b$  and satisfy the following conditions:

(1)  $f(x)$  is positive in the interior and  $=0$  at the end-points of the interval  $a, b$ ;

(2)  $f(x)$  is twice continuously differentiable for  $a < x < b$ ;

(3)  $f'(x)$  converges to  $+\infty$  as  $x \rightarrow a$ , and to  $-\infty$  as  $x \rightarrow b$ .

Under these conditions the function

$$\frac{f''(x)}{f(x)(1 + [f'(x)]^2)^2} = F(x)$$

cannot be monotonic in the whole interval  $a < x < b$ , except in the case that

$$f(x) = \sqrt{(x-a)(b-x)}, \quad F(x) = -\left(\frac{2}{b-a}\right)^2.$$

**15.** On a surface of revolution with continuous curvature there are always two different parallel circles with the same Gaussian curvature.

**16.** Let  $a, b, c$  be the sides, and  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma$  the angles of a triangle in radian measure,  $a$  lying opposite to  $\alpha$ ,  $b$  to  $\beta$  and  $c$  to  $\gamma$ . Then we have

$$\frac{\pi}{3} \leq \frac{a\alpha + b\beta + c\gamma}{a + b + c} \leq \frac{\pi}{2}$$

Equality holds in the first inequality if and only if the triangle is equilateral, and in the second inequality if and only if the triangle degenerates into a straight line counted twice.

**17.** Let  $k_1, k_2, \dots, k_6$  be the lengths of the six edges of a tetrahedron and  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_6$  the radian measures of the angles formed by the faces of the tetrahedron that meet at the respective edges. Then we have

$$\frac{\pi}{3} < \frac{k_1\alpha_1 + k_2\alpha_2 + \dots + k_6\alpha_6}{k_1 + k_2 + \dots + k_6} < \frac{\pi}{2}.$$

The given bounds are the best possible.

**17.1.** Consider a triangle. Let  $a, b$  and  $c$  denote its sides and  $A$  its area. Prove that

$$A \leq \frac{\sqrt{3}}{4} (abc)^{2/3}$$

with equality only for equilateral triangles. [The shape of a triangle is specified by two parameters.]

**17.2** (continued). If  $p > 0$

$$A \leq \frac{\sqrt{3}}{4} \left( \frac{a^p + b^p + c^p}{3} \right)^{\frac{2}{p}},$$

with equality only for equilateral triangles.

**17.3** (continued). Let  $r$  and  $R$  denote the radii of the inscribed and the circumscribed circle of a triangle, respectively. Prove that

$$2r \leq R,$$

with equality only for equilateral triangles.

**17.4.** Formulate a proposition that has an analogous relation to **17.1** as **17** has to **16**.

**17.5** (continued). Try to find simple particular cases for which the proposition formulated above can be conveniently tested.

**18.** Let  $P_0P_1P_2$  be a triangle right-angled at  $P_2$ ,  $P_2P_3$  the perpendicular from  $P_2$  to  $P_0P_1$ , similarly  $P_3P_4 \perp P_1P_2$ ,  $P_4P_5 \perp P_2P_3$ , etc. Find the point  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} P_n$ .

**19.** Let  $K$  and  $K'$  be two circles in space, each given as the intersection of a sphere and a plane

$$\begin{aligned} (K) \quad & x^2 + y^2 + z^2 + ax + by + cz + d = 0, & Ax + By + Cz + D = 0, \\ (K') \quad & x^2 + y^2 + z^2 + a'x + b'y + c'z + d' = 0, & A'x + B'y + C'z + D' = 0 \end{aligned}$$

Find a rational entire function of the 16 real coefficients  $a, b, \dots, d, A, \dots, D, a', \dots, d', A', \dots, D'$ , that is  $< 0$  if and only if the two circles are *interlocked* i.e. their relative position is such that they have no common point, and, if conceived of as being made of wire, say, they cannot be taken apart without tearing.

**20.** Let  $X_1, X_2, X_3$  be the projective coordinates of a variable point in the plane and let  $X_0$  be defined by  $X_0 + X_1 + X_2 + X_3 = 0$ . In the triply infinite family of conics

$$\lambda_0 X_0^2 + \lambda_1 X_1^2 + \lambda_2 X_2^2 + \lambda_3 X_3^2 = 0$$

there are doubly infinitely many that degenerate to pairs of straight lines; and moreover every point of the plane is the singular point (intersection) of such a pair of straight lines. Find the integral curves of these pairs of straight lines. (At every point  $P$  of the required curve the tangent coincides with one straight line of the pair of straight lines whose point of intersection is  $P$ .)

**21.** Let the point  $P$  describe a plane curve. Let  $\rho$  be the radius of curvature at  $P$ . Let the segment of the normal at  $P$  lying between the two rectangular coordinate axes be of length  $\nu$ . Determine those curves for which the ratio of  $\rho$  and  $\nu$  is fixed:

$$\rho = 2n\nu.$$

The constant  $n$  may be supposed positive, since  $n$  is transformed into  $-n$  if  $x$  and  $y$  are interchanged.—For integral  $n$  there is a particular solution in the form of a *rational* curve of order  $2n$  that has a point of intersection of multiplicity  $2n$  with the line at infinity. [Introduce as a parameter the angle  $\tau$  between the  $x$ -axis and the tangent at  $P$ .]

**22.** The family of surfaces of second order

$$F(x_1, x_2, x_3, t) \equiv \frac{x_1^2}{a_1 - t} + \frac{x_2^2}{a_2 - t} + \frac{x_3^2}{a_3 - t} - t = 0 \quad (0 < a_1 < a_2 < a_3)$$

with parameter  $t$  has an enveloping surface  $H$  of order 10 and class 4. Determine the lines of curvature of  $H$ . [Find the differential equation for one radius of curvature of  $H$  in terms of the parameter  $t$ .]

**23** (continued). Deduce a parametric representation of  $H$  with the lines of curvature as parameter lines. The latter are algebraic curves of 12th order.

**24** (continued). The central surface and the parallel surfaces of  $H$  may be regarded as envelopes of a suitably chosen family of surfaces of second order.

**25.** Let  $F(x, y)$  be a continuous function, periodic with period 1 in the two variables  $x, y$ ; i.e.

$$F(x+1, y) = F(x, y+1) = F(x, y).$$

Furthermore let  $F(x, y)$  have the property (e.g. let it satisfy a *Lipschitz* condition) that through every point of the plane there passes one and only one infinitely continuable integral curve of the differential equation

$$\frac{dy}{dx} = F(x, y).$$

Then there exists a number  $\omega$  associated with the function  $F(x, y)$  such that for every integral curve  $y=f(x)$  the difference  $f(x) - \omega x$  is bounded for all values of  $x$ .

# Appendix

## § 1. Additional Problems to Part One

**A I 9.1.** In how many different ways can you pay the sum of  $n$  cents with  $l$  different kinds of coins of value  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_l$  cents respectively, using just  $k$  coins?

[We are required to find  $A_{n,k}$ , the number of those solutions of the Diophantine equation

$$a_1x_1 + a_2x_2 + \dots + a_lx_l = n$$

in non-negative integers  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_l$ , for which

$$x_1 + x_2 + \dots + x_l = k.$$

The function of the variables  $z$  and  $q$

$$\frac{1}{(1 - q^{a_1}z)(1 - q^{a_2}z) \dots (1 - q^{a_l}z)},$$

which for  $z=1$ ,  $q=\zeta$  solves the change problem as presented in I 9, may be useful.]

**A I 9.2.** Generalizing A I 9.1, find  $A_{n_1 n_2 \dots n_k}$ , the number of solutions in non-negative integers  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_l$  of the following system of  $k$  Diophantine equations:

$$\begin{aligned} a_{11}x_1 + a_{12}x_2 + \dots + a_{1l}x_l &= n_1, \\ a_{21}x_1 + a_{22}x_2 + \dots + a_{2l}x_l &= n_2, \\ &\dots\dots\dots \\ a_{k1}x_1 + a_{k2}x_2 + \dots + a_{kl}x_l &= n_k; \end{aligned}$$

$a_{\kappa\lambda}$  and  $n_\kappa$  ( $\kappa=1, 2, \dots, k$ ;  $\lambda=1, 2, \dots, l$ ) are given non-negative integers.

**A I 20.1.** Define  $p(n)$  (the number of *partitions* of  $n$ ) as the number of different decompositions of the positive integer  $n$  into a sum of positive integers. E.g.

$$\begin{aligned} 5 &= 4+1 = 3+2 &= 2+2+1 &= 1+1+1+1+1 \\ &= 3+1+1 = 2+1+1+1 \end{aligned}$$

and so  $p(5)=7$ . It is convenient to also define  $p(0)=1$ .

Compute  $p(n)$  for  $0 \leq n \leq 10$ .

**A I 20.2.** Prove

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} p(n)x^n = \frac{1}{(1-x)(1-x^2)(1-x^3) \dots}.$$

**A I 54.1.**

$$\left\{ \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 - q^n) \right\}^3 = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (-1)^n (2n+1) q^{n(n+1)/2}.$$

**A I 60.12.** There is another approach to problem I 60.10.

As in I 60.11, cut the area under the zig-zag path into  $r$  vertical strips of width 1 of which

$$x_0, x_1, x_2, \dots, x_s$$

are of height

$$0, 1, 2, \dots, s,$$

respectively;  $s = n - r$ . Then the area is

$$\begin{aligned} 0x_0 + 1x_1 + 2x_2 + \dots + sx_s &= \alpha, \\ x_0 + x_1 + x_2 + \dots + x_s &= r. \end{aligned}$$

Find  $c_{r+s, r, \alpha}$ , the number of non-negative integral solutions of this system of two Diophantine equations. [A I 9.1, cf. I 51.]

**A I 191.1.** If  $n$  is an integer,  $n > 1$ , then

$$0!S_1^n - 1!S_2^n + 2!S_3^n - \dots + (-1)^{n-1}(n-1)!S_n^n = 0.$$

**A I 191.2.** If  $n$  is a positive integer, then

$$1!S_1^n - 2!S_2^n + 3!S_3^n - \dots + (-1)^{n-1}n!S_n^n = (-1)^{n-1}.$$

**A I 203.1.** There are  $4n$  players who wish to play bridge at  $n$  tables. Each player must have another player as partner and each pair of partners must have another pair as opponents. Show that the choice of partners and opponents can be made in exactly

$$\frac{(4n)!}{n!8^n}$$

different ways (3, 315, 155925, ... ways when  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ ; always an odd number).



# Solutions



## Part Four. Functions of One Complex Variable

### Special Part

**1.** [For **1-76** cf. A. Wiman: Acta Math. **37**, pp. 305-326 (1914). There is additional material in G. Valiron: General Theory of Integral Functions. Toulouse: É. Privat 1923 and in R. P. Boas: Entire Functions. New York: Academic Press 1954. Cf. also references given for **I 110**.] We are concerned with the maximum of the sequence

$$1, \frac{r}{1}, \frac{r}{1} \frac{r}{2}, \frac{r}{1} \frac{r}{2} \frac{r}{3}, \dots, \frac{r}{1} \frac{r}{2} \cdots \frac{r}{n}, \dots$$

The factors  $r/1, r/2, \dots, r/n, \dots$  are decreasing from left to right. If

$$\frac{r}{n} \geq 1 > \frac{r}{n+1}, \quad \text{i.e. } n \leq r < n+1,$$

then the  $n$ th term  $r^n/n!$  is the maximum term. Hence

$$\mu(r) = \frac{r^{[r]}}{[r]!}, \quad \nu(r) = [r].$$

**2.** Since all the coefficients are positive,  $M(r) = e^r$ ;  $N(r) = 0$ .

**3.**  $\mu(r) = r^n/(2n+1)!$  for  $2n(2n+1) \leq r \leq (2n+2)(2n+3)$ ,

$$\nu(r) = \left[ \frac{\sqrt{1+4r}-1}{4} \right] \sim \frac{\sqrt{r}}{2}.$$

**4.** Since the coefficients have alternating signs, the maximum modulus is attained for negative  $z$ .

$$M(r) = \frac{e^{\sqrt{r}} - e^{-\sqrt{r}}}{2\sqrt{r}}, \quad N(r) = \left[ \frac{\sqrt{r}}{\pi} \right] \sim \frac{\sqrt{r}}{\pi}.$$

**5.**  $\nu(r) = 0$ .

**6.**  $N(r) = 0$ .

**7.**  $|a_n| r^n$  is the maximum term when  $r$  exceeds each of the numbers  $|a_0/a_n|^{\frac{1}{n}}$ ,  $|a_1/a_n|^{\frac{1}{n-1}}, \dots, |a_{n-1}/a_n|$ .

**8.** By the fundamental theorem of algebra and since the absolute value of the polynomial  $\sim |a_n| |z|^n$  as  $|z| \rightarrow \infty$ .

**9.** From **I 119**, **I 120** it follows that the second limit  $= \infty$ . From  $\mu(r) \geq |a_n| r^n$  it follows that if  $a_n \neq 0$

$$\liminf_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \mu(r)}{\log r} \geq n, \quad \text{i.e.} \quad \lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \mu(r)}{\log r} = \infty.$$

**10.** The first part of the assertion is proved in a similar way as the first part of **9**. For the second part cf. for example **2**.

**11.**  $\mu_k(r) = \mu_1(r^k)$ ,  $\nu_k(r) = k\nu_1(r^k)$ . The exponent  $nk$  in the term  $a_n z^{nk}$  is of course taken as the value of  $\nu_k(r)$  when that term has the maximum absolute value.

**12.**  $M_k(r) = M_1(r^k)$ ,  $N_k(r) = kN_1(r^k)$ .

**13.** (1) For  $(2n-1)2n \leq r^2 < (2n+1)(2n+2)$  we have

$$\begin{aligned} \nu(r) &= 2n \sim r, & \mu(r) &= \frac{r^{2n}}{(2n)!}, \\ \frac{\nu(r)}{\log \mu(r)} &= -\frac{2n}{r} \frac{1}{\frac{1}{r} \left( \log \frac{1}{r} + \log \frac{2}{r} + \dots + \log \frac{2n}{r} \right)} \sim -\frac{1}{\int_0^1 \log x \, dx} = 1. \end{aligned}$$

(2) For  $\frac{(2n-1)2n}{4} \leq r^2 < \frac{(2n+1)(2n+2)}{4}$  we have

$$\begin{aligned} \nu(r) &= 2n \sim 2r, & \mu(r) &= \frac{1}{2} \frac{(2r)^{2n}}{(2n)!}, \\ \frac{\nu(r)}{\log \mu(r)} &= -\frac{2n}{2r} \frac{1}{\frac{1}{2r} \left( \log \frac{1}{2r} + \log \frac{2}{2r} + \dots + \log \frac{2n}{2r} \right) + \frac{\log 2}{2r}} \sim -\frac{1}{\int_0^1 \log x \, dx} = 1. \end{aligned}$$

One would like to have a theorem which contains this example and, on the analogy of **14**, reads somewhat as follows: "If  $f(z)$  is an entire function and if (in contrast to **11**)  $\mu_k(r)$  and  $\nu_k(r)$  denote the maximal term and the central index of the expansion of  $(f(z))^k$  in ascending powers of  $z$ ,  $k=1, 2, 3, \dots$ , respectively, then the limit

$$\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\nu_k(r)}{\log \mu_k(r)}$$

is independent of  $k$ ." This theorem is in general not true (the limit need not even exist) but it does hold under special assumptions, e.g. under the assumption of **67** [68]. Cf. also **59**, **60**.

**14.**  $M_k(r) = (M_1(r))^k$ ,  $N_k(r) = kN_1(r)$ .

**15.** [19.]

**16.**  $N(r)$  is a counting function, cf. II Ch. 4, § 1.

**17.** Let  $\nu(r_1) = l \geq 1$ . Then

$$\mu(r_2) \geq |a_l| r_2^l \geq |a_l| r_1^{l-1} r_2 = \mu(r_1) \frac{r_2}{r_1}.$$

**18.** [Solution III 280.]

**19.** Since a maximum term exists, *there exist* points which lie in every half-plane  $\eta \geq n\xi + \log |a_n|$ ,  $n=0, 1, 2, \dots$ . Their aggregate  $\mathfrak{G}$  extends to infinity and, being the intersection of infinitely many convex regions (half-planes), it is itself convex. The boundary of  $\mathfrak{G}$  from below forms a polygon whose equation is  $\eta = \log \mu(e^\xi)$ . The derivative *from the right*

$$\frac{d \log \mu(e^{\xi})}{d\xi}$$

exists also at the corners and always  $=\nu(e^{\xi})$ . This derivative is piece-wise constant and, because of the convexity, it is non-decreasing. From this **15** follows.

**20.** [III 304.] The exceptional case arises when there is just one term different from 0 in the power series [III 305].

**21.** Let  $0 < r < r'$ . The two pairs of points

$$(\log \alpha r, \log \mu(\alpha r)), \quad (\log r', \log \mu(r'))$$

and

$$(\log r, \log \mu(r)), \quad (\log \alpha r', \log \mu(\alpha r'))$$

both lie on the boundary of  $\mathfrak{G}$  [solution **19**] and the second pair, in fact, lies between the first pair. The centers of the connecting lines (secants) have the same abscissa

$$\frac{\log \alpha r + \log r'}{2} = \frac{\log r + \log \alpha r'}{2};$$

for the ordinates we have because of the convexity [19]

$$\frac{\log \mu(\alpha r) + \log \mu(r')}{2} \geq \frac{\log \mu(r) + \log \mu(\alpha r')}{2}.$$

**22.** From **20**, as **21** from **19**. Note the exception.

**23.** For polynomials the assertion is obvious [solution **7**]. For power series with an infinite radius of convergence  $\nu(r)$  must tend to infinity, since if  $m < n$  the term  $|a_m|r^m$  is exceeded by  $|a_n|r^n$  for  $r > (|a_m|/|a_n|)^{\frac{1}{n-m}}$ . If  $\mu(\alpha r) = |a_m|(\alpha r)^m$  then  $\mu(r) \geq |a_m|r^m$  and hence  $\mu(\alpha r)/\mu(r) \leq \alpha^m$ ;  $m \rightarrow \infty$  as  $r$  increases.

**24.** The limit in question exists and is  $< 1$  for every entire function which is not constant [22]. If it is positive and equal to  $\alpha^k$ , where  $k(k > 0)$  is chosen suitably, then

$$\frac{M(\alpha^{-n+1})}{M(\alpha^{-n})} \geq \alpha^k, \quad \text{hence} \quad M(\alpha^{-n}) \leq \alpha^{-nk} M(1), \quad n = 1, 2, 3, \dots,$$

Hence it follows that the entire function is a polynomial of degree  $\leq k$  [8, 10]. For polynomials the assertion is obvious.

**25.** Among the numbers  $\rho_1, \rho_2, \dots$  there are  $\nu(0)$  which vanish, and hence none if  $\nu(0) = 0$ .—If  $\xi_0$  is the abscissa of a corner of the polygon forming the boundary of  $\mathfrak{G}$  [solution **19**] at which the two sides with direction coefficients  $m, n$  ( $m < n$ ) meet, then  $\rho_{m+1} = \rho_{m+2} = \dots = \rho_{n-1} = \rho_n = e^{\xi_0}$ . Between the corner in question and the adjoining corner to the right we have  $|a_n|r^n$  as the greatest term.

**26.** Among the numbers  $r_1, r_2, \dots$  there are  $N(0)$  which vanish, and hence none if  $N(0) = 0$ .—Cf. **16**.

**27.**

$$\rho_n = n; \quad \rho_n = 2n(2n+1); \quad \rho_{2n-1} = \rho_{2n} = \sqrt{(2n-1)2n}.$$

28.

$$w_1 = -\frac{\pi i}{2}, \quad w_2 = \frac{3\pi i}{2}, \quad w_3 = -\frac{5\pi i}{2}, \dots, \quad r_n = (2n-1)\frac{\pi}{2};$$

$$w_n = r_n = n^2\pi^2; \quad r_{2n-1} = r_{2n} = (2n-1)\frac{\pi}{2}$$

29.  $\rho_n \leq R$ ,  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ . In the interval  $[0, r]$ ,  $r < R$ , we have a finite number, namely  $\nu(r)$ , members of the sequence  $\rho_1, \rho_2, \rho_3, \dots$ , which can hence have a point of accumulation only at the right-hand endpoint of the interval  $[0, R]$ .

30. The zeros cannot have a point of accumulation in the interior of the circle of convergence.

31. The proof is by mathematical induction on the intervals into which  $\rho_1, \rho_2, \dots$  divide the real axis. For  $0 \leq r < \rho_1$  we have  $\mu(r) = |a_0|$ . Let  $0 \leq m < n$ , and let  $|a_n|r^n$  succeed  $|a_m|r^m$  as the maximum term. Assume that

$$\mu(r) = \frac{|a_0|r^m}{\rho_1\rho_2\cdots\rho_m} = |a_m|r^m \quad \text{for } \rho_m \leq r < \rho_{m+1},$$

and hence that  $|a_m| = |a_0|/(\rho_1\rho_2\cdots\rho_m)$ .  $|a_n|r^n$  becomes the maximum term at the point  $r = \rho_{m+1} = \rho_{m+2} = \cdots = \rho_{n-1} = \rho_n$  [25]. Hence

$$\mu(\rho_{m+1}) = |a_m|\rho_{m+1}^m = |a_n|\rho_n^n = |a_n|\rho_{m+1}^m\rho_{m+1}\rho_{m+2}\cdots\rho_n,$$

$$|a_n| = \frac{|a_m|}{\rho_{m+1}\rho_{m+2}\cdots\rho_n} = \frac{|a_0|}{\rho_1\rho_2\cdots\rho_m\rho_{m+1}\cdots\rho_n},$$

and  $\mu(r) = |a_n|r^n$  for  $\rho_n \leq r < \rho_{n+1}$ , q.e.d.

32. *Jensen's inequality* [III 120]. Equality is not attained for any entire function differing from a constant.

33. By careful integration from

$$r \frac{d \log \mu(r)}{dr} = \nu(r),$$

which was proved in solution 19.

34. Equivalent to 32, since by II 147

$$\int_0^r \frac{N(t)}{t} dt = N(r) \log r - \int_0^r \log t dN(t).$$

35. Denote the limits on the left and on the right by  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ , respectively. Consider first  $\alpha$  finite. Let  $\varepsilon > 0$ ; for  $r$  sufficiently large we have  $\nu(r) < r^{\alpha+\varepsilon}$  and  $|a_{\nu(r)}| < 1$  and hence

$$\mu(r) < r^{\nu(r)} < r^{r^{\alpha+\varepsilon}}, \quad \frac{\log \log \mu(r)}{\log r} < \alpha + \varepsilon + \frac{\log \log r}{\log r}.$$

From this it follows that  $\beta \leq \alpha$ . On the other hand [33]

$$\int_r^{2r} \frac{\nu(t)}{t} dt = \log \mu(2r) - \log \mu(r).$$

For  $r$  sufficiently large  $\mu(r) > 1$ , hence  $\nu(r) \log 2 < \log \mu(2r)$ , i.e.  $\alpha \leq \beta$ . If  $\alpha$  is infinite the first half of the proof is obvious.

**36.** Cf. the second half of the proof of **35**. [34.]

**37.** Assume  $a_0 = 1$ . We find [33, II 147]

$$\begin{aligned} -r^{-k}\nu(r) + \sum_{0 < \rho_\nu \leq r} \rho_\nu^{-k} &= k \int_0^r t^{-k-1}\nu(t) dt = k \int_0^r t^{-k} d \log \mu(t) \\ &= kr^{-k} \log \mu(r) + k^2 \int_0^r t^{-k-1} \log \mu(t) dt. \end{aligned}$$

If  $\int_1^\infty t^{-k-1} \log \mu(t) dt$  is convergent, then we have  $\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} r^{-k} \log \mu(r) = 0$  [II 113] and hence  $\sum_{\nu=1}^n (\rho_\nu^{-k} - \rho_n^{-k})$  is bounded [I 78]. If  $\sum_{n=1}^\infty \rho_n^{-k}$  is convergent the conclusion follows more readily.

**38.** [G. Valiron: Darboux Bull. Series 2, 45, pp. 258-270 (1921).] Assuming  $f(0) = 1$  and with the notation of III 121 we obtain, as in **37**,

$$-r^{-k}N(r) + \sum_{0 < \rho_\nu \leq r} \rho_\nu^k = kr^{-k} \log \mathfrak{G}(r) + k^2 \int_0^r t^{-k-1} \mathfrak{G}(t) dt.$$

From  $\mathfrak{G}(r) \leq M(r)$  one argues as in **37**.

**39.**

$$-(1-r)^{k+1}\nu(r) + \sum_{\rho_\nu \leq r} (1-\rho_\nu)^{k+1} = (k+1) \int_0^r (1-t)^k \nu(t) dt \quad [\text{II 147}].$$

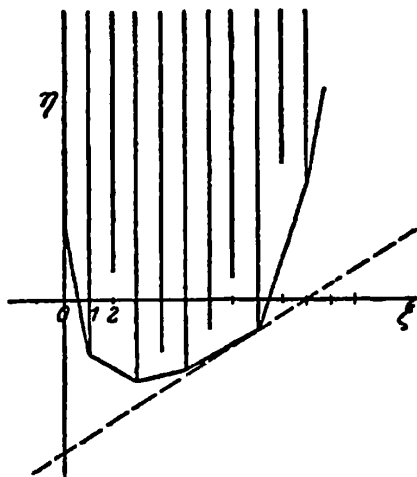
$$(1-r)^k \log \mu(r) + k \int_0^r (1-t)^{k-1} \log \mu(t) dt = \int_0^r (1-t)^k t^{-1} \nu(t) dt \quad [\text{33}].$$

Let  $a_0 = 1$ . The right-hand sides behave in the same manner for  $r = 1$ . If the integral on the left in the second line exists then we have  $\lim_{r \rightarrow 1-0} (1-r)^k \log \mu(r) = 0$  [II 112] and  $\sum_{\nu=1}^n [(1-\rho_\nu)^{k+1} - (1-\rho_n)^{k+1}]$  is bounded [I 78].

**40.** [F. and R. Nevanlinna: Acta Soc. Sc. Fennicae, 50, No. 5 (1922).] Related to **39** as **38** is to **37**.

**41.** [J. Hadamard: J. Math. Pures Appl., Series 4, 9, p. 174 (1893).] The straight line through  $(n, -\log |a_n|)$  with slope  $\log r$  has the equation

$$\eta = -\log |a_n| + \log r(\xi - n)$$



and cuts off a segment of length  $-\log |a_n|r^n$  from the  $\eta$ -axis. Of all these straight lines the line of support has the lowest point of intersection. Hence the segment cut from the vertical axis by the supporting line  $= -\log \mu(r)$ , the abscissa of the corner in which the supporting line cuts  $\mathfrak{R}$  is  $\nu(r)$  (taking the corner furthest to the right if there are several), and the slope of the portion of the boundary of  $\mathfrak{R}$  between the abscissae  $n-1$  and  $n$  equals  $\log \rho_n$ . From the figure it can be seen that  $\log \rho_{n+1} \geq \log \rho_n$  and that, if  $a_0 \neq 0$ ,

$$-\log |a_n| = -\log |a_0| + \log \rho_1 + \log \rho_2 + \cdots + \log \rho_n,$$

if  $(n, -\log |a_n|)$  lies on the boundary of  $\mathfrak{R}$  [31]. If the supporting line rotates from slope  $\log \rho_n$  to slope  $\log \rho_{n+1}$  at the corner with abscissa  $n$ , then  $\log \mu(\rho_{n+1}) - \log \mu(\rho_n) = n(\log \rho_{n+1} - \log \rho_n)$ , etc.

**42.** Taking for  $r$  the smallest number for which the inequalities

$$|a_0| \leq |a_m|r^m, \quad |a_1|r \leq |a_m|r^m, \quad \dots, \quad |a_{m-1}|r^{m-1} \leq |a_m|r^m$$

are all simultaneously satisfied, we obtain  $|a_m|r^m$  as the maximum term. This value of  $r$  is therefore  $\rho_m$ .—In figure 41 the slopes

$$\frac{-\log |a_n| + \log |a_0|}{n-0}, \quad \frac{-\log |a_n| + \log |a_1|}{n-1}, \quad \dots, \quad \frac{-\log |a_n| + \log |a_{n-1}|}{n-(n-1)}$$

are all  $\leq$  the slope  $\log \rho_n$ .

**43.** If  $a_0$  is to be the maximum term for a value of  $r > 0$  then  $a_0 \neq 0$ . Then by the proof of 31 we have

$$|a_n| = \frac{|a_0|}{\rho_1 \rho_2 \cdots \rho_n}, \quad \left| \frac{a_n}{a_{n+1}} \right| = \rho_{n+1} \geq \rho_n = \left| \frac{a_{n-1}}{a_n} \right|, \quad n=1, 2, 3, \dots$$

In figure 41 the points  $(n, -\log |a_n|)$  all lie on the boundary in the present case and  $\frac{-\log |a_{n-1}| - \log |a_{n+1}|}{2} \geq -\log |a_n|$ ; this expresses the convexity.

**44.** The curve  $y = \alpha^{-1}x^\alpha$ ,  $x > 0$ , is concave since  $y'' = (\alpha-1)x^{\alpha-2} < 0$ . From this the assertion concerning  $\nu(r)$  follows [43]. The maximum of the expression  $\alpha^{-1}x^\alpha + x \log r$ , where we consider  $x$  as variable,  $x > 0$ , and  $r$  as constant, is attained at

$$(*) \quad x = (-\log r)^{-\frac{1}{1-\alpha}}$$

and equals  $(\alpha^{-1}-1)x^\alpha = (\alpha^{-1}-1)(-\log r)^{-\frac{\alpha}{1-\alpha}}$ . If the number  $(*)$  is an integer  $= n$ , then the  $n$ th term  $= e^{(\alpha^{-1}-1)n^\alpha}$  and is the maximum term [a second proof of the assertion concerning  $\nu(r)$ ] and the value given for  $\mu(r)$  is attained exactly (it is otherwise somewhat too large). That it is asymptotically correct follows from

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{e^{(\alpha^{-1}-1)(n+1)^\alpha}}{e^{(\alpha^{-1}-1)n^\alpha}} = 1.$$

**45.** Set  $-\log r = \tau$  and compare the series in question with the integral



$$\int_0^{\infty} e^{\alpha-1} x^{\alpha-1} dx \sim \sqrt{\frac{2\pi}{1-\alpha}} \tau^{-\frac{\alpha}{2(1-\alpha)-1}} \exp\left(\frac{1-\alpha}{\alpha} \tau^{-\frac{\alpha}{1-\alpha}}\right) \quad [\text{II } 208].$$

Passing from the series to the integral introduces an error of the order of magnitude of the maximal term of the series [cf. II 8]. The ratio of this to the magnitude of the integral is of order  $\tau^{\frac{\alpha}{2(1-\alpha)+1}}$  [44], and this justifies the transition.

46. The curve  $y = \alpha x \log x$  is convex since  $y'' = \alpha/x > 0$ . The maximum of  $-\alpha x \log x + x \log r$  for variable  $x$ ,  $x > 0$ , and fixed  $r$  is attained for  $\alpha(1 + \log x) = \log r$ . If the corresponding value of  $x$  is an integer  $n$  then the  $n$ th term is the maximum term. If the value of  $x$  in question is given by  $x = n + t$ ,  $0 \leq t \leq 1$ , then

$$r = (e(n+t))^{\alpha}, \quad n^{-n\alpha} r^n = e^{n\alpha}(1+t)^{-n\alpha} \sim e^{\alpha(n+t)} = \exp\left(\alpha e^{-1} r^{\frac{1}{\alpha}}\right),$$

$$\rho_n = \frac{n^{n\alpha}}{(n-1)^{(n-1)\alpha}} \sim (ne)^{\alpha} \quad [43].$$

47. [46, 45, II 209.]

48. It is sufficient to investigate the series in question at a single point only, at  $z=0$  say [III 251]. Set  $g(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (a_n/n!)z^n$ . Then we are concerned with the convergence of the series  $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n$ . We have

$$|a_n| < n! \frac{M(r)}{r^n}.$$

(a) Assume  $l < 1$ , and hence  $M(r) < Ae^{(l+\varepsilon)r}$ ,  $A > 0$ ,  $\varepsilon > 0$ ,  $l + \varepsilon < 1$ . For  $r = n/(l + \varepsilon)$  we obtain  $|a_n| < An!(e/n)^n(l + \varepsilon)^n$ , and hence [I 69] that  $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n$  is convergent.—The optimum value of  $r$  used above is obtained by differentiating  $An! r^{-n} e^{(l+\varepsilon)r}$  with respect to  $r$  and minimizing it.

(b) Assume  $l > 1$ . Then  $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n$  cannot be convergent, for otherwise we should have  $|a_n| < K$ , and hence  $|f(z)| < Ke^{|z|}$  in contradiction to  $l > 1$ .

(c) Assume  $l = 1$ . Then  $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n$  may be either convergent or divergent. Choose for example  $a_n$  such that  $a_n > 0$ ,  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sqrt[n]{a_n} = 1$  and  $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n$  converges. Then  $l \leq 1[(b)]$ , and also  $M(r) > a_n r^n/n!$  for arbitrary  $n$ . For  $n = [r]$  we obtain that  $l \geq 1$ , and hence  $l = 1$ . On the other hand choose  $a_n$  such that  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} a_n = 0$ ,  $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n$  diverges. Then  $l \leq 1[(b)]$ , and also  $l \geq 1[(a)]$ , hence  $l = 1$ .

49.  $N(r)$  is the number of lattice points in the circle  $|z| \leq r$ ; the primitive periods are  $\omega_1 = 1$ ,  $\omega_2 = i$ . If  $w$  is any period so is  $iw$ , hence

$$(*) \quad \sigma(iu) = i\sigma(u).$$

Also

$$\sigma(u+1) = -e^{\eta_1(u+\frac{1}{2})}\sigma(u), \quad \sigma(u+i) = -e^{\eta_2(u+\frac{1}{2})}\sigma(u).$$

In the first equation replace  $u$  by  $iu - 1$  and multiply the resulting equation by the second equation. Then

$$\sigma(iu)\sigma(u+i) = e^{(\eta_1 i + \eta_2)u + \frac{1}{2}(-\eta_1 + i\eta_2)}\sigma[i(u+i)]\sigma(u).$$

Hence from (\*) and then  $\eta_1\omega_2 - \eta_2\omega_1 = 2\pi i$  we obtain successively

$$\eta_1 = i\eta_2 = \pi,$$

and for arbitrary integers  $m_1, m_2$

$$\sigma(u + m_1 + im_2) = \pm \sigma(u) e^{\pi(m_1 - im_2)u + \frac{\pi}{2}(m_1^2 + m_2^2)}.$$

If we restrict  $u(u \neq 0)$  to the parallelogram of the periods surrounding the point  $u=0$ , set  $z = u + m_1 + im_2$  and let  $m_1^2 + m_2^2$  tend to infinity we obtain

$$|z|^2 \sim m_1^2 + m_2^2, \quad \log |\sigma(z)| \sim \frac{\pi}{2} |z|^2.$$

**49.1.** By substituting  $-z$  for  $z$  we obtain from I 50

$$(1+qz)(1+q^2z)(1+q^3z)\cdots = 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{q}{1-q} \frac{q^2}{1-q^2} \cdots \frac{q^n}{1-q^n} z^n.$$

Let  $q$  here be positive,  $0 < q < 1$ . Then

$$r_n = -w_n = \frac{1}{q^n}, \quad \rho_n = \frac{1-q^n}{q^n} = r_n - 1.$$

Now, by substituting  $-q$  for  $q$ , we obtain

$$(1-qz)(1+q^2z)(1-q^3z)\cdots = 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (-1)^{[\frac{n+1}{2}]} \frac{q}{1+q} \frac{q^2}{1-q^2} \cdots \frac{q^n}{1+(-1)^{n-1}q^n} z^n.$$

Let  $q$  here be positive,  $0 < q \leq \frac{1}{2}$ . Then

$$r_n = \frac{1}{q^n} = (-1)^{n-1} w_n, \quad \rho_n = \frac{1+(-1)^{n-1}q^n}{q^n} = r_n + (-1)^{n-1}.$$

Observe that, for  $n \geq 2$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \rho_n - \rho_{n-1} &= \frac{1}{q^n} + (-1)^{n-1} - \left( \frac{1}{q^{n-1}} + (-1)^n \right) = \frac{1}{q^n} (1-q) + 2(-1)^{n-1} \\ &\geq 4 \cdot 2^{-1} - 2 = 0. \end{aligned}$$

**50.** In order to compute  $\mu(r)$  for  $\sin \sqrt{z}/\sqrt{z}$ , note that if we associate the integer  $n$  with  $r$  as  $r \rightarrow \infty$  by the double inequality

$$(*) \quad 2n \sqrt{1 + \frac{1}{2n}} \leq \sqrt{r} < 2n \sqrt{\left(1 + \frac{1}{n}\right) \left(1 + \frac{3}{2n}\right)}$$

and set  $\sqrt{r} = 2n + t$ , then  $t$  remains bounded. In the interval (\*) we have by 3

$$\begin{aligned} \mu(r) &= \frac{\sqrt{r}^{-2n}}{(2n+1) \cdot (2n)!} \sim \frac{\sqrt{r}^{-2n}}{2n \cdot \sqrt{2\pi} (2n)^{2n+\frac{1}{2}} e^{-2n}} \\ &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} (2n)^{-\frac{3}{2}} e^{\sqrt{r}} \left(1 + \frac{t}{2n}\right)^{2n} e^{-t}; \\ \mu(r) &\sim \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} r^{-\frac{3}{4}} e^{\sqrt{r}}, \quad \log \mu(r) \sim \sqrt{r}. \end{aligned}$$

	$\frac{\sin \sqrt{z}}{\sqrt{z}}$	$\cos z$	$(\cos z)^2$	$e^z + i$	$e^z$	$\sigma(z)$
$\frac{r_n}{\rho_n}$	$\frac{\pi^2}{4}$	$\frac{\pi}{2}$	$\frac{\pi}{2}$	$\pi$	—	—
$\frac{N(r)}{\nu(r)}$	$\frac{2}{\pi}$	$\frac{2}{\pi}$	$\frac{2}{\pi}$	$\frac{1}{\pi}$	0	—
$\frac{N(r)}{\log M(r)}$	$\frac{1}{\pi}$	$\frac{2}{\pi}$	$\frac{2}{\pi}$	$\frac{1}{\pi}$	0	2
$\frac{\nu(r)}{\log \mu(r)}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	1	1	1	1	—
$\frac{M(r)}{\sqrt{2\pi} \log \mu(r) \mu(r)}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	1	1	—
$\frac{\log N(r)}{\log r}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	1	1	1	—	2

The relations which can be observed in this table will be explained in part by the subsequent theorems.

**51.**  $\mu(r) \leq M(r)$  [definition]. If

$$\limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \log \mu(r)}{\log r} = \lambda, \quad \lambda \text{ finite, } \lambda < \beta,$$

then for  $\rho$  sufficiently large

$$|a_n| \rho^n \leq \mu(\rho) < e^{\rho^\beta},$$

and hence [solution 48, (a)] choosing  $\rho = (n/\beta)^{\frac{1}{\beta}}$ , we have for  $n$  sufficiently large

$$|a_n| < \left(\frac{e\beta}{n}\right)^{\frac{n}{\beta}}, \quad |a_n| r^n < \left(\frac{e\beta r^\beta}{n}\right)^{\frac{n}{\beta}}.$$

Setting  $2e\beta = k$ , we have<sup>1</sup>

$$M(r) \leq \sum_{n=0}^{kr^\beta} |a_n| r^n + \sum_{n=kr^\beta+1}^{\infty} |a_n| r^n < (kr^\beta + 1)\mu(r) + \sum_{n=kr^\beta}^{\infty} 2^{-\frac{n}{\beta}}.$$

[See R. P. Boas, Entire Functions, New York: Academic Press 1954, for more on the concept of the order of an entire function, as well as for other topics, newer

<sup>1</sup> For integral as well as for non-integral  $a$  and  $b$ ,  $a \leq b$ ,  $\sum_{n=a}^b c_n$  is to be interpreted in this chapter as

$$\sum_{n=[a]}^{[b]} c_n = c_{[a]} + c_{[a]+1} + \cdots + c_{[b]-1} + c_{[b]}.$$

developments and bibliography.]

**52.** [51, 35, II 149, I 113.]

**53.** If the order is  $\lambda$ ,  $\varepsilon > 0$ , then in accordance with solution **51** we have for  $r$  sufficiently large

$$rf'(r) = \left( \sum_{n=1}^{kr^{\lambda+\varepsilon}} + \sum_{n=kr^{\lambda+\varepsilon}+1}^{\infty} \right) na_n r^n < kr^{\lambda+\varepsilon} \sum_{n=0}^{kr^{\lambda+\varepsilon}} a_n r^n \\ + \sum_{n=kr^{\lambda+\varepsilon}+1}^{\infty} n \cdot 2^{-\frac{n}{\beta}} < kr^{\lambda+\varepsilon} f(r) + k',$$

where  $k, k'$  are constants, and hence

$$\limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log(rf'(r)f(r)^{-1})}{\log r} \leq \lambda + \varepsilon,$$

for  $\varepsilon$  arbitrarily close to 0. On the other hand, if for  $r > r_0$  we have  $rf'(r)f(r)^{-1} < r^\theta$ , then by integration we obtain

$$\log f(r) < \frac{r^\beta}{\beta} + C$$

for  $r > r_0$ , where  $C$  is a constant.

**54.** If the order is  $\lambda$  and  $\varepsilon > 0$  then we have for  $r$  sufficiently large [solution **51**]

$$\mu(r) < M(r) < kr^{\lambda+\varepsilon} \mu(r).$$

**55.** Let  $\sigma$  be chosen so that  $\sigma(l-1) > 1$ . For  $t$  sufficiently large  $M(t) > t^\sigma$  [10], and hence

$$\mu(t)M(t)^{-1} \leq M(t)^{1-l} < t^{-\sigma(l-1)}.$$

For the case  $l=1$  consider for example the special function  $f(z) = e^z$ . The integral in III 156 is divergent in this case.

**56.** [A. Wiman, loc. cit. 1.] For every  $\varepsilon > 0$  there exist power series  $1 + b_1 r + b_2 r^2 + \dots + b_n r^n + \dots$  with finite radius of convergence and positive coefficients  $b_n$  such that, denoting the central index by  $n$ , we have

$$\sum_{v=0}^{\infty} \frac{b_v y^v}{b_n y^n} < (\log b_n y^n)^{1+\varepsilon},$$

for all positive variable  $y$  sufficiently close to the circle of convergence [45]. For an entire function  $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n z^n$  (assuming  $a_0 = 1$ ) we have at a point  $r$ , with which has been associated a positive number  $y$  in the sense of I 122,

$$\frac{|a_v| r^v}{|a_n| r^n} \leq \frac{b_v y^v}{b_n y^n} \quad \text{for } v=0, 1, 2, \dots$$

In particular for  $v=0$  we have  $b_n y^n \leq |a_n| r^n$ . At such a point  $r$  we have the required inequality. We can assume  $a_0 = 1$  without loss of generality.

**57.** [A. Wiman, loc. cit. 1.] Let  $\lambda < \beta < \lambda + \varepsilon = 1/\alpha$ . Then [52] for  $n$  sufficiently large we have  $\log n < \beta \log \rho_n$  and hence

$$\rho_n \cdot n^{-n\alpha} (n-1)^{(n-1)\alpha} \sim \rho_n e^{-\alpha n - \alpha} > n^{\frac{1}{\beta} - \alpha} e^{-\alpha} \rightarrow \infty.$$

The assertion now follows from I 118 and 47 in a similar fashion as 56 from I 122 and 45.

58. Let

$$\limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log N(r)}{\log r} = \limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log n}{\log r_n} = \lambda \quad [\text{II } 149].$$

Then  $\lambda \leq 1$ . By 51, 36 it is clear that the order  $\geq \lambda$ . That the order  $\leq \lambda$  is shown as follows: We have

$$M(r) \leq |c| r^q \prod_{n=q+1}^{\infty} \left(1 + \frac{r}{r_n}\right).$$

If  $\lambda = 1$  choose, for any given positive number  $\varepsilon$ , an integer  $N$  such that  $N > q$ ,  $\sum_{n=N+1}^{\infty} (1/r_n) < \varepsilon$ . Then

$$M(r) < |c| r^q \prod_{n=q+1}^N \left(1 + \frac{r}{r_n}\right) \cdot e^{\varepsilon r}, \quad \limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log \log M(r)}{\log r} \leq 1.$$

If  $\lambda < 1$  choose the positive number  $\eta$  so small that  $\lambda + \eta < 1$ . For sufficiently large  $n$  we have [I 113]:  $1/r_n < 1/n^{1/(\lambda+\eta)}$ . Apply II 37 to the logarithm of the function  $\prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \{1 + [r/n^{1/(\lambda+\eta)}]\}$ .

59. [For 59-63 cf. also G. Pólya: Math. Ann. 88, pp. 177-183 (1923).] Assume without loss of generality that  $f(0)=1$ , also in 60 to 65. We have [31, II 159]

$$\frac{\log \mu(r)}{\nu(r)} = \frac{1}{\nu(r)} \sum_{\rho_n \leq r} \log \frac{r}{\rho_n} \sim \int_0^1 \log x^{-\frac{1}{\lambda}} dx.$$

Examples in 13.

60. Similarly to 59, making use of II 160 instead of II 159.

$$61. \quad \frac{1}{N(r)} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \log \left(1 + \frac{re^{i\theta}}{r_n}\right) \sim \int_0^1 \log \left(1 + x^{-\frac{1}{\lambda}} e^{i\theta}\right) dx.$$

62. Similarly to 61, making use of II 161 instead of II 159:

$$\frac{\log M(r)}{N(r)} \leq \frac{1}{N(r)} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \log \left(1 + \frac{r}{r_n}\right).$$

63. According to 32 we have

$$\limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log M(r)}{N(r)} \geq \limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{N(r)} \sum_{\rho_n \leq r} \log \frac{r}{\rho_n} \geq \int_0^1 \log x^{-\frac{1}{\lambda}} dx \quad [\text{II } 160].$$

64. According to III 121 we have

$$\left(\frac{g(r)}{\mathfrak{G}(r)}\right)^{\frac{1}{N(r)}} = e^{-\frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2N(r)}} \sum_{\rho_n \leq r} \left(\frac{r_n}{r}\right)^2.$$

By II 159 we have

$$\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{N(r)} \sum_{\rho_n \leq r} \left(\frac{r_n}{r}\right)^2 = \int_0^1 x^{\frac{2}{\lambda}} dx = \frac{\lambda}{\lambda+2}.$$

For polynomials  $\sum_{r_n \leq r} r_n^2$  remains bounded.

**65.** Similarly to **64**, making use of II **160** instead of II **159**.

**66.** Setting  $f(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n z^n$  we have [III **122**, III **130**]

$$\mathfrak{M}(r) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} |a_n|^2 r^{2n}, \quad m(r) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{|a_n|^2 r^{2n}}{n+1}.$$

Set  $g(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} [|a_n|^2 / (n+1)] z^{2n+2}$ ;  $g(z)$  has the same order  $\lambda$  as  $f(z)$  since

$$\frac{r^2 [\mu(r)]^2}{\nu(r)+1} < g(r) < r^2 [M(r)]^2$$

[35, 51]. Apply **53** to

$$\frac{\mathfrak{M}(r)}{m(r)} = \frac{rg'(r)}{2g(r)}.$$

$$\mathbf{67. (1)} \quad |a_n| < r^{-n} M(r) < r^{-n} e^{br^\alpha},$$

when  $r > r_0$ , where  $r_0$  is independent of  $n$ . The right-hand side attains its minimum

$$\left(\frac{\alpha b e}{n}\right)^{\frac{n}{\alpha}} \quad \text{for} \quad r = \left(\frac{n}{\alpha b}\right)^{\frac{1}{\alpha}}.$$

(2) We prove the assertion for arbitrary positive  $k$  and for  $\varepsilon$  sufficiently small. (This is sufficient!) By assumption we have

$$(*) \quad e^{a(1-\varepsilon^3)r^\alpha} < M(r) < e^{a(1+\varepsilon^4)r^\alpha}$$

for  $r$  sufficiently large. From this and from [III **122**]

$$|a_0|^2 + |a_1|^2 r^2 + |a_2|^2 r^4 + \dots \leq [M(r)]^2$$

we deduce [II **80**]

$$\left(\sum_{n=1}^m |a_n| r^n\right)^2 \leq \sum_{n=1}^m 1 \sum_{n=1}^m |a_n|^2 r^{2n} < m e^{2a(1+\varepsilon^4)r^\alpha},$$

$$(**) \quad \sum_{n=1}^m |a_n| n^k r^n < m^{k+\frac{1}{2}} e^{a(1+\varepsilon^4)r^\alpha}.$$

We introduce the abbreviations

$$\sum_1^{\alpha a r^\alpha (1-\varepsilon)} = \Sigma^I, \quad \sum_{\alpha a r^\alpha (1+\varepsilon)}^{3\alpha a r^\alpha} = \Sigma^{II}, \quad \sum_{3\alpha a r^\alpha}^{\infty} = \Sigma^{III}.$$

From this definition and from (\*\*) for  $r$  sufficiently large, if  $(6\alpha a r^\alpha)^{k+1/2} < \exp [a(\varepsilon^3 - \varepsilon^4)r^\alpha]$  we have

$$\Sigma^I |a_n| n^k r^n < e^{a(1+\varepsilon^3)r^\alpha}, \quad \Sigma^{II} |a_n| n^k r^n < e^{a(1+\varepsilon^3)r^\alpha}.$$

We could take the sum on the left from any lower limit  $\geq 0$  to any upper limit  $\leq 6\alpha a r^\alpha$ . Therefore we can take the essential step of replacing  $r$  by  $r(1-\lambda)$  and by  $r(1+\lambda)$  ( $\lambda$  fixed,  $0 < \lambda < 1$ ) on the right-hand side and under the summation sign

on the left-hand side of the first and second inequalities, respectively, *without altering the limits of summation*. We deduce that

$$(1-\lambda)^{\alpha ar^{\alpha}(1-\varepsilon)} \sum^I |a_n| n^k r^n < e^{\alpha(1+\varepsilon^3)(1-\lambda)r^{\alpha}},$$

$$(1+\lambda)^{\alpha ar^{\alpha}(1+\varepsilon)} \sum^{II} |a_n| n^k r^n < e^{\alpha(1+\varepsilon^3)(1+\lambda)r^{\alpha}}.$$

Hence, with the aid of the first half of (\*) (not used till now),

$$[M(r)]^{-1} \sum^I |a_n| n^k r^n < \exp [-a(1-\varepsilon^3)r^{\alpha} + \alpha(1+\varepsilon^3)(1-\lambda)r^{\alpha} - \alpha ar^{\alpha}(1-\varepsilon) \log(1-\lambda)],$$

$$[M(r)]^{-1} \sum^{II} |a_n| n^k r^n < \exp [-a(1-\varepsilon^3)r^{\alpha} + \alpha(1+\varepsilon^3)(1+\lambda)r^{\alpha} - \alpha ar^{\alpha}(1+\varepsilon) \log(1+\lambda)].$$

Expanding in ascending powers of  $\varepsilon$  and  $\lambda$  we obtain

$$-(1-\varepsilon^3) + (1+\varepsilon^3)(1 \mp \lambda)^{\alpha} - \alpha(1 \mp \varepsilon) \log(1 \mp \lambda) = \frac{\alpha^2}{2} \lambda^2 - \alpha \lambda \varepsilon + \dots$$

$$= -\frac{\varepsilon^2}{2} + \dots < 0,$$

setting  $\alpha\lambda = \varepsilon$  and choosing  $\varepsilon$  sufficiently small to make the expansion valid and also to ensure that its sign is determined by the term of lowest order.

This constitutes the proof as far as  $\sum^I$  and  $\sum^{II}$  are concerned.  $\sum^{III}$  is of no account; for if  $e < 3h < 3$ ,  $3ah = be$  then, by (1),

$$\sum^{III} n^k |a_n| r^n < \sum^{III} n^k \left( \frac{\alpha b e r^{\alpha}}{n} \right)^{\frac{n}{\alpha}}$$

$$= \sum^{III} n^k \left( \frac{3\alpha a r^{\alpha}}{n} h \right)^n < \sum^{III} n^k h^n,$$

which is the remainder of a convergent series and hence tends to 0 as  $r \rightarrow \infty$ .

**68.** Assume (1). Then the function is of finite order [51] and we deduce (2) [54]. Also (3) must hold. For, if  $\nu(r)$  for arbitrarily large  $r$  were outside the bounds  $\alpha ar^{\alpha}(1-\varepsilon)$  and  $\alpha ar^{\alpha}(1+\varepsilon)$  then for these values of  $r$  we would also have  $\log \mu(r) < \log M(r) - \delta r^{\alpha}$  [67], in contradiction to (2).

Assume (2). Then the function is of finite order [51], and hence we deduce (1) [54].

Assume (3). Take  $a_0 \neq 0$  (without loss of generality) and deduce (2) with the help of 33.

**69.** (1)  $a_n$  is decreasing. If  $0 < \varepsilon < 1$  and

$$m-1 \leq \alpha ar^{\alpha}(1-\varepsilon) < m < n < \alpha ar^{\alpha}(1+\varepsilon) \leq n+1,$$

then by 67 (2) we have for  $r$  sufficiently large

$$0 < f(r) - \sum_{v=m}^n a_v r^v < \varepsilon f(r),$$

$$a_m r^m \cdot 2\varepsilon \alpha ar^{\alpha} > f(r)(1-\varepsilon), \quad a_n r^n \cdot 2\varepsilon \alpha ar^{\alpha} < f(r)(1+\varepsilon).$$

Hence, noting that  $\log r \sim (1/\alpha) \log m \sim (1/\alpha) \log n$  and  $m/(1-\varepsilon) \sim n/(1+\varepsilon)$ , we deduce

$$\liminf_{m \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log a_m}{m \log m} \geq -\frac{1}{\alpha} \frac{1+\varepsilon}{1-\varepsilon}, \quad \limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log a_n}{n \log n} \leq -\frac{1}{\alpha} \frac{1-\varepsilon}{1+\varepsilon}.$$

(2) If  $a_1/a_0 \geq a_2/a_1 \geq a_3/a_2 \geq \dots$ , then  $a_n r^n$  becomes the *maximum term* for a suitable value of  $r$  [43]. It follows that we may replace the number  $n$  by  $\nu(r)$  in the expression under consideration, i.e. in  $\log n^{\frac{1}{\alpha}} a_n^{\frac{1}{n}} = (1/\alpha) \log n + (1/n) \log a_n$ . Since  $a_{\nu(r)} r^{\nu(r)} = \mu(r)$  we have by 68

$$\frac{1}{\alpha} \log \nu(r) + \frac{1}{\nu(r)} \log a_{\nu(r)} = \frac{1}{\alpha} \log \frac{\nu(r)}{r^\alpha} + \frac{\log \mu(r)}{\nu(r)} \rightarrow \frac{1}{\alpha} \log \alpha + \frac{1}{\alpha}.$$

**70.** In  $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n r^n$  as well as in  $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n^k a_n r^n$  the center dominates, i.e. the sum of the terms whose subscript lies between  $\alpha r^\alpha(1-\varepsilon)$  and  $\alpha r^\alpha(1+\varepsilon)$  outweighs the other parts of the series [67].

**71.** Special case of **70**:  $k=1$ . With no regularity assumptions we have 53.

**72.** From I 94 and **70**:

$$\frac{\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n r^n}{(\beta b r^\beta)^k \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} b_n r^n} = \frac{\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n r^n}{\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n^k b_n r^n} \cdot \frac{\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n^k b_n r^n}{(\beta b r^\beta)^k \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} b_n r^n}.$$

**73.** Replacing  $r$  by  $\sqrt{r}$  we obtain the situation discussed in **72**:

$$a_n = \frac{1}{n!n!} \frac{1}{2^{2n}}, \quad b_n = \frac{1}{(2n)!}, \quad f(r) = \cos i\sqrt{r} \sim \frac{e^{\sqrt{r}}}{2},$$

$$\beta = \frac{1}{2}, \quad b = 1, \quad k = -\frac{1}{2}, \quad s = \frac{1}{\sqrt{\pi}}.$$

For by Stirling's formula [II 205, also II 202]

$$\frac{a_n}{b_n} = \frac{(2n)!}{n!^2 2^{2n}} \sim \frac{1}{\sqrt{\pi n}}.$$

**74.** Letting  $\omega = e^{\frac{2\pi i}{l}}$  we have

$$1 + \frac{x^l}{l!} + \frac{x^{2l}}{(2l)!} + \frac{x^{3l}}{(3l)!} + \dots = \frac{e^x + e^{\omega x} + e^{\omega^2 x} + \dots + e^{\omega^{l-1} x}}{l} \sim \frac{1}{l} e^x$$

as  $x \rightarrow +\infty$ . Let  $x = lr^{\frac{1}{l}}$ .—We have [II 31]

$$a(a+1)(a+2)\dots(a+n-1) \sim \frac{1}{\Gamma(a)} n^{a-1} n!,$$

and hence

$$\frac{P(1)P(2)\dots P(n)(n!)!}{Q(1)Q(2)\dots Q(n)l^{n!}} \sim \frac{\Gamma(b_1)\Gamma(b_2)\dots\Gamma(b_n)}{\Gamma(a_1)\Gamma(a_2)\dots\Gamma(a_n)} (2\pi)^{\frac{1-l}{2}} l^{\frac{1}{2}} n^{a+\frac{l+1}{2}},$$

using Stirling's formula. Now apply **72**.



**75.** Using the calculations in solution **74**, Stirling's formula and I **94**, we obtain

$$1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{P(1)P(2)\dots P(n)}{Q(1)Q(2)\dots Q(n)} r^n \sim \frac{\Gamma(b_1)\Gamma(b_2)\dots\Gamma(b_q)}{\Gamma(a_1)\Gamma(a_2)\dots\Gamma(a_p)} (2\pi)^{\frac{1}{2}} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n^{d+\frac{1}{2}} \left(\frac{er^{\frac{1}{2}}}{n}\right)^{ln}.$$

Replacing the last series by the integral

$$\int_1^{\infty} x^{d+\frac{1}{2}} \left(\frac{er^{\frac{1}{2}}}{x}\right)^{lx} dx = l^{-\frac{1}{2}-d-1} \int_1^{\infty} x^{\frac{1}{2}+d+1} \left(\frac{elr^{\frac{1}{2}}}{x}\right)^x \frac{dx}{x}$$

and this integral on the basis of II **207** by

$$l^{-\frac{1}{2}-d-1} \sqrt{2\pi} (lr^{\frac{1}{2}})^{\frac{1}{2}+d} e^{lr^{\frac{1}{2}}},$$

we obtain the desired formula. Passing from the series to the integral introduces an error of the order of magnitude of the maximum term of the series [cf. II **8**].

The maximum of  $(er^{\frac{1}{2}}x^{-1})^{lx}$  for fixed  $r$  is  $e^{lr^{\frac{1}{2}}}$ . The maximum term is of order  $r^{\frac{2d+1}{2l}} e^{lr^{\frac{1}{2}}}$  and hence its ratio to the integral is of order  $r^{-\frac{1}{2l}}$ . Thus this step is justified. [**45**, **47**.]

**76.** Changing finitely many coefficients if necessary we can assume  $a_0=1$ ,  $a_n^2 > a_{n-1}a_{n+1}$  for  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ . Then [**43**, **31**] we have  $\rho_n = a_{n-1}/a_n$  and

$$\begin{aligned} \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} n \log \frac{\rho_{n+1}}{\rho_n} &= \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} n \log \left[ 1 + \left( \frac{a_n^2}{a_{n-1}a_{n+1}} - 1 \right) \right] = \frac{1}{\lambda} \\ (1) \quad \frac{\log \rho_n}{\log n} &\sim \frac{\log \rho_1 + \log \frac{\rho_2}{\rho_1} + \log \frac{\rho_3}{\rho_2} + \dots + \log \frac{\rho_n}{\rho_{n-1}}}{1 + \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{3} + \dots + \frac{1}{n}} \rightarrow \frac{1}{\lambda} \quad [\text{I } 70; 52]. \end{aligned}$$

(2) If  $\rho_n \leq r < \rho_{n+1}$  then  $\nu(r)=n$ ,  $\mu(r)=r^n/(\rho_1\rho_2\dots\rho_n)$  [**25**, **31**] and

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\log \mu(r)}{\nu(r)} &= \log \frac{r}{\rho_n} + \frac{(n-1) \log \frac{\rho_n}{\rho_{n-1}} + (n-2) \log \frac{\rho_{n-1}}{\rho_{n-2}} + \dots + 1 \log \frac{\rho_2}{\rho_1}}{n} \\ &\sim 0 + \frac{1}{\lambda} \end{aligned} \quad [\text{I } 67].$$

(3) Let  $\rho_n \leq r < \rho_{n+1}$ ,  $l > 0$  ( $l < 0$  similarly). Then

$$\begin{aligned} \log \frac{a_{n+l} r^{n+l}}{a_n r^n} &= \log \frac{r^l}{\rho_{n+1}\rho_{n+2}\dots\rho_{n+l}} \\ &= l \log \frac{r}{\rho_{n+1}} - (l-1) \log \frac{\rho_{n+2}}{\rho_{n+1}} - \dots - \log \frac{\rho_{n+l}}{\rho_{n+l-1}} \\ &\sim 0 - \frac{(l-1) + (l-2) + \dots + 1}{n} \cdot \frac{1}{\lambda} \sim -\frac{x^2}{2\lambda}. \end{aligned}$$

The sum of the rectangles  $= \frac{M(r)}{\mu(r)\sqrt{\nu(r)}} \sim \frac{M(r)}{\mu(r)\sqrt{\log \mu(r)}}$ , the area  $= \sqrt{2\pi\lambda}$ ; cf. **57**.

**77.** Since the derivative of a function which is schlicht in a region is everywhere different from zero in this region, all the zeros of the polynomial  $g(z) = 1 + 2a_2z + 3a_3z^2 + \dots + na_nz^{n-1}$  lie outside the unit circle. Hence the absolute value of their product is  $\geq 1$ .

[For newer developments and bibliography on the topic of this chapter see G. M. Goluzin: *Geometric Theory of Functions of a Complex Variable*. Amer. Math. Soc. 1969, especially the Supplement, and L. V. Ahlfors: *Conformal Invariants*. McGraw-Hill: New York 1973.]

**78.** Let  $z_1$  and  $z_2$  be arbitrary points inside the unit circle and set  $w_1 = f(z_1)$ ,  $w_2 = f(z_2)$ . If  $\varphi[f(z_1)] = \varphi[f(z_2)]$ , i.e.  $\varphi(w_1) = \varphi(w_2)$ , then we must have  $w_1 = w_2$  and hence  $z_1 = z_2$ .

**79.**  $\varphi(z)$  is evidently regular inside the unit circle  $|z| < 1$  since in this region  $f(z^2)/z^2$  is regular and different from zero. Besides  $\varphi(z)$  is an odd function,  $\varphi(-z) = -\varphi(z)$ . Now let  $z_1$  and  $z_2$  be arbitrary points inside the unit circle  $|z| < 1$ , such that  $\varphi(z_1) = \varphi(z_2)$ . Then  $f(z_1^2) = f(z_2^2)$ , hence  $z_1^2 = z_2^2$ . The conclusion that  $z_1 = -z_2 \neq 0$  is not possible since it would imply  $\varphi(z_1) = -\varphi(z_2) \neq 0$ .

**80.**  $[\varphi(z)]^2$  is an even function, i.e. a function of  $z^2 = \zeta$ ; set  $[\varphi(z)]^2 = f(\zeta)$ . If  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2$  are two complex numbers,  $|\zeta_1| < 1, |\zeta_2| < 1$ , for which  $f(\zeta_1) = f(\zeta_2)$ , choose  $z_1, z_2$  such that  $z_1^2 = \zeta_1, z_2^2 = \zeta_2$ . Then  $[\varphi(z_1)]^2 = [\varphi(z_2)]^2$ ,  $\varphi(z_1) = \pm \varphi(z_2) = \phi(\pm z_2)$ , and hence  $z_1 = \pm z_2, \zeta_1 = \zeta_2$ .

**81.** Assume that the common center of  $\mathfrak{C}$  and  $c$  is the point  $z=0$ , the radius of  $\mathfrak{C}$  is  $R$  and of  $c$  is  $r$ , and finally that the mapping is given by the function  $w = f(z) = a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \dots + a_nz^n + \dots$ . Then we have [III 124]

$$|\mathfrak{R}| = \pi \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n|a_n|^2 R^{2n}, \quad |\mathfrak{r}| = \pi \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n|a_n|^2 r^{2n}, \quad |\mathfrak{C}| = \pi R^2, \quad |c| = \pi r^2,$$

$$\frac{|\mathfrak{R}|}{|\mathfrak{r}|} - \frac{|\mathfrak{C}|}{|c|} = \frac{r^2 R^2 \sum_{n=2}^{\infty} n|a_n|^2 (R^{2n-2} - r^{2n-2})}{\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n|a_n|^2 r^{2n+2}} \geq 0.$$

The equality sign holds only if  $a_2 = a_3 = a_4 = \dots = 0$ . The expression used for  $\mathfrak{R}$  is not contained in III 124 since there it was assumed that the mapping function is regular on the boundary of  $\mathfrak{C}$ . However by taking limits one can show that this formula represents in general the so-called *inner measure* of  $\mathfrak{R}$ . Using any other concept of measure the result is true *a fortiori*.

**82.**  $|\mathfrak{R}| = \pi(|a_1|^2 R^2 + 2|a_2|^2 R^4 + 3|a_3|^2 R^6 + \dots + n|a_n|^2 R^{2n} + \dots) \geq \pi|a_1|^2 R^2 = \pi a^2 R^2$ . Notation and further considerations as in 81.

**83.** We consider the annulus  $0 < r < |z| < R$ , and let the mapping be given by the function  $w = \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} a_n z^n$ . The images of *all* the circles  $|z| = \text{const.}$  are described in the positive sense at the same time as the circles themselves [III 190] and contain  $\mathfrak{r}$  in their interior [solution III 188]. From III 127 we can deduce (the areas are positive!)

$$|\mathfrak{R}| = \pi \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} n|a_n|^2 R^{2n}, \quad |\mathfrak{r}| = \pi \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} n|a_n|^2 r^{2n}, \quad |\mathfrak{C}| = \pi R^2, \quad |c| = \pi r^2,$$

where we interpret  $|\mathfrak{R}|$  as the inner measure of  $\mathfrak{R}$  and  $|\mathfrak{r}|$  as the outer measure of  $\mathfrak{r}$

[solution **81**; for other definitions of the measures the required inequality holds *a fortiori*]. Excluding the case  $|r|=0$ , we have

$$\frac{|\Re|}{|r|} - \frac{|\Im|}{|c|} = \frac{r^2 R^2 \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} n |a_n|^2 (R^{2n-2} - r^{2n-2})}{\sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} n |a_n|^2 r^{2n+2}} \geq 0,$$

since  $n(R^{2n-2} - r^{2n-2}) > 0$  for integral  $n$ , with the exception of 0 and 1.

**84.** Let the center of the circle in question be  $z=0$  and the mapping be given by the function  $w=f(z)=a_1z+a_2z^2+\dots+a_nz^n+\dots$ .

(1) Assume that  $f(z)$  is continuous on the boundary of the circle. Since the function  $f(z)/z$  is regular in the interior of the circle and (because the mapping is one-one) is different from 0 and of constant absolute value on the boundary, it follows that it is constant [III **142**, III **274**]. (2) Without the assumption of continuity on the boundary we argue as follows: By **82** we have at the center

$$\left| \left( \frac{dw}{dz} \right)_0 \right|^2 = |f'(0)|^2 \leq 1,$$

and since the relation between  $z$  and  $w$  is reciprocal also

$$\left| \left( \frac{dz}{dw} \right)_0 \right|^2 = \frac{1}{|f'(0)|^2} \leq 1,$$

i.e.  $|f'(0)|^2=1$ , hence [82]  $f(z)=f'(0)z$ .

**85.** Since the relation between the two annuli is reciprocal we have the equality sign when applying the inequality of **83**. The mapping is thus a rotation and dilatation which because of the coincidence of the two outer boundaries must be a pure rotation. The assumption concerning the sense of description of the curves is essential: The mapping of the annulus  $\frac{1}{2} < |z| < 2$  onto the annulus  $\frac{1}{2} < |w| < 2$  by means of  $zw=1$  is not a mere rotation.

**86.** Assume that there are two mappings. First by means of one mapping go from the unit circle onto  $\Re$  and then by means of the inverse of the second mapping from  $\Re$  back onto the unit circle. This results in a mapping of the unit circle onto itself with the center mapped onto itself, and this must be a rotation [84] and in fact the rotation through an angle 0 since  $f'(0) > 0$ .—The result proved above also holds if one prescribes, instead of the condition  $f'(0) > 0$ , any fixed argument for  $f'(0)$ .

**87.** Let the function  $w=f(z)$  map the unit circle  $|z| < 1$  schlicht onto itself,  $f(0)=w_0$ ,  $\arg f'(0)=\alpha$ . The linear function

$$\frac{w_0 + e^{i\alpha}z}{1 + \bar{w}_0 e^{i\alpha}z} = w_0 + (1 - |w_0|^2)e^{i\alpha}z + \dots$$

yields a mapping with the same properties and hence [86] coincides with  $f(z)$ . Set

$$-w_0 e^{-i\alpha} = z_0.$$

**88.** [For **88–96** cf. P. Koebe: J. reine angew. Math., **145**, pp. 177–225 (1915); cf. also E. Lindelöf: Quatrième congrès des math. scandinaves à Stockholm, 1916. Upsala: Almqvist and Wicksells 1920, pp. 59–75.] The points  $z=a$

and  $z=1/\bar{a}$  are the exceptional points (branch points) to each of which only one point corresponds, namely  $w=\sqrt{a}\eta^{-1}$  and  $w=1/(\sqrt{a}\eta)$  respectively. Solving for  $z$  we obtain

$$z=w\eta^2 \frac{2\eta^{-1}\sqrt{a}-(1+|a|)w}{1+|a|-2\eta\sqrt{a}w}.$$

Thus  $\eta$  is to be chosen such that  $\eta\sqrt{a}>0$ . Substituting  $-\sqrt{a}$  for  $\sqrt{a}$  and simultaneously  $-\eta$  for  $\eta$  leaves the relation unaltered.

**89.** It is assumed that  $|a|<1$  i.e. that  $\mathfrak{R}$  does not coincide with  $|z|<1$ . The two images of  $z$  determined by **88** lie inside the unit circle if  $z$  lies inside the unit circle [III 5] and are distinct if  $z\neq a$ . However the image of  $z=a$ , i.e.  $w=\sqrt{a}\eta^{-1}$  [88] is not a point of  $\mathfrak{R}^*$  or of  $\mathfrak{R}^{**}$  but a common boundary point of both.

**90.** Now  $a$  has been chosen positive,  $a>0$ , and hence  $\sqrt{a}>0$ ,  $\eta=1$ . The two images  $w^*$  and  $w^{**}$  of  $z$  are roots of the equation

$$(1+a)w^2-2\sqrt{a}(1+z)w+(1+a)z=0.$$

If  $z$  lies on the cut, i.e. if  $z$  is real,  $a<z<1$ , then  $(1+a)^2z-(1+z)^2a>0$ , hence  $w^*$ ,  $w^{**}$  are conjugate complex numbers, and in view of  $w^*w^{**}=z$  we have  $|w^*|=\sqrt{z}$ . Thus the point in the image of the cut closest to the origin is  $\sqrt{a}$ . This is the required nearest boundary point; for the images of boundary points lying on  $|z|=1$  lie on  $|w|=1$ . The Koebe image region of the slit region is "crescent shaped"; to the angle of  $360^\circ$  around the end-point of the cut in the slit region there corresponds an angle of  $180^\circ$  in the Koebe image region.

**91.** If the images  $w_1$  and  $w_2$  of two points  $z_1$  and  $z_2$  lying on the boundary of the circle  $|z|=a$  are equidistant from the origin, i.e. if they lie on the same circle  $|w|=\text{const.}$ , then from

$$\frac{w}{z}=\frac{1+a-2\sqrt{a}w}{2\sqrt{a}-(1+a)w},$$

we deduce that  $w_1$  and  $w_2$  lie on the same circle

$$\left| \frac{1+a-2\sqrt{a}w}{2\sqrt{a}-(1+a)w} \right| = \text{const.},$$

i.e. that they are intersection points of these two circles, and hence that  $w_2$  and  $w_1$  and also  $z_2$  and  $z_1$  are situated symmetrically with respect to the real axis. Consequently in the image of the semicircle  $|z|=a$ ,  $\Im z \geq 0$  the distance from the origin varies monotonically as  $z$  runs from  $+a$  to  $-a$ , and in fact monotonically decreasing, as we see from the two extreme situations:  $w=\sqrt{a}$ , the image of  $z=a$ , is the furthest and  $w=\{\sqrt{a}/(1+a)\}[1-a-\sqrt{2(1+a^2)}]$ , the image of  $z=-a$ , the nearest boundary point of the Koebe image region.

**92.** According to the formula in solution **88**,  $z/w$  is a function of  $w$  which maps the circle  $|w|<1$  onto itself [III 5]. That is we have for  $|w|<1$ :  $|z/w|<1$ ,  $|z|<|w|$ .

**93.** The circular disc  $|z|<|a|$ , which is completely contained in the region  $\mathfrak{R}$ ,

is mapped into a region which contains a circular disc of radius  $> |a|$  [92]; hence  $|a_1| > |a|$ . One can also show directly [91] that

$$\frac{|\sqrt{a}|}{1+|a|} (-1+|a|+\sqrt{2(1+|a|^2)}) > |a|.$$

**94.** If  $z, z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  are variable points in  $\mathfrak{R}, \mathfrak{R}_1, \mathfrak{R}_2, \dots, \mathfrak{R}_n$  respectively, then, according to solution 88, we have the first term of the power series expansion

$$z_1 = \frac{1+|a|}{2|\sqrt{a}|} z + \dots$$

and similarly

$$z_2 = \frac{1+|a_1|}{2|\sqrt{a_1}|} z_1 + \dots, \quad z_3 = \frac{1+|a_2|}{2|\sqrt{a_2}|} z_2 + \dots, \quad \dots, \quad z_n = \frac{1+|a_{n-1}|}{2|\sqrt{a_{n-1}}|} z_{n-1} + \dots$$

and hence

$$f'_n(0) = \frac{1+|a|}{2|\sqrt{a}|} \cdot \frac{1+|a_1|}{2|\sqrt{a_1}|} \dots \frac{1+|a_{n-1}|}{2|\sqrt{a_{n-1}}|}.$$

Since  $f_n(z)$  is regular inside the circle  $|z| < |a|$  and satisfies  $|f_n(z)| < 1$  there, we have

$$|f'_n(0)| |a| \leq 1.$$

**95.** In accordance with 94 the infinite product

$$\left(1 + \frac{(1-|\sqrt{a}|)^2}{2|\sqrt{a}|}\right) \left(1 + \frac{(1-|\sqrt{a_1}|)^2}{2|\sqrt{a_1}|}\right) \dots \left(1 + \frac{(1-|\sqrt{a_n}|)^2}{2|\sqrt{a_n}|}\right) \dots \leq \frac{1}{|a|},$$

converges, and hence

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (1 - |\sqrt{a_n}|) = 0.$$

**96.** Since the mapping is one-to-one and the point  $z=0$  is mapped onto itself, the functions

$$\frac{f_1(z)}{z}, \quad \frac{f_2(z)}{z}, \quad \dots, \quad \frac{f_n(z)}{z}, \quad \dots$$

are regular and different from 0 in  $\mathfrak{R}$ . Their absolute values increase with increasing index at every point  $z$  [92]. Hence the functions

$$\psi_1(z) = \log \frac{f_1(z)}{z}, \quad \psi_n(z) = \log \frac{f_n(z)}{f_{n-1}(z)}, \quad n=2, 3, 4, \dots$$

are regular in  $\mathfrak{R}$  and have *positive* real part. The determination of logarithm is to be made such that  $\psi_n(0)$  becomes real. We have further that in the whole region  $\mathfrak{R}$

$$\left| \frac{f_n(z)}{z} \right| \leq \frac{1}{|a|}$$

[III 278], and hence

$$\Re \psi_1(z) + \Re \psi_2(z) + \cdots + \Re \psi_n(z) \leq -\log |a|.$$

From this one concludes immediately that the real part of the series  $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \psi_n(z)$  converges. Application of III 257, III 258 (attention to the point  $z=0$ ) shows that the same holds for the imaginary part.—If  $|w| < 1$ , the value  $w$  is assumed by  $f_n(z)$  as soon as  $|a_n| > |w|$ . Because of 95 it follows that  $f(z) = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} f_n(z)$  also assumes the value  $w$  [III 201]. That  $f(z)$  is schlicht follows from the fact that  $f_n(z)$  is schlicht [III 202].

97. The normed mapping function is [III 76]:

$$f(a; z) = (\rho^2 - |a|^2) \frac{z - a}{\rho^2 - \bar{a}z}.$$

We have

$$r_a = \frac{\rho^2 - |a|^2}{\rho}, \quad \bar{r} = \rho.$$

$$98. \quad r_a = \frac{|a|^2 - \rho^2}{\rho}; \quad \lim_{a \rightarrow \infty} r_a = \infty.$$

99. The auxiliary mapping  $\zeta = z^{\frac{n}{\delta_0}}$  takes the given sector into the upper half-plane  $\Im \zeta > 0$ , and the point  $a$  into  $\zeta_0 = a^{\frac{n}{\delta_0}}$ . The further mapping

$$w = r_a \frac{\zeta - \zeta_0}{\bar{\zeta} - \bar{\zeta}_0}$$

maps the upper half-plane onto the interior of the circle  $|w| < r_a$ . Here  $r_a$  is determined by the equation

$$\left| \frac{dw}{dz} \right|_{z=a} = \left| \frac{dw}{d\zeta} \right|_{\zeta=\zeta_0} \left| \frac{d\zeta}{dz} \right|_{z=a} = 1.$$

We have, setting  $a = |a|e^{i\alpha}$ ,  $0 < \alpha < \delta_0$ ,

$$r_a = \frac{2\delta_0}{\pi} |a| \sin \frac{\alpha\pi}{\delta_0}.$$

100. Let  $f(z)$  be the normed mapping function of  $\Re$  associated with the central point  $a$  and  $\varphi(z')$  the normed mapping function of  $\Re'$  associated with  $a'$ . Then  $h^{-1}\varphi(hz+k)$  has all the characteristic properties of  $f(z)$ , and hence we have  $h^{-1}\varphi(hz+k) = f(z)$ .—Similarly for the outer radius.

101. We may consider the real line segment  $-2 \leq z \leq 2$  [100]. The normed mapping function associated with the point at infinity as central point is then [III 79]

$$w = f(z) = \frac{z + \sqrt{z^2 - 4}}{2} = z - \frac{1}{z} - \frac{1}{z^3} - \frac{2}{z^5} - \cdots.$$

For  $z = 2 \cos \vartheta$  we have  $w = e^{i\vartheta}$ ,  $0 \leq \vartheta \leq 2\pi$ , i.e.  $|w| = 1$ ,  $\bar{r} = 1$ .

102. In the case of the mapping used in 101, the ellipse with foci  $-2, 2$  for

which the sum of the lengths of the axes is  $4R=l$  goes over into the circle  $|w|=R=l/4$  [III 80].

**103.**  $r_a=2d$ . [III 6 or a special case of 99.]

**104.** [100.]

**105.** The mapping  $\zeta=z+(1/z)$  takes the exterior of the curve in question into the slit region whose boundary is the real line segment  $-(a_2+a_2^{-1})\leq z\leq a_1+a_1^{-1}$ . Now the outer radius is left invariant [104]; i.e. [101]

$$\bar{r} = \frac{a_1+a_1^{-1}+a_2+a_2^{-1}}{4} = \frac{(a_1+a_2)(1+a_1a_2)}{4a_1a_2}.$$

**106.**  $r_a=(2D/\pi)\sin(\pi d/D)$ . In the proof it may be assumed that we have the strip

$$|\Im z| < \frac{\pi}{2}, \quad D=\pi,$$

and that  $a=i(\pi/2-d)$ . The mapping  $z'=e^z$  takes this strip onto the half-plane  $\Re z'>0$  and  $a$  into  $i e^{-ia}$  [103, 104].

**107.** Definition.

**108.** In view of 107, the transformation  $\zeta=1/z$  reduces the problem to that of 105: Setting  $a_1=b_1^{-1}$ ,  $a_2=b_2^{-1}$ , we obtain

$$r_0 = \frac{4b_1^{-1}b_2^{-1}}{(b_1^{-1}+b_2^{-1})(1+b_1^{-1}b_2^{-1})} = \frac{4b_1b_2}{(b_1+b_2)(1+b_1b_2)}.$$

**109.** In the mapping  $\zeta=(z-z_1)/(z-z_2)$  the exterior of  $\mathfrak{E}$  goes over into the sector

$$\vartheta_2-2\pi < \arg \zeta < \vartheta_1,$$

and the point  $z=\infty$  into  $\zeta=1$ . For the inner radius  $r_1$  of this sector with respect to  $\zeta=1$  we have [100, 107]

$$r_1 = \frac{|z_2-z_1|}{\bar{r}}.$$

By 99 we have also

$$r_1 = \frac{2(\vartheta_1+2\pi-\vartheta_2)}{\pi} \sin \frac{\vartheta_1\pi}{\vartheta_1+2\pi-\vartheta_2}.$$

Hence we have

$$\bar{r} = \frac{|z_2-z_1|}{2(2-\delta) \sin \frac{\vartheta_1}{2-\delta}}, \quad \text{where } \pi\delta = \vartheta_2 - \vartheta_1.$$

If  $\vartheta_1+\vartheta_2=2\pi$ , then  $\mathfrak{E}$  is “symmetric”,

$$\bar{r} = |z_2-z_1| \frac{\pi}{4\vartheta_1};$$

cf. the special cases  $\vartheta_1=\pi$  [101],  $\vartheta_1=\pi/2$  [97].

For  $\vartheta_2=\vartheta_1$ ,  $\mathfrak{E}$  is a circular arc,

$$\bar{r} = \frac{|z_2-z_1|}{4 \sin \frac{\vartheta_1}{2}};$$

this result takes a different form if we introduce the radius of curvature  $\rho$  and the angle  $\varphi$  subtended by  $\mathfrak{C}$  at the center, namely  $\bar{r} = \rho \sin(\varphi/4)$ .—For  $\vartheta_1 = \pi/2$ ,  $\vartheta_2 = \pi$  we obtain the outer radius of a semicircular disc of diameter  $d$ ,  $\bar{r} = 2d/(3\sqrt{3})$ .

**110.** The normed mapping function associated with the central point  $a$  is [III 76]

$$f(a; z) = c \frac{\frac{f(z) - f(a)}{r_b} - \frac{f(a) - f(z)}{r_b}}{1 - \frac{f(a) - f(z)}{r_b} \frac{f(z) - f(a)}{r_b}} = cr_b \frac{f(z) - f(a)}{r_b^2 - f(a)f(z)},$$

where the constant  $c$  is to be determined from

$$\left( \frac{df(a; z)}{dz} \right)_{z=a} = \frac{cr_b f'(a)}{r_b^2 - |f(a)|^2} = 1. \quad \text{Thus } r_a = |c|.$$

**111.** By the mapping  $\zeta = (1/z) - 2$  we obtain the  $\zeta$ -plane slit along the interval  $-2, 2$ . Therefore, the required mapping function is

$$w = f(z) = \frac{\zeta - \sqrt{\zeta^2 - 4}}{2} = \frac{1 - 2z - \sqrt{1 - 4z}}{2z}, \quad \frac{w}{(1+w)^2} = z.$$

By **110** we have for real  $a$

$$r_a = \left( \frac{1 - f(a)}{1 + f(a)} \right)^2 = 1 - 4a.$$

In particular  $r_0 = 1$ . As  $a$  runs through the interval  $(-\infty, \frac{1}{4})$ ,  $r_a$  decreases monotonically from  $\infty$  to 0.

**112.** By **110**;  $|f'(a)|$  remains greater than a fixed positive number as  $a$  approaches a point of  $L$  from the interior. At the same time  $|f(a)|$  converges to  $r_b$ .

**113.** Replace in **110**  $b$  by  $a$  and  $a$  by  $a + \varepsilon$ , where  $\varepsilon$  is an arbitrary vector whose magnitude tends to 0. If  $((\varepsilon^2))$  denotes a quantity that goes to 0 at least as rapidly as  $\varepsilon^2$ , then

$$|f'(a + \varepsilon)| = |1 + 2c_2\varepsilon + ((\varepsilon^2))| = 1 + 2\Re c_2\varepsilon + ((\varepsilon^2)),$$

and hence

$$r_{a+\varepsilon} = r_a(1 - 2\Re c_2\varepsilon) + ((\varepsilon^2)),$$

that is,  $\Re c_2\varepsilon \geq 0$  for  $|\varepsilon|$  sufficiently small, independently of  $\arg \varepsilon$ . From this we conclude that  $c_2 = 0$ .

**114.** The points in question lie on the straight line  $\Im a = \text{const.}$  [103].

**115.** From the expression (\*) for the normed mapping function given at the beginning of § 4 we obtain by inversion

$$z - a = \varphi(w) = w + c'_2 w^2 + c'_3 w^3 + \dots,$$

where  $\varphi(w)$  is schlicht in the interior of the circle  $|w| < r_a$  and maps it onto  $\mathfrak{R}$ .

The function  $\sqrt[n]{\varphi(w^n)} = w + c''_2 w^{1+n} + c''_3 w^{2+n} + \dots$  is then schlicht in the circle  $|w| < r_a^{\frac{1}{n}}$  [79] and takes this circle precisely into  $\mathfrak{R}'$ .



**116.** We have [solution 115]

$$w = f(z) = \left( \frac{1 - 2z^n - \sqrt{1 - 4z^n}}{2z^n} \right)^{\frac{1}{n}}, \quad \frac{w}{(1 + w^n)^{\frac{2}{n}}} = z,$$

from which we easily obtain [110]

$$r_a = (1 - |f(a)|^2) \left| \frac{f(a)}{a} \right|^{n-1} \frac{|1 - [f(a)]^n|}{|1 + [f(a)]^n|^3}.$$

In particular we have  $r_0 = 1$ . As  $a$  runs along the ray  $\arg z = (2\pi\nu)/n$ ,  $0 \leq |a| < \sqrt[n]{\frac{1}{4}}$ ,  $f(a)$  describes the radius of the unit circle that makes the angle  $(2\pi\nu)/n$  with the positive real axis. The required limit is equal to 0 for all values of  $\nu$ .

**117.** Apply 115 in a suitable manner to the slit region whose boundary is the real line segment  $-\beta^2, \alpha^2$ . This region has the outer radius  $(\alpha^2 + \beta^2)/4$  [101], and hence

$$\bar{r} = \frac{\sqrt{\alpha^2 + \beta^2}}{2}.$$

**118.** The function  $\varphi(z) = F(z)/f(z)$  is regular in  $\mathfrak{R}$  including the point  $z = a$ . We have  $\varphi(a) = 1$ . Let  $0 < \varepsilon < r_a$ . About any boundary point of  $\mathfrak{R}$  we can determine a neighbourhood so small that for all points of  $\mathfrak{R}$  lying within it we have

$$|f(z)| > r_a - \varepsilon,$$

that is

$$|\varphi(z)| < \frac{M}{r_a - \varepsilon}.$$

Hence in  $\mathfrak{R}$  [III 278] we have  $|\varphi(z)| \leq M/r_a$ , in particular  $1 = |\varphi(a)| \leq M/r_a$ . The equality sign holds if and only if  $\varphi(z) \equiv 1$ , i.e.  $F(z) \equiv f(z)$ .

**119.** If

$$f(z) = z - a + c_2(z - a)^2 + \dots + c_n(z - a)^n + \dots$$

is the normed mapping function, then the function formed with the conjugate complex coefficients

$$\bar{f}(z) = z - a + \bar{c}_2(z - a)^2 + \dots + \bar{c}_n(z - a)^n + \dots$$

is also regular in  $\mathfrak{R}$ . For, let  $z_0$  be an arbitrary point of  $\mathfrak{R}$  and let  $F_0(z - a) = f(z)$ ,  $F_1(z - a_1), \dots, F_{i-1}(z - a_{i-1}), F_i(z - a_i)$ , where  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{i-1}$  are suitable points of  $\mathfrak{R}$ ,  $a_i = z_0$ , be the successive expansions which effect the continuation of  $f(z)$  to the point  $z_0$ . Then from  $\bar{f}(z)$  we reach the point  $\bar{a}_i = \bar{z}_0$  by means of the successive expansions  $\bar{F}_0(z - a) = \bar{f}(z)$ ,  $\bar{F}_1(z - \bar{a}_1), \dots, \bar{F}_{i-1}(z - \bar{a}_{i-1}), \bar{F}_i(z - \bar{a}_i)$ .  $\bar{f}(z)$  is hence regular in the mirror image of  $\mathfrak{R}$  with respect to the real axis, i.e. in  $\mathfrak{R}$  itself. Moreover  $\bar{f}(\bar{z}) = \overline{f(z)}$  and hence  $|\bar{f}(z)| < r_a$  in  $\mathfrak{R}$ . By 118 we have hence  $\bar{f}(z) = f(z)$ .

**120.**  $-f(-z)$  is regular in  $\mathfrak{R}$ , and  $|-f(-z)| < r_a$ . By 118 we have hence  $-f(-z) = f(z)$ .

**121.** If  $f(z)$  and  $f^*(z)$  are the normed mapping functions belonging to the central point  $a$  of  $\mathfrak{R}$  and  $\mathfrak{R}^*$  respectively, then we have [118]

$$r_a = \max_{(\mathfrak{R})} |f(z)| \geq \max_{(\mathfrak{R}^*)} |f(z)| \geq \max_{(\mathfrak{R}^*)} |f^*(z)| = r_a^*.$$

Both equality signs can be attained, however not simultaneously.

**122.** From **121** with the aid of **97**.

**123.** [**118**, **121**, **122**.]

**\*124.** [**III 309**.]

**124.1.** (a) By **102** and **124**

$$2\pi \frac{2a+2b}{4} < l.$$

(b) By calculus and **II 80**

$$\begin{aligned} l &= \int_0^{2\pi} \sqrt{a^2 \sin^2 \varphi + b^2 \cos^2 \varphi} \sqrt{\sin^2 \varphi + \cos^2 \varphi} d\varphi \\ &> \int_0^{2\pi} \sqrt{(a \sin^2 \varphi + b \cos^2 \varphi)^2} d\varphi = \pi(a+b). \end{aligned}$$

**125.** [**82**.]

**126.** **III 126**, cf. also solution **83**.

**127.** [G. Pólya: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. **31** (1922) footnote, p. 111.] Denoting the outer measure of the interior of  $L$  by  $|L|_e$  and the inner measure of the same region by  $|L|_i$ , we have [**125**, **126**]

$$\pi r_a^2 \leq |L|_i \leq |L|_e \leq \pi r^2.$$

**128.** If  $f(z)$  is the normed mapping function belonging to the origin as central point then  $P(z)/[f(z)]^k$  is regular in the interior of  $L$  and is equal to  $a_k$  for  $z=0$ . Similarly for the second inequality.

**129.** Let  $z=\varphi(\zeta)$  be a function which maps the interior of the circle  $|\zeta| < 1$  into the interior of  $L$ . The mapping is one-one and continuous for  $|\zeta| \leq 1$  [last remark preceding **97**]. Apply **III 233** to  $f[\varphi(\zeta)]$ .

**130.**

$$w = \frac{e^{\frac{\pi z}{D}} - e^{\frac{\pi i}{D}}}{e^{\frac{\pi z}{D}} - e^{-\frac{\pi i}{D}}}$$

The length of the arc in question is equal to  $2\pi(1 - D^{-1})$ ; it steadily increases as  $D$  increases.

**131.** [K. Löwner.] We may assume that  $O$  as well as the center of the image circle are at the origin. Let the radius of the image circle be  $r$ . Denote by  $f_1(z)$  and  $f_2(z)$  the mapping functions of  $L_1$  and  $L_2$  respectively. Then

$$F(z) = \frac{f_1(z)}{f_2(z)}$$

is regular and different from 0 in the interior of  $L_1$ . Furthermore, on the common arcs of  $L_1$  and  $L_2$  we have

$$|f_1(z)| = |f_2(z)| = r, \quad |F(z)| = 1,$$

while on the complementary part of  $L_1$

$$|f_1(z)| = r, \quad |f_2(z)| \leq r, \quad |F(z)| \geq 1.$$

We deduce that  $|F(z)| > 1$  in the interior of  $L_1$ . The regular branch of  $\log F(z)$

which is real for  $z=0$  satisfies the assumptions of **129**. Describing positively a common arc of  $L_1$  and  $L_2$  involves a negative change in  $\Re \log F(z) = \Re \log f_1(z) - \Re \log f_2(z)$ .

**132.** Let the interior conductor of an insulated cylindrical condenser be a straight line (wire) conductor. If the exterior conductor is deformed, without jeopardizing the insulation, in such a manner that the cross-sectional surface contains the old one as a part, extending beyond it at some places and not at others, then at those places where the condenser wall has remained undisturbed the density of electrostatic charge will increase—as can also be made plausible by means of physical considerations.

**133.**  $\mathfrak{E}^*$  is simply connected (simple closed curves in the interior of  $\mathfrak{E}^*$  belong both to the interior of  $L_1$  and to the interior of  $L_2$ ). Map also  $\mathfrak{E}^*$  onto the unit circle, and again let the center of the circle be the image of  $O$ . The following table refers to the total length of those arcs which lie on the boundary of the unit circle in the mappings I, II, III (interior of  $L_1$ ,  $L_2$ ,  $\mathfrak{E}^*$  respectively) as images of

	I	II	III
visible arcs of $L_1$	$\sigma_1$	—	$\sigma_1^*$
hidden arcs of $L_1$	$\tau_1$	—	—
visible arcs of $L_2$	—	$\sigma_2$	$\sigma_2^*$
hidden arcs of $L_2$	—	$\tau_2$	—

Obviously

$$\sigma_1 + \tau_1 = 2\pi, \quad \sigma_2 + \tau_2 = 2\pi, \quad \sigma_1^* + \sigma_2^* = 2\pi.$$

Using **131** we have

$$\sigma_1^* \leq \sigma_1, \quad \sigma_2^* \leq \sigma_2.$$

Hence we have

$$\begin{aligned} \tau_2 &= 2\pi - \sigma_2 \leq 2\pi - \sigma_2^* = \sigma_1^* \leq \sigma_1, \\ \tau_1 &= 2\pi - \sigma_1 \leq 2\pi - \sigma_1^* = \sigma_2^* \leq \sigma_2. \end{aligned}$$

If we take  $L_2$  to be a circle with center  $O$ , then we can express the result imprecisely but graphically as follows: In mapping a region onto a circle the parts of the boundary curve lying close to the point which is mapped onto the center of the circle are expanded more than the parts of the boundary lying further away.

**134.** The proof will be given under the assumption that the boundary of  $\mathfrak{D}$  is a simple closed curve which cuts the circle  $|z - \zeta| = \rho$  at only finitely many points. By deleting the boundary curve, we obtain from  $\mathfrak{D}$  a simply connected region whose intersection with the circular disc  $|z - \zeta| < \rho$  has a simply connected part  $\mathfrak{E}$  which contains the point  $O$  in its interior [solution **133**]. Let  $\rho\gamma$  be the total length of the *common* boundary of  $\mathfrak{E}$  and of the circle  $|z - \zeta| < \rho$ . Then we have

$$\gamma + \Omega \leq 2\pi.$$

In the mapping of  $\mathfrak{E}$  onto the unit circle  $|w| < 1$  let  $O$  go over into the center of the circle and the set of arcs counted in the calculation of  $\rho\gamma$  into a set of circular arcs of total length  $\delta$ . By **131** we then have

$$\delta \leq \gamma.$$

Define a function  $\varphi(w)$  regular in the circle  $|w| < 1$ , which at interior points of the arcs counted in  $\delta$  satisfies the equation

$$\Re \varphi(w) = \log A,$$

and at interior points of the remaining arcs of the circle  $|w| = 1$  satisfies the equation

$$\Re \varphi(w) = \log a$$

[III 231]. We have

$$2\pi \Re \varphi(0) = \delta \log A + (2\pi - \delta) \log a$$

[III 118]. Set

$$e^{\varphi(w)} = \Phi(w).$$

Then

$$|\Phi(0)|^{2\pi} = a^{2\pi} \left(\frac{A}{a}\right)^{\delta} \leq a^{2\pi} \left(\frac{A}{a}\right)^{\gamma} \leq a^{2\pi} \left(\frac{A}{a}\right)^{2\pi - \delta}.$$

If the mapping in question of  $\mathfrak{D}$  onto  $|w| < 1$  is effected by the function

$$\psi(z) = w, \quad \psi(\zeta) = 0$$

then  $\Phi[\psi(z)]$  is different from 0 in the interior of  $\mathfrak{D}$  and at all points of the boundary of  $\mathfrak{D}$ , with the exception of finitely many points, its modulus is not less than that of  $f(z)$ . We deduce [III 335]

$$|f(\zeta)| \leq |\Phi[\psi(\zeta)]| = |\Phi(0)|.$$

By reversing the argument we obtain a part of **131**, **133** from III 276. Cf. also solution III 177.

**135.**  $f_n(z)$  vanishes only for  $z=0$  (a one-to-one mapping). Applying III 278 to the two functions  $z^{-1}f_n(z)$  and  $z(f_n(z))^{-1}$  which are regular in  $\mathfrak{R}_n$  we obtain in  $\mathfrak{R}_n$

$$\frac{1}{1} < \left| \frac{z}{f_n(z)} \right| < \frac{a}{1}.$$

Let  $\varepsilon_n$  be a positive number satisfying

$$\left| \frac{e^{i\alpha_n} - 1}{2} \right|^{\varepsilon_n} = \frac{1}{a}.$$

Then  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \varepsilon_n = 0$ . Set

$$\frac{z}{f_n(z)} \left( \frac{z-1}{2} \right)^{\varepsilon_n} = \varphi_n(z).$$

We have  $|\varphi_n(z)| < 1$  for  $|z| < 1$  [III 278]. From

$$|z|^{\frac{1}{2}} |z-1|^{\varepsilon_n} < |f_n(z)| < |z|$$

we obtain  $|f_n(z)| \rightarrow |z|$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$  in the interior of the circle  $|z| < 1$ . Note that  $f'_n(0) > 0$  and apply III 258 to  $\log(f_n(z)z^{-1})$ .

**136.** [L. Bieberbach: Berlin. Ber. pp. 940–955 (1916); G. Faber: München. Ber. pp. 39–42 (1916).] From III 126 we have for every  $R > 1$

$$\frac{|b_1|^2}{R^2} + \frac{2|b_2|^2}{R^4} + \frac{3|b_3|^2}{R^6} + \dots < 1.$$

Hence the sum of the first  $n$  terms  $< 1$ . For  $R \rightarrow 1$  we deduce

$$|b_1|^2 + 2|b_2|^2 + \cdots + n|b_n|^2 \leq 1.$$

This is true for every value of  $n$ , so that  $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n|b_n|^2 \leq 1$ . If  $|b_1| = 1$ ,  $b_1 = e^{i\theta}$ , then  $b_2 = b_3 = \cdots = 0$ , i.e.  $g(z) = z + b_0 + (e^{i\theta}/z)$  [III 79].

**137.** [K. Löwner: Math. Z. 3, pp. 69-72 (1919).] By applying Cauchy's inequality [II 80] we obtain [136]

$$\begin{aligned} |g'(z)| &= \left| 1 - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{nb_n}{z^{n+1}} \right| \leq 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\sqrt{n}}{|z|^{n+1}} \sqrt{n}|b_n| \leq 1 + \sqrt{\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{n}{|z|^{2n+2}}} \\ &= \frac{1}{1 - \frac{1}{|z|^2}}. \end{aligned}$$

If  $g'(\rho\varepsilon) = 1/(1 - \rho^{-2})$ ,  $\rho > 1$ ,  $|\varepsilon| = 1$ , then  $-b_n\varepsilon^{n+1}$  must be real and non-negative, and  $\sqrt{n}|b_n| = \lambda(\sqrt{n}/\rho^{n+1})$ , where the factor  $\lambda$  which is independent of  $n$  can be determined from the equation  $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n|b_n|^2 = 1$ . We have

$$\lambda = \rho^2 - 1, \quad b_n = -\frac{\rho^2 - 1}{(\rho\varepsilon)^{n+1}}, \quad g(z) = z + b_0 - \frac{1}{\varepsilon} \left( \rho - \frac{1}{\rho} \right) \frac{1}{\rho\varepsilon z - 1}.$$

This function is schlicht for  $|z| > 1$ , since

$$\left| \frac{1 - \rho^2}{\rho\varepsilon z - 1} + 1 \right| \leq \rho$$

for  $|z| > 1$ , and hence

$$\frac{1 - \rho^2}{\rho\varepsilon z_1 - 1} + 1 \neq \rho\varepsilon z_2, \quad g(z_2) - g(z_1) \neq 0; \quad |z_1| > 1, \quad |z_2| > 1, \quad z_1 \neq z_2.$$

The identity

$$\varepsilon[g(z) - b_0] - \left( \rho - \frac{1}{\rho} \right) = \frac{\rho\varepsilon z(\varepsilon z - \rho)}{\rho\varepsilon z - 1}$$

now shows that the image of the unit circle is a circular arc with center  $b_0 + \varepsilon(\rho - (1/\rho))$  and of radius  $\rho$ .

**138.** See 120.

**139.** [G. Faber, *ibid.* 136.] By 79

$$\sqrt{g(z^2)} = z + \frac{\frac{1}{2}b_0}{z} + \frac{\frac{1}{2}b_1 - \frac{1}{8}b_0^2}{z^3} + \cdots$$

is regular and schlicht for  $|z| > 1$ , and hence [136]  $|\frac{1}{2}b_0| \leq 1$ . We have  $|\frac{1}{2}b_0| = 1$  only if  $\sqrt{g(z^2)} = z + (e^{i\theta}/z)$ ,  $\theta$  real, i.e.  $g(z) = z + 2e^{i\theta} + (e^{2i\theta}/z)$ .

**140.** [L. Bieberbach, *ibid.* 136.] Denoting by  $h$  an arbitrary boundary point of  $\Re$  apply 139 to  $g(z) - h$ . The origin is then a boundary point of the image region. The conformal center of gravity is  $b_0 - h$ , hence  $|b_0 - h| \leq 2$ .

**141.** [Cf. L. Bieberbach: Math. Ann. 77, pp. 153-172 (1916).] The lower

estimate for  $D$  follows by a similar argument as in III 239, the upper estimate from 140 as follows: If  $h_1$  and  $h_2$  are two boundary points of  $\mathfrak{R}$ , then

$$|b_0 - h_1| \leq 2, \quad |b_0 - h_2| \leq 2, \quad \text{and} \quad |h_1 - h_2| \leq 4.$$

**142.** Denoting by  $d$  the distance between the two points, and by  $D$  the diameter of the arc joining them, we have [141]

$$d \leq D \leq 4\bar{r} \quad [101].$$

**143.** [K. Löwner, *ibid.* 137, pp. 74–75.] It is sufficient to prove that  $|g(\rho)| \leq \rho + (1/\rho)$ ,  $\rho > 1$ . If we remove from the region  $\mathfrak{R}$  the two arcs in  $\mathfrak{R}$  which correspond to the two segments  $1 < z \leq \rho$  and  $-\rho \leq z < -1$  according to the mapping  $g(z) = w$ , then we obtain a region  $\mathfrak{R}^*$ . Cut the exterior of the circle  $|z| > 1$  from 1 to  $\rho$  and from  $-1$  to  $-\rho$ . Then the resulting region can be mapped onto the exterior of the circle  $|\zeta| > \frac{1}{2}[\rho + (1/\rho)]$  [105] and has [138] the conformal center of gravity 0. Now apply 140 to the resulting mapping of the exterior of the circle  $|\zeta| > \frac{1}{2}[\rho + (1/\rho)]$  onto  $\mathfrak{R}^*$ .

**144.** [G. Faber: München. Ber. pp. 49–64 (1920).] Since  $g(z) - z$  is regular for  $|z| > 1$ , and since the boundary values of  $g(z) - z$  are all  $\leq 3$  in modulus [140], we have  $|g(z) - z| \leq 3$ ,  $|z| > 1$ . Hence from III 280 we obtain  $|g(z) - z| \leq 3/|z|$ . The equality sign can hold, if at all, only for  $g(z) - z = e^{i\alpha}/z$ ,  $\alpha$  real, but then  $|g(z) - z| = 1/|z|$ . Hence it can never hold.

**145.** [K. Löwner.] The outer radius  $\bar{r}$  of the curve described in the problem is greater than that of a straight line segment of length  $2a$  [121] and smaller than that of an ellipse which contains it and has the sum of the lengths of its axes converging to 4 as  $a \rightarrow 2$ ,  $\delta \rightarrow 0$ . From this we deduce [101, 102] that  $\bar{r} \rightarrow 1$  as  $a \rightarrow 2$ ,  $\delta \rightarrow 0$ . In addition from 119 we obtain that in the case of the mapping in question the two boundary points lying on opposite sides of the slit at  $z = -a$  are mapped into the points  $z = +1$  and  $z = -1$ , so that one of the boundary points undergoes a displacement of  $1 + a$ . As  $a \rightarrow 2$ ,  $1 + a$  approaches arbitrarily closely to 3.

**146.** [L. Bieberbach, *ibid.*, 136.] Setting  $\zeta = 1/z$ , we have

$$g(\zeta) = [f(\zeta^{-1})]^{-1} = \zeta - a_2 + \frac{a_2^2 - a_3}{\zeta} + \dots \neq 0 \quad \text{for} \quad |\zeta| > 1; \quad 139.$$

We have  $|a_2| = 2$  if and only if

$$g(\zeta) = \zeta + 2e^{i\alpha} + \frac{e^{2i\alpha}}{\zeta}, \quad f(z) = \frac{z}{(1 + e^{i\alpha}z)^2}, \quad \alpha \text{ real.}$$

**147.** [G. Faber, *ibid.* 136, 144; L. Bieberbach, *ibid.* 136. The theorem without the precise constants is found already in P. Koebe: Gött. Nachr. pp. 197–210 (1907).] Let  $R = 1$ . The function

$$\frac{f(z)}{1 - h^{-1}f(z)} = z + \left(a_2 + \frac{1}{h}\right)z^2 + \dots$$

is schlicht for  $|z| < 1$ , hence [146]  $|a_2 + (1/h)| \leq 2$ ,  $|1/h| \leq |a_2| + 2 \leq 4$ . [This variant of the proof stems from F. Hausdorff.] The equality sign applies only for

$$f(z) = \frac{z}{(1 + e^{i\alpha}z)^2}, \quad \alpha \text{ real.}$$

**148.** Let  $\zeta = 1/z$ ,  $g(\zeta) = [f(\zeta^{-1})]^{-1}$  [solution **146**]. Applying **140** to  $g(\zeta)$  yields for an arbitrary boundary point  $h$

$$\left| a_2 + \frac{1}{h} \right| \leq 2, \quad \left| \frac{1}{h} \right| \leq |a_2| + 2.$$

[Cf. also solution **147**.]

**149.** [Cf. G. Szegő: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. **31**, p. 42 (1922); **32**, p. 45 (1923).] Let  $h_1$  and  $h_2$  be two boundary points of  $\Re$  with  $\arg h_1 - \arg h_2 = \pi$ . Applying **147** to  $f(z)/[1 - h_1^{-1}f(z)]$  yields  $|1/(h_2^{-1} - h_1^{-1})| \geq R/4$ , i.e.

$$\frac{2}{\frac{1}{|h_1|} + \frac{1}{|h_2|}} \geq \frac{R}{2}.$$

By the theorem about the arithmetic and the harmonic mean (II, Vol. I, p. 63) we then have in particular  $|h_1| + |h_2| \geq R$ . If we have the equality sign, then we must have firstly  $|h_1| = |h_2| = R/2$ ,  $h_1 = -h_2 = (R/2)e^{i\gamma}$ , and furthermore

$$\frac{f(z)}{1 - h_1^{-1}f(z)} = \frac{R^2 z}{(R + e^{i\alpha} z)^2}, \quad \gamma, \alpha \text{ real.}$$

This function has the absolute value  $R/4$  in the circle  $|z| \leq R$  only for  $z = R e^{-i\alpha}$ . We deduce that  $e^{-i\alpha} = -e^{-i\gamma}$  and  $f(z) = R^2 z / (R^2 + e^{2i\alpha} z^2)$ . [In the reference above we find only  $\max(|h_1|, |h_2|) \geq R$ . The observation that in fact  $|h_1| + |h_2| \geq R$  is due to T. Radó.]

**150.** [Cf. G. Pick, *ibid.* **151**; also L. Bieberbach: Math. Z. **4**, pp. 295-305 (1919); R. Nevanlinna: Översikt av Finska Vetenskaps-Soc. Förh. **62(A)**, No. 7 (1919-1920).] Let  $|z_0| < 1$  and apply **146** to the function

$$\varphi(z) = A + Bf\left(\frac{z + z_0}{1 + \bar{z}_0 z}\right)$$

which is also schlicht inside the unit circle  $|z| < 1$ . The constants  $A$  and  $B$  are to be determined by the conditions  $\varphi(0) = 0$ ,  $\varphi'(0) = 1$ .

**151.** [With respect to **151**, **152**, **156**, **157** cf. P. Koebe, *ibid.* **147**; G. Plemelj: Verhandl. d. deutschen Naturforsch. **85**, III, p. 163 (1913); G. Pick: Leipz. Ber. **68**, pp. 58-64 (1916); G. Faber, L. Bieberbach, *ibid.* **136**; also T. H. Gronwall: C. R. Acad. Sci. (Paris), **162**, pp. 249-252 (1916).] We have

$$\log f'(z) + \log(1 - |z|^2) = \int_0^z \left( \frac{f''(z)}{f'(z)} - \frac{2\bar{z}}{1 - |z|^2} \right) dz,$$

where the integration is carried out along the straight line segment from 0 to  $z$ ,  $|z| = r < 1$ . We deduce [**150**]

$$|\log f'(z) + \log(1 - |z|^2)| \leq \int_0^r \frac{4}{1 - r^2} dr = 2 \log \frac{1+r}{1-r}.$$

Considering the real part we obtain

$$-2 \log \frac{1+r}{1-r} \leq \log |f'(z)| + \log(1 - r^2) \leq 2 \log \frac{1+r}{1-r}, \quad \text{q.e.d.}$$

Considering the imaginary part we obtain in addition

$$|\Im \log f'(z)| \leq 2 \log \frac{1+r}{1-r}.$$

(The rotation theorem.) The equality sign can never occur. [L. Bieberbach, *ibid.* **150.**]

**152.** From  $f(z) = \int_0^z f'(z) dz$  we obtain [151]

$$|f(z)| \leq \int_0^r \frac{1+r}{(1-r)^3} dr = \frac{r}{(1-r)^2}.$$

We obtain the lower estimate for  $|f(z)|$  in two ways as follows:

(1) If  $w$  is the point of the image of the circle  $|z|=r$  which is closest to the origin, and if  $L$  is the curve of the  $z$ -plane that corresponds to the line segment joining 0 and  $w$ , then from  $|w| = \int_L |f'(z)| |dz|$  we obtain, since  $|dz| \geq dr$ , that

$$|w| \geq \int_0^r |f'(z)| dr \geq \int_0^r \frac{1-r}{(1+r)^3} dr = \frac{r}{(1+r)^2}.$$

(2) Map the interior of the circle  $|z| < 1$  slit along the real line segment from  $r$  to 1 onto the interior of the circle  $|\zeta| < 4r/(1+r)^2$  by means of the function  $z = g(\zeta) = \zeta + b_2 \zeta^2 + b_3 \zeta^3 + \dots$  [108] and then apply 147 to the boundary point  $f(r)$  of the mapping  $w = f[g(\zeta)]$ .

**153.** [T. H. Gronwall: Nat. Acad. Proc. 6, pp. 300–302 (1920); R. Nevanlinna, *ibid.* **161**, p. 17, footnote.] Setting  $\zeta = 1/z$ , apply 143 to  $[f(\zeta^{-1})]^{-1} + a_2$ .

**154.** [T. Radó, problem: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. 32, p. 15 (1923).] By 80,  $f(z) = \sqrt{g(z^2)}$  where  $g(z)$  is regular and schlicht inside the unit circle  $|z| < 1$ . Hence for  $|z|=r$ , we have [152]

$$\frac{r^2}{(1+r^2)^2} \leq |g(z^2)| \leq \frac{r^2}{(1-r^2)^2}.$$

**155.** With the notation of III 128 we have

$$J(\rho) \leq \pi \left( \frac{\rho}{1-\rho^2} \right)^2 \quad [154],$$

and hence, since  $f(0)=0$ ,

$$\int_0^{2\pi} |f(re^{i\theta})|^2 d\theta \leq 4\pi \int_0^r \frac{\rho}{(1-\rho^2)^2} d\rho.$$

**156.** By Cauchy's theorem we have

$$f^{(n)}(z) = \frac{n!}{2\pi i} \oint \frac{f(\zeta)}{(\zeta-z)^{n+1}} d\zeta,$$

where the integration is carried out along a circle  $|\zeta-z|=\rho$ ,  $0 < \rho < 1-|z|=1-r$ . If we take  $\omega_n(r)$  to be the *smallest* function of the kind considered here, we have

$$\omega_n(r) < \frac{n!}{\rho^n} \frac{r+\rho}{(1-r-\rho)^2}.$$



**157.** [L. Bieberbach: Math. Z. 2, pp. 161–162, footnote 5 (1918).] We have

$$\omega_n = \frac{\omega_n(0)}{n!} \quad [156],$$

and hence

$$\omega_n < \frac{1}{\rho^{n-1}(1-\rho)^2}, \quad 0 < \rho < 1.$$

Now set  $\rho = (n-1)/(n+1)$ .

**158.** In **155** replace  $f(z)$  by  $\sqrt{f(z^2)}$  [80] and  $r$  by  $\sqrt{r}$ . We obtain

$$\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} |f(r e^{2i\theta})| d\theta = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} |f(r e^{i\varphi})| d\varphi \leq \frac{r}{1-r}.$$

**159.** [J. E. Littlewood. Cf. Proc. Lond. Math. Soc. Series 2, 23, pp. 481–519 (1925).] By considering the special function  $f(z) = z/(1-z)^2 = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n z^n$ , we obtain that  $\omega_n \geq n$ . The upper estimate of  $\omega_n$  follows from

$$|a_n| \leq \frac{1}{2\pi r^n} \int_0^{2\pi} |f(r e^{i\theta})| d\theta < \frac{1}{r^{n-1}(1-r)} \quad [158]$$

if we choose the optimum value of  $r$ ,  $r = (n-1)/n$ . Then we have

$$|a_n| < \frac{n^n}{(n-1)^{n-1}} = \left(1 + \frac{1}{n-1}\right)^{n-1} n < en \quad [170].$$

Since the date of publication of the original German edition, much research has been devoted to the determination of  $\omega_n$ . See *loc. cit.* solution **77**.

**160.** [G. Pick: Wien. Ber. 126, pp. 247–263 (1917).] The assertion concerning  $M$  follows from **122** or from III **280**. From

$$\frac{f(z)}{[1 + e^{i\alpha} M^{-1} f(z)]^2} = z + (a_2 - 2e^{i\alpha} M^{-1}) z^2 + \dots$$

we now deduce  $|a_2 - 2e^{i\alpha} M^{-1}| \leq 2$  [146]. With the optimum choice of  $\alpha$ ,  $\alpha = \pi + \arg a_2$ , we obtain the required inequality. The equality sign holds if and only if

$$\frac{f(z)}{[1 + e^{i\alpha} M^{-1} f(z)]^2} = \frac{z}{(1 + e^{i\beta} z)^2}, \quad \beta \text{ real.}$$

Then the values of  $w = e^{i\alpha} M^{-1} f(z)$  fall in that part of the unit circle to which in the mapping  $w/(1+w)^2 = W$  [111] the slit region with the bounding ray  $\arg W = \alpha - \beta$ ,  $1/(4M) \leq |W| < +\infty$  corresponds. Therefore we must have  $\alpha = \beta$ . To the slit segment  $1/(4M) \leq W \leq \frac{1}{4}$  there corresponds the line segment  $2M-1-2\sqrt{M(M-1)} \leq w \leq 1$ . The extreme case thus occurs if  $f(z)$  effects a schlicht mapping of the unit circle on that slit region which is formed from the circle of radius  $M$  by cutting from an arbitrary point of the circumference along a straight line of length  $2M\sqrt{M-1}$  ( $\sqrt{M}-\sqrt{M-1}$ ) at right angles into the interior of the circle.

**161.** [R. Nevanlinna: Översikt av Finska Vetenskaps-Soc. Förh. 63(A), no. 6 (1920–1921).] By III **109** we have that

$$z \frac{f'(z)}{f(z)} = 1 + \gamma_1 z + \gamma_2 z^2 + \dots$$

is regular for  $|z| < 1$  and has positive real part there. Hence we have [III 235]

$$z \frac{f'(z)}{f(z)} \ll \frac{1+z}{1-z}$$

We deduce [I 63]

$$|a_n| \leq n, \quad n=2, 3, 4, \dots$$

We can have  $|a_n| = n$  only if

$$z \frac{f'(z)}{f(z)} = \frac{1+e^{i\alpha}z}{1-e^{i\alpha}z}, \quad \alpha \text{ real,}$$

(in which case the equality holds for all  $n$ .)

**162.** [T. H. Gronwall, *ibid.* 151; K. Löwner: Leipz. Ber. 69, pp. 89–106 (1917).] If  $f(z)$  is a convex mapping then the image in the mapping  $w = zf'(z)$  is star-shaped [III 110]. Hence we have [161]

$$zf'(z) \ll \frac{z}{(1-z)^2} \quad \text{i.e.} \quad |a_n| \leq 1, \quad n=2, 3, 4, \dots$$

We have  $|a_n| = 1$  if and only if  $zf'(z) = z/(1-e^{i\alpha}z)^2$ ,  $f(z) = z/(1-e^{i\alpha}z)$ ,  $\alpha$  real (in which case the equality holds for all  $n$ ).

**163.** [Cf. E. Study: Vorlesungen über ausgewählte Gegenstände der Geometrie, Part 2, Leipzig: B. G. Teubner 1913. R. Nevanlinna, *ibid.* 161.] From 150 we deduce for  $|z| < r$

$$\Re z \frac{f''(z)}{f'(z)} > \frac{-4r+2r^2}{1-r^2}$$

The right side is  $\geq -1$ , if  $r$  is not greater than the smaller root of the equation  $r^2 - 4r + 1 = 0$ . [III 108.]

**164.** By means of the mapping  $(e^{iz} - i)/(e^{iz} + i) = \zeta$  the question may be reduced to that of III 297. If  $f(z)$  is not identically zero, then the series

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \left( 1 - \left| \frac{e^{i(x_n + iy_n)} - i}{e^{i(x_n + iy_n)} + i} \right| \right)$$

must be convergent. Furthermore,  $y_n \rightarrow \infty$ . But for positive  $y$  tending to infinity we have

$$1 - \left| \frac{e^{i(x+iy)} - i}{e^{i(x+iy)} + i} \right| = 1 - \left( \frac{1 + e^{-2y} - 2e^{-y} \sin x}{1 + e^{-2y} + 2e^{-y} \sin x} \right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \sim 2e^{-y} \sin x.$$

In a similar manner we can replace the general term of the above series for negative  $y$  by  $2e^y \sin x$ .

**165.** That the condition is sufficient follows from the general existence theorem for linear differential equations. On the other hand it is also necessary. We let  $u_1, u_2, \dots, u_n$  be  $n$  linearly independent entire functions that satisfy the given equation. From the equations

$$-u_j^{(n)} = f_1(z)u_j^{(n-1)} + f_2(z)u_j^{(n-2)} + \dots + f_n(z)u_j, \quad j=1, 2, \dots, n,$$

the coefficients  $f_j(z)$  may be calculated as fractions whose numerators are entire functions. The common denominator of these functions is the Wronskian determinant of  $u_1, u_2, \dots, u_n$ , that is  $e^{-\int f_1(z) dz}$  [VII § 5], and thus an entire function which has no zeros.

**166.** For sufficiently small values of  $z$ , different from 0, we have

$$\varphi(z) = \gamma_{-k} z^{-\frac{k}{q}} + \gamma_{-k+1} z^{-\frac{k-1}{q}} + \cdots + \gamma_0 + \gamma_1 z^{\frac{1}{q}} + \gamma_2 z^{\frac{2}{q}} + \cdots,$$

where  $q$  is a positive integer and  $z^{\frac{1}{q}}$  denotes a fixed branch. From the assumptions of the problem it follows firstly that  $\varphi(z)$  remains bounded as  $z \rightarrow 0$ , and hence  $\gamma_{-k} = \gamma_{-k+1} = \cdots = \gamma_{-1} = 0$ . Furthermore  $\gamma_0 = c_0$ . If it were possible that  $q > 1$  and not all the coefficients  $\gamma_1, \gamma_2, \dots, \gamma_{q-1}$  were equal to 0, say  $\gamma_1 = \gamma_2 = \cdots = \gamma_{s-1} = 0$ ,  $\gamma_s \neq 0$ ,  $1 \leq s \leq q-1$ , then the function

$$z^{-\frac{s}{q}}(\varphi(z) - c_0)$$

would be greater in magnitude than a fixed positive number as  $z \rightarrow 0$ . From this we could deduce that

$$\lim_{z \rightarrow 0} z^{-1}(\varphi(z) - c_0) = \infty:$$

Contradiction. Hence  $\gamma_1 = \gamma_2 = \cdots = \gamma_{q-1} = 0$ . Further  $\gamma_q = c_1$ , and then again  $\gamma_{q+1} = \gamma_{q+2} = \cdots = \gamma_{2q-1} = 0$  and so on.

**167.** If the function  $f(z)$  is regular and single-valued in the half-open annular region  $R \leq |z| < \infty$ , then its zeros in the region can have a point of accumulation only at infinity. We may therefore construct an entire function  $g(z)$  that has in this region the same zeros as  $f(z)$ . Then the function  $\log [f(z)/g(z)]$  is regular but not necessarily single-valued for  $R \leq |z| < \infty$ . Its real part is single-valued and its imaginary part increases by  $2\pi im$  in traversing the circumference of the circle  $|z| = r$ ,  $r > R$  in the positive sense, where  $m$  is an integer independent of  $r$  [III 190,  $a=0$ ]. Hence we have that

$$\log \frac{f(z)}{g(z)} - m \log z$$

is single-valued and regular for  $R \leq |z| < \infty$  and may therefore be represented by a Laurent series:

$$\log \frac{f(z)}{g(z)} - m \log z = \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} c_n z^n = \gamma(z) + \sum_{n=-\infty}^{-1} c_n z^n = \gamma(z) + \psi(z),$$

where  $\gamma(z)$  is an entire function and the series  $\psi(z)$  is convergent for  $|z| \geq R$ . We may set  $z^m g(z) e^{\gamma(z)} = z^{-p} G(z)$ .—If  $f(z)$  is merely assumed to be regular in the open annular region  $R < |z| < \infty$ , then its zeros may also have points of accumulation on the circumference of the circle  $|z| = R$ .

**168.** Set  $e^{-iz} = w$ , and hence  $e^y = |w|$ . Because of the periodicity of  $f(z)$ , the function  $f(i \log w) = F(w)$  is a single-valued function of  $w$  that has only finitely many zeros and poles in the annular region  $0 < |w| < \infty$ . We may therefore determine the polynomials  $P(w)$ ,  $Q(w)$  and a power-series  $\sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} c_n w^n = \psi(w)$  convergent for  $0 < |w| < \infty$  [solution 167] so that in this region we have

$$f(w) = \frac{P(w)}{Q(w)} e^{\psi(w)}.$$

Denote by  $A(r)$  the maximum of  $\Re \psi(w)$  on the circumference of the circle  $|w|=r$  and by  $w_0$  the point at which  $A(r)$  is attained. We have

$$\log M(y) - \log |P(w_0)| + \log |Q(w_0)| \geq A(r).$$

From the assumption it follows furthermore that there exists a number  $\theta$ ,  $0 < \theta < 1$ , such that

$$\log M(y) < e^{\theta|y|} = \begin{cases} |y|^\theta \\ |y|^{-\theta} \end{cases}$$

according as  $|w| \geq 1$  or  $|w| \leq 1$ . From this we deduce that  $A(r)r^{-\theta}$  is bounded for  $r > 1$  and  $A(r)r^\theta$  is bounded for  $r < 1$ . From solution III 237 it follows that  $\psi(w) = \text{const.}$

**169.** [H. A. Schwarz, oral communication.] Let

$$f(z) = a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^n + \dots$$

be regular and not constant in a circle  $|z| < \rho$  about the origin. Then in this circle

$$F(z) = \overline{a_0} + \overline{a_1} z + \overline{a_2} z^2 + \dots + \overline{a_n} z^n + \dots$$

is also regular and not constant. Furthermore for real values of  $x$  and  $y$  satisfying  $x^2 + y^2 < \rho^2$  we have

$$\varphi(x, y) = f(x + iy)F(x - iy) = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} a_k \bar{a}_l (x + iy)^k (x - iy)^l.$$

This series is also convergent for *complex*  $x$  and  $y$  of sufficiently small absolute value. As it represents an algebraic function of  $x$  and  $y$ , we have identically in  $x$  and  $y$

$$\sum_{v=0}^n \Phi_v(x, y) [\varphi(x, y)]^v = \sum_{v=0}^n \Phi_v(x, y) [f(x + iy)F(x - iy)]^v = 0,$$

where  $\Phi_v(x, y)$ , are polynomials in  $x$  and  $y$ ,  $\Phi_n(x, y) \neq 0$ . We may assume that  $\Phi_n(0, 0) \neq 0$ , for otherwise we could have considered  $f(z - a)$  with suitable  $a$  instead of  $f(z)$  from the beginning.

Let a variable  $\zeta$  be restricted to the unit circle and let a constant  $t$  be chosen as follows:

- (1)  $t \neq 0$ ;
- (2) the power series for the function  $\varphi(x, y)$  considered above is convergent for  $|x| \leq t$ ,  $|y| \leq t$ ;
- (3)  $F(t) \neq 0$ ;
- (4)  $\Phi_n\left(\frac{(\zeta+1)t}{2}, \frac{(\zeta-1)t}{2i}\right)$  does not vanish identically in  $\zeta$ . This condition can always be satisfied, since the constant term of this polynomial in  $\zeta$  and  $t$  coincides with that of  $\Phi_n(x, y)$ , and thus is different from 0.

We now have identically for  $|\zeta| < 1$

$$\sum_{v=0}^n \Phi_v\left(\frac{(\zeta+1)t}{2}, \frac{(\zeta-1)t}{2i}\right) [F(t)]^v [f(\zeta t)]^v = 0.$$

**170.** [E. Landau.] Assume that the circle in the problem is the unit circle. It contains the real interval  $-1 < w < 1$ . Consider the set of those real points  $z$  at which the value of the function  $w = f(z)$  is real and of absolute value  $< 1$ . These points  $z$  have at least one finite limit point  $z_0$ . For otherwise their number would be countable and hence  $f(z)$  could not assume all values in the interval  $-1 < w < 1$  whose cardinality is that of the continuum.  $f(z_0)$  is real, and so is

$$f'(z_0) = \lim_{z \rightarrow z_0} \frac{f(z) - f(z_0)}{z - z_0},$$

where we are free to choose for  $z$  real values for which  $f(z)$  is also real. Similarly we can demonstrate that all the coefficients in the expansion of  $f(z)$  in powers of  $z - z_0$  are real, and by continuation of the power series it follows that  $f(z)$  is real for all real  $z$ : Contradiction.

**171.** Such functions do not exist. For assume that the relation in question is satisfied. If  $f(z)$  is identically 0, then obviously also  $f_1(z), f_2(z), \dots, f_n(z)$  are identically 0. If  $f(z)$  is not identically 0, we may assume that  $f(z)$  does not vanish anywhere in  $\mathfrak{D}$  (if necessary we may replace  $\mathfrak{D}$  by a sub-domain). Hence  $f_\nu(z)f(z)^{-1}$  is regular in  $\mathfrak{D}$  and the function

$$\left| \frac{f_1(z)}{f(z)} \right| + \left| \frac{f_2(z)}{f(z)} \right| + \dots + \left| \frac{f_n(z)}{f(z)} \right| = 1$$

also obtains its maximum in the interior of  $\mathfrak{D}$ . Hence [III 300]

$$f_\nu(z)f(z)^{-1} = \text{const.}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n.$$

**172.** Such functions do not exist. For if we confine ourselves to a sub-domain of  $\mathfrak{D}$  where  $g(z) \neq 0$  and  $\sqrt{g(z)} = \varphi(z)$  is regular, then we have  $|g(z)| = |\varphi(z)|^2$ . By assumption  $|\varphi(z)|^2$  is a regular harmonic function, i.e. [III 87]

$$\left( \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial y^2} \right) |\varphi(x + iy)|^2 = 0.$$

By III 58 we hence deduce that  $\varphi(z) = \text{const.}$ ,  $g(z) = \text{const.}$ ,  $f(z) = \text{const.}$

**172.1.** [Cf. G. Pólya, problem: Jber. deutsch. Math. Ver., Section 2, 35, p. 48 (1926). Solution by H. Kneser, op. cit. 35, p. 119 (1926), and by N. Tchebotarev, op. cit. 36, pp. 40–41 (1927).]

(1) If  $z_1 \neq z_2$  and  $g(z_1) = g(z_2) = 0$ , the convexity implies that  $g(z) = 0$  along the line segment that joins  $z_1$  and  $z_2$ , and so  $g(z) = 0$  identically.

(2) If  $g(z)$  has a unique zero  $z_0$ , let  $\delta$  be the minimum of  $|g(z)|$  on the circle  $|z - z_0| = 1$ . The convexity implies that  $|g(z)| > \delta$  for  $|z - z_0| > 1$  and so  $g(z)$  must be a polynomial having a unique, possibly multiple, zero at the point  $z_0$ .

(3) If  $g(z)$  never vanishes,  $\log g(z)$  is an entire function. The points where  $|g(z)| = e^a$  form the boundary line  $L$  of a convex domain where  $|g(z)| \leq e^a$ . By III 191,  $\Re \log g(z)$  varies monotonically when  $z$  moves along  $L$ . Hence  $\log g(z)$  can take no value more than once and so it must be a linear function of  $z$ .

**173.** Let  $h(z)$  be an entire function.  $f(z) = e^{h(z)}$  and  $g(z) = e^{-h(z)}$  satisfy the conditions with  $a = 1$ ,  $b = -1$ ,  $c = 0$  for

$$\frac{e^h - 1}{e^{-h} - 1} = -e^h, \quad \frac{e^h + 1}{e^{-h} + 1} = e^h, \quad \frac{e^h - 0}{e^{-h} - 0} = e^{2h}$$

are entire functions with no zeros.—Note that there do not exist two distinct entire functions of finite order that have the same  $a$ -,  $b$ -,  $c$ - and  $d$ - points ( $a, b, c, d$  all distinct). [G. Pólya: *Nyt Tidsskr. for Math. (B)* 32, p. 21 (1921).]

**174.** There exists such a function  $G(z)$ . An even more stringent condition can be satisfied: Not only  $G^{(n)}(n)$ , but also the lower order derivatives  $G(n)$ ,  $G'(n)$ ,  $G''(n)$ , ...,  $G^{(n-1)}(n)$  can be arbitrarily prescribed, for  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ . In fact it is more appropriate to discuss the solution to a more general interpolation problem for entire functions; see **174.1**.

**174.1.** There exists an entire function  $h(z)$  that has zeros of order  $m_n$  at the points  $z_n$ ,  $n=1, 2, \dots$ , and no other zeros (see Hurwitz-Courant, pp. 120–124, or Ahlfors, p. 157). It has an expansion of the form

$$h(z) = (z - z_n)^{m_n} (h_{n,0} + h_{n,1}(z - z_n) + h_{n,2}(z - z_n)^2 + \dots),$$

where  $h_{n,0} \neq 0$  for  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ . According to the condition that we are required to satisfy

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{f(z)}{h(z)} &= \frac{1}{(z - z_n)^{m_n}} \frac{w_{n,0} + w_{n,1}(z - z_n) + \dots + w_{n,m_n-1}(z - z_n)^{m_n-1} + \dots}{h_{n,0} + h_{n,1}(z - z_n) + \dots + h_{n,m_n-1}(z - z_n)^{m_n-1} + \dots} \\ &= P_n\left(\frac{1}{z - z_n}\right) + f_n(z), \end{aligned}$$

where  $f_n(z)$  is an analytic function, regular at the point  $z_n$ , and  $P_n(t)$  is a polynomial without constant term, of degree not exceeding  $m_n$ , that is completely determined by the numbers  $w_{n,k}$  and  $h_{n,k}$ , where  $0 \leq k < m_n$ . There exists a meromorphic function  $m(z)$  that has no poles except at the points  $z_1, z_2, z_3, \dots$  and whose singular part at the point  $z_n$  is precisely  $P_n[1/(z - z_n)]$  (see Hurwitz-Courant, pp. 108–110, or Ahlfors, pp. 149–150). The required entire function is

$$f(z) = m(z)h(z).$$

**174.2.** Let  $G(z)$  have the zeros  $z_n$  of order  $m_n$ ,  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ , and no other zeros. Therefore  $F(z_n) \neq 0$ . The proposition requires that  $1 - F(z)f(z)$  should have a zero of order not less than  $m_n$  at the point  $z_n$ , that is

$$(1 - F(z)f(z))^{(k)} = 0$$

for  $z = z_n$  and  $0 \leq k < m_n$ . These  $m_n$  equations determine uniquely

$$f(z_n) = 1/F(z_n), f'(z_n), \dots, f^{(m_n-1)}(z_n)$$

for  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ . But there exists an entire function  $f(z)$  that interpolates the values so determined [**174.1**]. Now

$$\frac{1 - F(z)f(z)}{G(z)} = g(z)$$

is an entire function.

**175.** The first inequality is obvious. Further from

$$|a_n| \leq \frac{M(r + \delta)}{(r + \delta)^n}, \quad n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$$

it follows that

$$\mathfrak{M}(r) \leq M(r+\delta) \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \left( \frac{r}{r+\delta} \right)^n = \frac{r+\delta}{\delta} M(r+\delta).$$

**176.** [E. Landau.] We have [175]

$$[M(r)]^n \leq \mathfrak{M}_n(r) \leq \frac{r+\delta}{\delta} [M(r+\delta)]^n,$$

and hence

$$M(r) \leq [\mathfrak{M}_n(r)]^{\frac{1}{n}} \leq \left( \frac{r+\delta}{\delta} \right)^{\frac{1}{n}} M(r+\delta).$$

Let  $n$  tend to  $\infty$ ;  $\delta > 0$  is arbitrarily small,  $M(r)$  is a continuous function of  $r$  as can easily be seen from the definition.

**177.** [E. Landau.]  $(1/n) \log \mathfrak{M}_n(r)$  is a convex function of  $\log r$  [II 123]. The limit of convex curves is convex [176].

**178.** [I. Schur.] The function

$$\varepsilon^{-1} M f[\varepsilon M^{-1} f(z)] = z + A_2 z^2 + A_3 z^3 + \cdots + A_n z^n + \cdots$$

is schlicht and its absolute value  $< M^2$  for  $|z| < 1$ . The coefficient  $A_n$  is a polynomial of degree  $(n-1)$  in  $\varepsilon$ , and the constant term of this polynomial  $= a_n$  and its leading coefficient  $= M^{-n+1} a_n$ . If we substitute successively in place of  $\varepsilon$  the  $(n-1)$ th roots of unity, we obtain by addition and by applying the inequality  $|A_n| \leq \omega_n[M^2]$ ,

$$|a_n + M^{-n+1} a_n| \leq \omega_n[M^2], \quad \text{i.e.} \quad \omega_n[M] \leq \frac{\omega_n[M^2]}{1 + M^{-n+1}}.$$

Here  $\omega_n[M]$  denotes the upper bound of  $|a_n|$  under the assumptions of 160. Applying this result repeatedly, we obtain, since  $\omega_n[M] \leq \omega_n$ ,

$$\omega_n[M] \leq \omega_n \prod_{v=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{1 + M^{(-n+1)2^v}} = \omega_n (1 - M^{-n+1})$$

[solution I 14].

**179.** Let  $m$  be an arbitrary positive integer. Then  $\varphi(m\vartheta)$  is a trigonometric polynomial of  $m$ th order that satisfies the assumptions. Thus we have for all values of  $\vartheta$

$$|m\varphi'(m\vartheta)| \leq mn + K, \quad \text{i.e.} \quad |\varphi'(\vartheta)| \leq n + \frac{K}{m}$$

Let  $m$  tend to  $\infty$ .

**180.** [H. Poincaré: Amer. J. Math. 14, p. 214 (1892), cf. H. Bohr: Nyt Tidsskr. for Math. (B) 27, pp. 73–78 (1916).] Determine positive integers  $\lambda_1, \lambda_2, \dots, \lambda_n, \dots$  satisfying

$$\lambda_1 = 1, \quad \lambda_n > \lambda_{n-1}, \quad \left( \frac{n}{n-1} \right)^{\lambda_n} > \varphi(n+1), \quad n = 2, 3, 4, \dots$$

The function

$$g(z) = \varphi(2) + 1 + \sum_{n=2}^{\infty} \left( \frac{z}{n-1} \right)^{\lambda_n}$$

is an entire function. For  $n \leq x \leq n+1$ ,  $n \geq 2$ , we have

$$g(x) \geq g(n) > \left(\frac{n}{n-1}\right)^{\lambda_n} > \varphi(n+1) \geq \varphi(x).$$

**181.** Example:  $\sin \sqrt{z}/\sqrt{z} = 1 - z/3! + z^2/5! - \dots$ ; rational entire functions (that are not constant) tend to  $\infty$  in all directions.

**182.** [H. von Koch: *Ark. för Mat., Astron. och Fys.* **1**, pp. 627–641 (1903).] Example:  $e^z + z$ . In the proof we must distinguish between the two cases:  $-\pi/2 < \arg z < \pi/2$ ,  $\pi/2 \leq \arg z \leq 3\pi/2$ . Uniform convergence is not possible. [Hurwitz-Courant, p. 96.]

**183.** [Cf. J. Malmquist: *Acta Math.* **29**, pp. 203–215 (1905).] [III **158**, III **160**.]—An entire function of finite order cannot behave in this manner [III **330**].

**184.** [G. Mittag-Leffler: *Proceedings of the 3rd International Congress of Mathematicians in Heidelberg 1904*. Leipzig: B. G. Teubner 1905, pp. 258–264. *Atti del IV. Congr. internaz. dei mat. Roma 1908*, **1**. Rome: Tip. della Acc. dei Lincei 1909, pp. 67–85.]

$$e^{-E(z)} - e^{-E(2z)} \quad \text{or} \quad E(z)e^{-E(z)},$$

where  $E(z)$  denotes the function considered in **183**.

**185.** The function  $E(z)$  [III **158**] has either no negative zeros or else only finitely many [III **160**]. In the first case set

$$F(z) = E(z)$$

and in the second case

$$F(z) = \frac{E(z)}{(z + \alpha_1)(z + \alpha_2) \dots (z + \alpha_l)},$$

where  $-\alpha_1, -\alpha_2, \dots, -\alpha_l$  denote all the negative zeros of  $E(z)$ . In any case  $F(z)$  is real and of constant sign for real negative  $z$ . Hence we have

$$i \int_0^\infty F(-t^2) dt = C \neq 0.$$

The existence of the integral follows from III **160**. The odd entire function

$$g(z) = C^{-1} \int_0^z F(z^2) dz$$

furnishes an example of a function with the required properties, as can be shown by displacing the path of integration [III **160**].

**186.** [G. Pólya: *Interméd. des math. Series 2*, **1**, pp. 81–82 (1922).] Assume  $0 < \alpha < 2\pi$  and let  $g(z)$  be the odd entire function constructed in **185**. The function

$$\frac{1 + g(\sqrt{z})g(\sqrt{e^{i\alpha}z})}{2}$$

is an entire function and, if the sign of the two square roots is appropriately chosen, tends to 1 in the sector  $0 < \arg z < 2\pi - \alpha$  and to 0 in the sector  $2\pi - \alpha < \arg z < 2\pi$ . By means of a suitable linear combination of such functions one obtains an example of a function with the required properties.



**187.** No. For the set of all possible divisions has a higher cardinality ( $2^c$ ) than that of the continuum ( $c$ ), while the set of all entire functions has cardinality  $c^{\aleph_0} = c$ , i.e. that of the continuum. [What limits along the rays emanating from the origin can be prescribed for an entire function? See A. Roth: *Commentarii Math. Helvet.* **11**, pp. 77–125 (1938), especially theorem IV(b).]

**188.** If there existed a continuous curve  $L$  going to infinity, along which  $e^z$  approached a limit different from 0 and  $\infty$ , then for every  $\varepsilon$ ,  $\varepsilon > 0$ , there would exist a point  $z_0$  on  $L$ , such that  $|\arg e^z - \arg e^{z_0}| < \varepsilon$  for all points  $z$  past the point  $z_0$  on the curve  $L$ , where the determination of the argument is made appropriately.

If  $\varepsilon < \pi$ , then, since the argument depends continuously on  $z$ , it follows that  $|\Im z - \Im z_0| < \varepsilon$ , and hence  $L$ , from the point  $z_0$  on, would have to lie in a strip of width  $2\varepsilon$  parallel to the real axis. But in such a strip  $z$  could approach  $\infty$  only in one of two ways, either such that  $e^z$  tends to  $\infty$  or such that  $e^z$  tends to 0.

**189.** The function  $\int_0^z e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} dx = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^n}{n!} \frac{z^{2n+1}}{2^n(2n+1)}$  tends to  $\infty$ , as  $z$  tends to infinity along the positive or negative imaginary axis. Further it converges uniformly to  $\sqrt{\pi/2}$  and  $-\sqrt{\pi/2}$  as  $z$  tends to infinity in the sectors  $-\pi/4 \leq \arg z \leq \pi/4$  and  $3\pi/4 \leq \arg z \leq 5\pi/4$ , respectively. For we have for  $z = re^{i\theta}$ ,  $r > 0$ ,  $-\pi/4 \leq \theta \leq \pi/4$ ,

$$\int_0^{re^{i\theta}} e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} dx = \int_0^r e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} dx + \int_r^{re^{i\theta}} e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} dx,$$

and the absolute value of the second term is less than  $r \int_0^{\pi/4} e^{-\frac{r^2}{2} \cos 2\theta} d\theta$  [solution III 151]. If there were a continuous curve going to infinity along which the function in question converged to a finite limit different from  $\pm\sqrt{\pi/2}$ , then this curve at a sufficient distance from the origin would have no point in the above sectors and also no point on the imaginary axis. We may thus assume for example that it lies entirely in the sector  $\pi/4 < \arg z < \pi/2$ . However in that case the function would be bounded in the region between the curve and the ray  $\arg z = \pi/4$  [use a generalization of III 330 which bears the same relation to it as III 324 bears to III 322], and hence [III 340] it would also have to converge to  $\sqrt{\pi/2}$  along the above curve. [Cf. A. Hurwitz: *C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris)* **143**, p. 879 (1906) and **144**, p. 65 (1907).]

**190.** The given function converges to  $\infty$  along the  $2n$  rays  $\arg z = (2k-1)[\pi/(2n)]$ ,  $k=1, 2, \dots, 2n$ , and to finite limits along the bisectors of the angles of the  $2n$  sectors determined by these rays. More precisely, it converges along the ray  $\arg z = k(\pi/n)$  to the limit

$$e^{ik\frac{\pi}{n}} \int_0^{\infty} \frac{\sin(x^n)}{x^n} dx = e^{ik\frac{\pi}{n}} \frac{1}{n-1} \Gamma\left(\frac{1}{n}\right) \sin\left(\frac{n-1}{n} \frac{\pi}{2}\right), \quad k=1, 2, \dots, 2n.$$

[III 152]. The proof then proceeds similarly as in solution 189.

**191.** [F. Iversen: *Öfversikt av Finska Vetenskaps-Soc. Förh.* **58(A)**, No. 3 (1915–1916).] Set  $\delta_m = 2(1 - \varepsilon_m)$ . Then  $\delta_m = 0$  or 4 according as  $\varepsilon_m = +1$  or  $\varepsilon_m = -1$  respectively. If  $z$  tends to infinity along the ray

$$\arg z = 2\pi \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \frac{\delta_m}{8^{m+1}}$$

then we have for  $m=0, 1, 2, \dots$

$$\arg z^{8^m} = 2\pi \left( \frac{\delta_m}{8} + \frac{\delta_{m+1}}{8^2} + \dots \right).$$

Since  $\delta_m$  can only assume the values 0 and 4, it follows that  $z^{8^m}$  lies either in the sector  $(0, \pi/4)$  or in the sector  $(\pi, 5\pi/4)$  according as  $\varepsilon_m = +1$  or  $\varepsilon_m = -1$ , respectively. Hence [189] we have, setting  $\gamma(z) = \sqrt{2/\pi} \int_0^z e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} dx$ ,

$$\lim \gamma(z^{8^m}) = \varepsilon_m.$$

Moreover [solution 189] there exists a number  $G$  such that for all  $z$  on the above ray and for all values of  $m$  we have

$$|\gamma(z^{8^m})| < G$$

Now take  $\varepsilon > 0$  and  $m$  so large that we have  $a_{m+1} + a_{m+2} + \dots < \varepsilon$ . As  $z$  tends to infinity in the special manner described above, the function

$$a_0\gamma(z) + a_1\gamma(z^8) + \dots + a_m\gamma(z^{8^m})$$

converges to the value  $\varepsilon_0 a_0 + \varepsilon_1 a_1 + \dots + \varepsilon_m a_m$ . The remainder is in absolute value  $< G\varepsilon$  for all  $z$ .

**192.** Let the entire function  $g(z)$  in question be of order  $\lambda$ , where  $\lambda$  is finite,  $\lambda > 0$ , i.e.  $|g(z)| < A e^{B|z|^{\lambda+\varepsilon}}$ , where  $\varepsilon, A, B$ , are constants,  $\varepsilon > 0, A > 0, B > 0$ . Furthermore let  $\lim g(z) = a$  as  $z$  tends to infinity along a ray emanating from the origin, and let  $\lim g(z) = b \neq a$  as  $z$  tends to infinity along another ray emanating from the origin. Let the angle between the two rays be  $\gamma$ . It follows from III 330 [ $\gamma = \beta - \alpha$ ] that, if  $(\lambda + \varepsilon)\gamma < \pi$ ,  $g(z)$  remains bounded in the sector between the two rays. However, by III 340 we would then have  $a = b$ : Contradiction. Thus we have  $(\lambda + \varepsilon)\gamma \geq \pi$  for arbitrary positive  $\varepsilon$ , i.e.  $\lambda\gamma \geq \pi, \lambda \geq \pi/\gamma$ . By assumption there exists at least one number  $\gamma$  satisfying  $\gamma \leq 2\pi/n$ , i.e.  $\lambda \geq n/2$ . [For further results see T. Carleman: Ark. för Mat. Astron. och Fys. 15, No. 10 (1920) and L. Ahlfors: Ann. Soc. Sci. Fenn., Nova Series A, 1, No. 9 (1930) (proof of a conjecture by A. Denjoy).]

**193.** [Cf. F. Iversen: Thèse, Helsingfors 1914.] Let  $g(z)$  be the given entire function and let  $z^{-1}[g(z) - g(0)] = h(z)$  be not constant. Denote by  $\Re$  a connected region at whose finite boundary points  $|h(z)| = 1$  and in whose interior  $|h(z)| > 1$ . The point  $z = \infty$  belongs to the boundary of  $\Re$  [III 338]. Along a line that terminates at  $z = \infty$  and lies in  $\Re$  or runs along the boundary of  $\Re$ , we have

$$|g(z)| \geq |zh(z)| - |g(0)| \geq |z| - |g(0)|.$$

**194.** Let  $m$  be the number of zeros of  $g(z) - a$ . Determine the polynomial  $P(z)$  of degree  $m$  such that  $[P(z)]/[g(z) - a]$  is regular in the whole  $z$ -plane, and then the polynomial  $Q(z)$  of degree at most  $m$  such that also

$$\frac{1}{z^{m+1}} \left( \frac{P(z)}{g(z) - a} - Q(z) \right)$$

is regular in the whole  $z$ -plane. There hence exists [193] a continuous curve going to infinity such that at points sufficiently far along it we have

$$\left| \frac{P(z)}{g(z)-a} - Q(z) \right| > |z|^{m+1}.$$

We have there  $|Q(z)| < A|z|^m$ ,  $|P(z)| < B|z|^m$ , where  $A$  and  $B$  are positive constants, and hence

$$\left| \frac{P(z)}{g(z)-a} \right| > |z|^{m+1} - A|z|^m, \quad \left| \frac{1}{g(z)-a} \right| > \frac{|z| - A}{B}.$$

**195.** [T. Carleman.] Assume  $f(z) \leq M$  in the annular region  $0 < |z| < 1$ . If  $|z_0| = \frac{1}{2}$ , then by Cauchy's theorem we obtain

$$\left| \frac{f^{(n)}(z_0)}{n!} \right| \leq \frac{M}{(\frac{1}{2})^n}.$$

Since  $f^{(n)}(z)$  was assumed to be *bounded*, we have [III 337]  $|f^{(n)}(z)| \leq n! 2^n M$  in the annular region  $0 < |z| \leq \frac{1}{2}$ , and in particular for  $z = \frac{1}{4}$ . Hence we have that

$$f(z) = f\left(\frac{1}{4}\right) + \frac{f'\left(\frac{1}{4}\right)}{1!} \left(z - \frac{1}{4}\right) + \dots + \frac{f^{(n)}\left(\frac{1}{4}\right)}{n!} \left(z - \frac{1}{4}\right)^n + \dots$$

is convergent for  $|z - \frac{1}{4}| < \frac{1}{2}$ , and hence in a circular disc covering the point  $z = 0$ .

**196.** Let  $w_v \neq 0$ ,  $v = 1, 2, 3, \dots$  and

$$g(z) = \prod_{v=1}^{\infty} \left(1 - \frac{z}{w_v}\right), \quad g^*(z) = \prod_{v=1}^{\infty} \left(1 + \frac{z}{|w_v|}\right), \quad M^*(r) = g^*(r), \\ m^*(r) = |g^*(-r)|.$$

Then we clearly have for  $|z| = r$

$$m^*(r) \leq |g(z)| \leq M^*(r).$$

Let us take the most unfavourable case and then we may assume without loss of generality that all the zeros of  $g(z)$  are real and negative, i.e.

$$g(z) = \prod_{v=1}^{\infty} \left(1 + \frac{z}{|w_v|}\right).$$

The assertion then may be stated as follows: For all sufficiently large  $r$ :  $g(r) < e^{\epsilon r}$  and for arbitrarily large  $r$ :  $|g(-r)| > e^{-\epsilon r}$  where  $\epsilon$  is a given positive number. The first inequality is obtained as in the case  $\lambda = 1$  of solution 58. To prove the second inequality, apply theorem III 332 to  $g(z)g(-z)$  considered as a function of  $z^2$ . We have for arbitrarily large  $r$

$$|g(r)g(-r)| > 1, \quad |g(-r)| > \frac{1}{g(r)} > e^{-\epsilon r}.$$

**197.** [A. Wiman: Ark. för Mat., Astron. och. Fys. 2, No. 14 (1905); cf. E. Lindelöf: Palermo Rend. 25, p. 228 (1908).] We assume that the zeros of the entire function  $g(z)$  considered, which according to Hadamard must be of genus zero [cf. remarks preceding 58], are real and negative [solution 196]. We consider the function  $g(z) e^{-z^{\lambda-\epsilon}}$  in the sector  $-\pi < \vartheta < +\pi$  in which it is analytic.

This function is continuous for  $-\pi \leq \vartheta \leq +\pi$  and assumes arbitrarily large values on the positive real axis [assumption concerning  $M(r)$ ]. If it were bounded on the real negative axis, for example if it were  $\leq 1$ , then it would be bounded everywhere [III 332]. This is not the case as we have just noted, and hence we must have for certain arbitrarily large values of  $r$

$$m(r) e^{-r^{\lambda-s} \cos \pi(\lambda-s)} = |g(-r) e^{-(-r)^{\lambda-s}}| > 1,$$

q.e.d. [A more precise and more comprehensive result (encompassing the case  $\lambda < 1$ ), stated by J. E. Littlewood and first proved by A. Wiman and G. Valiron, was also proved by G. Pólya: J. Lond. Math. Soc. 1, pp. 78–86 (1926).]

**198.** [Ch. H. Müntz, cf. Math. Abhd. dedicated to H. A. Schwarz. Berlin: J. Springer 1914, pp. 303–312. T. Carleman: Ark. för Mat., Astron. och Fys. 17, No. 9, p. 15 (1923).] The integral

$$\int_0^1 t^z h(t) dt = f(z)$$

is convergent, if  $z$  lies in the half-plane  $\Re z > -1$ , and  $f(z)$  is analytic there. For  $\Re z \geq 0$  the integral is proper and  $|f(z)|$  is bounded,  $|f(z)| \leq \int_0^1 |h(t)| dt$ . If there are infinitely many  $\lambda_n$  which are  $\leq 1$ , then they must have a point of accumulation on the line segment  $0 \leq z \leq 1$ , and  $f(z)$  is identically equal to 0. If all the  $\lambda_n$  with the exception of a finite number are  $\geq 1$ , then from the divergence of  $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \lambda_n^{-1}$  there follows again that  $f(z)$  is identically equal to 0 [III 298]. At any rate we have that  $f(n) = \int_0^1 t^n h(t) dt = 0$ ,  $n=0, 1, 2, \dots$  [II 139].

**199.** [T. Carleman.] The function  $\int_0^1 g(zt) h(t) dt$  is entire and of order  $\leq \lambda$ , and hence by the assumptions the function

$$\gamma(z) = \frac{\int_0^1 g(zt) h(t) dt}{g(z)}$$

is also an entire function and of order  $\leq \lambda$ . Let  $M(r)$  be the maximum of  $|g(z)|$  on the circumference of the circle  $|z|=r$ . The minimum of  $|\gamma(z)|$  on the circumference of the circle  $|z|=r$  is

$$\leq \frac{M(\alpha r)}{M(r)} \int_0^{\alpha} |h(t)| dt + \int_{\alpha}^1 |h(t)| dt,$$

where  $0 < \alpha < 1$ , and  $\alpha$  is arbitrarily close to 1, and hence it converges to 0 as  $r \rightarrow \infty$  [24], although it should be unbounded if the order of  $\gamma(z)$  were  $> 0$  [cf. 197]. Hence  $\gamma(z)$  is a constant and moreover equal to 0. Hence all the coefficients of  $\int_0^1 g(zt) h(t) dt$  are equal to 0. Hence by assumption  $\int_0^1 t^n h(t) dt = 0$ ,  $n=0, 1, 2, \dots$  [II 139].

**200.** [T. Carleman.] Let  $g(z) = \prod_{v=1}^{\infty} [1 - (z/w_v)]$ ,  $w_v \neq 0$  (it is sufficient to investigate this case). Then we have  $|g(iy)|^2 = \prod_{v=1}^{\infty} [1 + (y^2/w_v^2)]$ . From this formula it follows that  $\lim_{y \rightarrow \infty} |g(i\alpha y)|/|g(iy)| = 0$ , where  $\alpha$  is a fixed number,  $0 < \alpha < 1$  [24]. Hence the function

$$\gamma(z) = \frac{\int_0^1 g(zt) h(t) dt}{g(z)}$$

tends to 0 along the positive and along the negative imaginary axis. Moreover it is entire by assumption. On all sufficiently large circles  $|z|=r$ , we have  $|g(z)| < e^{\sigma r}$  and on certain arbitrarily large circles  $|g(z)| > e^{-\sigma r}$  [196]. Moreover  $|g(re^{\frac{i\pi}{4}})| > e^{-\sigma r}$ ,  $|g(re^{\frac{3i\pi}{4}})| > e^{-\sigma r}$  for all sufficiently large  $r$ . For we have

$$|g(z)g(-z)|^2 = \prod_{v=1}^{\infty} \left| 1 - \frac{z^2}{w_v^2} \right|^2 = \prod_{v=1}^{\infty} \left( 1 - \frac{r^2 \cos 2\vartheta}{w_v^2} + \frac{r^4}{w_v^4} \right) \geq 1,$$

for  $\vartheta = \pi/4, 3\pi/4$ .

Apply III 325, slightly modified, to the function  $\gamma(z)$  in the two half-planes  $\Re z \geq 0$  and  $\Re z \leq 0$ . Assumption (1) must be extended in the sense of III 323. The ray  $\vartheta=0$  is to be replaced by  $\vartheta=\pi/4$  and  $\vartheta=3\pi/4$  respectively in the two cases. [Concluding remark in solution III 325.] We deduce that  $|\gamma(z)| \leq \text{const.}$  in the whole plane, and hence  $\gamma(z) \equiv \text{const.}$ ,  $\gamma(z) \equiv 0$ . Hence we have  $\int_0^1 t^n h(t) dt = 0$ , if  $g(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n z^n$  and  $a_n \geq 0$ . However since the roots are real, at least one of  $a_n, a_{n+1}$  is different from 0 [V 166]. Finally apply 198.

201. [S. Bernstein: C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris) 176, pp. 1603–1605 (1923).] From  $|a_n| \leq K\rho^n$  it follows that

$$|F(z)| \leq \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{K\rho^n |z|^n}{n!} = K e^{\rho|z|}.$$

The function  $F(z) e^{i\rho z}$  satisfies conditions analogous to those given in III 322 in the two sectors  $0 \leq \vartheta \leq \pi/2$ ,  $\pi/2 \leq \vartheta \leq \pi$ , for we have (for  $x, y$  real,  $y > 0$ )

$$|F(x) e^{i\rho x}| \leq M, \quad |F(iy) e^{-\rho y}| \leq K.$$

If we now consider  $F(z) e^{-i\rho z}$  in the lower half-plane, we find in view of III 322 that in the whole plane

$$|F(x+iy)| \leq L e^{\rho|y|},$$

where  $L = \max(M, K)$ . It follows [III 165] that, for real  $x$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} (*) \quad \left| \frac{F'(x)}{\sin \rho x} \right| &= \left| \frac{\rho F(x) \cos \rho x}{\sin^2 \rho x} - \rho \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^n F\left(\frac{n\pi}{\rho}\right)}{(\rho x - n\pi)^2} \right| \\ &\leq \frac{\rho |F(x) \cos \rho x|}{\sin^2 \rho x} + \rho M \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{1}{(\rho x - n\pi)^2} \\ &= \frac{\rho |F(x) \cos \rho x| + \rho M}{\sin^2 \rho x}. \end{aligned}$$

From this we firstly deduce that  $|F'[\pi/(2\rho)]| \leq \rho M$ . Now we may apply the same proof to the function  $F(z + x_0 - [\pi/(2\rho)])$ , where  $x_0$  is a real constant, since

$$\left| F\left(z + x_0 - \frac{\pi}{2\rho}\right) \right| \leq K e^{\rho|x_0 - \frac{\pi}{2\rho}|} e^{\rho|z|}.$$

If in (\*) we have the equality sign, then we obtain  $(-1)^n F(n\pi) = A$  (independent of  $n$ ) and

$$\frac{d}{dz} \left( \frac{F(z)}{\sin \rho z} \right) = -\frac{\rho A}{\sin^2 \rho z}.$$

**202.**  $F'(z)$  is a function of the same kind as  $F(z)$ . By repeated application of **201** it follows that for real values of  $x$

$$|F'(x)| \leq M\rho, \quad |F''(x)| \leq M\rho^2, \dots, \quad |F^{(n)}(x)| \leq M\rho^n, \dots,$$

and hence

$$|F(x+iy)| \leq \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{|F^{(n)}(x)|}{n!} |y|^n \leq M e^{\rho|y|}.$$

**203.** The conditions of III **166** are satisfied [solution **201**]. We have for real  $z$ ,  $\rho|z| < \pi/2$ ,

$$\frac{|G(z)|}{2\rho|z| \cos \rho z} \leq \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{M}{((n+\frac{1}{2})\pi)^2 - \rho^2 z^2} = M \frac{\sin \rho z}{2\rho z \cos \rho z} \leq M \frac{\rho|z|}{2\rho|z| \cos \rho z}.$$

(For  $z=0$  we set  $G(z)/z = G'(0)$ ,  $(\sin \rho z)/\rho z = 1$ .) If in this inequality we have equality, then it follows that

$$(-1)^n G\left(\frac{(n+\frac{1}{2})\pi}{\rho}\right) = cM, \quad |c|=1, \quad n=0, 1, 2, \dots, \quad z=0.$$

For  $\rho|z| \geq \pi/2$  the above inequality (even with  $<$ ) is trivial.

**204.** Applying **203** to

$$G(z) = \frac{F(z_0+z) - F(z_0-z)}{2},$$

where  $z_0$  is real, gives **201**. (Cf. VI **82**.)

**205.** Let  $\lambda < \mu < 2\lambda$ . The function  $f(z)e^{iz^\mu}$  is bounded on the two rays  $\arg z=0$  and  $\arg z=\pi/(2\mu)$ , and hence [III **330**] also in the sector of aperture  $\pi/(2\mu) < \pi/(2\lambda) \leq \pi$  lying between them. We deduce that the function  $f(z)(\sin z^\mu)^{-1}$  is bounded on the two rays  $\arg z = -\pi/(2\mu)$  and  $\arg z = \pi/(2\mu)$ , and also on those arcs of the circles  $|z|^\mu = (n+\frac{1}{2})\pi$ ,  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ , that lie in the sector  $-\pi/(2\mu) \leq \arg z \leq \pi/(2\mu)$ . Hence we have

$$\frac{1}{2\pi i} \oint \frac{f(\zeta)}{\sin \zeta^\mu} \frac{d\zeta}{(\zeta-z)^2} = \frac{d}{dz} \left( \frac{f(z)}{\sin z^\mu} \right) + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^n f((n\pi)^{\frac{1}{\mu}})}{\mu(n\pi)^{1-\frac{1}{\mu}} (z - (n\pi)^{\frac{1}{\mu}})^2},$$

where the integral is taken in the positive sense along the boundary of the infinite sector

$$-\frac{\pi}{2\mu} < \arg z < \frac{\pi}{2\mu}, \quad |z| > \rho \quad \text{and} \quad 0 < \rho < \pi^{\frac{1}{\mu}}.$$

Since the series  $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n^{-1-\frac{1}{\mu}}$  is convergent and  $f(x)$  is bounded for  $x > 0$ , we deduce in view of I **182** that  $f'(x) = O(x^{\mu-1})$ , as  $x$  tends to infinity through the intervals  $((n+\frac{1}{2})\pi)^{\frac{1}{\mu}} \leq x \leq ((n+1-\frac{1}{2})\pi)^{\frac{1}{\mu}}$ ,  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ . With the aid of an analogous formula in which  $\sin z^\mu$  is replaced by  $\cos z^\mu$ , we can show that  $f'(x) = O(x^{\mu-1})$  also in the remaining intervals.

**\*206.** [G. Pólya, problem: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. Section 2, 35, p. 48 (1926). Solution by L. Tchakalov, op. cit. 37, pp. 30–33 (1928).]

**\*207.** [R. Nevalinna and G. Pólya, problem: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. Section 2, 40, p. 80 (1931). Solution by H. Schmidt, op. cit. 43, pp. 6–7 (1933).]

**\*208.** [G. Pólya, problem: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein., Section 2, 34, pp. 97–98 (1925). Solution by G. Szegő, op. cit. 35, pp. 86–89 (1926).]

**\*209.** [G. Pólya, problem: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein., Section 2, 40, pp. 80–81 (1931). Solutions op. cit. 43 (1933) by L. Tchakalov, pp. 10–11 and G. Szegő, pp. 11–13; comments by G. Pólya, pp. 67–69. See also R. E. A. C. Paley and Norbert Wiener: Fourier transforms in the complex domain, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloquium Publ. 19, New York 1934, pp. 81–83.]

**\*210.** [G. Pólya, problem: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein., Section 2, 40, p. 80 (1931). Solution by G. Szegő, op. cit. 43, pp. 7–9 (1933).] See *Picard's theorem*, for example in Ahlfors pp. 297–298, Hille Vol. II pp. 219–221 or Titchmarsh pp. 277–284. Cf. 194.

**\*211.** [G. Pólya, problem: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein., Section 2, 40, p. 81 (1931). Solutions op. cit. 43 by N. Obreschkov, pp. 13–15, G. Szegő, pp. 15–16, and N. Tchebotarev, pp. 16–17.]

**\*212.** [G. Pólya, problem: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein., Section 2, 40, p. 81 (1931). Solution by O. Szász, op. cit. 43, pp. 20–23 (1933). For a stronger result, see Paley and Wiener, op. cit. 209, pp. 83–85. See also Norman Levinson: Gap and Density Theorems. Amer. Math. Soc. Colloquium Publications 26, New York 1940, pp. 3–5.]

## Part Five. The Location of Zeros

1. [For this whole chapter cf. E. Laguerre: Oeuvres, 1. Paris: Gauthier-Villars 1898.] Obvious.

2. Consider the deletion of a term  $a_\mu \neq 0$  and take for example the case that

$$a_{\mu-k} \neq 0, \quad a_{\mu-k+1} = \dots = a_{\mu-1} = a_{\mu+1} = \dots = a_{\mu+l-1} = 0, \quad a_{\mu+l} \neq 0.$$

The number of changes of sign in the sequence  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_{\mu-1}, a_{\mu+1}, \dots$  is less by two than the number of changes of sign in the sequence  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_{\mu-1}, a_\mu, a_{\mu+1}, \dots$  if

$$\operatorname{sgn} a_{\mu-k} = -\operatorname{sgn} a_\mu = \operatorname{sgn} a_{\mu+l},$$

while the two numbers are equal for all other combinations of signs. In case  $a_\mu$  is the first or the last non-vanishing term, with its deletion one or no change of sign of the sequence is lost.

3. The two sequences  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_\mu, a_{\mu+1}, \dots$  and  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_\mu, b, a_{\mu+1}, \dots$  have the same number of changes of sign in the following three cases: (1)  $b=0$ , (2)  $\operatorname{sgn} b = \operatorname{sgn} a_\mu$ , (3)  $\operatorname{sgn} b = \operatorname{sgn} a_{\mu+1}$ : Obvious!

4.  $a_0, a_0+a_1, a_1, a_1+a_2, a_2, a_2+a_3, \dots, a_\mu, a_\mu+a_{\mu+1}, a_{\mu+1}, \dots$  has the same number of changes of sign as  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_\mu, \dots$  since, if we set  $a_\mu+a_{\mu+1}=b$ , one of the three cases mentioned in solution 3 must occur. Make use of 2.

5. [A. Hurwitz.] The number of changes of sign does not increase as we consider consecutively the sequences

$$\begin{array}{cccccccc} a_0, & a_1, & a_2, & a_3, & \dots, & a_l, & a_{l+1}, & \dots \\ a_0, & a_0+a_1, & a_1+a_2, & a_2+a_3, & \dots, & a_{l-1}+a_l, & a_l+a_{l+1}, & \dots \\ a_0, & a_0+a_1, & a_0+2a_1+a_2, & a_1+2a_2+a_3, & \dots, & a_{l-1}+2a_l+a_{l+1}, & \dots \\ a_0, & a_0+a_1, & a_0+2a_1+a_2, & a_0+3a_1+3a_2+a_3, & \dots \end{array}$$

from the top down. [Solution 4.] But the  $n$ th sequence constructed in this manner agrees in its first  $n$  terms with the sequence to be discussed. Hence *these* terms cannot have more than  $C$  changes of sign. Since  $n$  is arbitrary we obtain the required result.

6. Obvious, even in the case of multiple zeros.

7. Obvious.

8. Since  $f(x)$  is analytic, the interval  $(a, b)$  contains only finitely many zeros. Passing through a zero the sign of  $f(x)$  does or does not reverse, according as the zero in question is of odd or even multiplicity, respectively.

9. Obvious. Cf. 8.

10. Take  $\varepsilon > 0$ ,  $\varepsilon$  sufficiently small.

$$\begin{aligned} f(a+\varepsilon) &= f(a+\varepsilon) - f(a) = \varepsilon f'(a+\varepsilon_1), & 0 < \varepsilon_1 < \varepsilon, \\ -f(b-\varepsilon) &= f(b) - f(b-\varepsilon) = \varepsilon f'(b-\varepsilon_2), & 0 < \varepsilon_2 < \varepsilon. \end{aligned}$$





**16.** In the case of infinitely many zeros the assertion is obvious [10].—Let  $x_i$  be the last zero of  $f(x)$ . In the interval  $a \leq x \leq x_i$ ,  $f'(x)$  has at most one less zero than  $f(x)$  [12]. Since  $\lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} f(x) = \int_{x_i}^{\infty} f'(t) dt = 0$ ,  $f'(x)$  cannot be of constant sign in the interval  $x_i < x < \infty$ .

**17.** In the case of infinitely many indices of change the assertion is obvious [11]. Let the sequence  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$  have  $C$  changes of sign and let  $\nu_C + 1$  be the last index of change. The sequence

$$a_0, a_1 - a_0, \dots, a_{\nu_C+1} - a_{\nu_C}$$

has at least  $C$  changes of sign [solution 13, 15]. Moreover

$$\operatorname{sgn} a_{\nu_C+1} = \operatorname{sgn} (a_{\nu_C+1} - a_{\nu_C}) \neq 0.$$

Since the infinite series

$$a_{\nu_C+1} + (a_{\nu_C+2} - a_{\nu_C+1}) + (a_{\nu_C+3} - a_{\nu_C+2}) + \dots = 0$$

its terms different from zero cannot all have the same sign. (It is understood that there is, as in 15, one trivial exceptional case.)

**18.** Apply 12 or 16 to the function  $e^{\alpha x} f(x)$  [6]; its derivative is  $e^{\alpha x} [\alpha f(x) + f'(x)]$ .

**19.** Consider the sequences

$$\begin{array}{ccccccc} a_0, & a_1, & a_2, & \dots, & a_n, & \dots & \\ a_0, & a_1\alpha, & a_2\alpha^2, & \dots, & a_n\alpha^n, & \dots & \\ a_0, & a_1\alpha - a_0, & a_2\alpha^2 - a_1\alpha, & \dots, & a_n\alpha^n - a_{n-1}\alpha^{n-1}, & \dots & \\ a_0\alpha, & a_1\alpha - a_0, & a_2\alpha - a_1, & \dots, & a_n\alpha - a_{n-1}, & \dots & \end{array}$$

Cf. 7, then solution 15 and 17 and then again 7.

**20.** Set  $\int_0^x f(t) dt = F(x)$ ; then  $F(x)$  and  $F'(x) = f(x)$  have the same sign in an appropriate neighbourhood of  $x=0$ . [14.]

**21.** Set  $a_0 + a_1 + \dots + a_n = A_n$ ,  $n=0, 1, 2, \dots$  and apply the first half of 19 with  $\alpha=1$  to the sequence  $A_0, A_1, A_2, \dots, A_n, \dots$

**22.** Obvious.

**23.** The continuous curve  $y = \int_0^x f(t) dt$  consists of  $R+1$  monotonic sections. The first section begins at the point  $x=0, y=0$  and does not cause any changes of sign. Each of the remaining  $S$  sections can cross at most once from one side of the  $x$ -axis to the other. (A more precise formulation can easily be given.) If  $f(x)$  is analytic cf. also 20, 24.

**24.** Let the interval be  $a < x < b$ . If we assume that  $f(x)$  is analytic then there exists an  $\varepsilon, \varepsilon > 0$ , such that  $f(x) \neq 0$  for  $a < x < a + \varepsilon$  and  $b - \varepsilon < x < b$  [8, 22].

**25.** Cf. 10, 24.

**26.**  $f(x) = P(x)/Q(x)$ , where  $Q(x) = (x-a_1)(x-a_2)\dots(x-a_n)$  and  $P(x)$  is a real polynomial of degree  $\leq n-1$ .

(1) If  $\varepsilon > 0$ , and  $\varepsilon$  sufficiently small, then  $\operatorname{sgn} f(a_1 + \varepsilon) = +1$ ,  $\operatorname{sgn} f(a_2 - \varepsilon) = -1$ . Hence  $f(x)$  and thus  $P(x)$  has a zero in the interval  $a_1 < x < a_2$  [8]. Proceeding similarly we can demonstrate that there are  $n-2$  zeros of  $P(x)$  (for  $a_1 < x < a_2$ ,  $a_2 < x < a_3, \dots, a_{n-2} < x < a_{n-1}$ ). The single possible remaining zero cannot be non-real, for the non-real zeros of real polynomials occur in complex conjugate pairs.

(2) Show, as in (1), that  $f(x)$  has a zero in each of the  $n-3$  intervals  $(a_1, a_2)$ ,  $(a_2, a_3), \dots, (a_{k-2}, a_{k-1}), (a_{k+1}, a_{k+2}), \dots, (a_{n-1}, a_n)$ . If  $\varepsilon$  is sufficiently small and  $\omega$  sufficiently large,  $\varepsilon > 0$ ,  $\omega > 0$ , then

$$\operatorname{sgn} f(-\omega) = -\operatorname{sgn} f(a_1 - \varepsilon) = \operatorname{sgn} f(a_n + \varepsilon) = -\operatorname{sgn} f(\omega) = +1.$$

Hence there exists a zero in each of the intervals  $(-\infty, a_1)$  and  $(a_n, +\infty)$  [8].

**27.**

$$f(0) > 0, \quad f\left(\frac{\pi}{n}\right) < 0, \quad f\left(\frac{2\pi}{n}\right) > 0, \quad \dots, \quad f\left(\frac{2n\pi}{n}\right) > 0.$$

Hence [8]  $f(x)$  has  $2n$  real zeros in the strip  $0 < \Re x < 2\pi$ .  $f(x)$  has no other zeros there [VI 14].

**28.** Cf. 7.

**29.** Assume  $a_0 = a_1 = \dots = a_{\alpha-1} = 0$ ,  $a_\alpha \neq 0$ . Denote by  $a_k x^k$  and  $a_l x^l$  two terms such that

$$a_k \neq 0, \quad a_{k+1} = a_{k+2} = \dots = a_{l-1} = 0, \quad a_l \neq 0, \\ P(x) = a_\alpha x^\alpha + \dots + a_k x^k + a_l x^l + \dots$$

$\alpha$  must be regarded as a special value of  $k$ . If  $l-k$  is odd, then the pair of terms  $a_k x^k + a_l x^l$  contributes a unit either to  $C^+$  or to  $C^-$ . If  $l-k$  is even, then either both  $C^+$  and  $C^-$  gain a unit from  $a_k x^k + a_l x^l$  or neither gains a unit. From this it follows, assuming  $a_n \neq 0$ , that

$$(n-\alpha) - (C^+ + C^-) = \sum^I (l-k-1) + \sum^{II} [l-k - (1 - \operatorname{sgn} a_k a_l)].$$

$\sum^I$  extends over odd  $l-k$ ,  $\sum^{II}$  over even  $l-k$ , for we have  $n-\alpha = \sum^I (l-k) + \sum^{II} (l-k)$ . Both in  $\sum^I$  and in  $\sum^{II}$  every term  $\geq 0$ .

**30.** Replace  $x$  by  $\alpha x$  [28] and apply 15.

**31.** [G. Pólya: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 23, p. 22 (1914).] From 19 there follows even more: for the second part instead of the convergence of  $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n \alpha^n$  we need only that  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} a_n \alpha^n = 0$ .

**32.** For  $\alpha = 1$  the result follows from 4. Cf. 28.

**33.** Equivalent to 21. Also follows from 31.

**34.** [Laguerre, op. cit. 1, p. 22. The proof has gaps.] For  $\alpha = 1$  the result follows from 5 [28].

**35.** If of the numbers  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  only one,  $a_\alpha$  say, is different from zero, then we are considering the product

$$\frac{a_\alpha}{p_1 p_2 \dots p_\alpha} \left(1 + \frac{x}{p_1} + \frac{x^2}{p_1^2} + \dots\right) \left(1 + \frac{x}{p_2} + \frac{x^2}{p_2^2} + \dots\right) \dots \left(1 + \frac{x}{p_\alpha} + \frac{x^2}{p_\alpha^2} + \dots\right),$$

which, when multiplied out, clearly has no changes of sign. Assume that the statement has been proved for all sequences of numbers that contain one fewer non-vanishing term than the given sequence  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$ . Let  $a_\alpha$  be the first non-vanishing term,  $0 \leq \alpha < n$ . Set

$$0 + \frac{a_{\alpha+1}x}{p_{\alpha+1}-x} + \frac{a_{\alpha+2}x^2}{(p_{\alpha+1}-x)(p_{\alpha+2}-x)} + \dots + \frac{a_n x^{n-\alpha}}{(p_{\alpha+1}-x) \dots (p_n-x)} \\ = 0 + B_1 x + B_2 x^2 + \dots$$

Denote the number of changes of sign in the sequence

$$\begin{array}{ll} a_0, a_1, \dots, a_\alpha, a_{\alpha+1}, \dots, a_n & \text{by } \{a\}, \\ 0, a_{\alpha+1}, a_{\alpha+2}, \dots, a_n & \text{by } \{b\}, \\ A_0, A_1, A_2, A_3, \dots & \text{by } \{A\}, \\ 0, B_1, B_2, B_3, \dots & \text{by } \{B\}. \end{array}$$

By the assumption of the mathematical induction we have

$$\{B\} \leq \{b\}.$$

Let  $a_\beta$  be the first non-vanishing term of the sequence  $0, a_{\alpha+1}, a_{\alpha+2}, \dots, a_n$ . Then we have

$$\{a\} = \{b\} + \frac{1 - \operatorname{sgn} a_\alpha a_\beta}{2}.$$

The first non-vanishing term in  $0, B_1, B_2, \dots$  has the same sign as  $a_\beta$ . Hence the number of changes of sign in the sequence

$$a_\alpha, B_1, B_2, B_3, \dots \text{ is equal to } \{B\} + \frac{1 - \operatorname{sgn} a_\alpha a_\beta}{2}.$$

Now we have

$$\begin{aligned} (A_0 + A_1x + A_2x^2 + \dots)(p_1 - x)(p_2 - x) \dots (p_\alpha - x) \\ = x^\alpha (a_\alpha + B_1x + B_2x^2 + \dots), \end{aligned}$$

and hence [31]

$$\{A\} \leq \{B\} + \frac{1 - \operatorname{sgn} a_\alpha a_\beta}{2}.$$

From the three relations established above it follows that  $\{A\} \leq \{a\}$ , q.e.d.

**36.** Let  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_Z$  be the positive zeros of  $P(x) = a_0 + a_1x + \dots + a_nx^n$ . Then we have  $P(x) = Q(x)(\alpha_1 - x)(\alpha_2 - x) \dots (\alpha_Z - x)$ , where  $Q(x)$  is a polynomial of degree  $(n - Z)$  with real coefficients. The number of changes of sign of  $Q(x)$  is  $\geq 0$ , that of  $Q(x)(\alpha_1 - x)$  is  $\geq 1$  [30], that of  $Q(x)(\alpha_1 - x)(\alpha_2 - x)$  is  $\geq 2, \dots$ , that of  $Q(x)(\alpha_1 - x)(\alpha_2 - x) \dots (\alpha_Z - x)$  is  $\geq Z$ , q.e.d.

**37.** Let  $a_\alpha$  be the first and  $a_\omega$  the last non-vanishing coefficient of  $P(x)$ ,  $\alpha \leq \omega$  (only  $\alpha < \omega$  is interesting),  $0 < \xi < \alpha_1 \leq \alpha_2 \leq \dots \leq \alpha_Z < X < \infty$ . If  $\xi$  is sufficiently close to 0 and  $X$  to  $\infty$  then it can be deduced that

$$\operatorname{sgn} P(\xi) = \operatorname{sgn} a_\alpha, \quad \operatorname{sgn} P(X) = \operatorname{sgn} a_\omega \quad [8, 9].$$

With the aid of **36** we obtain the following: If  $C=1$ , then also  $Z=1$ . This may also easily be seen directly [III 16].

**38.** [Laguerre, op. cit. 1, p. 5; cf. op. cit. 31, p. 24.] If  $C$  is finite (this case only is of interest here), then all the non-vanishing coefficients from some  $a_\omega$  on have the same sign. Hence the  $\omega$ th derivative of the power series does not vanish for  $0 < x < \rho$ . Thus the power series has only finitely many positive zeros [12]; denote them by  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_Z$ . The power series

$$\frac{a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots}{(\alpha_1 - x)(\alpha_2 - x) \dots (\alpha_Z - x)} = b_0 + b_1x + b_2x^2 + \dots$$

is regular in the circle of convergence of  $a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots$ , and hence convergent there [Hurwitz-Courant, p. 49, p. 266]. The number of changes of sign of  $b_0 + b_1x + b_2x^2 + \dots$  is  $\geq 0$ . Now the theorem follows in a similar fashion from the second case of **31** as **36** from **30**.

**39.** The radius of convergence is  $=1$ . The power series takes the value 2 for  $x=0$  and the value  $2 - (1 - \frac{1}{2}) - (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{3}) - \dots = 1$  for  $x=1$ . The number of zeros in the interval  $0 < x < 1$  is thus even [8], but on the other hand it is  $\leq 1$  [38], and hence  $=0$ . We can also see directly that for complex  $z$ ,  $|z| < 1$ , we have

$$\left| 2 - \frac{z}{1 \cdot 2} - \frac{z^2}{2 \cdot 3} - \dots \right| \geq 2 - \frac{|z|}{1 \cdot 2} - \frac{|z|^2}{2 \cdot 3} - \dots > 2 - \frac{1}{1 \cdot 2} - \frac{1}{2 \cdot 3} - \dots = 1.$$

**40.** Let  $a_\alpha$  be the first non-vanishing coefficient and  $\omega$  the last index of change. We have

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow 0} x^{-\alpha} (a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots) = a_\alpha,$$

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow \rho - 0} (a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \dots) = +\infty \cdot \operatorname{sgn} a_\omega \quad [8, 9].$$

**41.** [C. Runge, cf. op. cit. **31**, p. 25.] Replacing  $x$  by  $-x$ , the case of the zeros  $< \xi_\alpha$  reduces to the case of the zeros  $> \xi_\omega$  and this case in turn, by replacing  $x$  by  $x + \text{const.}$ , reduces to the special case in which  $\xi_\alpha > 0$ . In this special case set

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{a_0 + a_1(x - \xi_1) + a_2(x - \xi_1)(x - \xi_2) + \dots + a_n(x - \xi_1)(x - \xi_2) \dots (x - \xi_n)}{(x - \xi_1)(x - \xi_2) \dots (x - \xi_n)} \\ &= a_n + \frac{a_{n-1}}{\xi_n} \frac{1}{x} \frac{1}{\frac{1}{\xi_n} - \frac{1}{x}} + \dots + \frac{a_0}{\xi_1 \xi_2 \dots \xi_n} \frac{1}{x^n} \frac{1}{\left(\frac{1}{\xi_1} - \frac{1}{x}\right) \left(\frac{1}{\xi_2} - \frac{1}{x}\right) \dots \left(\frac{1}{\xi_n} - \frac{1}{x}\right)} \\ &= A_0 + \frac{A_1}{x} + \frac{A_2}{x^2} + \frac{A_3}{x^3} + \dots \end{aligned}$$

The power series converges for  $x > \xi_\omega$  and has all the required zeros whose total number is  $\leq$  the number of changes of sign of the sequence  $A_0, A_1, A_2, \dots$  [38], which itself is  $\leq$  the number of changes of sign of the sequence  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{n-1}, a_n$  [35, 6, 7], q.e.d. That the difference between the two numbers cannot be odd may be proved as in **37**.

**42.** Notation as in **38**, **40**. For the power series

$$\begin{aligned} f_n(x) &= 1 + \frac{x}{1!} + \frac{x^2}{2!} + \dots + \frac{x^n}{n!} - \lambda e^x \\ &= (1 - \lambda) + \frac{(1 - \lambda)}{1!} x + \dots + \frac{(1 - \lambda)}{n!} x^n - \frac{\lambda}{(n+1)!} x^{n+1} - \dots \end{aligned}$$

we have  $C=1$  and hence  $Z \leq 1$  [38]. Moreover  $\rho = \infty$ , hence  $1 - Z$  is even [40], and thus  $1 - Z = 0$ . Let  $x_n$  be the unique positive zero of  $f_n(x)$ . As  $x$  passes through the value  $x_n$ ,  $\operatorname{sgn} f_n(x)$  changes from  $+1$  to  $-1$  [solution **40**]. Hence if  $f_n(a) > 0$ , we

have that also  $x_n - a > 0$ . Now for fixed  $a$  we have  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} f_n(a) = (1 - \lambda) e^a$ , whence it follows ( $a$  arbitrary!) that  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} x_n = \infty$ . Finally we have

$$f_n(x_{n-1}) = f_{n-1}(x_{n-1}) + \frac{x_{n-1}^n}{n!} = \frac{x_{n-1}^n}{n!} > 0, \quad \text{i.e. } x_n > x_{n-1}.$$

**43.**  $x^{-5}(e^x - 1)$  has a minimum and no maximum since

$$\frac{d}{dx} [x^{-5}(e^x - 1)] = -x^{-6}(5e^x - 5 - xe^x) = -x^{-6} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{(5-n)x^n}{n!}$$

and this series has only one index of change, namely  $n=6$  [38, 40]. (*Planck's law of radiation.*)

**43.1.** [G. Pólya and I. J. Schoenberg: *Pacific J. Math.* 8, p. 322 (1958)]. Let  $x(1-x)^{-1} = t$ . Then

$$\frac{K_n(x)}{(1-x)^n} = \sum_{\nu=0}^n f\left(\frac{\nu}{n}\right) \binom{n}{\nu} t^\nu.$$

The number of changes of sign in the sequence of coefficients of this polynomial in  $t$  is obviously  $\leq R(f)$ . Apply 36.

**44.** The zeros in question are also zeros of the series

$$(1-x)^{-1}(a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 \dots) = a_0 + (a_0 + a_1)x + (a_0 + a_1 + a_2)x^2 + \dots$$

[38].

**44.1.** [J. Steinig. Cf. 83.1.] Since

$$a_0 + a_1 + a_2 + \dots + a_{n-1} + a_n = 0, \\ P(x)(1-x)^{-1} = a_0 + (a_0 + a_1)x + \dots + (a_0 + a_1 + \dots + a_{n-1})x^{n-1},$$

and this polynomial has at most  $C$  positive zeros [36]. That the case of equality can be attained in the inequality just proved is shown by the example  $(1-x)^n$  where  $C=n-1$ .

**45.** [Cf. M. Fekete: *Palermo Rend.* 34, p. 89 (1912).]  $x=1$  is a zero of the polynomial and multiplication by  $(1-x)^{-2}$  yields a power series with no negative coefficients.

**46.** [G. Pólya: *Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein.* 28, p. 37 (1919).] Setting

$$f(x) = \sum_{\nu=1}^{163} \left(\frac{\nu}{163}\right) x^\nu$$

we find that

$$(1-x)^{-2}f(x) \\ = x + x^2 - x^5 - x^6 - \dots - x^{65} + 7x^{66} + 14x^{67} + \dots + 163x^{161} + 163x^{162}(1-x)^{-1}$$

has two indices of change. The number of zeros in the interval  $0 < x < 1$  is thus  $=0$  or  $=2$  [38, 40]. It is actually  $=2$ , since for  $0 < x < 1$  we have

$$x^{-1}f(x) = \sum_{\nu=1}^{10} \left(\frac{\nu}{163}\right) x^{\nu-1} - x^{10} - x^{11} - x^{12} + x^{13} + x^{14} + x^{15} + \dots \\ < \sum_{\nu=1}^{10} \left(\frac{\nu}{163}\right) x^{\nu-1} + x^{16}(1-x)^{-1},$$

and the right-hand side is  $= -0.00995 \dots$  if  $x=0.7$ .

**47.** Let the number of negative zeros be  $Z^-$ , the number of positive zeros  $Z^+$  and thus  $n = Z^- + \alpha + Z^+$  with the notation of solution 29. We have [solution 29]

$$n - (C^- + \alpha + C^+) = (Z^- - C^-) + (Z^+ - C^+) \geq 0$$

and [36]

$$Z^- - C^- \leq 0, \quad Z^+ - C^+ \leq 0,$$

and hence

$$Z^- - C^- = 0, \quad Z^+ - C^+ = 0, \quad \text{q.e.d.}$$

**48.** If the determinant were to vanish, then one could find a solution, not identically zero, of the corresponding homogeneous system, i.e.  $n$  real numbers  $c_1, c_2, \dots, c_n$  satisfying  $c_1^2 + c_2^2 + \dots + c_n^2 > 0$ , such that the polynomial

$$c_1 x^{\alpha_1} + c_2 x^{\alpha_2} + \dots + c_n x^{\alpha_n}$$

vanishes for  $x = \alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n$ : Contradiction to 36! For the sequence of coefficients contains not more than  $n$  terms different from 0, and therefore cannot have  $n$  changes of sign and thus the polynomial certainly cannot have  $n$  positive zeros  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n$ . The determinant is thus  $\neq 0$ . It is  $> 0$  if  $n = 1$ . Assume that it is  $> 0$  if it has  $n-1$  rows and regard  $\alpha_n$  as variable. As  $\alpha_n$  increases from  $\alpha_{n-1}$  to  $+\infty$ , the determinant  $\neq 0$  and thus has constant sign. As  $\alpha_n \rightarrow +\infty$  this appears as the sign of a minor of order  $n-1$  of the same structure and hence is  $= +1$ .

**49.** By 36 the number of real zeros, with the notation of solution 29, is  $\leq C^- + \alpha + C^+$ , and hence the number of non-real zeros is  $\geq n - (C^- + \alpha + C^+) = \sum' (l-k-1) + \sum'' [l-k-(1-\text{sgn } a_k a_l)]$ . If  $a_k$  is  $\neq 0$ ,  $a_{k+1} = a_{k+2} = \dots = a_{k+2m} = 0$ , then the corresponding  $k$  and  $l$  are such that  $l-k$  is either odd,  $\geq 2m+1$ , or even,  $\geq 2m+2$ .

**50.** [Laguerre, op. cit. 1, p. 111.]

$$P(x)(1 + b_1 x + b_2 x^2 + \dots + b_{2m} x^{2m}) = 1 - b_{2m+1} x^{2m+1} + \dots$$

The expression on the right is not a constant since  $P(x)$  is not constant, and hence it is a polynomial that has at least  $2m$  non-real zeros [49]. These must by assumption all be zeros of the factor  $1 + b_1 x + b_2 x^2 + \dots + b_{2m} x^{2m}$ .

**51.** [J. Grommer: J. reine angew. Math. 144, pp. 130–131 (1914).] If  $P(x) = (1 - x_1 x)(1 - x_2 x) \dots (1 - x_n x)$ , then we have [50]  $b_{2m} = S(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n)$ . If we had  $b_{2m} \leq 0$ , then  $1 + b_1 x + b_2 x^2 + \dots + b_{2m} x^{2m}$  would not have  $2m$  non-real zeros.

**52. First proof.** Obvious from the representation in terms of the zeros of  $P(x)$  [51].

*Second proof.* For simplicity assume

$$P(x) = (x - a_1)(x - a_2) \dots (x - a_n) \quad \text{where } 0 < a_1 < a_2 < \dots < a_n.$$

Then we have [VI, § 9]

$$1 = \sum_{v=1}^n \frac{1}{P'(a_v)} \frac{P(x)}{x - a_v}, \quad \text{hence } B_k = \sum_{v=1}^n \frac{a_v^k}{P'(a_v)}.$$

Consider the polynomial of degree  $p$ ,  $p \geq n$ ,

$$x^p - \sum_{v=1}^n \frac{a_v^p}{P'(a_v)} \frac{P(x)}{x - a_v} = x^p - B_p x^{n-1} + \dots = L_p(x).$$

$L_p(x)$  vanishes for  $x=a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$ , and thus [36] has at least  $n$  changes of sign. The number of its non-vanishing coefficients is however  $\leq n+1$ , and hence we have  $B_p > 0$ .

**53.** If the degree, the number of real zeros and the number of non-real zeros of the polynomial are  $=n, r$ , and  $n-r$  respectively, then for the derivative they are  $=n-1, \geq r-1$  [12], and  $\leq n-1-(r-1)$  respectively.

**54.** Let the polynomial be of degree  $n$ . Apart from the  $(n-1)$  zeros demonstrated in solution 12, the derivative has no other zeros.

**55.** [53, 54.]

**56.** If we set  $(d^v/dx^v)(1+x^2)^{-1/2} = Q_v(x)(1+x^2)^{-v-(1/2)}$ , then  $Q_0(x)=1$ ,  $Q_{v+1}(x) = -(2v+1)xQ_v(x) + (1+x^2)Q'_v(x)$ . Hence  $Q_v(x)$  is a polynomial of degree  $v$ . Assume that  $Q_v(x)$  has  $v$  real distinct zeros. Then  $Q_{v+1}(x)$  has a zero between every two zeros of  $Q_v(x)$  [10], a zero between  $-\infty$  and the smallest zero of  $Q_v(x)$  and another zero between the largest zero of  $Q_v(x)$  and  $+\infty$  [16], and apart from these  $(v-1)+2$  zeros no other zeros.

**57.** Proof as in 56. Direct verification is also possible since the  $n$  roots of the equation

$$\frac{d^{n-1}}{dx^{n-1}} \frac{x}{1+x^2} = \frac{(-1)^{n-1}(n-1)!}{2} \left( \frac{1}{(x+i)^n} + \frac{1}{(x-i)^n} \right) = 0$$

have the following values:

$$\cot \frac{\pi}{2n}, \quad \cot \frac{3\pi}{2n}, \quad \dots, \quad \cot \frac{(2n-1)\pi}{2n}.$$

**58.** In the case of  $H_n(x)$  the method of proof in 56 may be followed unchanged; in the other two cases it can be followed with slight changes [16].

The functions	$(1-x^2)^n$ ;	$e^{-x}x^n$ ;	$e^{-x^2}$ ,
vanish for $x=$	$-1, +1$ ;	$0, +\infty$ ;	$-\infty, +\infty$ ,
with order	$n, n$ ;	$n, \infty$ ;	$\infty, \infty$ .

**59.** The degree of  $Q_n(x)$  is  $=n(q-1)$  [recursion formula, analogously to 56]. Let the number of positive zeros be  $=p_n$ , and the number of zeros at the origin  $=v_n$ . From

$$(1+x^q)^n \frac{d^{n-1}}{dx^{n-1}} (x^{q-1} - x^{2q-1} + x^{3q-1} - \dots) = Q_n(x)$$

it follows that

$$v_1=q-1, \quad v_2=q-2, \quad v_3=q-3, \quad \dots, \quad v_q=0, \quad v_{q+1}=q-1, \quad \dots,$$

etc. with period  $q$ . Since moreover, setting  $\omega = e^{2\pi i/q}$ , we have  $Q_n(\omega x) = \omega^{v_n} Q_n(x)$ , we see that to every zero lying in the interior of the positive real axis there corresponds a similarly situated zero on each of the other  $q-1$  rays described. If we assume that the statement to be proved is true for a certain integer  $n$  (mathematical induction), we then obtain

$$v_n + qp_n = n(q-1).$$



Since the  $(n-1)$ th derivative of  $x^{q-1}(1+x^q)^{-1}$  vanishes for  $x=+\infty$ , we have [16]

$$p_{n+1} \geq p_n, \quad \text{if } v_n = 0; \quad p_{n+1} \geq p_n + 1, \quad \text{if } v_n > 0.$$

In all cases we have

$$\begin{aligned} v_{n+1} + qp_{n+1} &\leq n(q-1) + q - 1 = v_n + qp_n + q - 1, \\ p_{n+1} &\leq p_n + \frac{v_n - v_{n+1} + q - 1}{q} = \begin{cases} p_n & \text{if } v_n = 0, \\ p_n + 1, & \text{if } v_n > 0. \end{cases} \end{aligned}$$

Hence all  $\leq$  signs should be replaced by  $=$ ,

$$v_{n+1} + qp_{n+1} = (n+1)(q-1).$$

With regard to the simplicity of the zeros cf. 55, 56. The proof for  $R_n(x)$  is similar. The  $q$  half-rays in question are the bisectors of the segments joining neighbouring poles of the function  $1/(1+z^q)$ , distinguished from the other half-rays through the origin by the property that along them the function  $e^{-z^q}$  decreases most rapidly. (Cf. G. Pólya: Math. Z. 12, p. 38 (1922).)

60. Passing from

$$a_0 + \binom{n}{1}a_1x + \binom{n}{2}a_2x^2 + \cdots + a_nx^n$$

to

$$a_0x^n + \binom{n}{1}a_1x^{n-1} + \binom{n}{2}a_2x^{n-2} + \cdots + a_n$$

the number of non-real zeros does not alter, while passing to

$$n \left[ a_1 + \binom{n-1}{1}a_2x + \binom{n-1}{2}a_3x^2 + \cdots + a_nx^{n-1} \right]$$

the number of non-real zeros does not increase [53].

61. Sharpening the result of 60 [cf. 54] we find that the polynomials

$$x^2 + 2m_1x + m_2^2, \quad m_1x^2 + 2m_2^2x + m_3^3, \quad \dots, \quad m_{n-2}^{n-2}x^2 + 2m_{n-1}^{n-1}x + m_n^n$$

have real *simple* zeros. Therefore we have

$$m_1^2 > m_2^2, \quad m_2^4 > m_1m_3^3, \quad \dots, \quad m_{n-1}^{2n-2} > m_{n-2}^{n-2}m_n^n,$$

from which we obtain successively

$$m_1 > m_2, \quad m_2^4 > m_2m_3^3, \quad \dots, \quad m_{n-1}^{2n-2} > m_{n-2}^{n-2}m_n^n.$$

62. We are concerned with the zeros of  $e^{-ax} (d/dx) [e^{ax}P(x)]$  [6, 16].

62.1. For the first polynomial it is obvious, see I 199. Denote the second polynomial by  $P_n(x)$ . Then, by I 187,

$$P_{n+1}(x) = x(P_n(x) + P'_n(x)).$$

Use mathematical induction based on a somewhat sharper version of 62 (simple zeros!).

63. Without loss of generality we may assume  $a_n \neq 0$ . Setting

$$a_0 + a_1x + a_2x^2 + \cdots + a_nx^n = a_n(x + \alpha_1)(x + \alpha_2) \cdots (x + \alpha_n),$$

we are concerned with the zeros of

$$a_n e^{-\alpha_n x} \frac{d}{dx} e^{(\alpha_n - \alpha_{n-1})x} \frac{d}{dx} \cdots \frac{d}{dx} e^{(\alpha_2 - \alpha_1)x} \frac{d}{dx} e^{\alpha_1 x} P(x).$$

Iterated application of **62**.

**64.** Limiting case of **63**. Observe III **201** and set  $n=2m$ ,

$$a_0 + a_1 x + a_2 x^2 + \cdots + a_{2m} x^{2m} = \left(1 - \frac{x^2}{m}\right)^m \rightarrow e^{-x^2} \quad \text{as } m \rightarrow \infty.$$

**65.** Also  $a_0 x^n + a_1 x^{n-1} + \cdots + a_n$  has only real zeros and hence also [**63**]

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{1}{n!} \left( a_n x^n + a_{n-1} \frac{dx^n}{dx} + a_{n-2} \frac{d^2 x^n}{dx^2} + \cdots \right) \\ &= \frac{a_n}{n!} x^n + \frac{a_{n-1}}{(n-1)!} x^{n-1} + \frac{a_{n-2}}{(n-2)!} x^{n-2} + \cdots. \end{aligned}$$

**65.1.** Use the symbol  $D=d/dx$ . We require to consider

$$(b_0 + b_1 D + b_2 D^2 + \cdots + b_k D^k + \cdots) P(x) = Q(x).$$

Use **63**:

$$\begin{aligned} & (a_0 + a_1 D + \cdots + a_n D^n) Q(x) \\ &= (a_0 + a_1 D + \cdots + a_n D^n) (b_0 + b_1 D + b_2 D^2 + \cdots) P(x) \\ &= P(x). \end{aligned}$$

**66.**

$$\alpha P(x) + x P'(x) = x^{-\alpha+1} \frac{d}{dx} [x^\alpha P(x)] = -(-x)^{1-\alpha} \frac{d}{dx} [(-x)^\alpha P(x)]$$

has neither fewer vanishing nor fewer positive nor fewer negative zeros than  $P(x)$ .

For  $\lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} x^\alpha P(x) = 0$ , if  $\alpha < -n$  [**16**] and  $\lim_{x \rightarrow 0} x^\alpha P(x) = 0$ , if  $\alpha > 0$ .

**67.** [Laguerre, op. cit. **1**, p. 200.]

$$a_0(0+\alpha) + a_1(1+\alpha)x + a_2(2+\alpha)x^2 + \cdots + a_n(n+\alpha)x^n = 0$$

has not more non-real roots than

$$a_0 + a_1 x + a_2 x^2 + \cdots + a_n x^n = 0 \quad [\text{66}].$$

This is the case  $Q(x)=x+\alpha$ ; iterate.

**68.** Limiting case of **67**. Choose  $m$  sufficiently large and set

$$Q(x) = \left(1 + \frac{x^2 \log q}{m}\right)^m \rightarrow q^{x^2}.$$

**69.** [E. Laguerre, problem; solution by G. Pólya: Interméd. des math. **20**, p. 127 (1913).] Let  $\alpha$  be real. The polynomial

$$Q(x) = \left(1 + \frac{\alpha \sqrt{x}}{m}\right)^m + \left(1 - \frac{\alpha \sqrt{x}}{m}\right)^m$$

has only real negative zeros, namely [**57**]

$$x = -\left(\frac{m}{\alpha} \tan \frac{\pi}{2m}\right)^2, \quad -\left(\frac{m}{\alpha} \tan \frac{3\pi}{2m}\right)^2, \quad \dots, \quad -\left(\frac{m}{\alpha} \tan \frac{(2m-1)\pi}{2m}\right)^2.$$

Setting  $q=e^a$ , we are concerned with the limiting case of the equation

$$a_0 Q(0) + a_1 Q(1)x + a_2 Q(2)x^2 + \cdots + a_n Q(n)x^n = 0$$

as  $m \rightarrow \infty$  [67, III 201].

**70.** If  $\Phi(x) = f(x) - a - bx$ ,  $\Phi(x_1) = \Phi(x_2) = \Phi(x_3) = 0$ ,  $x_1 < x_2 < x_3$ , then  $\Phi'(x)$  has a zero in the interior of each of the intervals  $x_1 \leq x \leq x_2$  and  $x_2 \leq x \leq x_3$  [10] and hence  $\Phi''(x) = f''(x)$  has a reversal of sign between  $x_1$  and  $x_3$  [25].

**71.** By assumption

$$\Phi(x) = f(x) - a_0 - a_1 x - \cdots - a_{n-1} x^{n-1},$$

where  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_{n-1}$  are constants, has  $n+1$  zeros in the interval  $a \leq x \leq b$ . By application of **10**  $n$  times, the existence of an interior point  $\xi$  at which  $\Phi^{(n)}(\xi) = f^{(n)}(\xi) = 0$  may be deduced.

**72.** The difference has  $n$  coincident zeros at the point  $x=0$ . If it had in addition an  $(n+1)$ th zero in the interval  $-1 < x < \infty$ , then  $(1+x)^{a-n}$  would have to vanish there [71], which is not the case.

**73.**

$$e^x - 1 - \frac{x}{1!} - \frac{x^2}{2!} - \cdots - \frac{x^{n-1}}{(n-1)!}$$

has  $n$  coincident zeros at the point  $x=0$ , while  $e^x$  has no zeros. The assertion follows from **71** similarly as in **72**. It is, in fact, essentially equivalent to the fact that the function  $e^x$  is enveloped by its Maclaurin series for  $x < 0$  [I 141].

**74.** [J. J. Sylvester: Mathematical Papers, 2. Cambridge University Press 1908, p. 516.] It is sufficient to show that

$$1 + \frac{x}{1!} + \frac{x^2}{2!} + \cdots + \frac{x^n}{n!} = f_n(x)$$

does not have two consecutive negative zeros. If  $a$  and  $b$  were such zeros, then we would have

$$f_n(a) = f'_n(a) + \frac{a^n}{n!} = 0, \quad f_n(b) = f'_n(b) + \frac{b^n}{n!} = 0, \quad \text{sgn } f'_n(a) = \text{sgn } f'_n(b) \neq 0;$$

$f'_n(x)$  would have by **8** an even number and by **10** an odd number of zeros in the interval  $a < x < b$ !

**75.** Obvious for  $l=1$ . Assume the statement to be true for the case of  $l-1$  exponential functions. If  $g(x)$  has  $Z$  and

$$g^*(x) = \frac{d^{m_l}}{dx^{m_l}} [e^{-a_l x} g(x)] = \frac{d^{m_l}}{dx^{m_l}} [e^{-a_l x} g(x) - P_l(x)]$$

$Z^*$  real zeros, then we have

$$Z^* \geq Z - m_l \quad [12].$$

On the other hand in  $g^*(x)$  there occur only  $l-1$  exponential functions [with the exponents  $(a_1 - a_l)x, \dots, (a_{l-1} - a_l)x$ ; concerning the degrees of the polynomials that arise see **62**]. By assumption we hence have

$$m_1 + m_2 + \cdots + m_{l-1} - 1 \geq Z^*.$$

**76.** [Cf. G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, **28**, p. 173 (1920).] If the determinant were to vanish, there would exist a solution not identically zero of the corresponding homogeneous system, i.e.  $n$  real numbers  $c_1, c_2, \dots, c_n$  such that the entire function

$$c_1 e^{\beta_1 x} + c_2 e^{\beta_2 x} + \dots + c_n e^{\beta_n x}$$

does not vanish identically but vanishes for  $x = \alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n$ . Contradiction, since a function constructed in this manner has at most  $n-1$  real zeros [75]. For the determination of the sign of the determinant cf. 48.

**77.** [Laguerre, op. cit. **1**, p. 3.]

**77.1.** The given points are zeros since

$$F(m) = \Delta^n 0^m$$

for  $m = 1, 2, 3, \dots, n-1$  (notation used in III **220**). There are not more than  $n-1$  real zeros [77, even 75 is sufficient].

**78.<sup>1</sup>** The “Dirichlet series”  $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n e^{-\lambda_n s}$  may be differentiated term-by-term in the interior of its region of convergence. The method of proof of 77 can be followed without change.

**79.** [J. J. Sylvester, op. cit. **74**, p. 360, p. 401; cf. op. cit. **31**, p. 30.]

(1) If  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  have the same sign and  $m$  is even, then  $C=0$  and clearly also  $Z=0$ .

(2) If  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  have the same sign and  $m$  is odd, then  $C=1$  and, since

$$P'(x) = m[a_1(x-\lambda_1)^{m-1} + a_2(x-\lambda_2)^{m-1} + \dots + a_n(x-\lambda_n)^{m-1}]$$

never vanishes, cf. case (1),  $Z \leq 1$  [10].

(3) Let  $a_\alpha a_{\alpha+1} < 0$ ,  $1 \leq \alpha < n$ , and assume that the statement is true for  $C-1$  changes of sign. Let  $P(x) = b_0 x^m + b_1 x^{m-1} + \dots + b_m$ . Choose  $\lambda$  such that

$$\lambda_\alpha < \lambda < \lambda_{\alpha+1}, \quad P(\lambda) \neq 0$$

and, if  $b_0 \neq 0$ ,  $b_1 + \lambda m b_0 \neq 0$ . Set

$$P(x)(x-\lambda)^{-m} = F(x),$$

$$(x-\lambda)^{m+1} F'(x) = a_1^*(x-\lambda_1)^{m-1} + a_2^*(x-\lambda_2)^{m-1} + \dots + a_n^*(x-\lambda_n)^{m-1} = P^*(x),$$

where  $a_\nu^* = m(\lambda_\nu - \lambda)a_\nu$ ,  $\nu = 1, 2, \dots, n$ . The number of changes of sign of the sequence  $a_1^*, a_2^*, \dots, a_n^*, (-1)^{m-1}a_1^*$  is

$$C^* = C - 1.$$

Denoting by  $Z^*$  the number of real zeros of  $P^*(x)$ , by assumption we have

$$C^* \geq Z^*.$$

$$(3a) \quad \lim_{x \rightarrow \pm \infty} \frac{F(x)}{x^2 F'(x)} = -\frac{b_0}{b_1 + \lambda m b_0} \neq 0, \quad \text{if } b_0 \neq 0.$$

*Either*  $\operatorname{sgn} F(x) = \operatorname{sgn} F'(x)$  in a neighbourhood of  $x = -\infty$   
*or*  $\operatorname{sgn} F(x) = -\operatorname{sgn} F'(x)$  in a neighbourhood of  $x = +\infty$ .

<sup>1</sup> In solutions 78, 80–84 the necessary convergence considerations are not given, but their result is used. Cf. e.g. E. Landau: Münch. Ber. **36**, p. 151 (1906).

Applying **14** to  $-\infty$ ,  $\lambda$  (appropriately!) and simultaneously **12** to  $\lambda$ ,  $+\infty$ , or if necessary conversely, we find that in any case

$$Z^* \geq Z - 1.$$

$$(3b) \quad \lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} \frac{F(x)}{xF'(x)} = -\frac{1}{s}, \quad \text{if } b_0 = b_1 = \cdots = b_{s-1} = 0, \quad b_s \neq 0.$$

Now we have  $\operatorname{sgn} F(x) = \operatorname{sgn} F'(x)$  as  $x \rightarrow -\infty$ ,  $\operatorname{sgn} F(x) = -\operatorname{sgn} F'(x)$  as  $x \rightarrow +\infty$ , and hence by applying **14** to  $-\infty$ ,  $\lambda$  and  $\lambda$ ,  $+\infty$  it follows that in fact  $Z^* \geq Z$ .

**80.** [Laguerre, op. cit. **1**, p. 29; cf. G. Pólya: C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris), **156**, p. 996 (1913).] If  $R=0$ , then clearly  $Z=0$ . If  $R>0$ , let  $\lambda_0$  be the common end-point of two neighbouring intervals of opposite constant sign of the function  $\varphi(\lambda)$  [definition preceding **22**]. The number of reversals of sign of

$$\varphi^*(\lambda) = (\lambda_0 - \lambda)\varphi(\lambda)$$

is then  $R^* = R - 1$ . The number of zeros in question of the function

$$F^*(x) = e^{-\lambda_0 x} \frac{d}{dx} [e^{\lambda_0 x} F(x)] = \int_0^\infty \varphi^*(\lambda) e^{-\lambda x} d\lambda$$

is  $Z^* \geq Z - 1$  [**12**]. Mathematical induction as in **77**, **79**.

**81.** [Cf. L. Fejér: C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris), **158**, pp. 1328–1331 (1914).] The number of real zeros  $Z$  of the function

$$F(x) = \int_0^\infty f(t)t^x dt = \int_{-\infty}^\infty e^{-\lambda} f(e^{-\lambda}) e^{-\lambda x} d\lambda$$

is not less than the number of changes of sign of the sequence  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$ , as can be seen by a complete survey of the various cases [**8**, **9**]. We have  $F(n) = a_n$  in case (1),  $F(n) = 0$  in cases (2), (3). The choice of the limits of integration  $(0, \infty$  or  $-\infty, \infty)$  does not affect the proof of **80**.

**82.** Transformation by integration by parts yields

$$\int_0^\infty \varphi(\lambda) e^{-\lambda x} d\lambda = x \int_0^\infty \Phi(\lambda) e^{-\lambda x} d\lambda,$$

if the integral on the left is convergent and  $x > 0$  [**80**].

**83.** Transformation by partial summation yields

$$\sum_{n=1}^\infty a_n e^{-\lambda_n x} = \sum_{n=1}^\infty (a_1 + a_2 + \cdots + a_n) (e^{-\lambda_n x} - e^{-\lambda_{n+1} x}),$$

if the series on the left is convergent and  $x > 0$ . Set

$$\varphi(\lambda) = a_1 + a_2 + \cdots + a_n, \quad \text{if } \lambda_n \leq x < \lambda_{n+1}, \quad n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$

Then the series under consideration becomes

$$x \sum_{n=1}^\infty (a_1 + a_2 + \cdots + a_n) \int_{\lambda_n}^{\lambda_{n+1}} e^{-\lambda x} d\lambda = x \int_{\lambda_1}^\infty \varphi(\lambda) e^{-\lambda x} d\lambda.$$





Let  $Z^*$  be the number of zeros of  $F^*(x)$  in the interval  $a < x < b$  and  $C^*$  the number of changes of sign of the sequence

$$-a_1, -a_2, \dots, -a_{\alpha-1}, a_{\alpha+1}, \dots, a_n,$$

or, equivalently [3], the number of changes of sign of the sequence

$$-a_1, -a_2, \dots, -a_{\alpha-1}, -a_{\alpha}, a_{\alpha+1}, \dots, a_n.$$

We have [12]

$$Z^* \geq Z - 1, \quad C^* = C - 1.$$

The functions  $H_1(x), H_2(x), \dots, H_{n-1}(x)$  satisfy the determinantal conditions 87 [89]. From the assumption of the mathematical induction proof we then have

$$Z^* \leq C^*.$$

91.

$$W(e^{\lambda_1 x}, e^{\lambda_2 x}, \dots, e^{\lambda_n x}) = e^{(\lambda_1 + \lambda_2 + \dots + \lambda_n)x} \prod_{j < k}^{1, 2, \dots, n} (\lambda_k - \lambda_j) > 0.$$

92. With the notation of solution 63 we have

$$\begin{aligned} a_n e^{-a_n x} \frac{d}{dx} e^{(a_n - a_{n-1})x} \frac{d}{dx} \dots \frac{d}{dx} e^{(a_2 - a_1)x} \frac{d}{dx} e^{a_1 x} f(x) \\ = a_0 f(x) + a_1 f'(x) + \dots + a_n f^{(n)}(x). \end{aligned}$$

Apply 12  $n$  times and 6  $n+1$  times.

93. [G. Pólya: Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 24, pp. 312–324 (1922); cf. H. Poincaré: Interméd. des math. 1, pp. 141–144 (1894).] Using the formula VII 62, the proof proceeds as in 92.

94. We have thus assumed that

$$h^{(n)}(x) + \varphi_1(x)h^{(n-1)}(x) + \varphi_2(x)h^{(n-2)}(x) + \dots + \varphi_n(x)h(x) = 0$$

identically, and that  $f(x) - h(x)$  vanishes  $n+1$  times in the interval. Apply 93 to  $f(x) - h(x)$ .

94.1. [See G. Pólya: C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris), 199, pp. 655–657 (1934); also for suggestions regarding some other differential operators.] If  $f(x, y)$  vanishes identically, the assertion is obvious; therefore we exclude this trivial case. Hence,  $f(x, y)$  attains both its minimum and its maximum in  $\mathfrak{R}$  in the interior of  $\mathfrak{R}$ , at two different points, at one of which the inequalities

$$f(x, y) \leq 0, \quad \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y^2} \geq 0,$$

and at the other the opposite inequalities hold. Join the two points by a continuous path.

95. [Cf. H. A. Schwarz: Gesammelte Mathematische Abhandlungen, 2, p. 296. Berlin: J. Springer, 1890. T. J. Stieltjes: Oeuvres, 2, p. 110. Groningen: P. Noordhoff, 1918.] Assume  $|\varphi_\lambda(x_\mu)| \neq 0$ . Denoting the value of the quotient  $|f_\lambda(x_\mu)| : |\varphi_\lambda(x_\mu)|$  by  $Q$ , the function of  $x$

$$|f_k(x_1)f_k(x_2) \dots f_k(x_{n-1})f_k(x)| - Q|\varphi_k(x_1)\varphi_k(x_2) \dots \varphi_k(x_{n-1})\varphi_k(x)|$$



vanishes for  $x=x_{n-1}$  and for  $x=x_n$ . By Rolle's theorem we obtain

$$|f_k(x_1)f_k(x_2)\dots f_k(x_{n-1})f'_k(\eta_n)| - Q|\varphi_k(x_1)\varphi_k(x_2)\dots\varphi_k(x_{n-1})\varphi'_k(\eta_n)| = 0,$$

where  $x_{n-1} < \eta_n < x_n$ . Now replace  $x_{n-1}$  by  $x$ . The resulting function of  $x$  vanishes for  $x=x_{n-2}$  and  $x=x_{n-1}$  and so on. Then replace  $\eta_n$  by  $x$  and so on. In this manner after  $(n-1)+(n-2)+\dots+2+1$  applications of Rolle's theorem we arrive at the linear equation for  $Q$  which was to be demonstrated.

**96. Special case of 95:**

$$\varphi_1(x)=1, \quad \varphi_2(x)=x, \quad \varphi_3(x)=x^2, \quad \dots, \quad \varphi_n(x)=x^{n-1}.$$

By adding rows we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{1}{1^{n-1}2^{n-2}3^{n-3}\dots(n-1)^1} \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & \dots & 1 \\ x_1 & x_2 & x_3 & \dots & x_n \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ x_1^{n-1} & x_2^{n-1} & x_3^{n-1} & \dots & x_n^{n-1} \end{vmatrix} \\ &= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & \dots & 1 \\ \binom{x_1}{1} & \binom{x_2}{1} & \dots & \binom{x_n}{1} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ \binom{x_1}{n-1} & \binom{x_2}{n-1} & \dots & \binom{x_n}{n-1} \end{vmatrix} = \frac{\prod_{j < k}^{1, 2, \dots, n} (x_k - x_j)}{\prod_{j < k}^{1, 2, \dots, n} (k - j)}. \end{aligned}$$

**97. Special case of 96:**

$$f_1(x)=1, \quad f_2(x)=x, \quad f_3(x)=x^2, \quad \dots, \quad f_{n-1}(x)=x^{n-2}.$$

**98. Special case of 97:**

$$x_1=x, \quad x_2=x+h, \quad x_3=x+2h, \quad \dots, \quad x_n=x+(n-1)h.$$

**99. [Op. cit. 93.]** For  $n=2$ , **93** (\*\*) yields only one condition:  $h(x) > 0$ . By the mean value theorem we have

$$\frac{1}{h(x_1)h(x_2)} \begin{vmatrix} h(x_1) & h(x_2) \\ f(x_1) & f(x_2) \end{vmatrix} = \frac{f(x_2)-f(x_1)}{h(x_2)-h(x_1)} = \frac{x_2-x_1}{[h(\xi)]^2} \begin{vmatrix} h(\xi) & h'(\xi) \\ f(\xi) & f'(\xi) \end{vmatrix}.$$

Set

$$\frac{d}{dx} \frac{h_2(x)}{h_1(x)} = H_1(x), \quad \dots, \quad \frac{d}{dx} \frac{h_{n-1}(x)}{h_1(x)} = H_{n-2}(x), \quad \frac{d}{dx} \frac{f(x)}{h_1(x)} = F(x).$$

We obtain by applying Rolle's theorem  $n-1$  times [solution 95]

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{1}{h_1(x_1)h_1(x_2)\dots h_1(x_n)} \begin{vmatrix} h_1(x_1) & h_1(x_2) & \dots & h_1(x_n) \\ h_2(x_1) & h_2(x_2) & \dots & h_2(x_n) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ h_{n-1}(x_1) & h_{n-1}(x_2) & \dots & h_{n-1}(x_n) \\ f(x_1) & f(x_2) & \dots & f(x_n) \end{vmatrix} = \\ &= (x_n - x_{n-1})(x_{n-1} - x_{n-2}) \dots (x_2 - x_1) \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ h_2(x_1)/h_1(x_1) & H_1(\xi_1) & \dots & H_1(\xi_{n-1}) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ h_{n-1}(x_1)/h_1(x_1) & H_{n-2}(\xi_1) & \dots & H_{n-2}(\xi_{n-1}) \\ f(x_1)/h_1(x_1) & F(\xi_1) & \dots & F(\xi_{n-1}) \end{vmatrix}, \end{aligned}$$

where  $x_1 < \xi_1 < x_2 < \xi_2 < \dots < x_{n-1} < \xi_{n-1} < x_n$ . Transform the Wronskian determinant appearing on the right side of the equation to be proved by taking out the factor  $[h_1(\xi)]^n$  in accordance with VII 58. The conditions 93 (\*\*) are satisfied by  $H_1(x), H_2(x), \dots, H_{n-2}(x)$ . [89.] If we assume that the statement is proved for the  $n-1$  functions  $H_1(x), H_2(x), \dots, H_{n-2}(x), F(x)$ , then from the transformation we have carried out it follows for the  $n$  functions  $h_1(x), h_2(x), \dots, h_{n-1}(x), f(x)$ .

**100.** Special case of 99:

$$h_\nu(x) = e^{\beta_\nu x}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n-1, \quad f(x) = e^{\beta_n x}, \quad x_\mu = \alpha_\mu, \quad \mu = 1, 2, \dots, n.$$

The Wronskian determinants in question are  $> 0$  [91].

**101.** [For the whole of this chapter cf. E. Laguerre, op. cit. 1. See also M. Marden: The Geometry of the Zeros. Mathematical Surveys III, New York: Amer. Math. Soc. 1949.] The mappings considered of the  $Z$ -plane onto the  $Z'$ -plane have the form  $Z' = aZ + b$ . From

$$\begin{aligned} \zeta &= m_1 z_1 + m_2 z_2 + \dots + m_n z_n, & m_1 + m_2 + \dots + m_n &= 1, \\ z'_1 &= a z_1 + b, & z'_2 &= a z_2 + b, \dots, & z'_n &= a z_n + b, \\ \zeta' &= m_1 z'_1 + m_2 z'_2 + \dots + m_n z'_n \end{aligned}$$

it follows that

$$\zeta' = a\zeta + b.$$

**102.** First let  $z, z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  be finite. The transformations in question have the form

$$Z' = \frac{a}{Z - z} + b, \quad a \neq 0.$$

From

$$\begin{aligned} z'_1 &= \frac{a}{z_1 - z} + b, & z'_2 &= \frac{a}{z_2 - z} + b, & \dots, & & z'_n &= \frac{a}{z_n - z} + b, \\ \zeta' &= m_1 z'_1 + m_2 z'_2 + \dots + m_n z'_n, & m_1 + m_2 + \dots + m_n &= 1, \\ \zeta' &= \frac{a}{\zeta - z} + b \end{aligned}$$

it follows that

$$(*) \quad \frac{1}{\zeta - z} = \frac{m_1}{z_1 - z} + \frac{m_2}{z_2 - z} + \dots + \frac{m_n}{z_n - z},$$

independently of  $a$  and  $b$ .—If  $z_\nu = \infty$  for a certain  $\nu$ , and thus  $z$  finite, then the  $\nu$ th term on the right-hand side of (\*) is to be omitted. If  $z = \infty$ , and thus  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  finite, then the transformation is the one considered in 101 and  $\zeta$  coincides with the ordinary center of gravity [101].

**103.** The facts are well known if the point of reference is  $z = \infty$  [III 32]. By a linear mapping we now obtain: the circle through  $z_i, z_k$  and  $z$  is the boundary between two circular domains ( $z_i \neq z_k$ ); from the finitely many such circular domains delete the interior of all those that contain none of the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  in their interior. The closed part of the plane which has not been thus deleted

is  $\mathfrak{C}_z$ . The construction must be modified if  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  and  $z$  all lie on a circle: in this case  $\mathfrak{C}_z$  is that arc of this circle that contains  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  and does not contain  $z$ .

**104.** Cf. **103** or directly by means of a mapping from the case  $z = \infty$ .

**105.** [103.]

**106.** Generalization of the case  $z = \infty$  by means of a linear mapping.

**107.** If  $z$  and  $\zeta_z$  both lay outside  $C$ , then a circle passing through  $z$  and  $\zeta_z$  but not through  $C$  would not separate  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  in contradiction to **106**. If  $z$  lies outside and  $\zeta_z$  on the boundary of  $C$ , apply **106** to the circle passing through  $z$  and  $\zeta_z$  and touching  $C$  from the outside.

**108.** By **102**, since now all the masses  $= 1/n$ , the center of gravity  $\zeta_z$  is given by

$$\begin{aligned}\frac{1}{\zeta_z - z} &= \frac{1}{n} \left( \frac{1}{z_1 - z} + \frac{1}{z_2 - z} + \dots + \frac{1}{z_n - z} \right) \\ &= \frac{n_1}{n} \frac{1}{w_1 - z} + \frac{n_2}{n} \frac{1}{w_2 - z} + \dots + \frac{n_k}{n} \frac{1}{w_k - z}\end{aligned}$$

where  $n_1, n_2, \dots, n_k$  denote the number of those of the  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  that coincide with  $w_1, w_2, \dots, w_k$ , respectively. By the rational masses  $n_1/n, n_2/n, \dots, n_k/n$  any  $k$  masses whose sum is 1 may be arbitrarily closely approximated. This is for finite  $w_1, w_2, \dots, w_k, z$ . For  $w_v = \infty$  or  $z = \infty$  cf. solution **102**.

**109.** To the point  $z_1$  considered, even if  $z_1$  lies at infinity, cf. the formula in solution **102**.

**110.** By **102**, since now all the masses  $= 1/n$ ,

$$\begin{aligned}\zeta_z &= z - \frac{n}{\frac{1}{z - z_1} + \frac{1}{z - z_2} + \dots + \frac{1}{z - z_n}} \\ &= \frac{z_1 + z_2 + \dots + z_n}{n} + \frac{\sum_{\mu=1}^n \sum_{\nu=1}^n (z_\mu - z_\nu)^2}{2n^2} \frac{1}{z} + \dots\end{aligned}$$

**111.** By solution **110** we have

$$\zeta = z - \frac{nf(z)}{f'(z)} = - \frac{a_0 + \binom{n-1}{1} a_1 z + \binom{n-1}{2} a_2 z^2 + \dots + a_{n-1} z^{n-1}}{a_1 + \binom{n-1}{1} a_2 z + \binom{n-1}{2} a_3 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^{n-1}},$$

if  $z$  is finite,  $\zeta = -a_{n-1}/a_n$ , if  $z = \infty$ ;  $f(z)$  is expressed by the formula in the remarks preceding **111**. For  $f(z) = z^n$  we have  $\zeta = 0$ , as is also clear from other considerations [107].—Laguerre terms  $\zeta$  the “point dérivé du point  $z$ ” [op. cit. 1, p. 56].

**112.** [Laguerre, op. cit. 1, p. 61.] If all the zeros of  $f(z)$  are real, then they lie in the closed lower (upper) half-plane, in whose interior also  $\zeta$  must lie, if the imaginary part of  $z$  is positive (negative), except in the case in which all the zeros of  $f(z)$  coincide [107]. If  $f(z)$  has a complex zero  $z_1$ , then  $z$  and  $\zeta$  simultaneously tend to  $z_1$  [109]; hence sufficiently close to  $z_1$  their imaginary parts have the same sign.

**113.** By **111** we have, assuming  $a_n \neq 0$ , that  $\zeta = \infty$  if and only if  $z$  is a zero of the derivative  $f'(z)$  that does not coincide with a zero of  $f(z)$ . Every straight line through such a zero of  $f'(z)$  separates the zeros of  $f(z)$  [**106**], and every circular disc that covers all the zeros of  $f(z)$ , also covers those of  $f'(z)$  [**107**]. From **106** as well as from **107** Gauss's theorem [III **31**] again follows, in particular from **107** by the following consideration: the largest common part (or "intersection") of all circular discs (circular domains not containing  $\infty$ ) that cover the points  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$ , is the smallest convex polygon that contains  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$ .

**114.** If  $x$  is a zero of  $e^{-\frac{z}{c}} \{-(f(z)/c) + f'(z)\}$  and  $f(x) \neq 0$ , and thus also  $f'(x) \neq 0$ , then the center of gravity of  $f(z)$  with respect to  $x$  is [**111**]

$$= x - \frac{nf'(x)}{f''(x)} = x - nc = \zeta.$$

If  $x$  were to lie neither in  $C$  nor in  $C + nc$ , then both  $x$  and  $\zeta$  would lie outside  $C$ , which is however not possible by **107**.

**115.** [J. v. Sz. Nagy; cf. L. Fejér: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. 26, p. 119 (1917).] Let  $z_1$  be finite; setting  $f(z) = (z - z_1)g(z)$  we have  $(x - z_1)g'(x) + g(x) = 0$ . The center of gravity  $\zeta$  of  $g(z)$  with respect to  $x$  is [**111**]

$$\zeta = x - \frac{(n-1)g(x)}{g'(x)} = x - (n-1)(z_1 - x). \quad [\mathbf{106}]$$

For  $z_1 = \infty$  cf. III **31**.

**116.** [Laguerre, op. cit. 1, p. 56, 133.] Let  $z$  be one of the zeros of  $\alpha_1 z f'(z) - \alpha_2 f(z)$  and  $f(z) \neq 0$ , hence  $z$  finite,  $f'(z) \neq 0$ . The center of gravity of  $f(z)$  with respect to  $z$  is

$$\zeta = z - n \frac{\alpha_1}{\alpha_2} z = \left(1 - n \frac{\alpha_1}{\alpha_2}\right) z.$$

Thus if we had  $|z| < \min(1, |1 - n(\alpha_1/\alpha_2)|^{-1})$ , then we would also have  $|\zeta| < 1$ , in contradiction to **107**.

**117.** [**116**.]

**118.** [Laguerre, op. cit. 1, p. 161.]  $z_1$  must be a simple zero so that the center of gravity considered makes sense. Setting  $f(z) = (z - z_1)g(z)$ , we have  $f'(z_1) = g(z_1)$ ,  $f''(z_1) = 2g'(z_1)$  and the center of gravity [**111**] is

$$= z_1 - \frac{(n-1)g(z_1)}{g'(z_1)}.$$

For  $z_1 = \infty$  the remaining zeros must be finite,  $a_n = 0$ ,  $a_{n-1} \neq 0$ . The center of gravity is then [**111**]

$$= -\frac{1}{2} \frac{a_{n-2}}{a_{n-1}}.$$

**119.** [Laguerre, op. cit. 1, p. 142.] With respect to the zero  $z_1 = \alpha + i\beta$  with the largest imaginary part, the center of gravity of the remaining  $n-1$  zeros must have imaginary part  $< \beta$ , if  $\beta > 0$  [**107**]. In fact for  $\beta > 0$  it follows from the differential equation that, if  $f(z_1) = 0$  and thus  $f'(z_1) \neq 0$ ,  $f''(z_1) \neq 0$  [**118**], we have

$$\Im\left(z_1 - \frac{2(n-1)f'(z_1)}{f''(z_1)}\right) = \Im\left(z_1 - \frac{2(n-1)}{z_1}\right) = \beta + \frac{2(n-1)\beta}{\alpha^2 + \beta^2} > \beta.$$

**120.** For  $f(z_1)=0$ ,  $z_1=\alpha+i\beta$ ,  $\beta>0$ , it would follow that

$$\begin{aligned}\Re\left(z_1 - \frac{2(n-1)f'(z_1)}{f''(z_1)}\right) &= \Re\left(z_1 + \frac{(n-1)(z_1^2-1)}{z_1}\right) \\ &= \beta + (n-1)\left(\beta + \frac{\beta}{\alpha^2 + \beta^2}\right) > \beta.\end{aligned}$$

Cf. **119**.

**121.** False. Let  $a \neq b$  and  $C_1, C_2$  circles with centers  $a$  and  $b$ , respectively, whose radii are so small that they do not contain the point  $(a+b)/2$ . Now consider  $f(z)=(z-a)(z-b)$ .

**122.**

$$\frac{n_1 z_2 + n_2 z_1}{n_1 + n_2} - \frac{n_1 z_2^{(0)} + n_2 z_1^{(0)}}{n_1 + n_2} = \frac{n_1(z_2 - z_2^{(0)}) + n_2(z_1 - z_1^{(0)})}{n_1 + n_2}.$$

We have  $(z_2^{(0)} - z_1^{(0)}):(z_2^{(0)} - z^{(0)}) = (r - r_1):(r_2 - r) = n_1:n_2$ .

**123.** We may assume that  $C_1$  and  $C_2$  are the half-planes  $\Re z \geq c_1$ ,  $\Re z \geq c_2$ . Then we have

$$\Re \frac{n_1 z_2 + n_2 z_1}{n_1 + n_2} \geq \frac{n_1 c_2 + n_2 c_1}{n_1 + n_2}.$$

Furthermore, choosing  $z_1$  and  $z_2$  suitably, the mean value  $(n_1 z_2 + n_2 z_1)/(n_1 + n_2)$  can be made equal to an arbitrary number  $c$  with  $\Re c \geq (n_1 c_2 + n_2 c_1)/(n_1 + n_2)$ .

**124.** [J. L. Walsh: Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. **22**, p. 115 (1921).] Let  $z$  be a zero of  $f_1'(z)f_2(z) + f_1(z)f_2'(z)$  and let  $z$  lie outside  $C_1$  and  $C_2$ . Thus we have  $f_1(z) \neq 0$ ,  $f_1'(z) \neq 0$ ,  $f_2(z) \neq 0$ ,  $f_2'(z) \neq 0$ ,  $z$  finite. Denoting the center of gravity of  $f_1(z)$  with respect to  $z$  by  $\zeta_1$  and the center of gravity of  $f_2(z)$  with respect to  $z$  by  $\zeta_2$ , we have

$$\zeta_1 = z - \frac{n_1 f_1(z)}{f_1'(z)}, \quad \zeta_2 = z - \frac{n_2 f_2(z)}{f_2'(z)}.$$

$\zeta_1$  lies in  $C_1$ ,  $\zeta_2$  lies in  $C_2$  [107]. From this it follows by multiplication by  $n_2$  and  $n_1$ , respectively, and addition that

$$z = \frac{n_1 \zeta_2 + n_2 \zeta_1}{n_1 + n_2}.$$

**125.** [J. L. Walsh, op. cit. 124.] Analogously to 124 set:  $f(z) = f_1(z)/f_2(z)$ . If  $z$  is a zero of  $f'(z)$  lying outside  $C_1$  and  $C_2$ , and  $\zeta_1$  and  $\zeta_2$  the centers of gravity with respect to  $z$  of  $f_1(z)$  and  $f_2(z)$ , respectively, then we have [124]

$$z = \frac{n_1 \zeta_2 - n_2 \zeta_1}{n_1 - n_2}, \quad \text{if } n_1 \geq n_2.$$

If  $n_1 = n_2$ , then it follows that  $\zeta_1 = \zeta_2$ , which is impossible for circular domains that have no common points.

**126.** [R. Jentzsch: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, **25**, p. 196 (1917); cf. M. Fekete: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. **31**, pp. 42–48 (1922).] Let  $a$  and  $b$  be two numbers for which all the zeros of  $f(z)-a$  and  $f(z)-b$  lie in  $\mathfrak{O}_1$ . We must show that the zeros of  $f(z)-c$  also lie in  $\mathfrak{O}_1$ , if  $c$  lies on the straight line joining  $a$  and  $b$ . [Definition

of convexity!] The zeros of  $F(z)=[f(z)-a]^m[f(z)-b]^n$ , for positive integers  $m, n$ , certainly lie in  $\mathcal{O}_1$ . We have

$$F'(z)=(m+n)[f(z)-a]^{m-1}[f(z)-b]^{n-1}f'(z)\left(f(z)-\frac{na+mb}{m+n}\right),$$

so that all the zeros of  $f(z)-(na+mb)/(m+n)$  also lie in  $\mathcal{O}_1$  [III 31]. But the numbers  $(na+mb)/(m+n)$  lie everywhere dense on the line joining  $a$  and  $b$ , as  $m$  and  $n$  run through all the positive integers.

**127.** Apply **124** to  $F(z)=[f(z)-a]^{n_1}[f(z)-b]^{n_2}$  [solution **126**].

**128.**

$$a_0+a_1\zeta, \quad a_1+a_2\zeta, \quad a_2+a_3\zeta, \quad \dots, \quad a_{n-1}+a_n\zeta,$$

or

$$a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots, a_n,$$

according as  $\zeta$  is finite or infinite, respectively. I.e. we have, if  $\zeta$  is finite,

$$(\zeta-z)f'(z)+nf(z)=n\sum_{v=0}^{n-1}\binom{n-1}{v}(a_v+a_{v+1}\zeta)z^v.$$

**129.** Definition.

**130.** Well known for  $\zeta=\infty$ . For  $\zeta\neq\infty$

$$\begin{aligned} g(z)[(\zeta-z)h'(z)+lh(z)]+h(z)[(\zeta-z)g'(z)+kg(z)] \\ =(\zeta-z)[g(z)h'(z)+g'(z)h(z)]+(k+l)g(z)h(z). \end{aligned}$$

**131.** If  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2$  are both  $=\infty$ , the result is well known. If both are finite, we have that

$$\begin{aligned} (\zeta_1-z)[(\zeta_2-z)f'(z)+nf(z)]'+(n-1)[(\zeta_2-z)f'(z)+nf(z)] \\ =(\zeta_1-z)(\zeta_2-z)f''(z)+(n-1)(\zeta_1+\zeta_2-2z)f'(z)+n(n-1)f(z) \end{aligned}$$

is symmetric in  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2$ . If  $\zeta_1=\zeta$  is finite,  $\zeta_2=\infty$ ,

$$[(\zeta-z)f'(z)+nf(z)]'=(\zeta-z)f''(z)+(n-1)f'(z).$$

May also be demonstrated by means of the formal calculation in **137**.

**132.** For  $\zeta=\infty$ , it follows from  $f'(z)\equiv 0$  that  $f(z)$  is a constant, i.e. that all the  $n$  zeros are  $=\infty$ . If  $\zeta$  is finite, then the solution of the homogeneous linear differential equation of first order

$$(\zeta-z)f'(z)+nf(z)=0,$$

is  $f(z)=c(z-\zeta)^n$ , where  $c$  is a constant.

**133.** Let  $z'$  be a point of the derived system.

(1)  $z'$  finite,  $f(z')\neq 0$ ,  $z'\neq\zeta$ , hence also  $f'(z')\neq 0$ ;  $\zeta=z'-[nf(z')]/[f'(z')]$  [111].

(2)  $z'$  finite,  $f(z')=0$ ,  $f(z)=(z-z')^k\varphi(z)$ ,  $\varphi(z')\neq 0$ ,  $z'\neq\zeta$ ;  $(z-z')^{-k+1}A_{\zeta}f(z)$  for  $z=z'$  reduces to  $k(\zeta-z')\varphi(z')\neq 0$ .

(3)  $z'=\zeta$ ;  $f(z)=(z-\zeta)^k\varphi(z)$ ,  $\varphi(\zeta)\neq 0$ ,  $k<n$ ;  $(z-\zeta)^{-k}A_{\zeta}f(z)$  for  $z=\zeta$  reduces to  $(n-k)\varphi(\zeta)\neq 0$ .

(4) If  $a_n\neq 0$  and  $a_{n-1}+a_n\zeta=0$  [128], then  $\zeta=-a_{n-1}/a_n$  [111].

**134.** For  $\zeta=\infty$ , cf. III 31. For finite  $\zeta$  consider the cases listed in **133**. Either  $\zeta$  is the center of gravity of  $f(z)$  with respect to  $z'$  as in (1) and (4) and then **106**

applies, or  $z'$  is itself a zero of  $f(z)$  and then  $z'$  lies in the circular domain, namely on its boundary.

**135.** Follows from **107** by means of the same considerations as were used to deduce **134** from **106**.

**136.** From **135**. The circular-arc polygon in question is conceived of as the largest common part of circular domains that contain  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  but do not contain  $\zeta$  [solution **113**].

**137.** If  $\zeta = \infty$ , then from  $f^{(n-1)}(z) = 0$  we obtain the ordinary center of gravity of  $f(z)$ , or  $\infty$  or nothing in particular according as the precise degree of  $f(z)$  is equal to  $n$ ,  $n-1$  or is  $\leq n-2$ .—Let  $\zeta$  be finite. We shall say that the polynomial of degree  $m$ ,  $\sum_{\nu=0}^m \binom{m}{\nu} b_{\nu} z^{\nu}$ , and the power series  $\sum_{\nu=-\infty}^{\infty} c_{\nu} u^{\nu}$  are associated with each other, in symbols

$$b_0 + \binom{m}{1} b_1 z + \binom{m}{2} b_2 z^2 + \dots + b_m z^m \wedge \dots + c_{-1} u^{-1} + c_0 + c_1 u + \dots$$

if  $c_0 = b_0$ ,  $c_1 = b_1, \dots$ ,  $c_m = b_m$ ,  $c_{-1}, c_{-2}, \dots, c_{m+1}, c_{m+2}, \dots$  arbitrary. We then have [128]

$$f(z) = a_0 + \binom{n}{1} a_1 z + \binom{n}{2} a_2 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^n$$

$$\wedge a_0 + a_1 u + a_2 u^2 + \dots + a_n u^n,$$

$$f'(z) = n \left[ a_1 + \binom{n-1}{1} a_2 z + \binom{n-1}{2} a_3 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^{n-1} \right]$$

$$\wedge (a_0 + a_1 u + a_2 u^2 + \dots + a_n u^n) \frac{n}{u},$$

$$A_{\zeta} f(z) = n \left[ (a_0 + a_1 \zeta) + \binom{n-1}{1} (a_1 + a_2 \zeta) z + \dots + (a_{n-1} + a_n \zeta) z^{n-1} \right]$$

$$\wedge (a_0 + a_1 u + \dots + a_n u^n) n \left( 1 + \frac{\zeta}{u} \right),$$

$$A_{\zeta}^{n-1} f(z) \wedge (a_0 + a_1 u + \dots + a_n u^n) n(n-1) \dots 2 \left( 1 + \frac{\zeta}{u} \right)^{n-1},$$

$$\begin{aligned} A_{\zeta}^{n-1} f(z) = n! & \left( a_0 + \binom{n-1}{1} a_1 \zeta + \binom{n-1}{2} a_2 \zeta^2 + \dots + a_{n-1} \zeta^{n-1} \right. \\ & \left. + \left[ a_1 + \binom{n-1}{1} a_2 \zeta + \binom{n-1}{2} a_3 \zeta^2 + \dots + a_n \zeta^{n-1} \right] z \right). \end{aligned}$$

We deduce that the zero in question is the center of gravity  $f(z)$  with respect to  $\zeta$  [111].

**138.** By solution **137** we have

$$A_{\zeta_1} A_{\zeta_2} \dots A_{\zeta_n} f(z) \wedge n! (a_0 + a_1 u + \dots + a_n u^n) \left( 1 + \frac{\zeta_1}{u} \right) \left( 1 + \frac{\zeta_2}{u} \right) \dots \left( 1 + \frac{\zeta_n}{u} \right),$$

if  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n$  are finite, otherwise

$$A_{\zeta_1} A_{\zeta_2} \dots A_{\zeta_n} f(z) \wedge n! (a_0 + a_1 u + \dots + a_n u^n) \left(1 + \frac{\zeta_1}{u}\right) \left(1 + \frac{\zeta_2}{u}\right) \dots \left(1 + \frac{\zeta_{n-k}}{u}\right) \frac{1}{u^k}.$$

**139.** Let  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n$  all be finite, i.e.  $b_n \neq 0$ . We then have [138] that

$$\Sigma_\nu = (-1)^\nu \binom{n}{n-\nu} \frac{b_{n-\nu}}{b_n}, \quad \nu = 0, 1, 2, \dots, n$$

and hence

$$\begin{aligned} & A(\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n) f(z) \\ &= \frac{1}{b_n} \left[ a_0 b_n - \binom{n}{1} a_1 b_{n-1} + \binom{n}{2} a_2 b_{n-2} - \dots + (-1)^{n-1} \binom{n}{n-1} a_{n-1} b_1 + (-1)^n a_n b_0 \right]. \end{aligned}$$

If the last  $k$  of  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n$  and only these are infinite, then we have [138]

$$\Sigma_0 = \Sigma_1 = \dots = \Sigma_{k-1} = 0,$$

$$\Sigma_\nu = (-1)^{\nu-k} \frac{\binom{n}{\nu} b_{n-\nu}}{\binom{n}{k} b_{n-k}}, \quad \nu = k, k+1, \dots, n, \quad b_{n-k} \neq 0,$$

and hence

$$\begin{aligned} & A(\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n) f(z) \\ &= \frac{(-1)^k}{\binom{n}{k} b_{n-k}} \left[ (-1)^k \binom{n}{k} a_k b_{n-k} + (-1)^{k+1} \binom{n}{k+1} a_{k+1} b_{n-k-1} + \dots \right. \\ & \quad \left. + (-1)^{n-1} \binom{n}{n-1} a_{n-1} b_1 + (-1)^n a_n b_0 \right] \end{aligned}$$

[for  $k=n$  this is to be read as  $(-1)^n a_n$ ]. In every case we hence have

$$\begin{aligned} A(\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n) f(z) &= \lambda_f \left[ a_0 b_n - \binom{n}{1} a_1 b_{n-1} + \binom{n}{2} a_2 b_{n-2} - \dots \right. \\ & \quad \left. + (-1)^{n-1} \binom{n}{n-1} a_{n-1} b_1 + (-1)^n a_n b_0 \right], \end{aligned}$$

where  $\lambda_f^{-1} = (-1)^k \binom{n}{k} b_{n-k}$ , if  $b_{n-k}$  denotes the highest coefficient of  $g(z)$  that is

different from zero. We have

$$\lambda_f^{-1} A(\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n) f(z) = \lambda_g^{-1} A(z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n) g(z).$$

**140.** The apolarity of  $z_1$  and  $\zeta_1$  means:  $z_1 = \zeta_1$ . The apolarity of  $z_1, z_2$  and  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2$  means (apart from easily discussed exceptional cases)

$$(z_1 - \zeta_1)(z_2 - \zeta_2) + (z_1 - \zeta_2)(z_2 - \zeta_1) = 0, \quad \frac{(z_1 - \zeta_1)(z_2 - \zeta_2)}{(z_1 - \zeta_2)(z_2 - \zeta_1)} = -1,$$

i.e. the two pairs of points are situated harmonically on a circle.



**141.** By **139** we must have  $\Sigma_0 - \Sigma_n = 0$ , i.e.  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n$  are all finite and

$$\zeta_1 \zeta_2 \dots \zeta_n = 1.$$

**142.**

$$\zeta = z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n.$$

**143.**

$$A(\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_n) f(z) = \Sigma_0 - \frac{\Sigma_1}{n} + c \Sigma_n = 1 - \frac{\zeta_1 + \zeta_2 + \dots + \zeta_n}{n} + c \zeta_1 \zeta_2 \dots \zeta_n.$$

**144.** Apply **135** repeatedly.

**145.** [J. H. Grace: Proc. Camb. Phil. Soc. **11**, pp. 352–357 (1900–1902); cf. G. Szegő: Math. Z. **13**, p. 31 (1922); J. Egerváry: Acta Univ. Hung. Francisco-Josephinae, **1**, pp. 39–45; Math. és phys. lapok, **29**, pp. 21–43 (1922).] Let  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  lie inside and  $\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_k$  outside the circular domain  $C$  and let  $A_{\zeta_1} A_{\zeta_2} \dots A_{\zeta_k} A_{\zeta_{k+1}} f(z)$  but not  $A_{\zeta_1} A_{\zeta_2} \dots A_{\zeta_k} f(z)$ ,  $k \leq n-1$ , vanish identically. By **144** the zeros of  $A_{\zeta_1} A_{\zeta_2} \dots A_{\zeta_k} f(z)$  also lie inside  $C$  and by **132** they must all coincide with the point  $\zeta_{k+1}$ . Thus  $\zeta_{k+1}$  lies inside  $C$ .

**146.** [**145.**] For if two convex polygons have no common point, then there are straight lines that separate the two polygons. E.g. the perpendicular bisector of the shortest distance is such a line.

**147.** [E. Landau: Ann. de l'Éc. Norm. **24**, p. 180 (1907).] [**148.**]

**148.** [A. Hurwitz: cf. E. Landau, op. cit. **147.**] By **143** the polynomial in question is apolar to the polynomial with the zeros

$$\zeta_\nu = 1 - e^{\frac{2\pi i \nu}{n}}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n,$$

that lie in the circular domain  $|z-1| \leq 1$  [**145**].

**149.** [L. Fejér: C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris) **145**, p. 459 (1907); Math. Ann. **65**, pp. 413–423 (1908); Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. **26**, pp. 114–128 (1917). Cf. also S. Sarantopoulos: C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris) **174**, p. 592 (1922); P. Montel: C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris) **174**, p. 851, p. 1220 (1922); Ann de l'Éc. Norm. Series 3, **40**, pp. 1–34 (1923).] For  $k=2$  use **135** with  $\zeta=0$ . We have

$$A_0(1-z+c_2 z^2) = \nu_2 - (\nu_2-1)z,$$

the derived system consists of  $\nu_2/(\nu_2-1)$  and of the point at infinity taken with multiplicity  $\nu_2-2$ . Thus the exterior of the circle  $|z| > \nu_2/(\nu_2-1)$  cannot contain all the zeros of  $1-z+c_2 z^2$ .

For  $k > 2$  repeated application of **135**, i.e. mathematical induction, is required. Denoting the polynomial in question by  $f(z)$  we have

$$A_0 f(z) = \nu_k - (\nu_k-1)z + c_2(\nu_k-\nu_2)z^2 + \dots + c_{k-1}(\nu_k-\nu_{k-1})z^{k-1}.$$

At least one point of the derived system lies in the circle

$$|z| \leq \left( \frac{\nu_2}{\nu_2-1} \frac{\nu_3}{\nu_3-1} \dots \frac{\nu_{k-1}}{\nu_{k-1}-1} \right) \frac{\nu_k}{\nu_k-1}.$$

To see this replace  $z$  by  $[\nu_k/(\nu_k-1)]u$  and in the equation for  $u$  make use of the assumption of the mathematical induction proof.—We have

$$\left[\left(1-\frac{1}{\nu_2}\right)\left(1-\frac{1}{\nu_3}\right)\cdots\left(1-\frac{1}{\nu_k}\right)\right]^{-1} \leq \left[\left(1-\frac{1}{2}\right)\left(1-\frac{1}{3}\right)\cdots\left(1-\frac{1}{k}\right)\right]^{-1} = k.$$

Note that the polynomial of  $k+1$  terms

$$\left(1-\frac{z}{k}\right)^k = 1 - z + \cdots$$

has the single zero  $k$ .

**150.** [J. H. Grace, op. cit. **145**, p. 356; cf. also P. J. Heawood: Quart. J. Math. **38**, pp. 84–107 (1907).] Denoting by

$$f(z) = a_0 + \binom{n-1}{1} a_1 z + \binom{n-1}{2} a_2 z^2 + \cdots + a_{n-1} z^{n-1}$$

the derivative of the polynomial in question, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \int_a^b f(z) dz &= a_0 b_{n-1} - \binom{n-1}{1} a_1 b_{n-2} + \binom{n-1}{2} a_2 b_{n-3} + \cdots \\ &\quad + (-1)^{n-1} a_{n-1} b_0 = 0, \end{aligned}$$

where  $b_0, b_1, \dots, b_{n-1}$  remain fixed for all polynomials  $f(z)$ , i.e. for variable  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_{n-1}$ . The two polynomials of degree  $n-1$ ,  $f(z)$  and

$$g(z) = b_0 + \binom{n-1}{1} b_1 z + \binom{n-1}{2} b_2 z^2 + \cdots + b_{n-1} z^{n-1}$$

are thus apolar. We obtain the explicit expression for  $g(x)$  by choosing in particular  $a_\nu = (-1)^\nu x^{n-1-\nu}$ , i.e.  $f(z) = (x-z)^{n-1}$ . From

$$g(x) = \int_a^b (x-z)^{n-1} dz = \frac{(x-a)^n - (x-b)^n}{n}$$

the zeros of  $g(x)$  are obtained as

$$\zeta_\nu = \frac{a+b}{2} + i \frac{a-b}{2} \cot \frac{\nu\pi}{n}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n-1.$$

Now apply **145**.

**151.** [Cf. G. Szegő, op. cit. **145**, p. 35.] If  $\gamma=0$ , then either among the zeros of  $f(z)$  or among those of  $g(z)$  there must occur  $z=0$ . The assertion is then evident. (For  $\beta_1=\beta_2=\cdots=\beta_n=\infty$ , set  $k=0$ ;  $0\cdot\infty$  is indeterminate.) We have a similar deduction for  $\gamma=\infty$ . Assume now that  $\gamma \neq 0, \infty$ . The two polynomials  $f(z)$  and  $z^n g(-\gamma z^{-1})$  are then apolar. Of the zeros of the latter, namely  $-\gamma \beta_\nu^{-1}$ ,  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, n$  (setting  $-\gamma \cdot 0^{-1} = \infty$ ,  $-\gamma \cdot \infty^{-1} = 0$ ) by **145** at least one lies in  $C$ , i.e.  $-\gamma \beta_\nu^{-1} = k$ .

**152.** [**151.**]

**153.** [I. Schur, cf. G. Szegő, op. cit. **145**, p. 37.] Consider  $\mathfrak{C}$  as the intersection of closed circular discs  $C$  that contain the origin and all the zeros of  $f(z)$ . By **151** every zero  $\gamma$  of the polynomial obtained by composition has the form  $\vartheta k$ , where  $0 \leq \vartheta \leq 1$  and  $k$  lies in  $C$ . But then  $\gamma$  lies in all the  $C$  and hence also in  $\mathfrak{C}$ .

**154.** [For the statement of the problem cf. Laguerre, op. cit. 1, pp. 199–200 (1898). G. Pólya: Interméd. des Math. 20, pp. 145–146 (1913). For the heuristic background cf. MPR 2, p. 47, ex. 15.—G. Szegő, op. cit. 145, p. 38, and J. Egerváry, op. cit. 145.] Replace  $g(z)$  by  $g(bz)$  or  $g(-bz)$ , according as the zeros of  $g(z)$  lie in the intervals  $-b, 0$  or  $0, b$ , respectively, and then apply 153.

**155.** [E. Malo: J. math. spéc., Series 4, 4, p. 7 (1895).] By VI 85 we have that

$$Q_n(z) = 1 + \binom{n}{1} z + \binom{n}{2} z^2 + \cdots + \binom{n}{n-1} z^{n-1} + z^n = (1-z)^n P_n\left(\frac{1+z}{1-z}\right),$$

where  $P_n(x)$  denotes the  $n$ th Legendre polynomial. Hence  $Q_n(z)$  has only negative zeros [VI 97]. First compose the first polynomial with  $Q_n(cz)$  and the resulting polynomial

$$a_0 + \binom{n}{1} a_1 z + \binom{n}{2} a_2 z^2 + \cdots + a_n z^n$$

with the second polynomial, in which if necessary  $z$  is replaced by  $dz$ . The constants  $c, d$  are chosen in such a manner that all the zeros of the respective polynomials lie in the interval  $-1, 0$ . Here in both cases apply 153, but choosing for  $\mathfrak{E}$  the upper and lower closed half-plane respectively. Then it follows that the zeros of the polynomial in question all lie in the upper and at the same time in the lower half-plane.—Also follows from 154 by two applications of 65.

**156.** [I. Schur: J. reine angew. Math. 144, pp. 75–88 (1914).] Similarly as in 155, noting that the polynomials [VI 99]

$$1 + \binom{n}{1} \frac{z}{1!} + \binom{n}{2} \frac{z^2}{2!} + \cdots + \binom{n}{n-1} \frac{z^{n-1}}{(n-1)!} + \frac{z^n}{n!}$$

have only real, negative zeros.

**157.** Since the zeros of  $[1 + (iz/n)]^n$  lie in the half-plane  $\Re z > 0$ , those of

$$1 - \binom{n}{2} \frac{z^2}{n^2} + \binom{n}{4} \frac{z^4}{n^4} - \cdots \rightarrow \cos z$$

are real [III 25]. Observe III 203.

**158.**  $d^\nu/dz^\nu [1 - (z^2/n)]^n$  has only real zeros [55] and, for fixed  $\nu$ , as  $n \rightarrow \infty$  it tends in every finite domain to  $(d^\nu e^{-z^2})/(dz^\nu)$  [Hurwitz-Courant, p. 63]. From this the assertion follows [III 203].

**159.** (a) [A. Hurwitz: Math. Ges. Hamburg, Festschrift, p. 25 (1890).]

$$(-1)^n \left(1 + \frac{z^2}{4n^2}\right)^n P_n\left(\frac{z^2 - 4n^2}{z^2 + 4n^2}\right) = 1 - \binom{n}{1}^2 \left(\frac{z}{2n}\right)^2 + \binom{n}{2}^2 \left(\frac{z}{2n}\right)^4 - \binom{n}{3}^2 \left(\frac{z}{2n}\right)^6 + \cdots;$$

$P_n(z)$  has only real zeros, lying in the interval  $-1, +1$  [VI 97].

(b)

$$L_n\left(\frac{z^2}{4n}\right) = 1 - \frac{z^2}{2 \cdot 2} + \frac{z^4}{2 \cdot 4 \cdot 2 \cdot 4} \left(1 - \frac{1}{n}\right) - \frac{z^6}{2 \cdot 4 \cdot 6 \cdot 2 \cdot 4 \cdot 6} \left(1 - \frac{1}{n}\right) \left(1 - \frac{2}{n}\right) + \cdots;$$

$L_n(z)$  has only real positive zeros [VI 99, solution (i)].

(c) From

$$\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} \frac{d\vartheta}{\sin \vartheta - iz} = \frac{2\pi i}{\sqrt{1+z^2}} \quad [\text{III 148}]$$

by differentiating  $n$  times and changing the variable we derive that

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} \left(1 + \frac{iz \sin \vartheta}{n}\right)^{-n-1} d\vartheta &= \frac{1}{n!} \left(-\frac{z}{n}\right)^n Q_n\left(\frac{n}{z}\right) \left(1 + \frac{z^2}{n^2}\right)^{-n-\frac{1}{2}} \\ &\rightarrow \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} e^{-iz \sin \vartheta} d\vartheta \end{aligned}$$

as  $n \rightarrow \infty$  where  $Q_n(z)$  is the polynomial considered in solution 56 that has only real zeros.

(d) From III 205, setting  $f(t) = (1-t^2)^{-1/2}$ .—(a), (b), (c) depend directly, (d) indirectly, on III 203.

160. [G. Pólya: Tôhoku Math. J. 19, p. 241 (1921).] Setting

$$\frac{d^{n-1}}{dz^{n-1}} \left( \frac{z^{q-1}}{z^q - 1} \right) = \frac{\bar{Q}_n(z)}{(z^q - 1)^n}, \quad \frac{d^n e^{z^q}}{dz^n} = \bar{R}_n(z) e^{z^q},$$

the zeros of  $\bar{Q}_n(z)$ ,  $\bar{R}_n(z)$  lie on  $q$  rays emanating from the point  $z=0$  that divide the plane into  $q$  equal sectors, one of which is bisected by the positive real axis [59]. Now the zeros of  $F(z^q)$  lie on the same rays, for we have

$$\begin{aligned} \bar{R}_{qn}(z) e^{z^q} &= \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{(qn+qk)!}{(n+k)!} \frac{z^{qk}}{(qk)!}, \quad \frac{n!}{(qn)!} \bar{R}_{qn}(z q^{-1} n^{-\frac{q-1}{q}}) e^{z^{qn} - qn - q + 1} \\ &= \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{qn+1}{q(n+1)} \frac{qn+2}{q(n+2)} \cdots \frac{qn+k}{q(n+k)} \left(1 + \frac{k+1}{qn}\right) \left(1 + \frac{k+2}{qn}\right) \cdots \left(1 + \frac{qk}{qn}\right) \frac{z^{qk}}{(qk)!} \\ &\rightarrow \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{z^{qk}}{(qk)!} = F(z^q) \end{aligned}$$

as  $n \rightarrow \infty$  [III 203]. The second proof operates in an analogous manner on  $\bar{Q}_n(z)$ .

161. [G. Pólya and I. Schur: J. reine angew. Math. 144, pp. 89–113 (1914).] Set

$$\left(1 - \frac{\alpha z}{k}\right)^k \left(1 - \frac{z}{\alpha_1}\right) \left(1 - \frac{z}{\alpha_2}\right) \cdots \left(1 - \frac{z}{\alpha_k}\right) = P_k(z).$$

We have, uniformly in every finite domain,  $\lim_{k \rightarrow \infty} P_k(z) = g(z)$ .

162. [J. L. W. V. Jensen: Acta Math. 36, p. 181 (1912).] If we write the polynomial considered in solution 161 in the form

$$P_k(z) = a_{0k} + \frac{a_{1k}}{1!} z + \frac{a_{2k}}{2!} z^2 + \cdots + \frac{a_{nk}}{n!} z^n + \cdots,$$

we have [Hurwitz-Courant, pp. 61–64]

$$\lim_{k \rightarrow \infty} a_{nk} = a_n,$$

and the polynomial

$$a_{0k} z^n + \frac{a_{1k}}{1!} \frac{dz^n}{dz} + \frac{a_{2k}}{2!} \frac{d^2 z^n}{dz^2} + \cdots = a_{0k} z^n + \binom{n}{1} a_{1k} z^{n-1} + \binom{n}{2} a_{2k} z^{n-2} + \cdots + a_{nk}$$

has only real zeros [63]. By taking the limit  $k \rightarrow \infty$  [III 203] and replacing  $z$

by  $1/z$ , it follows that the zeros of the polynomials in question are *real*. That they are also positive follows from the observation that the coefficients in the power series expansion

$$g(-z) = 1 - \frac{a_1}{1!} z + \frac{a_2}{2!} z^2 - \dots$$

are all positive, and hence

$$a_1 < 0, \quad a_2 > 0, \quad a_3 < 0, \quad \dots \quad [47].$$

**163.** It follows from **161**, **55** (slightly modified) and III **201**, that no derivative of  $g(x)$  vanishes in the interval  $-\infty < x < \alpha_1$ . From this we deduce, as in **72**, that the difference

$$g(x) - a_0 - \frac{a_1}{1!} x - \dots - \frac{a_{n-1}}{(n-1)!} x^{n-1}$$

except for  $x=0$ , vanishes nowhere in the interval  $-\infty < x \leq \alpha_1$ . Its sign in the interval  $0 < x < \alpha_1$  thus agrees with that of  $a_n$ . [I **144**.]

**164.**

$$e^{-z^2} = \frac{2}{\sqrt{\pi}} \int_0^\infty e^{-t^2} \cos 2zt \, dt$$

can be regarded as the limit of polynomials with only real zeros [158]. From this it follows [63] that, if  $p > 0$ ,

$$e^{-z^2} - p \frac{d^2 e^{-z^2}}{dz^2} = \frac{2}{\sqrt{\pi}} \int_0^\infty e^{-t^2} (1 + 4pt^2) \cos 2zt \, dt$$

has only real zeros. By iterating this procedure we arrive at polynomials and by a limiting process [161] to  $g(z)$  under the integral sign. [For a generalization see G. Pólya: J. reine angew. Math. 158, pp. 6-18 (1927).]

**165.** [Op. cit. **161**.] Determine the integer  $m_k$  such that, setting  $\beta + \beta_1^{-1} + \beta_2^{-1} + \dots + \beta_k^{-1} = B_k$ , we have in the circle  $|z| \leq k$

$$\left| \left( 1 + \frac{B_k z}{m_k} \right)^{m_k} - e^{B_k z} \right| < \frac{1}{k} \exp \left( -k \left( \frac{1}{|\beta_1|} + \frac{1}{|\beta_2|} + \dots + \frac{1}{|\beta_k|} \right) \right).$$

Then we have, uniformly in every finite domain,

$$\lim_{k \rightarrow \infty} \left( 1 - \frac{\alpha z^2}{k} \right)^k \left( 1 + \frac{B_k z}{m_k} \right)^{m_k} \left( 1 - \frac{z}{\beta_1} \right) \dots \left( 1 - \frac{z}{\beta_k} \right) = G(z).$$

**166.** Show, as in **162**, that the polynomial

$$1 + \binom{n}{1} b_1 z + \binom{n}{2} b_2 z^2 + \dots + b_n z^n$$

has only real roots. Therefore, if it is precisely of degree  $n$ , two *adjacent* coefficients in it cannot vanish [49].  $G(z)$  is transcendental. Determine  $n > m+1$  such that  $b_n \neq 0$ .

**167.** By assumption  $\beta_\nu < 0$ ,  $\nu = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ . Let  $\sqrt{k} > n\sqrt{\alpha}$  and set

$$\left(1 - \frac{\alpha x^2}{k}\right)^k \left(1 - \frac{x}{\beta_1}\right) \left(1 - \frac{x}{\beta_2}\right) \cdots \left(1 - \frac{x}{\beta_k}\right) = Q(x),$$

$$B = \beta + \beta_1^{-1} + \beta_2^{-1} + \cdots + \beta_k^{-1}.$$

Passing from

$$a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \cdots + a_n z^n = 0$$

to the equation

$$a_0 + a_1 e^B z + a_2 e^{2B} z^2 + \cdots + a_n e^{nB} z^n = 0$$

leaves the number of non-real zeros unaltered, and passing then to the equation

$$a_0 Q(0) + a_1 Q(1) e^B z + a_2 Q(2) e^{2B} z^2 + \cdots + a_n Q(n) e^{nB} z^n = 0$$

does not increase it [67]. Now let  $k \rightarrow \infty$  [III 201].

**168.**

$$\frac{1}{\Gamma(z+1)} = e^{Cz} \left(1 + \frac{z}{1}\right) e^{-\frac{z}{1}} \left(1 + \frac{z}{2}\right) e^{-\frac{z}{2}} \cdots \left(1 + \frac{z}{n}\right) e^{-\frac{z}{n}} \cdots$$

is of the form **165** and its zeros are negative. The polynomial

$$\left(1 - \frac{z^2}{4n}\right)^n = 1 - \frac{1}{1!} \left(\frac{z}{2}\right)^2 + \frac{1}{2!} \left(\frac{z}{2}\right)^4 \left(1 - \frac{1}{n}\right) - \frac{1}{3!} \left(\frac{z}{2}\right)^6 \left(1 - \frac{1}{n}\right) \left(1 - \frac{2}{n}\right) + \cdots$$

has only real zeros and therefore [167,  $G(z) = \Gamma((z/2) + 1)^{-1}$ ] so has the following polynomial

$$\frac{1}{\Gamma(1)} - \frac{1}{\Gamma(2)1!} \left(\frac{z}{2}\right)^2 + \frac{1}{\Gamma(3)2!} \left(\frac{z}{2}\right)^4 \left(1 - \frac{1}{n}\right) - \cdots \rightarrow J_0(z)$$

as  $n \rightarrow \infty$  [III 203]. Clearly **65** is also a special case of **167**.

**169.** [Op. cit. **160.**] If  $q$  is a positive integer, then the function

$$\frac{\Gamma(z+1)}{\Gamma(qz+1)} = G(z)$$

is entire, for the poles of the numerator  $-q/q, -2q/q, \dots$  are contained among those of the denominator  $-1/q, -2/q, \dots$ , and in fact it is of the form **165** [solution **168**]. Apply **167** to this function  $G(z)$  and to the polynomial

$$\left(1 + \frac{z}{n}\right)^n = 1 + \frac{z}{1!} + \frac{z^2}{2!} \left(1 - \frac{1}{n}\right) + \cdots$$

Subsequently let  $n \rightarrow \infty$  [III 203].

**170.** [G. Pólya: Messenger, **52**, pp. 185–188 (1923).]

$$\alpha F_\alpha(z) = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} (-1)^k \frac{z^{2k}}{(2k)!} \alpha \int_0^{\infty} e^{-t^\alpha} t^{2k} dt = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} (-1)^k \frac{z^{2k}}{k!} \frac{\Gamma(k+1) \Gamma\left(\frac{2k+1}{\alpha}\right)}{\Gamma(2k+1)}.$$

Apply **167** to the polynomial

$$\left(1 - \frac{z^2}{n}\right)^n = \sum_{k=0}^n (-1)^k \frac{z^{2k}}{k!} \left(1 - \frac{1}{n}\right) \cdots \left(1 - \frac{k-1}{n}\right)$$

and to the entire function

$$\frac{\Gamma\left(\frac{z}{2} + 1\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{z+1}{2q}\right)}{\Gamma(z+1)} = G(z)$$

where  $\alpha = 2q$ ,  $q$  an integer. Subsequently a limiting process [III **203**]. The function  $G(z)$  is entire, for the poles of the numerator

$$-2, -4, -6, \dots, -1, -(1+2q), -(1+4q), \dots$$

are absorbed by those of the denominator  $-1, -2, -3, \dots$ .  $G(z)$  is also of the form **165** [solution **168**].—The function  $F_2(z) = (\sqrt{\pi}/2) e^{-\frac{z^2}{4}}$  has no zeros at all.

**171.** If  $\alpha \neq 2, 4, 6, \dots$  and  $x$  tends to  $\infty$  through *real* values,  $\lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} x^{\alpha+1} F_\alpha(x) \neq 0$  [III **154**]. It is instructive that the function  $F_\alpha(x)$  for  $\alpha \neq 2$  has infinitely many zeros [op. cit. **170**]. It thus has infinitely many real and no non-real zeros, if  $\alpha = 4, 6, 8, \dots$ , and finitely many real and infinitely many non-real zeros in all other cases. Cf. III **201**.

**171.1.** [G. Pólya: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. 38, pp. 161–168 (1929).] Let  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_s$  denote the zeros of  $G(z)$  in  $[0, m]$ ,

$$0 \leq \alpha_1 < \alpha_2 < \dots < \alpha_s \leq m,$$

and set

$$G(z) = (z - \alpha_1)(z - \alpha_2) \cdots (z - \alpha_s) G^*(z).$$

Then argue as follows:

(1)

$$a_0 G^*(0) + a_1 G^*(1)z + \dots + a_n G^*(n)z^n$$

has precisely  $m$  changes of sign (by **47** and the definition of  $G^*(z)$ ) and precisely  $m$  positive zeros (by a slight modification of **167**—make use of **67** more completely).

(2)

$$a_0 G^*(0)(0 - \alpha_1) + a_1 G^*(1)(1 - \alpha_1)z + \dots + a_m G^*(m)(m - \alpha_1)z^m$$

has precisely  $m-1$  changes of sign (attention to the various possible cases) and so by **36** at most  $m-1$  positive zeros. Yet it has (by a slight modification of solution **66**) at least  $m-1$ , and so finally exactly  $m-1$ , positive zeros;

(3) Introduce successively  $\alpha_2, \alpha_3, \dots, \alpha_s$  and repeat appropriately the arguments of (2) (attention at each step to the changes wrought by the preceding steps) to arrive at the desired proposition.

**171.2.** Use **171.1** and **162** [details loc. cit. **171.1**].

**171.3.** Apply **171.2** to

$$g(z) = e^{-z} = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left(1 - \frac{z}{n}\right)^n = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-z)^n}{n!},$$

$$G(z) = \frac{1}{\Gamma(z+1-\nu)},$$

$$s = [\nu].$$

**171.4.** Apply **171.1** to the polynomial with only positive zeros

$$b_0 - b_1 z + b_2 z^2 - \dots + (-1)^m b_m z^m$$

and the entire function

$$G(z) = \frac{(-1)^k \sin \pi(z-k)}{1 \sin \frac{\pi(z-k)}{1}}.$$

Each of the  $s$  zeros of  $G(z)$  that falls in the interval  $[0, m]$  destroys just one change of sign and, by **171.1**, just one zero of the initial polynomial. Hence the resulting polynomial

$$b_k z^k - b_{k+1} z^{k+1} + b_{k+2} z^{k+2} - \dots + (-1)^q b_{k+q} z^{k+q}$$

has just as many positive zeros as changes of sign.

**171.5.** Similar to **171.4**, but now

$$G(z) = \frac{\Gamma\left(-\frac{z-k}{1}\right)}{1\Gamma(-z)} = \frac{(-1)^k \sin \pi(z-k)}{1 \sin \frac{\pi(z-k)}{1}} \frac{\Gamma(1+z)}{\Gamma\left(1+\frac{z-k}{1}\right)}.$$

**172.** [Cauchy: Exercices de mathématiques (anciens exercices) 1826. Oeuvres, Series 2, 6, pp. 354–400. Paris: Gauthiers-Villars 1887.]

(a) [A. Hurwitz, op. cit. **159**.] With the exception of the root  $z=0$ , we are concerned with the zeros of the meromorphic function

$$\cot z - \frac{1}{z} = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( \frac{1}{z+n\pi} + \dots + \frac{1}{z+2\pi} + \frac{1}{z+\pi} + \frac{1}{z-\pi} + \frac{1}{z-2\pi} + \dots + \frac{1}{z-n\pi} \right).$$

Under the limit sign we have a rational function whose numerator is of degree  $\leq 2n-1$ . Between the  $2n$  zeros of the denominator there lie  $2n-1$  intervals, and in the interior of each interval there lies one zero of the numerator [26]. Consequently the numerator is of precise degree  $2n-1$  and has no non-real zeros. Take the limit [III 203].

$$(b) \quad z^{-2} \cos z(\tan z - z) = \int_0^1 t \sin zt \, dt.$$

Obtain an analogue for sine polynomials to theorem III **185** for cosine polynomials (proof the same) and deduce from this, by taking the limit, an analogue to III **205** that may be applied to the present integral.

$$(c) \quad 2z^{-3} \cos z(\tan z - z) = \int_0^1 (1-t^2) \cos zt \, dt.$$



**173** yields apart from the reality also the existence of infinitely many zeros.

**173.**

$$z^2 F(z) = z f(1) \sin z - f'(0)(1 - \cos z) \\ + \int_0^1 f''(t)(\cos z - \cos zt) dt$$

(integrate by parts twice), whence we deduce

$$F[(2m-1)\pi] > 0, \quad F(2m\pi) < 0, \quad m = 1, 2, 3, \dots,$$

and thus the existence of infinitely many zeros. We have  $F(0) > 0$ . Hence the rational function

$$(-1)^n \frac{F(-n\pi)}{z+n\pi} + \dots + \frac{F(-2\pi)}{z+2\pi} - \frac{F(-\pi)}{z+\pi} + \frac{F(0)}{z} - \frac{F(\pi)}{z-\pi} \\ + \frac{F(2\pi)}{z-2\pi} - \dots + (-1)^n \frac{F(n\pi)}{z-n\pi}$$

has  $2n-2$  real and at most 2 non-real zeros [cf. **26**]. It tends to  $F(z)/\sin z$  [cf. **III 165**] and hence [**III 201**]  $F(z)$  has either 0 or 2 non-real zeros.  $F(z)$  is an even function. If it had exactly two non-real zeros, then these would be purely imaginary. Now if  $y$  is real we have

$$F(iy) = \int_0^1 f(t) \frac{e^{yt} + e^{-yt}}{2} dt > 0.$$

**174.** It is sufficient to consider the case  $\int_0^1 |\varphi(t)| dt < 1$  [**III 203**]. Then we have for sufficiently large integers  $n$

$$\frac{1}{n} \left| \varphi\left(\frac{1}{n}\right) \right| + \frac{1}{n} \left| \varphi\left(\frac{2}{n}\right) \right| + \dots + \frac{1}{n} \left| \varphi\left(\frac{n-1}{n}\right) \right| < 1$$

and hence

$$\sin \frac{nz}{n} - \frac{1}{n} \varphi\left(\frac{1}{n}\right) \sin \frac{z}{n} - \frac{1}{n} \varphi\left(\frac{2}{n}\right) \sin \frac{2z}{n} - \dots - \frac{1}{n} \varphi\left(\frac{n-1}{n}\right) \sin \frac{(n-1)z}{n}$$

has no complex zeros [method of proof in **27**];  $n \rightarrow \infty$  [**III 203**].

**175.** Excluding the trivial case  $f(1)=0$ , we have

$$\frac{z}{f(1)} \int_0^1 f(t) \cos zt dt = \sin z - \int_0^1 \frac{f'(t)}{f(1)} \sin zt dt \quad [174].$$

**176.** The absolute values of the terms steadily increase from the first term 1 to the maximum term and then steadily decrease from the maximum term on to infinity [**I 117**]. For this reason, if  $n$  denotes the central index, i.e. if  $(-x)^n a^{-n^2}$  is the maximum term for  $z = -x$ ,  $x > 0$ , we have

$$(-1)^n F(-x) = x^n a^{-n^2} - x^{n-1} a^{-(n-1)^2} + x^{n-2} a^{-(n-2)^2} - \dots \\ - x^{n+1} a^{-(n+1)^2} + x^{n+2} a^{-(n+2)^2} - \dots \\ > x^n a^{-n^2} - x^{n-1} a^{-(n-1)^2} - x^{n+1} a^{-(n+1)^2}.$$

If  $x = a^{2n}$ , then the central index is  $n$  [**III 200**]. It follows that

$$(-1)^n F(-a^{2n}) > a^{n^2} - 2a^{n^2-1} \geq 0.$$

These considerations may be applied with appropriate changes also to the partial sum

$$F_n(-x) = 1 - \frac{x}{a} + \frac{x^2}{a^2} - \cdots + (-1)^n \frac{x^n}{a^n}.$$

We find that

$$F_n(0) > 0, \quad F_n(-a^2) < 0, \quad F_n(-a^4) > 0, \dots, \quad (-1)^n F_n(-a^{2n}) > 0,$$

(in the second inequality we have  $=$  instead of  $<$  for  $n=2$ ,  $a=2$ ), from which it follows that  $F(x)$  has only real simple zeros, and in fact in the interior of each of the intervals  $(-a^2, 0)$ ,  $(-a^4, -a^2)$ ,  $(-a^6, -a^4)$ ,  $\dots$ ,  $(-a^{2n}, -a^{2n-2})$  precisely one. By passing to the limit [III 201] we deduce the result for  $F(z)$ . (Cf. III 200.)

**177.** [Cf. G. Pólya: Math. Z. 2, pp. 355–358 (1918).] The transformation of  $p_0 + p_1 z + \cdots + p_n z^n$  in the proof of III 22 is essentially a partial summation.—The function  $F(z)$  has no real zeros. Let  $f'(t) > 0$ ,  $z = x + iy$ ,  $x \geq 0$ ,  $y > 0$ ,  $e^{xt} f(t) = f_1(t)$ , thus also  $f_1(t) > 0$ ,  $f_1'(t) > 0$ . Let  $0 < \tau < 1$ . By integration by parts we obtain

$$iyF(z) - iy \int_{\tau}^1 f_1(t) e^{iyt} dt = f_1(\tau) e^{iy\tau} - f_1(0) - \int_0^{\tau} f_1'(t) e^{iyt} dt,$$

$$y|F(z)| + y \left| \int_{\tau}^1 f_1(t) e^{iyt} dt \right| \geq f_1(\tau) - f_1(0) - \left| \int_0^{\tau} f_1'(t) e^{iyt} dt \right|.$$

The right-hand side is equal to  $\int_0^{\tau} f_1'(t) dt - \left| \int_0^{\tau} f_1'(t) e^{iyt} dt \right|$  and increases monotonically as  $\tau$  increases [III 14]. The second term on the left-hand side becomes equal to 0 as  $\tau \rightarrow 1$ . Hence we have  $y|F(z)| > 0$ .

**178.**

$$\frac{1}{z} \int_0^z e^{-u^2} du = \frac{1}{2} \int_0^1 e^{-z^2 t} t^{-1/2} dt.$$

Now  $t^{-1/2}$  is a decreasing function, hence [177] no zeros lie in the region  $\Re(-z^2) \leq 0$ .

**179.**

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{1}{\mu+1} + \frac{z}{(\mu+1)(\mu+2)} + \frac{z^2}{(\mu+1)(\mu+2)(\mu+3)} + \cdots \\ &= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{z^n}{n!} \frac{\Gamma(n+1)\Gamma(\mu+1)}{\Gamma(n+\mu+2)} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{z^n}{n!} \int_0^1 t^n (1-t)^{\mu} dt \\ &= \int_0^1 e^{zt} (1-t)^{\mu} dt = \int_0^1 e^{(z-\mu)t} [e^t (1-t)]^{\mu} dt; \quad \mu > -1. \end{aligned}$$

Now  $e^t(1-t)$  for  $0 < t < 1$  is a monotonically decreasing function (differentiate). Hence [177] the zeros of the series

$$\begin{array}{lll} \text{for} & \mu > 0 & \text{all lie in the half-plane } \Re z > \mu, \\ \text{for} & -1 < \mu < 0 & \text{all lie in the half-plane } \Re z < \mu, \\ \text{for} & \mu = 0 & \text{all lie on the straight line } \Re z = 0. \end{array}$$

In the problem  $\mu$  is an integer,  $\mu = n$ .

**180.** (a) [G. Pólya: *Ens. math.* **21**, p. 217 (1920).] Make use of the following important theorem [I. Schur: *Math. Ann.* **66**, pp. 489–501 (1909)]: Denoting by  $\omega_1, \omega_2, \dots, \omega_n$  the roots of the equation

$$\begin{vmatrix} z-a_{11} & -a_{12} & \dots & -a_{1n} \\ -a_{21} & z-a_{22} & \dots & -a_{2n} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ -a_{n1} & -a_{n2} & \dots & z-a_{nn} \end{vmatrix} = 0,$$

we have

$$|\omega_1|^2 + |\omega_2|^2 + \dots + |\omega_n|^2 \leq \sum_{\lambda=1}^n \sum_{\mu=1}^n |a_{\lambda\mu}|^2.$$

From this it follows [VII 11] that, if we denote the zeros of the polynomial

$$a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots + a_n z^n$$

by  $z_{1n}, z_{2n}, \dots, z_{nn}$ , we have

$$\frac{1}{|z_{1n}|^2} + \frac{1}{|z_{2n}|^2} + \dots + \frac{1}{|z_{nn}|^2} \leq 2 \left( \left| \frac{a_1}{a_0} \right|^2 + \left| \frac{a_2}{a_1} \right|^2 + \dots + \left| \frac{a_{n-1}}{a_{n-2}} \right|^2 \right) + \left| \frac{a_n}{a_{n-1}} \right|^2.$$

Take limits [III 201].

(b) [G. Valiron: *Darboux Bull. Series 2*, **45**, p. 269 (1921).] Set  $|a_{n-1}a_n^{-1}| = l_n$ ,  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ . Since  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} l_n = \infty$ , we can by rearrangement always obtain from  $l_1, l_2, l_3, \dots, l_p, \dots$  a monotonically increasing sequence  $l_{n_1}, l_{n_2}, l_{n_3}, \dots, l_{n_p}, \dots$

$$l_{n_1} \leq l_{n_2} \leq l_{n_3} \leq \dots \leq l_{n_p} \leq \dots$$

We have

$$|a_p| = \frac{|a_0|}{l_1 l_2 \dots l_p} \leq \frac{|a_0|}{l_{n_1} l_{n_2} \dots l_{n_p}}, \quad p=1, 2, 3, \dots$$

Denote by  $M(r)$  the maximum of  $|F(z)|$  for  $|z| \leq r$  and by  $\mu(r)$  the maximum term of the everywhere convergent series [IV 29]

$$|a_0| + \frac{|a_0|}{l_{n_1}} z + \frac{|a_0|}{l_{n_1} l_{n_2}} z^2 + \dots = \Phi(z).$$

From the assumption and from IV 37, IV 54, IV 38, respectively, there follows successively the convergence of

$$\sum_{p=1}^{\infty} l_{n_p}^{-2}, \quad \int_1^{\infty} \log \mu(r) r^{-3} dr, \quad \int_1^{\infty} \log \Phi(r) r^{-3} dr, \quad \int_1^{\infty} \log M(r) r^{-3} dr, \quad \sum_{p=1}^{\infty} |\alpha_p|^{-2}.$$

This deduction, in contrast to (a), is not tailored to the exponent 2.

**181.** No. Example:  $f(z) = (z^2 - 4)e^{\frac{z^2}{3}}$ ,  $f'(z) = \frac{2}{3}z(z^2 - 1)e^{\frac{z^2}{3}}$ . H. M. Macdonald: *Proc. Lond. Math. Soc.*, **29**, p. 578 (1898), asserted the contrary.

**182.** [G. Pólya: *Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3*, **25**, p. 337 (1917). Solution by H. Prüfer: *Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3*, **27**, pp. 92–94 (1918).] Setting  $H'(x) = g(x)$ , the theorem is contained in the following more exact theorem: If the polynomial

$g(x)$  of degree  $n$  has only real zeros, then  $G(x)=[g(x)]^2+g'(x)$  has at most  $n+1$  real zeros ( $2n>n+1$  if  $n\geq 2$ ). Let  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_k$  be the distinct zeros of  $g(x)$ ,

$$g(x)=a(x-x_1)^{m_1}(x-x_2)^{m_2}\cdots(x-x_k)^{m_k}.$$

- (a) There are  $n-k$  zeros of  $G(x)$  that are at the same time zeros of  $g(x)$ .  
 (b) A real zero of  $G(x)$  that is not a zero of  $g(x)$  satisfies the equation

$$\frac{g'}{g^2} = -1 \quad \text{or} \quad \left(\frac{a}{g}\right)^2 \frac{g'}{a} = -a.$$

Hence, if at least one such zero exists,  $a$  is real. Now we have

$$g \frac{d}{dx} \left( \frac{g'}{g^2} \right) = \left( \frac{g'}{g} \right)' - \left( \frac{g'}{g} \right)^2 = -\frac{m_1}{(x-x_1)^2} - \frac{m_2}{(x-x_2)^2} - \cdots - \frac{m_k}{(x-x_k)^2} - \left( \frac{g'}{g} \right)^2 < 0.$$

The zeros of  $g(x)$  divide the real axis into  $k+1$  intervals. In each interval the curve  $y=g'(x)[g(x)]^{-2}$  is monotonic and intersects the straight line  $y=-1$  at most once. The total number of zeros of  $G(x)$  specified in (a) and (b) is thus  $\leq (n-k)+k+1$ . [Starting point for later developments in various directions. See e.g. G. Pólya: Math. Z. 12, pp. 36-60 (1922), Bull. Amer. Math. Soc. 49, pp. 178-191 (1943); W. Saxer: Math. Z. 17, pp. 206-227 (1923).]

**183.**

$$A_n^{(k)} = P\left(\frac{n}{k}, \frac{1}{k}\right), \quad B_n^{(k)} = Q\left(\frac{n}{k}, \frac{1}{k}\right), \quad C_n^{(k)} = R\left(\frac{n}{k}, \frac{1}{k}\right).$$

The expression for  $B_n^{(k)}$  is also valid if  $k > m-1$  and  $k$  is not an integer.

**184.**

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{Q(z, \omega)}{\omega^m} &= \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(\frac{1+z}{\omega} - m - 1\right) \Gamma\left(-\frac{z}{\omega}\right)} \sum_{v=0}^m (-1)^v a_v \Gamma\left(\frac{1+z}{\omega} - v - 1\right) \Gamma\left(-\frac{z}{\omega} + v\right) \\ &= \frac{\Gamma\left(\frac{1}{\omega} + 1\right)}{\Gamma\left(\frac{1+z}{\omega} - m - 1\right) \Gamma\left(-\frac{z}{\omega}\right)} \sum_{v=0}^m (-1)^v a_v \int_0^1 (1-t)^{\frac{1+z}{\omega} - v - 1} t^{-\frac{z}{\omega} - 1 + v} dt; \\ \frac{R(z, \omega)}{\omega^m} &= \frac{\Gamma\left(m + \frac{1-z}{\omega}\right)}{\Gamma\left(\frac{1}{\omega}\right) \Gamma\left(-\frac{z}{\omega}\right)} \int_0^1 t^{-\frac{z}{\omega} - 1} (1-t)^{\frac{1}{\omega} - 1} f(-t) dt, \end{aligned}$$

for  $\omega > 0, \Re z < 0$ ;

$$\frac{R(z, \omega)}{(-\omega)^m} = \frac{\Gamma\left(\frac{\omega+z}{\omega}\right)}{\Gamma\left(\frac{(1-m)\omega+z-1}{\omega}\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{1}{\omega}\right)} \int_0^1 t^{\frac{z-1}{\omega}} (1-t)^{\frac{1}{\omega}-1} f\left(-\frac{1}{t}\right) dt,$$

for  $\omega > 0, \Re z > 1 + (m-1)\omega$ ;

$$P(z, \omega) = \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(-\frac{z}{\omega}\right)} \int_0^\infty e^{-t} t^{-\frac{z}{\omega}-1} f(-\omega t) dt,$$

for  $\omega > 0, \Re z < 0$ .

**185.** [Cf. Laguerre, op. cit. **1**, p. 23; G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, **24**, p. 84 (1916).] The three relations in the first column follow from **183**, **38**, **8**, the remaining four from **184**, **80** (change of variable!), **24**.

**186.** We have already assumed that  $a_m \geq 0$ . Let the sign  $\parallel$  placed between two real numbers  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  (viz.  $\alpha \parallel \beta$ ) denote that  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  have the same sign. Then we have

$$\begin{array}{lll} f(-\infty) \parallel P(-\infty), & f(0) \parallel P(0), & f(\infty) \parallel P(\infty), \\ f(-\infty) \parallel Q(-1 + \overline{m-1}\omega), & f(0) \parallel Q(0), & f(1) \parallel Q(+\infty), \\ f(-1) \parallel R(-\infty), & f(0) \parallel R(0), & f(+\infty) \parallel R(1 + \overline{m-1}\omega), \\ f(-\infty) \parallel (-1)^m R(1 + \overline{m-1}\omega), & f(-1) \parallel (-1)^m R(+\infty). \end{array}$$

**187.** [Laguerre, op. cit. **1**, pp. 13–25; M. Fekete and G. Pólya: Palermo Rend. **34**, pp. 89–120 (1912); E. Bálint: Diss. Budapest, 1916; D. R. Curtiss: Annals of Math. Ser. 2, **19**, pp. 251–278 (1918).] (1) from **38**, (2) from **34**, **33**, **32**, (3) from **183**, **24**, III **201** noting that  $P(z, \omega)$ ,  $Q(z, \omega)$ ,  $R(z, \omega)$  depend continuously on  $\omega$  and that

$$P(z, 0) = f(z), \quad Q(z, 0) = (1+z)^m f\left(\frac{z}{1+z}\right), \quad R(z, 0) = (1-z)^m f\left(\frac{z}{1-z}\right).$$

The second case considered theoretically permits the exact determination of the number of zeros of  $f(z)$  in the interval  $0 < x < 1$ . That the method is also frequently useful in practice is shown by **45**, **46**. [For the heuristic background of the proof cf. MPR, **2**, p. 44, ex. 12.]

**188.** [G. Pólya, op. cit. **80**.] From the formula

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{m! f(z)}{\omega \left(\frac{z}{\omega} - 1\right) \cdots \left(\frac{z}{\omega} - m\right)} &= \sum_{\nu=0}^m (-1)^{m-\nu} \binom{m}{\nu} \frac{f(\nu\omega)}{\frac{z}{\omega} - \nu} \\ &= \omega \int_0^{\infty} J(e^{-\lambda\omega}, \omega) e^{-\lambda(z-m\omega)} d\lambda, \end{aligned}$$

valid for  $\Re z > m\omega$  [VI § 9], it follows that  $\mathfrak{S}_{m\omega}^{\infty} \leq \mathfrak{S}_0^1$  [**80**, **24**]; from the analogous formula

$$\frac{(-1)^m m! f(-z)}{\frac{z}{\omega} \left(\frac{z}{\omega} + 1\right) \cdots \left(\frac{z}{\omega} + m\right)} = \omega \int_0^{\infty} e^{-\lambda m\omega} J(e^{\lambda\omega}, \omega) e^{-\lambda z} d\lambda$$

valid for  $\Re z > 0$ , it follows in the same way that  $\mathfrak{S}_{-\infty}^0 \leq \mathfrak{S}_1^{\infty}$ , and finally from the definition of  $J(z, \omega)$  it follows [**36**] that  $\mathfrak{S}_{-\infty}^0 \leq$  number of changes of sign of the sequence  $f(0), f(\omega), \dots, f(n\omega)$ . Finally observe (cf. solution **186**) that

$$\begin{array}{ll} f(-\infty) \parallel (-1)^m J(1, \omega), & f(0) \parallel (-1)^m J(+\infty, \omega) \parallel J(-\infty, \omega), \\ f(m\omega) \parallel J(0, \omega), & f(+\infty) \parallel J(1, \omega). \end{array}$$

**189.** We find that [**188**]

$$J(1, \omega) = \Delta^m f(0), \quad J'(1, \omega) = -m \Delta^{m-1} f(0), \quad \dots$$

Hence, the polynomial in question is equal to  $J(1-z, \omega)$ .

**189.1.** From **80** and

$$\int_0^{\infty} e^{-xt} S(e^{-t}) t^{-1/2} dt = (\pi/x)^{1/2} f(e^{-2\sqrt{x}}),$$

which is based on the integral formula

$$\int_0^{\infty} e^{-at - \frac{b}{t}} t^{-1/2} dt = \sqrt{\frac{\pi}{a}} e^{-2\sqrt{ab}},$$

where  $a > 0$ ,  $b > 0$ ; see e.g. C. Jordan: *Cours d'Analyse*, 3rd ed. (1913), 2, p. 198.

**189.2.** Essentially from **80** and

$$(1/\Gamma(x)) \int_0^{\infty} e^{x \log t} [f(e^{-t}) - a_0] t^{-1} dt = D(x).$$

With appropriate definitions, extension to Dirichlet series (see VIII p. 119) is easy.

**189.3.** [G. Pólya: *Vierteljahrsschr. Naturforsch. Gesellsch. Zürich*, 73, pp. 141–145 (1928) or G. H. Hardy, J. E. Littlewood and G. Pólya: *Inequalities*, Cambridge University Press, 1952, pp. 57–60.]

**190.** [H. Poincaré: *C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris)*, 97, p. 1418 (1883); E. Meissner: *Math. Ann.* 70, pp. 223–225 (1911).]

$$f(z) = \frac{f(z)(1+z)^k}{(1+z)^k}.$$

Choose  $k$  sufficiently large [**187** (3)].

**191.** It is sufficient that  $f(x) = a(\alpha_1 - x)(\alpha_2 - x) \dots (\alpha_m - x)$ , where  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m$  are real and positive [**30**]. Moreover it is also necessary: choose  $P(x) = (1+x)^k$ ,  $k$  sufficiently large [**187** (3)].

**192.** Sufficient: For  $e^{-ax + ibx^2} (d/dx) P(x) e^{ax - ibx^2}$  has not more non-real zeros than  $P(x)$  (proof as in **58**). Necessary: Choose  $P(x) = 1 + \varepsilon x$ ; it follows that  $(1 + \varepsilon x)f(x) + \varepsilon$  and thus  $[\varepsilon \rightarrow 0]f(x)$  has only real zeros. Choose  $P(x) = f(x)$ . It follows [**182**] that the degree of  $f(x)$  is either  $= 0$  or  $= 1$ . In the latter case, where accordingly  $f(x) = a - bx$ , again set  $P(x) = f(x)$ . Observe that  $(a - bx)(a - bx) - b > 0$ , if  $b < 0$ .

**193.** [G. Pólya, problem: *Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3*, 21, p. 289 (1913). Solution by G. Szegő: *Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3*, 23, pp. 81–82 (1915).]

**194.** The expression considered is the resultant of  $f(x)$  and  $g(x)$ , i.e.  $= b_0^2 f(\beta_1) f(\beta_2)$ , where  $\beta_1, \beta_2$  denote the two zeros of  $g(x)$ . If  $\beta_1$  is not real, and thus  $\beta_2 = \overline{\beta_1}$ , then the resultant  $\geq 0$ . If  $\beta_1, \beta_2$  are real and the resultant  $< 0$ , then we must have that  $\operatorname{sgn} f(\beta_1) = -\operatorname{sgn} f(\beta_2) \neq 0$  [**8**].

**195.** The case  $n=1$  is clear. If  $n=2$  and we denote the zeros of  $P(x)$  by  $x_1, x_2$ ,  $x_1 \leq x_2$ , we determine  $a$  such that  $a \leq x_1$ ,  $\int_a^{\frac{x_1+x_2}{2}} P(x) dx = 0$ . It is sufficient to consider the case  $n \geq 3$ . We first assume that the first three of the zeros  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$  of  $P(x)$ ,  $x_1 \leq x_2 \leq \dots \leq x_n$ , are distinct,  $x_1 < x_2 < x_3$ . Determine  $\xi$  and  $\delta > 0$  such that  $x_1 < \xi - \delta < x_2 < \xi + \delta < x_3$  and  $\int_{\xi-\delta}^{\xi+\delta} P(x) dx = 0$ , and then  $a$  such that  $a < x_1$  and  $\int_a^{\xi-\delta} P(x) dx = 0$ . The polynomial  $Q(x)$  then has at least the zeros  $x=a$ ,  $x=\xi-\delta$ ,  $x=\xi+\delta$ . If in addition  $n$  is odd, then the existence of a fourth real zero of  $Q(x)$

is assured since the non-real zeros of  $Q(x)$  occur in pairs.—If  $P(x)$  has a multiple zero of multiplicity  $m \geq 2$ , choose it as the value of  $a$  and  $Q(x)$  will have at least  $m+1 \geq 3$  zeros.—The equality sign holds, e.g. for

$$P(x) = x(x-1)^2(x-2)^2(x-3)^2 \dots \left(x - \frac{n-1}{2}\right)^2, \quad n \text{ odd,}$$

$$P(x) = (x-1)^2(x-2)^2(x-3)^2 \dots \left(x - \frac{n}{2}\right)^2, \quad n \text{ even.}$$

**196.** [I. Schur; cf. C. Siegel: Math. Zeitschr. 10, p. 175 (1921).] By multiplication of the inequalities

$$1 + |z_\nu| \leq 2 \operatorname{Max} (1, |z_\nu|) = 2 e^{\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} \log |e^{i\theta} - z_\nu| d\theta}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n \quad [\text{II } 52]$$

it follows that

$$\begin{aligned} \prod_{\nu=1}^n (1 + |z_\nu|) &\leq 2^n e^{\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} \log |f(e^{i\theta})| d\theta} \leq 2^n \sqrt{\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} |f(e^{i\theta})|^2 d\theta} \\ &= 2^n \sqrt{1 + |a_1|^2 + |a_2|^2 + \dots + |a_n|^2} \end{aligned}$$

[II 69, III 122].

**196.1.** [G. Pólya, problem: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein, Section 2, 35, p. 48 (1926). Solution by N. Obreschkov: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein., Section 2, 36, pp. 43–45 (1917).]

## Part Six. Polynomials and Trigonometric Polynomials

[For a fuller account of various topics studied in Part Six, especially for a generalization of **1-7** and **84-102**, see G. Szegő: *Orthogonal Polynomials*, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ., **23**, 1939.]

**1.** The zeros of  $T_n(x)$  are  $\cos(2\nu-1)[\pi/(2n)]$ , those of  $U_n(x)$  are  $\cos \nu[\pi/(n+1)]$ ,  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, n$ .

**2.** Identical with

$$\cos(n+1)\vartheta = \cos \vartheta \cos n\vartheta - \sin \vartheta \sin n\vartheta,$$

$$\sin(n+1)\vartheta = \sin \vartheta \cos n\vartheta + \cos \vartheta \sin n\vartheta.$$

**3.** In the differential equations

$$\frac{d^2 \cos n\vartheta}{d\vartheta^2} = -n^2 \cos n\vartheta, \quad \frac{d^2 \sin n\vartheta}{d\vartheta^2} = -n^2 \sin n\vartheta,$$

introduce the new independent variable  $\cos \vartheta = x$ . A special case of **98**; cf. solution (g).

**4.** If we set  $x = \cos \vartheta$ , then the integrals in question become

$$t_{mn} = \int_0^\pi \cos m\vartheta \cos n\vartheta d\vartheta, \quad u_{mn} = \int_0^\pi \sin(m+1)\vartheta \sin(n+1)\vartheta d\vartheta.$$

Hence  $t_{mn} = u_{mn} = 0$ , if  $m \geq n$ , and  $t_{nn} = u_{nn} = \pi/2$  for  $n > 0$ ,  $t_{00} = \pi$ ,  $u_{00} = \pi/2$ .

The orthogonality property mentioned in the problem determines the polynomials  $T_n(x)$  and  $U_n(x)$  up to a constant factor. It is equivalent to the conditions

$$\int_{-1}^1 \frac{T_n(x)}{\sqrt{1-x^2}} K(x) dx = 0 \quad \text{and} \quad \int_{-1}^1 \sqrt{1-x^2} U_n(x) K(x) dx = 0, \quad \text{respectively,}$$

for all polynomials  $K(x)$  of degree  $n-1$  (cf. introduction to **84**).

**5.** A special case of **98**; cf. solution (a).

**6.** [C. G. J. Jacobi: *J. reine angew. Math.*, **15**, p. 3 (1836).] From **5** we deduce by integration by parts, since all the derivatives of  $(1-x^2)^{n-1/2}$  which are of lower order than the  $n$ th vanish at  $x=-1$  and  $x=1$ , that

$$\int_{-1}^1 f(x) \frac{T_n(x)}{\sqrt{1-x^2}} dx = \frac{1}{1 \cdot 3 \cdot 5 \dots (2n-1)} \int_{-1}^1 f^{(n)}(x) (1-x^2)^{n-1/2} dx.$$

**7.**  $|\cos n\vartheta| \leq 1$ ,  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$ ; the equality sign holds only if  $n\vartheta$  is a multiple of  $\pi$  [**1**]. From the identity

$$\frac{\sin(n+1)\vartheta}{\sin \vartheta} = \cos n\vartheta + \cos \vartheta \frac{\sin n\vartheta}{\sin \vartheta}$$



one can deduce the second inequality by means of mathematical induction. There we have equality only in the case  $|\cos \vartheta| = 1$ .

**8.**  $\cos \nu \vartheta$  is a polynomial of degree  $\nu$  in  $\cos \vartheta$ ;  $\cos^\nu \vartheta$  is a cosine polynomial of order  $\nu$ .

**9.**  $(\sin(\nu+1)\vartheta)/(\sin \vartheta)$  is a polynomial of degree  $\nu$  in  $\cos \vartheta$ ;  $\sin \vartheta \cos^\nu \vartheta$  is a sine polynomial of order  $\nu+1$ .

**10.**  $\cos p\vartheta \cos q\vartheta$ ,  $\cos p\vartheta \sin q\vartheta$ ,  $\sin p\vartheta \sin q\vartheta$ , for  $p, q$  integers  $p \geq 0$ ,  $q \geq 0$ , are trigonometric polynomials of order  $p+q$ .

**11.** We have

$$\cos \nu \vartheta = \frac{z^\nu + z^{-\nu}}{2}, \quad \sin \nu \vartheta = \frac{z^\nu - z^{-\nu}}{2i}, \quad z = e^{i\vartheta}, \quad \nu = 0, 1, 2, \dots, n.$$

Substituting these expressions in  $g(\vartheta)$  and multiplying by  $e^{in\vartheta}$  we obtain

$$G(z) = \lambda_0 z^n + \sum_{\nu=1}^n \left( \frac{1}{2} \lambda_\nu (z^{n+\nu} + z^{n-\nu}) + \frac{1}{2i} \mu_\nu (z^{n+\nu} - z^{n-\nu}) \right).$$

We have

$$u_\nu = \bar{u}_{2n-\nu} = \frac{\lambda_{n-\nu} + i\mu_{n-\nu}}{2}, \quad \nu = 0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1,$$

and  $u_n = \lambda_0$ .  $G(z)$  is exactly of degree  $2n$  (and does not vanish for  $z=0$ ), if  $g(\vartheta)$  is exactly of order  $n$ . The converse is also true.

**12.** Let  $G(z) = u_0 + u_1 z + u_2 z^2 + \dots + u_{2n} z^{2n}$ . Then

$$u_\nu = \bar{u}_{2n-\nu}, \quad \nu = 0, 1, 2, \dots, 2n,$$

so that  $u_n$  is real and

$$g(\vartheta) - u_n = e^{-in\vartheta} \sum_{\nu=0}^{n-1} (u_\nu e^{i\nu\vartheta} + u_{2n-\nu} e^{i(2n-\nu)\vartheta}) = 2\Re \sum_{\nu=0}^{n-1} u_\nu e^{i(\nu-n)\vartheta}$$

represents a trigonometric polynomial of order  $n$  with real coefficients.

**13.** Let  $z_0$  be a zero of  $G(z)$  different from 0. Then we have  $z_0^{2n} \bar{G}(z_0^{-1}) = 0$ , i.e.  $G(\bar{z}_0^{-1}) = 0$ , so that  $\bar{z}_0^{-1}$  (the inverse of  $z_0$  with respect to the unit circle) is also a zero. By means of differentiation one also shows that if  $z_0$  is a  $k$ -fold zero, then  $\bar{z}_0^{-1}$  is also a  $k$ -fold zero. If in addition  $G(z)$  has the  $k$ -fold zero  $z=0$ , then the degree of  $G(z)$  is decreased exactly by the number  $k$  on transition to  $z^{2n} \bar{G}(z^{-1})$  [i.e.  $z^{2n} \bar{G}(z^{-1})$  considered as a polynomial of degree  $2n$  has  $k$  zeros at infinity].

Thus the zeros of  $G(z)$  are situated symmetrically with respect to the unit circle.

**14.** If  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_{2n}$  denote the zeros of the polynomials  $G(z)$  defined in **11**,  $z_\nu \neq 0$ ,  $\nu = 1, 2, \dots, 2n$ , then the zeros of  $g(\vartheta)$  are

$$\vartheta_\nu = \frac{1}{i} \log z_\nu, \quad 0 \leq \Re \vartheta_\nu < 2\pi, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n.$$

**15.** With the notation of **11** we require the following identity in  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  to hold:

$$\sum_{k,l=0}^{2n} u_k u_l \sum_{\nu=0}^n e^{i(k-n)(\alpha - \frac{\nu\pi}{n+1}) + i(l-n)(\frac{\nu\pi}{n+1} - \beta)} = \sum_{k=0}^{2n} u_k e^{i(k-n)(\alpha - \beta)}.$$

We have

$$\sum_{v=0}^n e^{i(l-k)\frac{v\pi}{n+1}} = \begin{cases} n+1 & \text{for } k=l, \\ \frac{1-(-1)^{l-k}}{1-e^{i\frac{(l-k)\pi}{n+1}}} = \gamma_{kl} & \text{for } k \neq l, \end{cases}$$

and hence

$$(n+1) \sum_{k=0}^{2n} u_k^2 e^{i(k-n)(\alpha-\beta)} + \sum_{\substack{k, l=0 \\ k \neq l}}^{2n} \gamma_{kl} u_k u_l e^{i(k-n)\alpha + i(l-n)\beta} = \sum_{k=0}^{2n} u_k e^{i(k-n)(\alpha-\beta)}.$$

Obviously we have  $\gamma_{kl}=0$  for even  $l-k$ , and  $\gamma_{kl} \neq 0$  for odd  $l-k$ . From this we deduce, since

$$\sum_{\substack{k, l=0 \\ k \neq l}}^{2n} \gamma_{kl} u_k u_l e^{i(k\alpha - l\beta)}$$

must be a polynomial in  $e^{i(\alpha-\beta)}$ , that  $u_k u_l = 0$  for  $l-k$  odd, and further that

$$(n+1)u_k^2 = u_k, \quad u_k = 0 \quad \text{or} \quad u_k = \frac{1}{n+1}.$$

The trigonometric polynomials in question are characterized by the following conditions:

(1) They are cosine polynomials and contain terms with either only odd or only even multiples of  $\vartheta$ .

(2) The terms which they actually contain all have the same coefficient  $2/(n+1)$ , with the exception of the constant term which, in case it is present, has the value  $1/(n+1)$ .

The number of such trigonometric polynomials is

$$2^{\lfloor \frac{n+1}{2} \rfloor} + 2^{\lfloor \frac{n+2}{2} \rfloor} - 1.$$

An example is given by

$$g(\vartheta) = \frac{1}{n+1} \frac{\sin(n+1)\vartheta}{\sin \vartheta}. \quad [16.]$$

**16.** If we set  $z = e^{i\vartheta}$ , the first expression becomes

$$= \Re\left(\frac{1}{2} + z + z^2 + \dots + z^n\right) = \Re \frac{1+z-2z^{n+1}}{2(1-z)} = \Re \frac{e^{-\frac{i\vartheta}{2}} + e^{\frac{i\vartheta}{2}} - 2e^{i(n+\frac{1}{2})\vartheta}}{2(e^{-\frac{i\vartheta}{2}} - e^{\frac{i\vartheta}{2}})}.$$

We can calculate similarly the three other expressions.—The proof may also be carried out by mathematical induction.

**17.** According to the last formula of **16** the expression in question is equal to

$$\frac{1}{\sin \vartheta} \left( \frac{\sin n\vartheta \sin \frac{2n+1}{2} \vartheta}{\sin \frac{\vartheta}{2}} - \frac{\sin n\vartheta \sin (n+1)\vartheta}{\sin \vartheta} \right).$$

(Alternatively this may be obtained by direct calculation.) For  $\vartheta=0$  we obtain that the sum of the first  $n$  odd numbers is equal to the square of  $n$ .

**18.** By combining **16** and **17** we obtain:

$$\frac{1}{2} + \sum_{\nu=1}^n (\frac{1}{2} + \cos \vartheta + \cos 2\vartheta + \cdots + \cos \nu\vartheta) = \sum_{\nu=0}^n \frac{\sin \frac{2\nu+1}{2} \vartheta}{2 \sin \frac{\vartheta}{2}} = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{\sin (n+1) \frac{\vartheta}{2}}{\sin \frac{\vartheta}{2}} \right)^2.$$

**19.** From **16-18** we find the zeros: (1)  $\nu[2\pi/(2n+1)]$ ,  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, 2n$ ; (2)  $\nu(2\pi/n)$ ,  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, n-1$  and  $(2\nu-1)[\pi/(n+1)]$ ,  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, n+1$ ; (3)  $\nu(\pi/(2n))$ ,  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, 2n-1, 2n+1, \dots, 4n-1$ ; (4)  $\nu(2\pi/n)$ ,  $\nu[2\pi/(n+1)]$ ,  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, n$ ; (5)  $\nu(\pi/n)$ ,  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, 2n$ , all double zeros with the exception of the cases  $\nu=n$  and  $\nu=2n$ ; (6)  $\nu[2\pi/(n+1)]$ ,  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, n$ , all double zeros.

**20.** From **16** (2) or (1).

**21.** The sum in question is equal to

$$\frac{\sum_{\nu=1}^n \sin \nu\vartheta + \sum_{\nu=1}^{n+1} \sin \nu\vartheta}{2} = \sin^2 (n+1) \frac{\vartheta}{2} \cot \frac{\vartheta}{2}. \quad [16.]$$

**22.** [L. Fejér: Math. Ann., 58, p. 53 (1903.) From **18**.

**23.** [Cf. T. H. Gronwall: Math. Ann., 72, pp. 229-230 (1912).] According to **16** we have

$$\frac{dA(n, \vartheta)}{d\vartheta} = \frac{\sin \frac{n}{2} \vartheta \cos \frac{n+1}{2} \vartheta}{\sin \frac{\vartheta}{2}}.$$

This expression vanishes only at the points mentioned in the problem in the interval  $0 \leq \vartheta < \pi$ ; at these points it changes alternately from positive to negative and from negative to positive. If  $n$  is even, then it vanishes also for  $\vartheta=\pi$ . The point  $x=\pi$ ,  $y=0$  is however a center of symmetry [29] for the curve  $y=A(n, x)$ , and hence certainly not a maximum or a minimum.

**24.** [D. Jackson: Palermo Rend. 32, pp. 257-258 (1911); T. H. Gronwall, loc. cit. 23, p. 231; the equation

$$A(n, \vartheta) = A\left(n, \frac{\pi}{n+1}\right)$$

is due to L. Fejér; cf. D. Jackson, loc. cit.] According to **20** we have

$$\begin{aligned} & A\left(n, (2\nu+1) \frac{\pi}{n+1}\right) - A\left(n, (2\nu-1) \frac{\pi}{n+1}\right) \\ &= \int_{(2\nu-1) \frac{\pi}{n+1}}^{(2\nu+1) \frac{\pi}{n+1}} \frac{dA(n, \vartheta)}{d\vartheta} d\vartheta \leq \frac{1}{2} \int_{(2\nu-1) \frac{\pi}{n+1}}^{(2\nu+1) \frac{\pi}{n+1}} \sin (n+1) \vartheta \cot \frac{\vartheta}{2} d\vartheta \\ &= \frac{1}{2} \int_{(2\nu-1) \frac{\pi}{n+1}}^{2\nu \frac{\pi}{n+1}} \sin (n+1) \vartheta \left( \cot \frac{\vartheta}{2} - \cot \frac{\vartheta + \frac{\pi}{n+1}}{2} \right) d\vartheta, \\ &\quad \nu=1, 2, \dots, q-1; \quad n \geq 3. \end{aligned}$$

In the last integral  $\sin(n+1)\vartheta \leq 0$ , the expression in brackets is positive, since  $\cot x$  decreases monotonically for  $0 < x < \pi/2$ .

**25.** [L. Fejér; cf. D. Jackson, loc. cit. **24**, p. 259; T. H. Gronwall, loc. cit. **23**, p. 253.] According to **24** we have

$$A\left(n, \frac{\pi}{n+1}\right) > A\left(n, \frac{\pi}{n}\right) = A\left(n-1, \frac{\pi}{n}\right).$$

Regarding the limit  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} A(n, \pi/(n+1))$ , see **II 6**.

**26.** [W. H. Young: Proc. Lond. Math. Soc. Series 2, **11**, p. 359 (1913).] According to **16** we have:

$$\frac{dB(n, \vartheta)}{d\vartheta} = -\frac{\sin \frac{n}{2} \vartheta \sin \frac{n+1}{2} \vartheta}{\sin \frac{\vartheta}{2}}. \quad [19, 23.]$$

**27.** [W. H. Young, loc. cit. **26**.] Let  $n \geq 3$ ,  $\kappa, \lambda$  integers,  $1 \leq \kappa < \lambda \leq [(n+1)/2]$ . Then we have **[21]**

$$\begin{aligned} B\left(n, \lambda \frac{2\pi}{n+1}\right) - B\left(n, \kappa \frac{2\pi}{n+1}\right) &= \int_{\kappa \frac{2\pi}{n+1}}^{\lambda \frac{2\pi}{n+1}} \frac{dB(n, \vartheta)}{d\vartheta} d\vartheta \\ &= - \int_{\kappa \frac{2\pi}{n+1}}^{\lambda \frac{2\pi}{n+1}} \left( \sin \vartheta + \sin 2\vartheta + \dots + \sin n\vartheta + \frac{\sin(n+1)\vartheta}{2} \right) d\vartheta < 0. \end{aligned}$$

**28.** [W. H. Young, loc. cit. **26**.] According to **27** we have

$$\min B(n, \vartheta) = \begin{cases} B(n, \pi), & \text{for } n \text{ odd,} \\ B\left(n, n \frac{\pi}{n+1}\right), & \text{for } n \text{ even.} \end{cases}$$

In the first case we have

$$B(n, \pi) = -1 + \frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{3} + \dots + \frac{1}{n-1} - \frac{1}{n} \geq -1.$$

For  $n \geq 5$ ,  $n$  odd, we have in fact

$$B(n, \vartheta) \geq -1 + \frac{13}{60} > -1 + \frac{1}{n}.$$

In the second case we have

$$B\left(n, n \frac{\pi}{n+1}\right) = B\left(n+1, n \frac{\pi}{n+1}\right) - \frac{1}{n+1},$$

i.e. for  $n \geq 4$ ,  $n$  even, we have

$$B\left(n, n \frac{\pi}{n+1}\right) > -1 + \frac{1}{n+1} - \frac{1}{n+1} = -1.$$

In the case  $n=2$  we have

$$B\left(2, \frac{2\pi}{3}\right) = \cos \frac{2\pi}{3} + \frac{1}{2} \cos \frac{4\pi}{3} = -\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{4} = -\frac{3}{4} > -1.$$

**29.** In the sequel, we set  $n=0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \pm 3, \dots$ ; such symmetry elements as cannot be derived from each other by means of motions of the plane of the graph are listed separately.

(1) The vertical lines  $x=2n\pi$  and  $x=(2n-1)\pi$  are axes of symmetry;  $b_1=b_2=b_3=\dots=0$ .

(2) The points  $x=2n\pi$  and  $x=(2n-1)\pi$  of the  $x$ -axis  $y=0$  are centers of symmetry;  $a_0=a_1=a_2=a_3=\dots=0$ .

(3) The graph of the curve is mapped onto itself by a horizontal translation of length  $\pi$  along the  $x$ -axis and a subsequent reflection in the  $x$ -axis (the  $x$ -axis,  $y=0$ , is a "gliding symmetry axis");  $a_0=a_2=b_2=a_4=b_4=a_6=b_6=\dots=0$ .

(4a) The vertical lines  $x=n\pi$  are axes of symmetry; the points  $x=(n+\frac{1}{2})\pi$ ,  $y=0$  are centers of symmetry;  $b_1=b_2=b_3=\dots=0$ ,  $a_0=a_2=a_4=\dots=0$ .

(4b) The vertical lines  $x=(n+\frac{1}{2})\pi$  are axes of symmetry, the points  $x=n\pi$ ,  $y=0$  are centers of symmetry;  $a_0=a_1=a_2=\dots=0$ ,  $b_2=b_4=b_6=\dots=0$ . (This kind of symmetry is geometrically not distinct from (4a).)

(5) Here the period is in fact  $\pi$ ;  $a_1=b_1=a_3=b_3=a_5=b_5=\dots=0$ . The symmetry consists merely in the invariance under horizontal translation by multiples of  $\pi$ . (This kind of symmetry is geometrically not distinct from the symmetry of the general Fourier series.)

(There are apart from the five above-mentioned types of symmetry two additional ones (obtained by reflection in the  $x$ -axis), i.e. a total of seven different groups of motions which leave invariant an ornamental band, a "frieze", in fact an infinite number of equidistant points and a plane passing through them. Cf. MPR, 1, p. 88.)

**30.** The first  $2n+1$  Fourier coefficients of  $f(\vartheta)$  are equal to the corresponding coefficients of  $f(\vartheta)$  (with the notation of 11:  $a_0=\lambda_0$ ,  $2a_\nu=\lambda_\nu$ ,  $2b_\nu=\mu_\nu$ ,  $\nu=1, 2, 3, \dots, n$ ), all the others are equal to 0.

**31.**

$$\begin{aligned} \left(2 \cos \frac{\vartheta}{2}\right)^n &= (e^{i\frac{\vartheta}{2}} + e^{-i\frac{\vartheta}{2}})^n = \sum_{\nu=0}^n \binom{n}{\nu} (e^{i\frac{\vartheta}{2}})^{n-\nu} (e^{-i\frac{\vartheta}{2}})^\nu \\ &= \Re \sum_{\nu=0}^n \binom{n}{\nu} e^{i(\frac{n}{2}-\nu)\vartheta} = \sum_{\nu=0}^n \binom{n}{\nu} \cos \left(\frac{n}{2}-\nu\right)\vartheta. \end{aligned}$$

[III 117.]

**32.** By multiplication by  $\cos n\vartheta$ , or  $\sin n\vartheta$ ,  $n=0, 1, 2, \dots$ , and integration from 0 to  $2\pi$ , we obtain that the Fourier coefficients of  $f(\vartheta)$  are identical with  $a_0, a_1, b_1, a_2, b_2, \dots$ , i.e. that the Fourier Series is identical with the given trigonometric series.

**33.** Expand the function  $f(\vartheta)$  defined by

$$f(\vartheta) = \begin{cases} \frac{\pi-\vartheta}{2}, & \text{for } 0 < \vartheta < 2\pi, \\ 0, & \text{for } \vartheta=0, \end{cases}$$

in a Fourier series.

**34.** By direct calculation of the Fourier coefficients we obtain the first series. If we set in this  $\vartheta=0$  and subtract the series obtained, we obtain the second series.

**35.** [G. Szegő: Math. Z. 9, p. 163 (1921).] According to **34** we have

$$\rho_m = \frac{16}{\pi^2} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{4n^2-1} \int_0^{\frac{\pi}{2}} \frac{\sin^2 nm\vartheta}{\sin \vartheta} d\vartheta. \quad [17.]$$

**36.** From **29** (1) and (5) we deduce that the sine terms as well as the cosine terms of odd order vanish. We have

$$\begin{aligned} -c_n &= \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} f(\vartheta) \cos 2n\vartheta d\vartheta = \frac{2}{\pi} \int_0^{\pi} f(\vartheta) \cos 2n\vartheta d\vartheta \\ &= \frac{2}{\pi} \sum_{v=1}^n \int_0^{\frac{\pi}{4n}} \left[ f\left(\frac{v\pi}{n} + \vartheta\right) - f\left(\frac{v\pi}{n} + \frac{\pi}{2n} - \vartheta\right) \right. \\ &\quad \left. - f\left(\frac{v\pi}{n} + \frac{\pi}{2n} + \vartheta\right) + f\left(\frac{v\pi}{n} + \frac{\pi}{n} - \vartheta\right) \right] \cos 2n\vartheta d\vartheta. \end{aligned}$$

In the interval  $[0, \pi/(4n)]$  the function  $\cos 2n\vartheta$  is positive; moreover [II 74] for an arbitrary function  $f(x)$  which is concave in the interval  $(a, b)$ , if  $a < x-v < x-u < x+u < x+v < b$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned} f(x-u) &\geq \frac{(v+u)f(x-v) + (v-u)f(x+v)}{2v}, \\ f(x+u) &\geq \frac{(v-u)f(x-v) + (v+u)f(x+v)}{2v}, \end{aligned}$$

and thus the following inequality holds:

$$f(x-v) - f(x-u) - f(x+u) + f(x+v) \leq 0,$$

which is also evident geometrically.

**37.** The proof is obtained, as in the special case **35**, using **36**.

**38.** With the notation of **26-28**, we have [34]

$$\begin{aligned} \Gamma(n, \vartheta) &= \frac{2}{\pi} \sum_{v=1}^n \frac{1}{v} - \frac{4}{\pi} \sum_{v=1}^{\infty} \frac{B(n, 2v\vartheta)}{4v^2-1} \leq \frac{2}{\pi} \sum_{v=1}^n \frac{1}{v} + \frac{4}{\pi} \sum_{v=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{4v^2-1} \\ &= \frac{2}{\pi} \sum_{v=1}^n \frac{1}{v} + \frac{2}{\pi}. \end{aligned}$$

Moreover we have

$$M_n > \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^{\pi} \Gamma(n, \vartheta) d\vartheta = \frac{2}{\pi} \sum_{v=1}^n \frac{1}{v}$$

**39.** If we set  $z=e^{i\vartheta}$  and

$$\begin{aligned} &|x_0 + x_1 z + x_2 z^2 + \dots + x_n z^n|^2 \\ &= \lambda_0 + \lambda_1 \cos \vartheta + \mu_1 \sin \vartheta + \lambda_2 \cos 2\vartheta + \mu_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \dots + \lambda_n \cos n\vartheta + \mu_n \sin n\vartheta, \end{aligned}$$

then we have

$$\begin{aligned} \lambda_0 &= |x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + |x_2|^2 + \dots + |x_n|^2, \\ \frac{1}{2}(\lambda_\nu + i\mu_\nu) &= x_0 \bar{x}_\nu + x_1 \bar{x}_{\nu+1} + \dots + x_{n-\nu} \bar{x}_n, \quad \nu=1, 2, \dots, n. \end{aligned}$$

We have  $\lambda_n + i\mu_n = 2x_0\bar{x}_n \neq 0$ . (For  $x_0 = x_1 = x_2 = \dots = x_n$  we obtain from this a new proof of **18**.)

**40.** [F. Riesz; cf. L. Fejér: J. reine angew. Math. 146, pp. 53–82 (1916).] The polynomial  $G(z)$  defined in **11** consists of the following three factors, of which one or even two may be absent [**13**]:

$$\prod_{\mu=1}^k (z - \zeta_\mu), \quad \prod_{\nu=1}^l (z - z_\nu) \left( z - \frac{1}{\bar{z}_\nu} \right), \quad cz^r, \\ k + 2l + 2r = 2n,$$

where  $k, l, r$  are integers,  $k \geq 0, l \geq 0, r \geq 0, |\zeta_\mu| = 1, 0 < |z_\nu| < 1, \mu = 1, 2, \dots, k, \nu = 1, 2, \dots, l$  and  $c$  is an arbitrary complex number. The zeros  $\zeta_\mu = e^{i\vartheta_\mu}$  of  $G(z)$  on the unit circle correspond to the zeros  $\vartheta_\mu$  of  $g(\vartheta)$  on the real interval  $0 \leq \vartheta < 2\pi$ . In fact, as one can see by differentiating the identity  $g(\vartheta) = e^{-in\vartheta} G(e^{i\vartheta})$ , a zero  $\zeta_\mu = e^{i\vartheta_\mu}$  of  $G(z)$  occurs with the same multiplicity as the corresponding zero  $\vartheta_\mu$  of  $g(\vartheta)$ . Since  $g(\vartheta) \geq 0$ , every zero must be of even multiplicity. Let

$$\prod_{\mu=1}^k (z - \zeta_\mu) = \prod_{\mu=1}^{\frac{k}{2}} (z - \zeta_\mu)^2.$$

Then we obtain

$$g(\vartheta) = |g(\vartheta)| = |G(e^{i\vartheta})| = |c| \prod_{\mu=1}^{\frac{k}{2}} |e^{i\vartheta} - \zeta_\mu|^2 \prod_{\nu=1}^l \frac{|e^{i\vartheta} - z_\nu|^2}{|z_\nu|}.$$

**41. [40.]** The polynomial  $G(z)$  in this case has only real coefficients and hence the complex zeros  $\zeta_\mu$  and  $z_\nu$  occur in complex conjugate pairs.

**42.** One may replace any linear factor  $z - z_0$  of  $h(z)$  by  $1 - \bar{z}_0 z$  since on the unit circle we have  $|z - z_0| = |1 - \bar{z}_0 z|$  [**III 5**]. Here we may also have  $z_0 = 0$ .

**43.** In the manner indicated in solution **42** all the zeros of  $h(z)$  may be removed which have absolute value less than 1. Condition (2) can be satisfied by multiplication by a suitably chosen constant  $\gamma, |\gamma| = 1$ . From **III 274** it follows further that this polynomial  $h(z)$  is uniquely determined.

**44.** The polynomial in question can be decomposed into factors of the form  $(x - x_0)^2 + y_0^2, x_0, y_0$  real. Apply repeatedly the identity

$$(p_1^2 + q_1^2)(p_2^2 + q_2^2) = (p_1 p_2 + q_1 q_2)^2 + (p_1 q_2 - p_2 q_1)^2.$$

**45.** The polynomial in question can be decomposed into factors of the form

$$(x - x_0)^2 + y_0^2, \quad x_0, y_0 \text{ real}; \quad x + x_1, \quad x_1 \geq 0.$$

Apply the identity

$$[p_1^2 + q_1^2 + x(r_1^2 + s_1^2)][p_2^2 + q_2^2 + x(r_2^2 + s_2^2)] \\ = [(p_1^2 + q_1^2)(p_2^2 + q_2^2) + x^2(r_1^2 + s_1^2)(r_2^2 + s_2^2)] \\ + x[(p_1^2 + q_1^2)(r_2^2 + s_2^2) + (r_1^2 + s_1^2)(p_2^2 + q_2^2)].$$

Furthermore, **44** must be used twice.

**46.** [M. Fekete.] Writing  $P(x)$  for the polynomial in question, apply **41** to  $P(\cos \vartheta)$  and make use of **8, 9**. We have

$$P(\cos \vartheta) = |A(\cos \vartheta) + i \sin \vartheta B(\cos \vartheta)|^2,$$

where  $A(x)$  and  $B(x)$  denote polynomials with real coefficients.

**47.** [F. Lukács.] Let  $P(x)$  be of degree  $2m$ . Then by **41** we have

$$\begin{aligned} P(\cos \vartheta) &= |h(e^{i\vartheta})|^2 = |e^{-im\vartheta} h(e^{i\vartheta})|^2, \\ e^{-im\vartheta} h(e^{i\vartheta}) &= A(\cos \vartheta) + i \sin \vartheta D(\cos \vartheta), \end{aligned}$$

where  $h(z)$  is a polynomial of degree  $2m$  with real coefficients,  $A(x)$  is of degree  $m$  and  $D(x)$  is of degree  $m-1$ . If  $P(x)$  is of degree  $2m+1$ , then we have

$$P(x) = (x - \alpha)P_1(x) = (x + 1)P_1(x) + (-\alpha - 1)P_1(x),$$

or

$$P(x) = (\beta - x)P_1(x) = (\beta - 1)P_1(x) + (1 - x)P_1(x),$$

where  $\alpha \leq -1$ ,  $\beta \geq 1$ , respectively, and we apply the preceding considerations to  $P_1(x)$ .

**48.** [Ch. Hermite, problem: Interméd. des math. 1, p. 65 (1894). Solution by J. Franel, E. Goursat, J. Sadier: Interméd. des. math. 1, p. 251 (1894).] No. For if the representation were possible we could write

$$x^2 + \varepsilon = \sum A(\varepsilon)(1-x)^\alpha(1+x)^\beta,$$

where  $\varepsilon > 0$ ,  $A(\varepsilon) \geq 0$ . Here  $\alpha + \beta \leq 2$ , and  $\alpha, \beta$  are non-negative integers, so that the number of terms is exactly 6 for all  $\varepsilon$ . From this it follows, setting  $x=0$ , that  $A(\varepsilon)$  is bounded for  $0 < \varepsilon \leq 1$ . Now, letting  $\varepsilon$  converge to 0, in such a manner that  $\lim_{\varepsilon \rightarrow 0} A(\varepsilon) = A$  exists in all six terms, we obtain

$$x^2 = \sum A(1-x)^\alpha(1+x)^\beta.$$

For  $x=0$  this leads to a contradiction.

**49.** [F. Hausdorff: Math. Z. 9, pp. 98-99 (1921).]

*First solution:* It is sufficient to consider the following two special cases:

(1)  $P(x)$  linear:

$$P(x) = \frac{P(-1)}{2}(1-x) + \frac{P(1)}{2}(1+x).$$

(2)  $P(x)$  quadratic,  $P(x) = a + 2b(1-x) + c(1-x)^2$ ,  $c > 0$ ,  $ac - b^2 > 0$ . Denoting by  $p$  an integer,  $p \geq 2$ , to be determined later, set

$$\begin{aligned} 2^p P(x) &= a \sum_{v=0}^p \binom{p}{v} (1-x)^v (1+x)^{p-v} \\ &\quad + 2b(1-x) 2 \sum_{v=1}^p \binom{p-1}{v-1} (1-x)^{v-1} (1+x)^{p-v} \\ &\quad + c(1-x)^2 4 \sum_{v=2}^p \binom{p-2}{v-2} (1-x)^{v-2} (1+x)^{p-v} \\ &= \sum_{v=0}^p \frac{(p-2)!}{v!(p-v)!} f(v) (1-x)^v (1+x)^{p-v}. \end{aligned}$$

Here

$$\begin{aligned} f(v) &= ap(p-1) + 4b(p-1)v + 4cv(v-1) \\ &= 4cv^2 + 2(2bp - 2b - 2c)v + (ap^2 - ap) \end{aligned}$$



is a polynomial of second degree in  $\nu$ , which becomes positive definite if  $p$  is chosen sufficiently large, namely such that

$$4c(ap^2 - ap) - (2bp - 2b - 2c)^2 = 4(ac - b^2)p^2 + \dots > 0.$$

*Second solution:* Introduce a new variable  $z$  by means of the equation

$$(1+x)(1+z)=2.$$

Let  $P(x)$  be of degree  $n$ . Then

$$P\left(\frac{1-z}{1+z}\right)(1+z)^n = f(z)$$

is a polynomial of degree  $n$ ,  $f(z) > 0$  for  $z > 0$ .

Hence for a sufficiently large integer  $p$  we have the representation

$$f(z)(1+z)^{p-n} = \sum_{\alpha=0}^p A_{\alpha} z^{\alpha},$$

$A_{\alpha} \geq 0$  for  $\alpha=0, 1, 2, \dots, p$  [solution V 187]. From this it follows that

$$P(x) = f\left(\frac{1-x}{1+x}\right) \left(\frac{1+x}{2}\right)^n = 2^{-p} \sum_{\alpha=0}^p A_{\alpha} (1-x)^{\alpha} (1+x)^{p-\alpha}.$$

**50. First proof.** [L. Fejér: C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris) 157, pp. 506–509 (1913); the case of equality is not discussed.] If we set

$$Q(z) = n+1 - \sum_{\nu=1}^n \frac{1+ze^{i\vartheta_{\nu}}}{1-ze^{i\vartheta_{\nu}}}, \quad \vartheta_{\nu} = \nu \frac{2\pi}{n+1}, \quad \nu=1, 2, \dots, n,$$

then we have [cf. III 6]

$$\Re Q(z) < n+1, \quad |z| < 1.$$

Furthermore [cf. second proof]

$$Q(z) = 1 + 2z + 2z^2 + \dots + 2z^n + q_{n+1}z^{n+1} + q_{n+2}z^{n+2} + \dots$$

We have for  $0 \leq r < 1$

$$\begin{aligned} & \lambda_0 + \lambda_1 r + \lambda_2 r^2 + \dots + \lambda_n r^n \\ &= \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} g(\vartheta) (1 + 2r \cos \vartheta + \dots + 2r^n \cos n\vartheta) d\vartheta \\ &= \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} g(\vartheta) [\Re Q(re^{i\vartheta})] d\vartheta < (n+1) \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} g(\vartheta) d\vartheta = n+1. \end{aligned}$$

Let  $r$  converge to 1 and we obtain the desired estimate for  $g(0)$ . Then consider  $g(\vartheta + \vartheta_0)$ ,  $\vartheta_0$  fixed.

*Second proof.* [L. Fejér: C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris) 157, pp. 571–572 (1913).] It is sufficient to prove that  $g(0) \leq n+1$ . Setting

$$\vartheta_{\nu} = \nu \frac{2\pi}{n+1}, \quad \nu=0, 1, 2, \dots, n,$$

we have

$$\sum_{\nu=0}^n \cos k\vartheta_\nu = \sum_{\nu=0}^n \sin k\vartheta_\nu = 0, \quad k=1, 2, \dots, n,$$

since

$$\sum_{\nu=0}^n e^{ik\vartheta_\nu} = \frac{1 - e^{i(n+1)k\frac{2\pi}{n+1}}}{1 - e^{ik\frac{2\pi}{n+1}}} = 0.$$

Hence we have

$$g(0) + g(\vartheta_1) + g(\vartheta_2) + \dots + g(\vartheta_n) = n+1, \quad \text{i.e. } g(0) \leq n+1.$$

If the case of equality is attained, then we must have  $g(\vartheta_1) = g(\vartheta_2) = \dots = g(\vartheta_n) = 0$ , i.e.  $g(\vartheta)$  then has, because of  $g(\vartheta) \geq 0$ , the double zeros

$$\vartheta_\nu = \nu \frac{2\pi}{n+1}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n.$$

This property, together with the condition  $\lambda_0 = 1$ , determines  $g(\vartheta)$  uniquely. [18.]

*Third proof* [L. Fejér, loc. cit. 40, pp. 65–66]. By 40 the most general trigonometric polynomial  $g(\vartheta)$  with the required properties has the form

$$g(\vartheta) = |x_0 + x_1 z + x_2 z^2 + \dots + x_n z^n|^2, \quad z = e^{i\vartheta},$$

where

$$\lambda_0 = |x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + |x_2|^2 + \dots + |x_n|^2 = 1 \quad [39.]$$

Using II 80 we obtain that for any value of  $\vartheta = \vartheta_0$  we have

$$g(\vartheta_0) \leq (n+1)(|x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + |x_2|^2 + \dots + |x_n|^2) = n+1.$$

Here equality holds only for  $x_\nu = \gamma e^{-i\nu\vartheta_0}$ ,  $\nu = 0, 1, 2, \dots, n$ ;  $|\gamma| = 1/\sqrt{n+1}$ .

51. [L. Fejér, loc. cit. 40, p. 73.] We have  $\lambda_n + i\mu_n = 2x_0\bar{x}_n$  and

$$2|x_0\bar{x}_n| \leq |x_0|^2 + |x_n|^2 \leq |x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + \dots + |x_n|^2 = 1.$$

The equality sign holds only if  $x_1 = x_2 = \dots = x_{n-1} = 0$ ,  $|x_0| = |x_n| = 1/\sqrt{2}$ , i.e. for  $g(\vartheta) = \frac{1}{2}|1 + \gamma e^{in\vartheta}|^2$ ,  $|\gamma| = 1$ .

52. [L. Fejér, loc. cit. 40, p. 79.] By 39, 40 we are concerned with the maximum of

$$4|x_0\bar{x}_1 + x_1\bar{x}_2 + \dots + x_{n-1}\bar{x}_n|,$$

subject to the condition  $|x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + |x_2|^2 + \dots + |x_n|^2 = 1$ . We may confine ourselves to the consideration of real  $x_0, x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$ . The maximum of

$$2|x_0x_1 + x_1x_2 + \dots + x_{n-1}x_n|$$

is equal to the absolute value of the zero of greatest absolute value of the determinant  $D_n(f-h)$  of VII 70,  $f(\vartheta) = 2 \cos \vartheta$ , i.e. equal to  $h_{n,n} = 2 \cos [\pi/(n+2)]$  [cf. Kowalewski, p. 275].

53. Let  $h(z) = c(1+z_1z)(1+z_2z)\dots(1+z_nz)$ ,  $|z_\nu| \leq 1$ ,  $\nu = 1, 2, \dots, n$ ,  $c$  real,  $c > 0$ . By II 52 we have

$$\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} \log |1 + z_\nu e^{i\vartheta}|^2 d\vartheta = 0,$$

and hence

$$\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} \log g(\vartheta) d\vartheta = \log c^2.$$

**54.** We obtain all trigonometric polynomials  $g(\vartheta)$  of the required kind by considering  $g(\vartheta) = |h(e^{i\vartheta})|^2$ , where

$$h(z) = (1 + z_1 z)(1 + z_2 z) \dots (1 + z_n z) = x_0 + x_1 z + x_2 z^2 + \dots + x_n z^n$$

and  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  are arbitrary complex numbers of absolute value  $\leq 1$ . Hence for  $|z| \leq 1$  we have

$$|h(z)| \leq (1 + 1)^n = 2^n.$$

The equality sign holds only if all the  $z_v$  are equal and of absolute value 1 and if  $z = z_v$ .

**55.** We have

$$h(z) \leq (1 + z)^n,$$

and hence

$$\lambda_0 = |x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + |x_2|^2 + \dots + |x_n|^2 \leq 1 + \binom{n}{1}^2 + \binom{n}{2}^2 + \dots + \binom{n}{n}^2$$

[I 32], equality as in 54.

**56.** As in 55

$$\begin{aligned} |\lambda_\nu + i\mu_\nu| &= 2|x_0\bar{x}_\nu + x_1\bar{x}_{\nu+1} + \dots + x_{n-\nu}\bar{x}_n| \\ &\leq 2\left[\binom{n}{0}\binom{n}{\nu} + \binom{n}{1}\binom{n}{\nu+1} + \dots + \binom{n}{n-\nu}\binom{n}{n}\right] = 2\binom{2n}{n+\nu}. \end{aligned}$$

**57. First proof.** By 40 and 39 from  $g(\vartheta) \geq 0$ ,  $\lambda_0 = 0$ , it follows that

$$\begin{aligned} g(\vartheta) &= |x_0 + x_1 e^{i\vartheta} + x_2 e^{2i\vartheta} + \dots + x_n e^{ni\vartheta}|^2, \\ |x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + |x_2|^2 + \dots + |x_n|^2 &= 0, \end{aligned}$$

i.e.  $x_0 = x_1 = x_2 = \dots = x_n = 0$ .

*Second proof* [L. Fejér, loc. cit. 50, second proof]. We deduce as in solution 50, second proof, that, setting

$$\vartheta_\nu = \nu \frac{2\pi}{n+1}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, \dots, n,$$

we have

$$g(0) + g(\vartheta_1) + g(\vartheta_2) + \dots + g(\vartheta_n) = 0,$$

i.e.

$$g(0) = g(\vartheta_1) = g(\vartheta_2) = \dots = g(\vartheta_n) = 0.$$

Thus  $g(\vartheta)$  has zeros  $0, \vartheta_1, \vartheta_2, \dots, \vartheta_n$  and, since  $g(\vartheta) \geq 0$ , they are in fact all double zeros. By 14 we deduce from this that  $g(\vartheta) \equiv 0$ .

*Third proof.* Mathematical induction. For  $n=1$  we have

$$\lambda_1 \cos \vartheta + \mu_1 \sin \vartheta = \sqrt{\lambda_1^2 + \mu_1^2} \cos(\vartheta - \vartheta_0), \quad \tan \vartheta_0 = \frac{\mu_1}{\lambda_1},$$

and thus the assertion is obvious. For  $n > 1$ , if  $g(\vartheta) \geq 0$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} g^*(\vartheta) &= \frac{g(\vartheta) + g(\vartheta + \pi)}{2} \\ &= \lambda_2 \cos 2\vartheta + \mu_2 \sin 2\vartheta + \lambda_4 \cos 4\vartheta + \mu_4 \sin 4\vartheta + \dots \\ &\quad + \lambda_{2p} \cos 2p\vartheta + \mu_{2p} \sin 2p\vartheta, \end{aligned}$$

$p = [n/2]$ , is a non-negative trigonometric polynomial of order  $p$  in  $2\vartheta$  and without a constant term. From  $g^*(\vartheta) \equiv 0$ ,  $g(\vartheta) \geq 0$  it follows that also  $g(\vartheta) \equiv 0$ .

**58.** [L. Fejér, loc. cit. **40**, pp. 67–68; loc. cit. **50**, second proof, pp. 573–574.] If  $g(\vartheta) \neq 0$ , then  $m > 0$ ,  $M > 0$  [57]. Apply **50** to  $[g(\vartheta) + m]/m$  and again to  $[M - g(\vartheta)]/M$ .

**59.** [L. Fejér, loc. cit. **40**, p. 69.] Apply **58** to

$$g(\vartheta) - \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} g(\vartheta) d\vartheta.$$

**60.** [L. Fejér, loc. cit. **40**, pp. 80–81.] Let  $g(\vartheta) \neq \text{constant}$ . Applying **51** to  $[g(\vartheta) + m]/(\lambda_0 + m)$  and again to  $[M - g(\vartheta)]/(M - \lambda_0)$  we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \sqrt{\lambda_n^2 + \mu_n^2} &\leq \lambda_0 + m, & \sqrt{\lambda_n^2 + \mu_n^2} &\leq M - \lambda_0, \\ \sqrt{\lambda_n^2 + \mu_n^2} &\leq \frac{m + M}{2} \leq \max(m, M). \end{aligned}$$

**61.** [O. Szász: Münch. Ber. pp. 307–320 (1917).] By **40** we may set

$$M - \sum_{v=1}^n (\lambda_v \cos v\vartheta + \mu_v \sin v\vartheta) = |x_0 + x_1 z + x_2 z^2 + \dots + x_n z^n|^2,$$

$z = e^{i\vartheta}$ , from which we deduce [39] that

$$\begin{aligned} \sqrt{\lambda_v^2 + \mu_v^2} &\leq 2(|x_0||x_v| + |x_1||x_{v+1}| + \dots + |x_{n-v}||x_n|), \\ v &= 1, 2, \dots, n. \end{aligned}$$

Furthermore we have

$$M = |x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + \dots + |x_n|^2,$$

and hence

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{v=1}^n \sqrt{\lambda_v^2 + \mu_v^2} &\leq (|x_0| + |x_1| + \dots + |x_n|)^2 - (|x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + \dots + |x_n|^2) \\ &\leq (n+1)M - M = nM. \end{aligned}$$

[II 80.]

**62.** [P. Tchebychev: Oeuvres, **1**, pp. 387–469. St. Pétersbourg, 1899; cf. L. Fejér, loc. cit. **40**, pp. 81–82.] If  $P(x)$  has real coefficients apply **60** to the trigonometric polynomial  $P(\cos \vartheta) = 2^{1-n} \cos n\vartheta + \dots$ . If  $P(x)$  has arbitrary complex coefficients, then it may be separated into polynomials with real coefficients,  $P(x) = P_1(x) + iP_2(x)$ , where the coefficient of  $x^n$  in  $P_1(x)$  is again 1 and  $P_2(x)$  is of degree  $n-1$ . From  $|P(x)|^2 = [P_1(x)]^2 + [P_2(x)]^2$  it follows that

$$\max |P(x)| \geq \max |P_1(x)| \geq \frac{1}{2^{n-1}}, \quad -1 \leq x \leq 1.$$

If here equality holds, then we must have  $P_1(x) = 2^{1-n}T_n(x)$  and at every point where  $|P_1(x)|$  attains its maximum (at  $n+1$  points) we must have  $P_2(x) = 0$ , i.e.  $P_2(x) \equiv 0$ . This result is somewhat stronger than the extreme case of III 270.

**63.** Under the linear transformation  $[2/(\beta-\alpha)](x-\alpha)-1=y$ , the interval  $\alpha \leq x \leq \beta$  is mapped onto the interval  $-1 \leq y \leq 1$ , and the polynomial  $P(x)$  is transformed into  $[(\beta-\alpha)/2]^n Q(y)$ , where  $Q(y)$  has the same form in  $y$  as  $P(x)$  in  $x$ .

**64.** We may assume that  $\beta > 0$ ,  $\alpha = -\beta$ ,  $d < 2\beta$ . If  $P(x)$  is any admissible polynomial, then

$$\frac{P(x) + (-1)^n P(-x)}{2} = \begin{cases} Q(x^2) & \text{for even } n, \\ xQ(x^2) & \text{for odd } n, \end{cases}$$

where  $Q(\xi)$  denotes a polynomial of degree  $[n/2]$  in  $\xi = x^2$  with leading coefficient 1. The variable  $x$  runs through the two intervals  $-\beta \leq x \leq -d/2$ ,  $d/2 \leq x \leq \beta$ , and the variable  $\xi$  runs through the interval  $(d/2)^2 \leq \xi \leq \beta^2$ . Hence, setting

$$2 \left( \frac{\beta^2 - (d/2)^2}{4} \right)^{[n/2]} = \mu,$$

we have [63]

$$(*) \quad \max |P(x)| \geq \max \left| \frac{P(x) + (-1)^n P(-x)}{2} \right| \begin{cases} = \max |Q(\xi)| \geq \mu, \\ \geq \frac{d}{2} \max |Q(\xi)| \geq \frac{d}{2} \mu, \end{cases}$$

for  $n$  even or odd, respectively. The same estimate holds therefore for  $\mu_n$ . On the other hand, let  $Q_0(\xi)$  be the polynomial of degree  $[n/2]$  with leading coefficient 1 for which  $\max |Q_0(\xi)| = \mu$  [62, 63]. Set  $P_0(x) = Q_0(x^2)$  or  $P_0(x) = xQ_0(x^2)$  for  $n$  even or odd, respectively. We have

$$\mu_n \leq \max |P_0(x)| \begin{cases} = \mu, \\ \leq \beta \mu, \end{cases}$$

for  $n$  even or odd, respectively.

In the first case  $\mu_n$  is attained, and this occurs *only* for  $P(x) = P_0(x)$ . For if  $\max |P(x)| = \mu$ , then by (\*) we have also

$$\max \left| \frac{P(x) + P(-x)}{2} \right| = \mu, \quad \text{and hence} \quad \frac{P(x) + P(-x)}{2} = Q_0(x^2).$$

Furthermore we have

$$\left| \frac{P(x_v) + P(-x_v)}{2} \right| = \mu$$

at  $(n/2) + 1$  distinct points  $x_v$  in the interval  $d/2 \leq x \leq \beta$ . But now we have

$$\mu = \left| \frac{P(x_v) + P(-x_v)}{2} \right| \leq \frac{|P(x_v)| + |P(-x_v)|}{2} \leq \mu,$$

i.e.  $P(x_v) = P(-x_v)$ . The polynomial  $P(x) - P(-x)$  of degree  $n-1$  hence vanishes at  $n+2$  points,  $P(x) = P(-x) = Q_0(x^2) = P_0(x)$ .

**65.** Set  $M = \max |Q(z)|$  for  $|z|=1$ . The trigonometric polynomial of order  $n+1$

$$\Re\left(1 + \frac{1}{M} e^{i\theta} Q(e^{i\theta})\right)$$

is non-negative, has constant term equal to 1 and leading term  $(1/M) \cos(n+1)\theta$  [51]. Cf. III 269.

**66.** If the point  $P$  ranges over an arbitrary segment of the straight line  $L$  or over a disc  $D$ , and  $P_0$  is an arbitrary point in space, then we have  $\overline{PP_0} \geq \overline{PP'_0}$ , where  $P'_0$  denotes the projection of  $P_0$  onto  $L$  or onto the plane of  $D$ , respectively. The "minimum maximorum" in question can thus be attained in both cases only for systems of points  $P_1, P_2, \dots, P_n$  which lie in the same plane as the given straight line segment or the given circle, respectively.

**67.** From the Lagrange interpolation formula, we obtain that

$$x^k = \frac{x_1^k}{f'(x_1)} \frac{f(x)}{x-x_1} + \frac{x_2^k}{f'(x_2)} \frac{f(x)}{x-x_2} + \dots + \frac{x_n^k}{f'(x_n)} \frac{f(x)}{x-x_n},$$

$$k=0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1.$$

Comparing the coefficients of  $x^{n-1}$  we obtain  $\sigma_k$ . For  $k=0$  we obtain furthermore, by expanding in descending powers of  $x$ ,

$$1 = f(x)(\sigma_0 x^{-1} + \sigma_1 x^{-2} + \sigma_2 x^{-3} + \dots).$$

The coefficient of  $x^{-h-1}$  yields the recursion formula

$$a_0 \sigma_{n+h} + a_1 \sigma_{n+h-1} + \dots + a_{n-1} \sigma_{h+1} + a_n \sigma_h = 0, \quad h \geq 0,$$

so that

$$\begin{aligned} a_0 \sigma_n + a_1 \sigma_{n-1} &= 0, \\ a_0 \sigma_{n+1} + a_1 \sigma_n + a_2 \sigma_{n-1} &= 0, \\ \dots & \\ a_0 \sigma_{2n-2} + a_1 \sigma_{2n-3} + \dots + a_{n-1} \sigma_{n-1} &= 0, \\ a_0 \sigma_{2n-1} + a_1 \sigma_{2n-2} + \dots + a_{n-1} \sigma_{n-2} + a_n \sigma_{n-1} &= 0. \end{aligned}$$

**68.** [I. Schur.] Let the zeros of the polynomial  $f(x) + \varepsilon$  be  $x_v = x_v(\varepsilon)$ ,  $v=1, 2, \dots, n$ . For sufficiently small  $\varepsilon$  these are differentiable functions of  $\varepsilon$ . We have  $x_v(0) = x_v$ . From  $f[x_v(\varepsilon)] + \varepsilon = 0$  we obtain by differentiation  $f'(x_v) x'_v(0) = -1$ . Apply 67 to  $f(x) + \varepsilon$ , differentiate with respect to  $\varepsilon$  and then set  $\varepsilon=0$ .

**69.** In (\*) § 9 p. 82, set  $P(x) = x^n f(x^{-1}) + (-1)^{n-1} x_1 x_2 \dots x_n f(x)$  and  $x = -1$ . We have

$$\sum_{v=1}^n \frac{P(x_v)}{f'(x_v)(1+x_v)} = -\frac{P(-1)}{f(-1)} = (-1)^{n-1} + (-1)^n x_1 x_2 \dots x_n.$$

**70.** Let  $P(x)$  be the polynomial considered, and

$$f(x) = (x-x_0)(x-x_1)(x-x_2) \dots (x-x_n).$$

From

$$P(x) = \sum_{v=0}^n \frac{P(x_v)}{f'(x_v)} \frac{f(x)}{x-x_v}$$

we obtain, by comparing coefficients of  $x^n$ ,

$$1 = \sum_{v=0}^n \frac{P(x_v)}{f'(x_v)}, \quad \text{and hence} \quad 1 \leq M \sum_{v=0}^n \frac{1}{|f'(x_v)|},$$

where  $M$  denotes the greatest of the absolute values  $|P(x_v)|$ ,  $v=0, 1, 2, \dots, n$ . We have

$$\begin{aligned} |f'(x_v)| &= |(x_v - x_0)(x_v - x_1) \dots (x_v - x_{v-1})(x_v - x_{v+1}) \dots (x_v - x_n)| \\ &\geq v!(n-v)!, \\ \sum_{v=0}^n \frac{1}{|f'(x_v)|} &\leq \sum_{v=0}^n \frac{1}{v!(n-v)!} = \frac{2^n}{n!}. \end{aligned}$$

**71.**

$$T'_n(x_v) = (-1)^{v-1} \frac{n}{\sqrt{1-x_v^2}}, \quad v=1, 2, \dots, n.$$

**72.**

$$U'_n(x_v) = (-1)^{v-1} \frac{n+1}{1-x_v^2}, \quad v=1, 2, \dots, n.$$

**73.** [Cf. I. Schur: Math. Z. **4**, pp. 273–274 (1919).] For  $v=1, 2, \dots, n-1$  we have

$$\left[ \frac{d}{dx} [U_{n-1}(x)(x^2-1)] \right]_{x=x_v} = U'_{n-1}(x_v)(x_v^2-1) = (-1)^v n.$$

Furthermore

$$\left[ \frac{d}{dx} [U_{n-1}(x)(x^2-1)] \right]_{x=\pm 1} = \pm 2U_{n-1}(\pm 1) = 2n \quad \text{or} \quad (-1)^n 2n, \text{ respect.}$$

**74.**

$$\left[ \frac{d}{dx} (x^n - 1) \right]_{x=x_v} = n x_v^{n-1} = n e_v^{n-1}, \quad v=1, 2, \dots, n.$$

**75.** The last equation states that the leading terms of the two polynomials  $P(x)$  and  $Q(x)$  are equal. Then we conclude from the second last equation that the terms following the leading terms are also equal, and so on. In other words, if we set

$$P(x) = a_0 x^n + a_1 x^{n-1} + \dots + a_{n-1} x + a_n,$$

then, given the numbers  $c_0, c_1, \dots, c_n$ , the coefficients  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_n$  are successively and *uniquely* determined by the equations

$$\begin{aligned} P^{(n)}(x_n) &= n! a_0 &= c_n, \\ P^{(n-1)}(x_{n-1}) &= n! a_0 x_{n-1} + (n-1)! a_1 &= c_{n-1}, \\ &\dots & \\ P'(x_1) &= n a_0 x_1^{n-1} + (n-1) a_1 x_1^{n-2} + \dots + a_{n-1} = c_1, \\ P(x_0) &= a_0 x_0^n + a_1 x_0^{n-1} + \dots + a_{n-1} x_0 + a_n = c_0. \end{aligned}$$

**76.** [G. H. Halphen: Oeuvres, 2, p. 520. Paris: Gauthier Villars, 1918.]  $A_n(x)$  is uniquely determined by the conditions

$$A_n(0) = A'_n(1) = A''_n(2) = \dots = A_n^{(n-1)}(n-1) = 0, \quad A_n^{(n)}(n) = 1.$$

Clearly  $A_0(x)=1$ ,  $A_1(x)=x$  and in general  $A'_n(1+x)$  satisfies the conditions imposed by the polynomial  $A_{n-1}(x)$ . Hence we have

$$A'_n(x)=A_{n-1}(x-1).$$

From this recurrence relation it follows by successive integration that

$$A_n(x)=\frac{x(x-n)^{n-1}}{n!}, \quad n=1, 2, 3, 4, \dots$$

Subsequent verification by differentiation is simpler.—A different proof is given in III 221.

**77.** It follows from **71**, using the notation given there, that

$$a_0=\frac{2^{n-1}}{n} \sum_{v=1}^n (-1)^{v-1} \sqrt{1-x_v^2} P(x_v),$$

and hence  $|a_0| \leq (2^{n-1}/n)n=2^{n-1}$ . Here equality holds if and only if

$$\sqrt{1-x_v^2} P(x_v) = (-1)^{v-1} \gamma, \quad |\gamma|=1, \quad v=1, 2, \dots, n.$$

By these  $n$  conditions the polynomial  $P(x)$  of degree  $n-1$  is determined uniquely. Since  $\gamma U_{n-1}(x)$  satisfies these conditions we must have  $P(x)=\gamma U_{n-1}(x)$ .

**78.** Comparing the leading terms in the interpolation formula **73**, we obtain the following representation for the leading coefficient  $a_0$  of  $P(x)$

$$a_0=\frac{2^{n-2}}{n} [P(1)+(-1)^n P(-1)] + \frac{2^{n-1}}{n} \sum_{v=1}^{n-1} (-1)^v P(x_v).$$

Thus, if  $|P(x)| \leq 1$ ,  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$ , we have

$$|a_0| \leq \frac{2^{n-2}}{n} \cdot 2 + \frac{2^{n-1}}{n} \cdot (n-1) = 2^{n-1}.$$

The equality sign holds if and only if

$$P(1)=\gamma, \quad P(-1)=(-1)^n \gamma, \quad P(x_v)=(-1)^v \gamma, \\ v=1, 2, \dots, n-1, \quad |\gamma|=1.$$

By these  $n+1$  conditions  $P(x)$  is determined uniquely. But  $\gamma T_n(x)$  satisfies these conditions and hence we must have  $P(x)=\gamma T_n(x)$ .

**79.** If  $P(x)$  is a polynomial of degree  $n-1$  with leading coefficient  $a_0$ , then we have [74]

$$a_0=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{v=1}^n \varepsilon_v P(\varepsilon_v).$$

Thus if  $|P(z)| \leq 1$  for  $|z|=1$ , we have

$$|a_0| \leq \frac{1}{n} \cdot n = 1.$$

The equality sign holds only if  $P(\varepsilon_v)=\gamma \varepsilon_v$ ,  $v=1, 2, \dots, n$ ,  $|\gamma|=1$ , i.e.  $P(z)=\gamma z^{n-1}$ .

**80.** From **71** it follows that for  $x_1=\cos [\pi/(2n)] \leq x \leq 1$

$$|P(x)| \leq \frac{1}{n} \sum_{v=1}^n \frac{T_n(x)}{x-x_v} = \frac{T'_n(x)}{n} = U_{n-1}(x),$$



i.e. by **7**:  $|P(x)| \leq n$ . The equality sign holds only for  $P(x) = \gamma U_{n-1}(x)$ ,  $|\gamma| = 1$ ,  $x = 1$ . A similar result holds for  $-1 \leq x \leq x_n = -x_1$ . For  $x_n \leq x \leq x_1$ ,  $n > 1$  we have

$$\sqrt{1-x^2} \geq \sin \frac{\pi}{2n} > \frac{2}{\pi} \cdot \frac{\pi}{2n} = \frac{1}{n}.$$

**81.** [Cf. M. Riesz: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. **23**, p. 354 (1914). Apply **80** to

$$P(x) = P(\cos \vartheta) = \frac{S(\vartheta)}{\sin \vartheta}. \quad [9.]$$

**82.** [S. Bernstein: Belg. Mém. 1912, p. 19, cf. M. Riesz, loc. cit. **81**. The idea used here is due to Fejér. Cf. M. Fekete: J. reine angew. Math. **146**, pp. 88-94, (1915).] By **81** we have

$$|S'(0)| = |g'(\vartheta_0)| \leq n.$$

Cf. IV **201**.

**83.** [A. Markov: Abh. Akad. Wiss. St. Petersburg, **62**, pp. 1-24 (1889).] Apply **82** to  $P(\cos \vartheta)$  and **80** to  $n^{-1}P'(x)$ . The equality sign holds only if  $n^{-1}P'(x) = \gamma U_{n-1}(x)$ ,  $|\gamma| = 1$ , i.e.  $P(x) = c + \gamma T_n(x)$  where  $c$  is a constant. Since  $|c \pm \gamma| \leq 1$ , we have  $c = 0$ .

**84.** By integration by parts we obtain

$$\int_{-1}^1 \left( \frac{1}{2^n n!} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} (x^2 - 1)^n \right) x^\nu dx = \frac{(-1)^n}{2^n n!} \int_{-1}^1 (x^2 - 1)^n \frac{d^n x^\nu}{dx^n} dx,$$

since all the derivatives of  $(x^2 - 1)^n$  of order less than  $n$  vanish at  $x = 1$  and  $x = -1$ . From this it follows that (1) of § 11 p. 85 is satisfied and (2) of § 11 p. 85 is also satisfied since by (1) we have

$$\begin{aligned} \int_{-1}^1 \left( \frac{1}{2^n n!} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} (x^2 - 1)^n \right)^2 dx &= \frac{(2n)!}{2^n n!^2} \int_{-1}^1 \left( \frac{1}{2^n n!} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} (x^2 - 1)^n \right) x^n dx \\ &= \frac{(2n)!}{2^{2n} n!^2} \int_{-1}^1 (1 - x^2)^n dx. \end{aligned}$$

(3) is obvious. The coefficient of  $x^n$  in  $P_n(x)$  is equal to

$$k_n = \frac{(2n)!}{2^n n!^2}.$$

**85.** From **84** we obtain by Leibniz's rule

$$P_n(x) = \frac{1}{2^n n!} \sum_{\nu=0}^n \binom{n}{\nu} \frac{n!}{(n-\nu)!} (x+1)^{n-\nu} \frac{n!}{\nu!} (x-1)^\nu.$$

**86.** We have [III **117**]

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} \left( \sqrt{\frac{x+1}{2}} + \sqrt{\frac{x-1}{2}} e^{i\varphi} \right)^n \left( \sqrt{\frac{x+1}{2}} + \sqrt{\frac{x-1}{2}} e^{-i\varphi} \right)^n d\varphi \\ = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} \left( \sum_{k=0}^n \binom{n}{k} \left( \frac{x+1}{2} \right)^{\frac{n-k}{2}} \left( \frac{x-1}{2} \right)^{\frac{k}{2}} e^{ik\varphi} \right) \left( \sum_{l=0}^n \binom{n}{l} \left( \frac{x+1}{2} \right)^{\frac{n-l}{2}} \left( \frac{x-1}{2} \right)^{\frac{l}{2}} e^{-il\varphi} \right) d\varphi \\ = \sum_{\nu=0}^n \binom{n}{\nu}^2 \left( \frac{x+1}{2} \right)^{n-\nu} \left( \frac{x-1}{2} \right)^\nu = P_n(x) \end{aligned} \quad [85].$$

**87.** Let  $k_n$  be the coefficient of  $x^n$  in  $P_n(x)$ ,  $k_n = [(2n)!/2^n n!^2]$  [84]. Express the polynomial of degree  $n-1$ ,  $P_n(x) - (k_n/k_{n-1})xP_{n-1}(x)$ , as a linear combination of Legendre polynomials

$$P_n(x) - \frac{k_n}{k_{n-1}} xP_{n-1}(x) = c_0P_0(x) + c_1P_1(x) + \cdots + c_{n-1}P_{n-1}(x).$$

From (1) § 11, p. 85 we obtain  $c_0 = c_1 = \cdots = c_{n-3} = 0$ . From  $P_n(1) = 1$ ,  $P_n(-1) = (-1)^n$  [85] we then obtain  $c_{n-2}$  and  $c_{n-1}$ .

**88.** If there existed another polynomial  $S_n^*(x)$  with the given properties we would have

$$\begin{aligned} \int_{-1}^1 [S_n(x) - S_n^*(x)]^2 dx &= \int_{-1}^1 S_n(x)[S_n(x) - S_n^*(x)] dx - \int_{-1}^1 S_n^*(x)[S_n(x) - S_n^*(x)] dx \\ &= S_n(1) - S_n^*(1) - [S_n(1) - S_n^*(1)] = 0, \end{aligned}$$

i.e.  $S_n(x) = S_n^*(x)$ . Now set

$$S_n(x) = \sum_{v=0}^n s_v P_v(x), \quad K(x) = \sum_{v=0}^n t_v P_v(x).$$

If the equation

$$\int_{-1}^1 S_n(x)K(x) dx = \sum_{v=0}^n \frac{2}{2v+1} s_v t_v = K(1) = \sum_{v=0}^n t_v$$

is to hold identically for  $t_0, t_1, t_2, \dots, t_n$ , then we must have  $s_v = (2v+1)/2$ , i.e.

$$S_n(x) = \frac{1}{2}P_0(x) + \frac{3}{2}P_1(x) + \frac{5}{2}P_2(x) + \cdots + \frac{2n+1}{2}P_n(x).$$

Now let

$$(1-x)S_n(x) = u_0P_0(x) + u_1P_1(x) + \cdots + u_nP_n(x) + u_{n+1}P_{n+1}(x).$$

From

$$\int_{-1}^1 (1-x)S_n(x)x^v dx = 0, \quad v=0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1; \quad n \geq 1$$

we deduce that  $u_0 = u_1 = \cdots = u_{n-1} = 0$ . Setting now  $x=1$  and  $x=-1$ , and observing that

$$P_n(1)=1, \quad P_n(-1)=(-1)^n, \quad S_n(1)=\frac{(n+1)^2}{2}, \quad S_n(-1)=(-1)^n \frac{n+1}{2},$$

we obtain

$$S_n(x) = \sum_{v=0}^n \frac{2v+1}{2} P_v(x) = \frac{n+1}{2} \frac{P_n(x) - P_{n+1}(x)}{1-x}$$

(Christoffel formula).

**89.** In 88 set  $K(x) = (1-x)x^v$ . Then we obtain

$$\int_{-1}^1 (1-x)S_n(x)x^v dx = 0, \quad v=0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1; \quad n \geq 1.$$

We have [solution 88]

$$\begin{aligned}\int_{-1}^1 (1-x)[S_n(x)]^2 dx &= \frac{n+1}{2} \int_{-1}^1 [P_n(x) - P_{n+1}(x)] \left( \sum_{v=0}^n \frac{2v+1}{2} P_v(x) \right) dx \\ &= \frac{n+1}{2} \cdot \frac{2n+1}{2} \int_{-1}^1 [P_n(x)]^2 dx = \frac{n+1}{2}.\end{aligned}$$

**90.** Integration by parts yields

$$\begin{aligned}\int_{-1}^1 \left( \frac{d}{dx} (1-x^2) P_n'(x) \right) x^\nu dx &= - \int_{-1}^1 (1-x^2) P_n'(x) \cdot \nu x^{\nu-1} dx \\ &= \int_{-1}^1 P_n(x) \frac{d}{dx} ((1-x^2) \nu x^{\nu-1}) dx = 0, \\ \nu &= 0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1,\end{aligned}$$

i.e.  $(d/dx)(1-x^2)P_n'(x) = cP_n(x)$ ,  $c = \text{constant}$ . The constant  $c$  can be determined for example by comparing the terms of  $n$ th degree.

**91.** The coefficient of  $w^n$  in the expansion of  $(1-2xw+w^2)^{-1/2}$  in ascending powers of  $w$  is evidently a polynomial of  $n$ th degree in  $x$  with a positive leading coefficient [§ 11 p. 85, condition (3)]. If we denote it by  $P_n(x)$ , we have identically in  $u$  and  $v$

$$\begin{aligned}\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \int_{-1}^1 P_k(x) P_l(x) dx \cdot u^k v^l &= \int_{-1}^1 \frac{dx}{\sqrt{1-2xu+u^2} \sqrt{1-2xv+v^2}} \\ &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{uv}} \log \frac{1+\sqrt{uv}}{1-\sqrt{uv}} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{2}{2n+1} u^n v^n\end{aligned}$$

[§ 11 p. 85, conditions (1), (2)]. The generating series may also be deduced directly from **84** [III 219].

**92.** (a) Read III 219 in the reverse direction.

(b) [III 157.] In the reverse direction the calculation proceeds as follows:

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^\pi (x + \sqrt{x^2-1} \cos \varphi)^n d\varphi \cdot w^n = \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^\pi \frac{d\varphi}{1 - (x + \sqrt{x^2-1} \cos \varphi)w}.$$

This integral is equal to  $(1-2xw+w^2)^{-1/2}$  for  $w$  sufficiently small and positive and for  $x > 1$  [III 149,  $n=0$ ].

(c) Set  $F(x, w) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n(x) w^n$ . Then we have

$$\begin{aligned}\sum_{n=2}^{\infty} [nP_n(x) - (2n-1)xP_{n-1}(x) + (n-1)P_{n-2}(x)] w^{n-1} \\ = (1-2xw+w^2) \frac{\partial F}{\partial w} + (w-x)F \equiv 0.\end{aligned}$$

(d)

$$\begin{aligned}\sum_{n=2}^{\infty} [(1-x^2)P_n''(x) - 2xP_n'(x) + n(n+1)P_n(x)] w^n \\ = (1-x^2) \frac{\partial^2 F}{\partial x^2} - 2x \frac{\partial F}{\partial x} + w \frac{\partial^2 (wF)}{\partial w^2} \equiv 0.\end{aligned}$$

**93.** From **91** we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}\frac{1}{\sqrt{1-2\cos\vartheta\cdot w+w^2}} &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{1-e^{i\vartheta}w}} \frac{1}{\sqrt{1-e^{-i\vartheta}w}} \\ &= \left( \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{1\cdot 3\cdots(2k-1)}{2\cdot 4\cdots 2k} e^{ik\vartheta} w^k \right) \left( \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \frac{1\cdot 3\cdots(2l-1)}{2\cdot 4\cdots 2l} e^{-il\vartheta} w^l \right).\end{aligned}$$

Hence, performing the multiplication [I **34**] and comparing coefficients, we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}P_n(\cos\vartheta) &= g_0 g_n \cos n\vartheta + g_1 g_{n-1} \cos(n-2)\vartheta + g_2 g_{n-2} \cos(n-4)\vartheta + \cdots \\ &\quad + g_n g_0 \cos n\vartheta,\end{aligned}$$

where we have used the abbreviations

$$g_0 = 1, \quad g_n = \frac{1\cdot 3\cdots(2n-1)}{2\cdot 4\cdots 2n}, \quad n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$

We deduce that

$$|P_n(\cos\vartheta)| \leq g_0 g_n + g_1 g_{n-1} + g_2 g_{n-2} + \cdots + g_n g_0 = P_n(1) = 1.$$

The equality sign can hold only if  $n\vartheta, (n-2)\vartheta, \dots$  are simultaneously even or odd multiples of  $\pi$ , i.e. only if  $\vartheta = k\pi$ , where  $k$  is an integer.

**94.** If we set  $x = 1 + \xi$ ,  $\xi > 0$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned}1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} [P_n(x) - P_{n-1}(x)] w^n &= \frac{1-w}{\sqrt{(1-w)^2 - 2\xi w}} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1 - 2\xi \frac{w}{(1-w)^2}}} \\ &= 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1\cdot 3\cdots(2n-1)}{2\cdot 4\cdots 2n} \left( \frac{2\xi w}{(1-w)^2} \right)^n.\end{aligned}$$

The power series  $w(1-w)^{-2} = w + 2w^2 + 3w^3 + \cdots$  has all its coefficients positive.

**95.** [L. Fejér: Math. Ann. **67**, p. 83 (1909).] From **17** and III **157** we have

$$P_0(\cos\vartheta) + P_1(\cos\vartheta) + P_2(\cos\vartheta) + \cdots + P_n(\cos\vartheta)$$

$$= \frac{2}{\pi} \int_0^{\frac{\pi}{2}} \frac{\left( \sin(n+1)\frac{t}{2} \right)^2}{\sin\frac{t}{2} \sqrt{2(\cos\vartheta - \cos t)}} dt.$$

**96.** For  $x \geq 1$  we have  $P_n(x) > 0$ . For  $x < -1$ , we have  $\operatorname{sgn} P_n(x) = (-1)^n$ , and  $|P_n(x)| = |P_n(-x)|$  increases monotonically with  $n$  [**94**]. We have  $P_n(-1) = (-1)^n$  [**85**].

**97.** A special case of II **140**:  $a = -1$ ,  $b = +1$ ,  $f(x) = P_n(x)$ .—Alternatively from **84** and V **58**, or from **85** and V **65**, or from **90** and III **34**, or from **90** and V **120**.

**98.** (a)

$$(1-x)^{\alpha}(1+x)^{\beta} P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) = \frac{(-1)^n}{2^n n!} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} (1-x)^{\alpha+n} (1+x)^{\beta+n}.$$

The coefficient of  $x^n$  in  $P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}$  is given by

$$k_n = \frac{1}{2^n} \binom{2n+\alpha+\beta}{n}.$$

(b)

$$(t-1)^n P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}\left(\frac{t+1}{t-1}\right) = \sum_{\nu=0}^n \binom{n+\alpha}{\nu} \binom{n+\beta}{n-\nu} t^\nu.$$

It follows that

$$(-1)^n P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(-1) = \binom{n+\beta}{n}, \quad P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(1) = \binom{n+\alpha}{n}.$$

(c)

$$P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} (x + \sqrt{x^2-1} \cos \varphi)^n \left(1 + \sqrt{\frac{x+1}{x-1}} e^{i\varphi}\right)^\alpha \left(1 + \sqrt{\frac{x-1}{x+1}} e^{i\varphi}\right)^\beta d\varphi,$$

if  $x$  lies in the plane slit along the interval  $-1, +1$ . Here those determinations of the square root or of the  $\alpha$ th or the  $\beta$ th power respectively are to be chosen that are positive for  $x > 1$  and  $\varphi = 0$ . For  $\Re x \geq 0$  we must have  $\alpha$  integral ( $\beta$  arbitrary), for  $\Re x \leq 0$  we must have  $\beta$  integral ( $\alpha$  arbitrary); for pure imaginary  $x$  the formula is true without any restrictions.

(d)

$$\begin{aligned} P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) &= (A_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}x + B_n^{(\alpha, \beta)})P_{n-1}^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) - C_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}P_{n-2}^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x), \\ A_n^{(\alpha, \beta)} &= \frac{(2n+\alpha+\beta)(2n+\alpha+\beta-1)}{2n(n+\alpha+\beta)}, \\ B_n^{(\alpha, \beta)} &= \frac{\alpha^2 - \beta^2}{2n} \frac{2n+\alpha+\beta-1}{(n+\alpha+\beta)(2n+\alpha+\beta-2)}, \\ C_n^{(\alpha, \beta)} &= \frac{(n+\alpha-1)(n+\beta-1)(2n+\alpha+\beta)}{n(n+\alpha+\beta)(2n+\alpha+\beta-2)}, \quad n=2, 3, 4, \dots \end{aligned}$$

(e) Let  $S_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}$  be the polynomial of  $n$ th degree for which

$$\int_{-1}^1 (1-x)^\alpha (1+x)^\beta S_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) K(x) dx = K(1),$$

where  $K(x)$  is an arbitrary polynomial of  $n$ th degree. We have

$$\begin{aligned} S_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) &= \sum_{\nu=0}^n \frac{2\nu+\alpha+\beta+1}{2^{\alpha+\beta+1}} \frac{\Gamma(\nu+\alpha+\beta+1)}{\Gamma(\alpha+1)\Gamma(\nu+\beta+1)} P_\nu^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) \\ &= \frac{1}{2^{\alpha+\beta}} \frac{n+\alpha+1}{2n+\alpha+\beta+2} \frac{\Gamma(n+\alpha+\beta+2)}{\Gamma(\alpha+1)\Gamma(n+\beta+1)} \frac{P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) - \frac{n+1}{n+\alpha+1} P_{n+1}^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x)}{1-x} \\ &\quad \text{(Christoffel formula).} \end{aligned}$$

(f)

$$\begin{aligned} &\int_{-1}^1 (1-x)^{\alpha+1} (1+x)^\beta S_m^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) S_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) dx \\ &= \begin{cases} 0, & \text{for } m \geq n, \\ \frac{2^{-\alpha-\beta}}{[\Gamma(\alpha+1)]^2 (2n+\alpha+\beta+2)} \frac{\Gamma(n+\alpha+2)\Gamma(n+\alpha+\beta+2)}{\Gamma(n+1)\Gamma(n+\beta+1)}, & \text{for } m=n; \end{cases} \\ &\quad \text{for } m, n=0, 1, 2, \dots \end{aligned}$$

(g)

$$(1-x^2)P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)'}(x) + [\beta - \alpha - (\alpha + \beta + 2)x]P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)'}(x) + n(n + \alpha + \beta + 1)P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) = 0.$$

(h)

$$\frac{2^{\alpha+\beta}}{\sqrt{1-2xw+w^2}} (1-w+\sqrt{1-2xw+w^2})^{-\alpha} (1+w+\sqrt{1-2xw+w^2})^{-\beta} \\ = P_0^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) + P_1^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x)w + P_2^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x)w^2 + \dots + P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x)w^n + \dots$$

(i) The zeros of the Jacobi polynomials, are real and simple and lie in the interior of the interval  $-1, 1$ .

Prove similarly as in **84-91, 97**. In the proof of (c) first write (b) in the form

$$P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) = \sum_{\nu=0}^n \binom{n+\alpha}{\nu} \binom{n+\beta}{n-\nu} \left(\frac{x-1}{2}\right)^{n-\nu} \left(\frac{x+1}{2}\right)^{\nu} \\ = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \oint \left(1 + \frac{x+1}{2}z\right)^{n+\alpha} \left(1 + \frac{x-1}{2}z\right)^{n+\beta} \frac{dz}{z^{n+1}}.$$

Integrate along the circular arc  $|z| = 2|x^2 - 1|^{-1/2}$ . The integrand is continuous on this circular arc ( $n \geq 1$ ).

**99.** (a)

$$e^{-x} x^{\alpha} L_n^{(\alpha)}(x) = \frac{1}{n!} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} e^{-x} x^{n+\alpha}.$$

The coefficient of  $x^n$  in  $L_n^{(\alpha)}(x)$  is given by

$$k_n = \frac{(-1)^n}{n!}.$$

(b)

$$L_n^{(\alpha)}(x) = \sum_{\nu=0}^n \binom{n+\alpha}{n-\nu} \frac{(-x)^{\nu}}{\nu!}.$$

It follows that

(c)

$$L_n^{(\alpha)}(0) = \binom{n+\alpha}{n}.$$

(d)

$$nL_n^{(\alpha)}(x) = (-x + 2n + \alpha - 1)L_{n-1}^{(\alpha)}(x) - (n + \alpha - 1)L_{n-2}^{(\alpha)}(x), \\ n = 2, 3, 4, \dots$$

(e) Let  $S_n^{(\alpha)}(x)$  be the polynomial of  $n$ th degree for which

$$\int_0^{\infty} e^{-x} x^{\alpha} S_n^{(\alpha)}(x) K(x) dx = K(0),$$

$K(x)$  an arbitrary polynomial of  $n$ th degree. We have

$$S_n^{(\alpha)}(x) = \frac{1}{\Gamma(\alpha+1)} \sum_{\nu=0}^n L_{\nu}^{(\alpha)}(x) = \frac{n+\alpha+1}{\Gamma(\alpha+1)} \frac{L_n^{(\alpha)}(x) - \frac{n+1}{n+\alpha+1} L_{n+1}^{(\alpha)}(x)}{x} \\ \text{(Christoffel formula).}$$

(f)

$$\int_0^{\infty} e^{-x} x^{\alpha+1} S_m^{(\alpha)}(x) S_n^{(\alpha)}(x) dx = \begin{cases} 0, & \text{if } m \geq n, \\ \frac{\alpha+1}{\Gamma(\alpha+1)} \binom{n+\alpha+1}{n}, & \text{if } m=n, \end{cases}$$

$$m, n=0, 1, 2, \dots$$

(g)

$$xL_n^{(\alpha)'}(x) + (\alpha+1-x)L_n^{(\alpha)'}(x) + nL_n^{(\alpha)}(x) = 0.$$

(h)

$$\frac{e^{-\frac{xw}{1-w}}}{(1-w)^{\alpha+1}} = L_0^{(\alpha)}(x) + L_1^{(\alpha)}(x)w + L_2^{(\alpha)}(x)w^2 + \dots + L_n^{(\alpha)}(x)w^n + \dots$$

(i) The zeros of the (generalized) Laguerre polynomials are real, positive and simple.

Proofs similar to those in **84, 85, 87–91, 97.**

**100.** (a)

$$e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} H_n(x) = \frac{1}{n!} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}}.$$

It follows from this by differentiation that

$$H_n'(x) - xH_n(x) = (n+1)H_{n+1}(x),$$

and we deduce that the coefficient of  $x^n$  in  $H_n(x)$  is given by

$$k_n = \frac{(-1)^n}{n!}.$$

(d)

$$nH_n(x) = -xH_{n-1}(x) - H_{n-2}(x), \quad n=2, 3, 4, \dots$$

(e) Let  $S_n(x)$  be the polynomial of  $n$ th degree for which

$$\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} S_n(x) K(x) dx = K(0),$$

$K(x)$  an arbitrary polynomial of  $n$ th degree. We have

$$\begin{aligned} S_n(x) &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \sum_{\nu=0}^n (-1)^{\nu} \frac{(2\nu)!}{2^{\nu}\nu!} H_{2\nu}(x) \\ &= \frac{(-1)^{p+1}}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \frac{(2p+1)!}{2^p p!} \frac{H_{2p+1}(x)}{x}, \quad p = \left[ \frac{n}{2} \right] \end{aligned}$$

(Christoffel formula).

(g)

$$H_n''(x) - xH_n'(x) + nH_n(x) = 0.$$

(h)

$$e^{-xw - \frac{w^2}{2}} = H_0(x) + H_1(x)w + H_2(x)w^2 + \dots + H_n(x)w^n + \dots$$

(i) The zeros of the Hermite polynomials are real and simple. The proofs of (a), (d), (e), (h), (i) are similar to those in **84**, **87**, **88**, **91**, **97**; deduce (g) from (a).

**101.** Follows from solution **98(b)**. For, setting  $(t+1)/(t-1)=1-\varepsilon$ ,  $t=1-(2/\varepsilon)$  we have

$$\lim_{\beta \rightarrow +\infty} \binom{n+\beta}{n-\nu} \frac{t^\nu}{(t-1)^n} = \frac{(-x)^{n-\nu}}{(n-\nu)!}$$

[solution **99(b)**].

**102.** We have

$$\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} L_q^{(-1/2)}\left(\frac{x^2}{2}\right) x^{2k+1} dx = 0, \quad k=0, 1, 2, \dots, q-1,$$

since the integrand is an odd function; also

$$\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\frac{x^2}{2}} L_q^{(-1/2)}\left(\frac{x^2}{2}\right) x^{2k} dx = 2^{k+1/2} \int_0^{\infty} e^{-y} L_q^{(-1/2)}(y) y^{k-1/2} dy = 0, \\ k=0, 1, 2, \dots, q-1,$$

by the definition of  $L_q^{(-1/2)}(y)$ . We thus have  $L_q^{(-1/2)}(x^2/2) = \text{const. } H_{2q}(x)$ . Similarly we show that  $xL_q^{(1/2)}(x^2/2) = \text{const. } H_{2q+1}(x)$ . We obtain the constant factor by comparing the coefficients of  $x^{2q}$  and  $x^{2q+1}$ , respectively [solution **99(a)**, **100(a)**].

**103.** Setting

$$P(x) = \sum_{\nu=0}^n t_\nu \sqrt{\frac{2\nu+1}{2}} P_\nu(x),$$

we have

$$\int_{-1}^1 [P(x)]^2 dx = t_0^2 + t_1^2 + t_2^2 + \dots + t_n^2 = 1.$$

Furthermore from **II 80** we obtain

$$[P(x)]^2 \leq \sum_{\nu=0}^n t_\nu^2 \sum_{\nu=0}^n \frac{2\nu+1}{2} [P_\nu(x)]^2 = \sum_{\nu=0}^n \frac{2\nu+1}{2} [P_\nu(x)]^2.$$

In this inequality the equality sign holds for an arbitrary  $x=x_0$  only if  $t_\nu = t\sqrt{(2\nu+1)/2} P_\nu(x_0)$ ,  $\nu=0, 1, 2, \dots, n$ , where  $t$  is to be chosen such that the condition  $t_0^2 + t_1^2 + t_2^2 + \dots + t_n^2 = 1$  is satisfied. Cf. also **93**.

**104.** Setting

$$P(x) = \sum_{\nu=0}^n t_\nu \sqrt{\frac{2}{\nu+1}} S_\nu(x)$$

we have

$$\int_{-1}^1 (1-x)[P(x)]^2 dx = t_0^2 + t_1^2 + t_2^2 + \dots + t_n^2 = 1 \quad [89].$$

Furthermore from **II 80** we obtain

$$[P(x)]^2 \leq \sum_{\nu=0}^n t_\nu^2 \sum_{\nu=0}^n \frac{2}{\nu+1} [S_\nu(x)]^2 = \sum_{\nu=0}^n \frac{2}{\nu+1} [S_\nu(x)]^2.$$



We have [solution 88]

$$S_n(1) = \frac{(n+1)^2}{2}, \quad S_n(-1) = (-1)^n \frac{n+1}{2}.$$

The bounds are attained for  $t_v = t\sqrt{2/(v+1)}S_v(\pm 1)$ ,  $v=0, 1, 2, \dots, n$ , where  $t$  is to be chosen in both cases such that the condition  $t_0^2 + t_1^2 + t_2^2 + \dots + t_n^2 = 1$  is satisfied.

**105.** We have [103, solution 98(e)]

$$\begin{aligned} \max [P(1)]^2 &= S_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(1) \\ &= \frac{1}{2^{\alpha+\beta}} \frac{n+\alpha+1}{2n+\alpha+\beta+2} \frac{\Gamma(n+\alpha+\beta+2)}{\Gamma(\alpha+1)\Gamma(n+\beta+1)} \\ &\quad \times \left( \frac{n+1}{n+\alpha+1} P_{n+1}^{(\alpha, \beta)}(1) - P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(1) \right). \end{aligned}$$

From solution 98(g) and (b) we obtain

$$P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(1) = \frac{n(n+\alpha+\beta+1)}{2(\alpha+1)} P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(1) = \frac{n(n+\alpha+\beta+1)}{2(\alpha+1)} \binom{n+\alpha}{n},$$

and hence

$$\begin{aligned} \max [P(1)]^2 &= S_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(1) = \frac{1}{2^{\alpha+\beta+1}} \frac{\Gamma(n+\alpha+2)\Gamma(n+\alpha+\beta+2)}{\Gamma(\alpha+1)\Gamma(\alpha+2)\Gamma(n+1)\Gamma(n+\beta+1)} \\ &\sim \frac{1}{2^{\alpha+\beta+1}} \frac{n^{2\alpha+2}}{\Gamma(\alpha+1)\Gamma(\alpha+2)}. \end{aligned}$$

We have also

$$\begin{aligned} \max [P(-1)]^2 &= S_n^{(\beta, \alpha)}(1) = \frac{1}{2^{\alpha+\beta+1}} \frac{\Gamma(n+\beta+2)\Gamma(n+\alpha+\beta+2)}{\Gamma(\beta+1)\Gamma(\beta+2)\Gamma(n+1)\Gamma(n+\alpha+1)} \\ &\sim \frac{1}{2^{\alpha+\beta+1}} \frac{n^{2\beta+2}}{\Gamma(\beta+1)\Gamma(\beta+2)}. \end{aligned}$$

For  $\alpha=1, \beta=0$  we obtain **104**.

**106.** We obtain as in **103** [99]

$$\max [P(0)]^2 = S_n^{(\alpha)}(0) = \frac{\Gamma(n+\alpha+2)}{\Gamma(\alpha+1)\Gamma(\alpha+2)\Gamma(n+1)} \sim \frac{n^{\alpha+1}}{\Gamma(\alpha+1)\Gamma(\alpha+2)}.$$

**107.** We have [103, 100]

$$\begin{aligned} \max [P(0)]^2 &= S_n(0) = \frac{(-1)^{p+1}(2p+1)!}{\sqrt{2\pi} 2^p p!} H'_{2p+1}(0) \\ &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \frac{1 \cdot 3 \cdots (2p+1)}{2 \cdot 4 \cdots 2p}, \quad p = \left[ \frac{n}{2} \right]. \end{aligned}$$

By **II 202** we have

$$\max [P(0)]^2 = S_n(0) \sim \frac{1}{\pi} \sqrt{n}.$$

**108.** [F. Lukács: Math. Z. **2**, p. 299, 304 (1918).] Special case of **110**:  $\alpha = \beta = 0$ . In the proof use **103**, **104** but not **105**.

**109.** [F. Lukács, loc. cit. **108**.] It is sufficient to prove one inequality; then replace  $P(x)$  by  $-P(x)$ . We may also assume that  $m=0$ . If  $a < \xi < b$ , then we have [108]

$$P(\xi) \leq \frac{\alpha_n}{\xi-a} \int_a^\xi P(x) dx, \quad P(\xi) \leq \frac{\alpha_n}{b-\xi} \int_\xi^b P(x) dx.$$

Hence it follows that

$$P(\xi) \leq \frac{\alpha_n}{b-a} \int_a^b P(x) dx, \quad M \leq \frac{\alpha_n}{b-a} \int_a^b P(x) dx.$$

**110.** We set [47]

$$P(x) = [A(x)]^2 + (1-x)[B(x)]^2 + (1+x)[C(x)]^2 + (1-x^2)[D(x)]^2,$$

where  $A(x)$ ,  $B(x)$ ,  $C(x)$ ,  $D(x)$  are polynomials of degree  $[n/2] = p$ ,  $[(n-1)/2] = q-1$ ,  $[(n-1)/2] = q-1$ ,  $[n/2]-1 = p-1$ , respectively. By **105** we thus have, setting  $S_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(1) = S_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} P(1) &= [A(1)]^2 + 2[C(1)]^2 \\ &\leq S_p^{(\alpha, \beta)} \int_{-1}^1 (1-x)^\alpha (1+x)^\beta [A(x)]^2 dx + 2S_{q-1}^{(\alpha, \beta+1)} \int_{-1}^1 (1-x)^\alpha (1+x)^{\beta+1} [C(x)]^2 dx \\ &\leq \max [S_p^{(\alpha, \beta)}, 2S_{q-1}^{(\alpha, \beta+1)}] \int_{-1}^1 (1-x)^\alpha (1+x)^\beta P(x) dx \\ &\leq \max [S_p^{(\alpha, \beta)}, 2S_{q-1}^{(\alpha, \beta+1)}]. \end{aligned}$$

**111.** We set [45]

$$P(x) = [A(x)]^2 + [B(x)]^2 + x\{[C(x)]^2 + [D(x)]^2\},$$

where  $A(x)$  and  $B(x)$  are polynomials of degree  $[n/2] = p$ , and  $C(x)$  and  $D(x)$  are polynomials of degree  $[(n-1)/2]$ . By **106** we thus have, setting  $S_p^{(\alpha)}(0) = S_p^{(\alpha)}$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} P(0) &= [A(0)]^2 + [B(0)]^2 \leq S_p^{(\alpha)} \int_0^\infty e^{-x} x^\alpha \{[A(x)]^2 + [B(x)]^2\} dx \\ &\leq S_p^{(\alpha)} \int_0^\infty e^{-x} x^\alpha P(x) dx = S_p^{(\alpha)}. \end{aligned}$$

**112.** Special case of **111**:  $\alpha = 0$ .

**113.** Apply **112** to

$$\frac{P(x+\xi)}{\int_0^\infty e^{-x} P(x+\xi) dx}$$

We have

$$\begin{aligned} P(\xi) &\leq \left( \left[ \frac{n}{2} \right] + 1 \right) \int_0^\infty e^{-x} P(x+\xi) dx = \left( \left[ \frac{n}{2} \right] + 1 \right) e^\xi \int_\xi^\infty e^{-x} P(x) dx \\ &\leq \left( \left[ \frac{n}{2} \right] + 1 \right) e^\xi. \end{aligned}$$

## Part Seven. Determinants and Quadratic Forms

**1.** Interchanging two numbers in the numbering of the vertices is equivalent to the simultaneous interchange of two rows and two columns. If we give opposite vertices of the octahedron numbers that differ by 3, then the determinant

$$\begin{vmatrix} 0 & 1 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 1 & 1 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 1 & 1 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 1 & 0 \end{vmatrix} = 0.$$

The determinant for the tetrahedron is  $= -3$ , and for the hexahedron is  $= 9$ . [For further developments see F. Harary: (1) SIAM Review **4**, pp. 202–210 (1962) and (2) Graph Theory . Reading: Addison Wesley 1969.]

**1.1.** Add to the first column all the other columns.

**2.** Add the first row, multiplied by  $-a_1$ , to the second. Mathematical induction yields

$$(a_1 - b_1)(a_2 - b_2) \dots (a_n - b_n).$$

**3.** [Cauchy: Exercices d'analyse et de phys. math. **2**, second edition, pp. 151–159. Paris: Bachelier, 1841.] Subtract the last row from the  $n-1$  preceding rows. Then from the columns we can take out the factors

$$\frac{1}{a_n + b_1}, \frac{1}{a_n + b_2}, \dots, \frac{1}{a_n + b_{n-1}}, \frac{1}{a_n + b_n},$$

and from the rows the factors

$$a_n - a_1, a_n - a_2, \dots, a_n - a_{n-1}, 1,$$

respectively, in front of the determinant. In the determinant remaining, subtract the last column from all the preceding columns and take out from the columns and rows the factors

$$b_n - b_1, b_n - b_2, \dots, b_n - b_{n-1}, 1,$$

and

$$\frac{1}{a_1 + b_n}, \frac{1}{a_2 + b_n}, \dots, \frac{1}{a_{n-1} + b_n}, 1$$

respectively. There remains an  $(n-1)$ -rowed corner minor of the given determinant. Use mathematical induction.

4. A special case of 3:  $a_\lambda = \lambda$ ,  $b_\mu = \mu + \alpha$ . We have

$$D_n(\alpha) = [1!2!\dots(n-1)!]^2 \frac{\Gamma(2+\alpha)\Gamma(3+\alpha)\dots\Gamma(n+1+\alpha)}{\Gamma(n+2+\alpha)\Gamma(n+3+\alpha)\dots\Gamma(2n+1+\alpha)}.$$

5. Row-by-row multiplication [cf. also II 51, VIII 2] of

$$\left| a_\lambda^{n-1}, -\binom{n-1}{1}a_\lambda^{n-2}, \binom{n-1}{2}a_\lambda^{n-3}, \dots, (-1)^{n-1} \right| \cdot \left| 1, b_\mu, b_\mu^2, \dots, b_\mu^{n-1} \right|.$$

$$6. \left\| \begin{matrix} p_0 & p_1\alpha_1 & p_2\alpha_1^2 & \dots \\ p_0 & p_1\alpha_2 & p_2\alpha_2^2 & \dots \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ p_0 & p_1\alpha_n & p_2\alpha_n^2 & \dots \end{matrix} \right\| \cdot \left\| \begin{matrix} 1 & \beta_1 & \beta_1^2 & \dots \\ 1 & \beta_2 & \beta_2^2 & \dots \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ 1 & \beta_n & \beta_n^2 & \dots \end{matrix} \right\|$$

$$= \sum \dots \sum p_{\nu_1} p_{\nu_2} \dots p_{\nu_n} \left| \begin{matrix} \alpha_1^{\nu_1} & \alpha_1^{\nu_2} & \dots & \alpha_1^{\nu_n} \\ \alpha_2^{\nu_1} & \alpha_2^{\nu_2} & \dots & \alpha_2^{\nu_n} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ \alpha_n^{\nu_1} & \alpha_n^{\nu_2} & \dots & \alpha_n^{\nu_n} \end{matrix} \right| \left| \begin{matrix} \beta_1^{\nu_1} & \beta_1^{\nu_2} & \dots & \beta_1^{\nu_n} \\ \beta_2^{\nu_1} & \beta_2^{\nu_2} & \dots & \beta_2^{\nu_n} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ \beta_n^{\nu_1} & \beta_n^{\nu_2} & \dots & \beta_n^{\nu_n} \end{matrix} \right|.$$

The summation here is extended over all sets  $\nu_1, \nu_2, \dots, \nu_n$  of non-negative integers where  $0 \leq \nu_1 < \nu_2 < \dots < \nu_n$ . All the terms in the last sum are non-negative. There are also positive terms among them if at least  $n$  of the numbers  $p_0, p_1, p_2, \dots$  do not vanish.

7. [A. Hurwitz; cf. O. Hölder: Leipz. Ber. 65, pp. 110-120 (1913).] If in the determinant  $D(x)$  obtained by introducing  $x$  in the specified manner we subtract the first column from the  $n-1$  succeeding columns, then  $x$  remains only in the first column; thus  $D(x)$  is linear in  $x$ ,  $D(x) = D + x\Delta$ . For  $x = -a$  and  $x = -b$ ,  $D(x)$  reduces to the product of the elements in the principal diagonal:

$$D - \Delta a = (r_1 - a)(r_2 - a) \dots (r_n - a) = f(a),$$

$$D - \Delta b = (r_1 - b)(r_2 - b) \dots (r_n - b) = f(b).$$

In the case  $b = a$  [M. Roberts, problem: Nouv. Annls. Math. Series 2, 3, p. 139 (1864)] the determinant  $= f(a) - af'(a)$ , as can also easily be seen otherwise.

8. [T. Muir: Amer. Math. Monthly, 29, p. 12 (1922).] We have in general

$$\frac{\partial(\varphi f_1, \varphi f_2, \dots, \varphi f_n)}{\partial(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n)} = \varphi^{n-1} \left| \begin{matrix} \varphi & f_1 & f_2 & \dots & f_n \\ -\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial x_1} & \frac{\partial f_1}{\partial x_1} & \frac{\partial f_2}{\partial x_1} & \dots & \frac{\partial f_n}{\partial x_1} \\ -\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial x_2} & \frac{\partial f_1}{\partial x_2} & \frac{\partial f_2}{\partial x_2} & \dots & \frac{\partial f_n}{\partial x_2} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ -\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial x_n} & \frac{\partial f_1}{\partial x_n} & \frac{\partial f_2}{\partial x_n} & \dots & \frac{\partial f_n}{\partial x_n} \end{matrix} \right|.$$

Applying this identity, the given determinant is  $= \Delta^3$ , multiplied by

$$\left| \begin{matrix} ad-bc & a & b & c & d \\ -d & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ c & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ b & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ -a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{matrix} \right| = 3\Delta.$$

**9.** [Problem, Collège d'Aberystwyth: Mathesis, Series 2, 3, p. 79 (1893). Solution by Retali et al: Mathesis, Series 2, 3, p. 172 (1893).] The determinant in question for real  $l, m, n$  is associated with the quadratic form

$$(\rho-2)(x^2+y^2+z^2)+2\left(\frac{x}{l}+\frac{y}{m}+\frac{z}{n}\right)(lx+my+nz),$$

which for  $\rho=2$  is equal to

$$2\left(\frac{x}{l}+\frac{y}{m}+\frac{z}{n}\right)(lx+my+nz)=\frac{1}{2}\left[\left(\frac{1}{l}+l\right)x+\left(\frac{1}{m}+m\right)y+\left(\frac{1}{n}+n\right)z\right]^2 \\ -\frac{1}{2}\left[\left(\frac{1}{l}-l\right)x+\left(\frac{1}{m}-m\right)y+\left(\frac{1}{n}-n\right)z\right]^2.$$

Its rank for  $\rho=2$  is thus less than 3. (Its rank  $=2$ , except if  $l^2=m^2=n^2$ ; it is then  $=1$ .) Now set  $\rho=(\rho-2)+2$  and expand in powers of  $\rho-2$ . We obtain

$$(\rho-2)^3+(2+2+2)(\rho-2)^2+\left(\begin{vmatrix} 2 & \frac{l}{m}+\frac{m}{l} \\ \frac{l}{m}+\frac{m}{l} & 2 \end{vmatrix}+\dots\right)(\rho-2)+0 \\ =(\rho-2)^3+6(\rho-2)^2+(9-P)(\rho-2),$$

where  $P=(1/l^2+1/m^2+1/n^2)(l^2+m^2+n^2)$ . The other two factors are

$$\rho+1-\sqrt{P}, \quad \rho+1+\sqrt{P}.$$

**10.** From the system of equations

$$(-1)^{n-1}S_n+x_\nu(-1)^{n-2}S_{n-1}+x_\nu^2(-1)^{n-3}S_{n-2}+\dots+x_\nu^{n-1}S_1=x_\nu^n, \\ (\nu=1, 2, \dots, n)$$

obtain the value of the unknown  $(-1)^{q-1}S_q$ .

**11.** From considerations of continuity, we can restrict ourselves to the case in which  $a_0z^n+a_1z^{n-1}+\dots+a_n$  has  $n$  distinct zeros. Denoting any such zero by  $z$  and setting

$$a_0z^{n-1}=x_0, \quad a_1z^{n-2}=x_1, \quad a_2z^{n-3}=x_2, \quad \dots, \quad a_{n-2}z=x_{n-2}, \quad a_{n-1}=x_{n-1},$$

we see that  $x_0, x_1, \dots, x_{n-1}$  satisfy the homogeneous relations

$$\left(z+\frac{a_1}{a_0}\right)x_0+\frac{a_2}{a_1}x_1+\frac{a_3}{a_2}x_2+\dots+\frac{a_{n-1}}{a_{n-2}}x_{n-2}+\frac{a_n}{a_{n-1}}x_{n-1}=0, \\ -\frac{a_1}{a_0}x_0+zx_1=0, \quad -\frac{a_2}{a_1}x_1+zx_2=0, \quad \dots, \quad -\frac{a_{n-1}}{a_{n-2}}x_{n-2}+zx_{n-1}=0,$$

whose determinant must be  $=0$ . The given determinant is thus a polynomial of  $n$ th degree in  $z$ , with leading coefficient 1, that has the same zeros as  $a_0z^n+a_1z^{n-1}+\dots+a_n$ .

**11.1.** By considering the coefficient of  $z^k$  for  $k=0, 1, 2, \dots, n$ , we obtain a system of  $n+1$  linear equations for the unknowns  $b_0, b_1, b_2, \dots, b_n$ :

$$\begin{aligned} a_0 b_0 &= 1, \\ a_1 b_0 + a_0 b_1 &= 0, \\ a_2 b_0 + a_1 b_1 + a_0 b_2 &= 0, \\ &\dots\dots\dots \\ a_n b_0 + a_{n-1} b_1 + a_{n-2} b_2 + \dots + a_0 b_n &= 0. \end{aligned}$$

Solve for  $b_n$ .

**11.2.** [G. Pólya, problem: Amer. Math. Monthly, 54, p. 107 (1947).] Compute the coefficient of  $z^n$  in the expansion of  $[(1+z)^a - xz]^{-1}$  first from **11.1** then directly as follows:

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{(1+z)^a - xz} &= \frac{(1+z)^{-a}}{1 - xz(1+z)^{-a}} \\ &= \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} x^k z^k (1+z)^{-(k+1)a} \\ &= \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=k}^{\infty} x^k z^n \binom{-(k+1)a}{n-k} \\ &= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sum_{k=0}^n z^n \binom{-(k+1)a}{n-k} x^k \\ &= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} z^n \sum_{k=0}^n (-1)^{n-k} \binom{(k+1)a + n - k - 1}{n-k} x^k \end{aligned}$$

**11.3.** Analogously to **11.2**,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{e^z - xz} &= \frac{e^{-z}}{1 - xze^{-z}} \\ &= \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} x^k z^k e^{-(k+1)z} \\ &= \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=k}^{\infty} x^k z^n \frac{(-1)^{n-k} (k+1)^{n-k}}{(n-k)!} \\ &= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (-1)^n z^n \sum_{k=0}^n \frac{(-1)^k (k+1)^{n-k}}{(n-k)!} x^k. \end{aligned}$$

Also limiting case of **11.2** for  $a \rightarrow \infty$ .

**12.** We are concerned with the rank of the two matrices

$$\begin{pmatrix} 0 & -a_3 & a_2 \\ a_3 & 0 & -a_1 \\ -a_2 & a_1 & 0 \\ a_1 & a_2 & a_3 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -a_3 & a_2 & b_1 \\ a_3 & 0 & -a_1 & b_2 \\ -a_2 & a_1 & 0 & b_3 \\ a_1 & a_2 & a_3 & c \end{pmatrix}.$$

The matrix with three columns contains four determinants of third order equal to

$$a_1(a_1^2 + a_2^2 + a_3^2), \quad -a_2(a_1^2 + a_2^2 + a_3^2), \quad a_3(a_1^2 + a_2^2 + a_3^2), \quad 0,$$

respectively. Hence it has either rank 0 or rank 3. In the former case the compatibility condition is  $b_1 = b_2 = b_3 = c = 0$ , in the latter case it is  $a_1 b_1 + a_2 b_2 + a_3 b_3 = 0$ .

If the four equations are compatible, then in the former case  $x_1, x_2, x_3$  are completely undetermined, in the latter case they are completely determined. Viewed in terms of vector multiplication the result is evident.

**13.** We have identically in  $z$

$$1 + u_1^{(n)}z + u_2^{(n)}z^2 + \dots + u_n^{(n)}z^n = \left(1 - \frac{z}{a_1}\right) \left(1 - \frac{z}{a_2}\right) \dots \left(1 - \frac{z}{a_n}\right).$$

Since the infinite product  $\prod_{n=1}^{\infty} [1 - (z/a_n)]$  is uniformly convergent in every finite domain, the same holds for the sequence of polynomials

$$1 + u_1^{(n)}z + u_2^{(n)}z^2 + \dots + u_n^{(n)}z^n, \quad n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$

From this it follows that all the limits

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} u_k^{(n)} = u_k, \quad k = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$

exist, and we have

$$1 + u_1z + u_2z^2 + u_3z^3 + \dots = \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \left(1 - \frac{z}{a_n}\right). \quad [\text{I } 179].$$

In general this function differs from the given function by an exponential factor  $e^{g(z)}$ , where  $g(z)$  is an entire function.

**14.** The following determinants must be interpreted as determinants of  $2n$ th order (and not for instance as determinants of second order whose elements are  $|a_{\lambda\mu}|, |-b_{\lambda\mu}|, |b_{\lambda\mu}|, |a_{\lambda\mu}|$ !) We have

$$\begin{aligned} \begin{vmatrix} (a_{\lambda\mu}) & (-b_{\lambda\mu}) \\ (b_{\lambda\mu}) & (a_{\lambda\mu}) \end{vmatrix} &= \begin{vmatrix} (a_{\lambda\mu} + ib_{\lambda\mu}) & (-b_{\lambda\mu} + ia_{\lambda\mu}) \\ (b_{\lambda\mu}) & (a_{\lambda\mu}) \end{vmatrix} \\ &= \begin{vmatrix} (a_{\lambda\mu} + ib_{\lambda\mu}) & (0) \\ (b_{\lambda\mu}) & (a_{\lambda\mu} - ib_{\lambda\mu}) \end{vmatrix} \\ &= |a_{\lambda\mu} + ib_{\lambda\mu}| \cdot |a_{\lambda\mu} - ib_{\lambda\mu}| = A^2 + B^2, \end{aligned}$$

if we set  $|a_{\lambda\mu} + ib_{\lambda\mu}| = A + iB$ , where  $A, B$  are real. The vanishing of  $A^2 + B^2$  is equivalent to the simultaneous vanishing of  $A$  and  $B$ .

**15.** [G. Rados, problem: Math. és phys. lapok, 15, p. 389 (1906). Solution by M. Fekete, et al: Math. és phys. lapok, 16, p. 310 (1907).] The product of the three terms  $a_{11}a_{22}a_{33}, a_{12}a_{23}a_{31}, a_{13}a_{21}a_{32}$  is equal in absolute value but opposite in sign to the product of the remaining three terms.

**16.** [G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Series 3, 20, p. 271 (1913). Solution by G. Szegő: Arch. Math. Phys. Series 3, 21, p. 291 (1913).] If the signs in question were  $\varepsilon_{\lambda\mu}$ , then according to the supposed law we would have that the determinant  $|\varepsilon_{\lambda\mu}|_{\lambda, \mu=1, 2, \dots, n} = n!$ , in contradiction to Hadamard's theorem for determinants  $|\varepsilon_{\lambda\mu}|_{\lambda, \mu=1, 2, \dots, n} \leq n^{\frac{n}{2}}$  [Kowalewski, p. 460], since  $n^n < n!^2$  for  $n \geq 3$ . Note that it is sufficient to carry out the proof only for the case of the determinant of third order [15].

**17.** If the denominator is  $z^q - c_1z^{q-1} - c_2z^{q-2} - \dots - c_q$ , then the product

$$(a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \dots + a_nz^n + \dots)(z^q - c_1z^{q-1} - \dots - c_q)$$

reduces to a polynomial of degree  $p-1$ . Hence in the product series the coefficient of  $z^{q+n}$

$$(*) \quad a_n - a_{n+1}c_1 - a_{n+2}c_2 - \dots - a_{n+q}c_q = 0$$

for  $n=p-q, p-q+1, \dots$ , if  $p \geq q$  and for  $n=0, 1, 2, \dots$ , if  $p \leq q$ . The compatibility of the  $q+1$  successive linear equations which we obtain from  $(*)$  for  $n=k, k+1, k+2, \dots, k+q$ , implies that  $A_k^{(q+1)} = 0$ .

**18.** From  $A_n^{(q+1)} = 0$ ,  $A_n^{(q)} \neq 0$ , it follows that  $L_{n+q}(x)$  is linearly dependent on  $L_n(x), L_{n+1}(x), \dots, L_{n+q-1}(x)$  [Kowalewski, p. 53]. Hence  $L_n(x)$  for  $n \geq d$  is linearly dependent on  $L_d(x), L_{d+1}(x), \dots, L_{d+q-1}(x)$ , and the equation  $L_n(x) = 0$  is satisfied by a solution of the  $q$  simultaneous equations

$$L_d(x) = 0, \quad L_{d+1}(x) = 0, \quad \dots, \quad L_{d+q-1}(x) = 0.$$

But these equations, since  $A_{d+1}^{(q)} \neq 0$ , have a solution of the form

$$x_0 = 1, \quad x_1 = -c_1, \quad x_2 = -c_2, \quad \dots, \quad x_q = -c_q.$$

This implies the vanishing of the coefficients of  $z^{q+d}, z^{q+d+1}, \dots$  in the product

$$(a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \dots)(z^q - c_1z^{q-1} - c_2z^{q-2} - \dots - c_q).$$

**19.** [Kowalewski, p. 80, 109.]

**20.** From the assumptions it follows by **19** that

$$\begin{aligned} (A_{m+1}^{(q)})^2 &= A_m^{(q)} A_{m+2}^{(q)}, & (A_{m+2}^{(q)})^2 &= A_{m+1}^{(q)} A_{m+3}^{(q)}, \dots, \\ (A_{m+t-1}^{(q)})^2 &= A_{m+t-2}^{(q)} A_{m+t}^{(q)}, & (A_{m+t}^{(q)})^2 &= A_{m+t-1}^{(q)} A_{m+t+1}^{(q)}. \end{aligned}$$

Thus the vanishing of one of the  $t$  determinants of order  $q$  entails the vanishing of the two neighbouring determinants (or the neighbouring determinant). More easily seen from **22**.

**21.** Obvious. Example:  $A_0^{(3)}$ .

**22.** [A. Stoll.] (1) from **19**, (2) and (3) from **19** and (1). Observe the "cross-shaped" arrangement of the five determinants occurring in **19** in the array **21**. To see the validity of the statement on the boundary, insert  $a_{-1}$  before  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$  and a corresponding slanting line before the array **21**.

**23.** [Cf. É. Borel: Darboux Bull, Series 2, 18, pp. 22-25 (1894).] If in the first row of the array **21** there are only finitely many elements different from 0, then the power series  $a_0 + a_1z + \dots$  reduces to a rational *entire* function. Otherwise by repeatedly using the result **20** we obtain that there exist numbers  $d$  and  $q$ ,  $1 \leq q \leq k$ , for which we have the situation discussed in **18**.

**24.** [L. Kronecker: Monatsber. Akad. Berlin, pp. 566-567 (1881).] By repeated application of **22** (1), reduce to **23**.

**25.** [G. Pólya: Math. Ann. 77, p. 507 (1916).] By repeated application of **22** (1), reduce to **23**. Represent the determinantal conditions **23**, **24**, **25** by means of "paths" in the array **21**.

**26.** Cf. **27**.

**27.** If the rank is finite, then all the determinants mentioned in **23** vanish for sufficiently large  $k$ , and hence the power series is rational. If the power series is rational, employ the notation of **17**, and consider the linear forms

$$A_n(x) = a_n x_0 + a_{n+1} x_1 + a_{n+2} x_2 + \dots$$







If in the matrix  $(a_{\lambda\mu})$  no two rows are identical, then no two of the  $n$   $l$ -dimensional vectors  $(\alpha'_\nu, \alpha''_\nu, \dots, \alpha^{(l)}_\nu)$ ,  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, n$  are equal. There thus exist  $l$  numbers  $\beta', \beta'', \dots, \beta^{(l)}$ , such that, setting  $\beta'^2 + \beta''^2 + \dots + \beta^{(l)2} = 1$  and  $\alpha'_\nu \beta' + \alpha''_\nu \beta'' + \dots + \alpha^{(l)}_\nu \beta^{(l)} = \gamma_\nu$ , no two of the  $n$  numbers  $\gamma_1, \gamma_2, \dots, \gamma_n$  are equal; i.e., geometrically, the projections of the  $n$  different vectors onto the unit vector  $(\beta', \beta'', \dots, \beta^{(l)})$  are all different; or  $(\beta', \beta'', \dots, \beta^{(l)})$  lies outside certain  $\frac{1}{2}n(n-1)$  planes. We obtain by a suitably chosen orthogonal transformation of the  $\xi_1, \xi_2, \dots, \xi_l$  into  $\eta_1, \eta_2, \dots, \eta_l$ , where

$$\eta_1 = \beta' \xi_1 + \beta'' \xi_2 + \dots + \beta^{(l)} \xi_l = \gamma_1 x_1 + \gamma_2 x_2 + \dots + \gamma_n x_n,$$

$$\sum_{\lambda=1}^n \sum_{\mu=1}^n a_{\lambda\mu} x_\lambda x_\mu = \eta_1^2 + \eta_2^2 + \dots + \eta_l^2 = \sum_{\lambda=1}^n \sum_{\mu=1}^n \gamma_\lambda \gamma_\mu x_\lambda x_\mu + \sum_{\lambda=1}^n \sum_{\mu=1}^n \alpha'_{\lambda\mu} x_\lambda x_\mu;$$

the two forms on the right-hand side are  $\geq 0$ . The difference  $\exp(\gamma_\lambda \gamma_\mu + \alpha'_{\lambda\mu}) - \exp(\gamma_\lambda \gamma_\mu)$  is made up of products of powers of  $\gamma_\lambda \gamma_\mu$  and  $\alpha'_{\lambda\mu}$  with positive coefficients. From this it follows by 35, similarly as in the case of the first part of the assertion that we have already proved, that, setting

$$\sum_{\lambda=1}^n \sum_{\mu=1}^n e^{\alpha_{\lambda\mu}} x_\lambda x_\mu = \sum_{\lambda=1}^n \sum_{\mu=1}^n e^{\gamma_\lambda \gamma_\mu} x_\lambda x_\mu + \sum_{\lambda=1}^n \sum_{\mu=1}^n b_{\lambda\mu} x_\lambda x_\mu,$$

the second form on the right-hand side is positive; the first is in fact definite [V 76].

37. Similarly as in 36 [35, V 86]. That the restrictions are not superfluous we see from the example of the matrix

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & -1 \\ -1 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$

38. [R. Remak: Math. Ann. 72, p. 153 (1912); cf. also A. Hurwitz: Math. Ann. 73, p. 173 (1913).] Since we can consider  $f(x+x_0)$ ,  $x_0$  arbitrary, instead of  $f(x)$ , the condition given in the problem is equivalent to

$$A(f) = a_0 f(0) + \frac{a_1}{1!} f'(0) + \frac{a_2}{2!} f''(0) + \dots + \frac{a_n}{n!} f^{(n)}(0) \geq 0$$

(or  $> 0$ , respectively).

By VI 44 it suffices to set

$$f(x) = (t_0 + t_1 x + \dots + t_n x^n)^2 = \sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n t_\lambda t_\mu x^{\lambda+\mu}$$

with arbitrary  $t_0, t_1, t_2, \dots, t_n$ . We thus have

$$A(f) = \sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n A(x^{\lambda+\mu}) t_\lambda t_\mu = \sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n a_{\lambda+\mu} t_\lambda t_\mu.$$

39. [Cf. G. Pólya: Math. és. term. ért. 32, pp. 662–665 [1914).] Since we may consider  $f(x+x_0)$ ,  $x_0 \geq 0$ , instead of  $f(x)$ , the condition in the problem is equivalent to

$$A(f) = a_0 f(0) + \frac{a_1}{1!} f'(0) + \frac{a_2}{2!} f''(0) + \dots + \frac{a_n}{n!} f^{(n)}(0) \geq 0,$$

(or  $> 0$ , respectively).

Set [VI 45]

$$f(x) = (t_0 + t_1x + \cdots + t_px^p)^2 + x(u_0 + u_1x + \cdots + u_{q-1}x^{q-1})^2,$$

$$p = \left[ \frac{n}{2} \right], \quad q = \left[ \frac{n+1}{2} \right].$$

We then have

$$A(f) = \sum_{\lambda=0}^p \sum_{\mu=0}^p a_{\lambda+\mu} t_\lambda t_\mu + \sum_{\lambda=0}^{q-1} \sum_{\mu=0}^{q-1} a_{\lambda+\mu+1} u_\lambda u_\mu.$$

**40.** If we set firstly  $f(x) = (1-x) \sum_{\lambda=0}^{q-1} \sum_{\mu=0}^{q-1} t_\lambda t_\mu (x-1)^{\lambda+\mu}$ ,  $x=1$ , and secondly  $f(x) = (1+x) \sum_{\lambda=0}^{q-1} \sum_{\mu=0}^{q-1} t_\lambda t_\mu (x+1)^{\lambda+\mu}$ ,  $x=-1$ , where  $q = [(n+1)/2]$ , then we obtain from the assumption

$$-\sum_{\lambda=0}^{q-1} \sum_{\mu=0}^{q-1} a_{\lambda+\mu+1} t_\lambda t_\mu \geq 0, \quad \sum_{\lambda=0}^{q-1} \sum_{\mu=0}^{q-1} a_{\lambda+\mu+1} t_\lambda t_\mu \geq 0,$$

and thus  $a_1 = a_2 = \cdots = a_{2q-1} = 0$ . For odd  $n$  the assertion clearly follows. For even  $n$  we have in addition

$$(1) \quad a_0(t_0 + t_1x + \cdots + t_px^p)^2 + a_nt_p^2 \geq 0,$$

$$(2) \quad a_0(1-x^2)(u_0 + u_1x + \cdots + u_{p-1}x^{p-1})^2 - a_nu_{p-1}^2 \geq 0$$

for all values of  $t_0, t_1, \dots, t_p, u_0, u_1, \dots, u_{p-1}$ ,  $p=n/2$  and for  $-1 \leq x \leq 1$ . From (1) for  $t_0 = t_1 = \cdots = t_{p-1} = 0$ ,  $t_p = 1$ ,  $x=0$ , it follows that  $a_n \geq 0$ . From (2) for  $x=1$ ,  $u_{p-1} = 1$ , it follows that  $a_n \leq 0$ .

**41.** [Cf. loc. cit. **39**, pp. 665–667. Cf. also M. Fujiwara: Tōhoku Math. J. **6**, pp. 20–26 (1914–1915).] The two sets of numbers  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_{2n}$  and  $b_0, b_1, b_2, \dots, b_{2n}$  have the property defined in **38**. If  $f(x)$  is admissible in the sense of **38**, then

$$f^*(x) = a_0 f(x) + \frac{a_1}{1!} f'(x) + \frac{a_2}{2!} f''(x) + \cdots + \frac{a_{2n}}{(2n)!} f^{(2n)}(x)$$

is also admissible. Thus we have

$$b_0 f^*(x) + \frac{b_1}{1!} f^{*'}(x) + \frac{b_2}{2!} f^{*''}(x) + \cdots + \frac{b_{2n}}{(2n)!} f^{*(2n)}(x)$$

$$= c_0 f(x) + \frac{c_1}{1!} f'(x) + \frac{c_2}{2!} f''(x) + \cdots + \frac{c_{2n}}{(2n)!} f^{(2n)}(x) \geq 0 \quad (\text{or } > 0 \text{ respectively})$$

for all values of  $x$ . Thus the system  $c_0, c_1, c_2, \dots, c_{2n}$  also has the same property.

**42.** [Cf. loc. cit. **39**, pp. 667–668.] Follows in a similar fashion from **39** as does **41** from **38**. Set  $n=2m$  or  $n=2m+1$  respectively.

**43.** [Cf. O. Szász: Math. Z. **1**, pp. 150–152 (1918).] Since we may consider  $g(\vartheta + \vartheta_0)$ ,  $\vartheta_0$  arbitrary, instead of  $g(\vartheta)$ , the condition is equivalent to

$$A(g) = \sum_{\nu=-n}^n c_\nu \gamma_\nu \geq 0 \quad (\text{or } > 0, \text{ respectively}).$$

Setting [VI 40]

$$g(\vartheta) = |x_0 + x_1 e^{i\vartheta} + x_2 e^{2i\vartheta} + \cdots + x_n e^{in\vartheta}|^2,$$

we obtain

$$A(g) = \sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n A(e^{i(\lambda-\mu)\theta}) x_{\lambda} \bar{x}_{\mu} = \sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n c_{\mu-\lambda} x_{\lambda} \bar{x}_{\mu}.$$

**43.1.**

$$\begin{aligned} -\frac{G'(z)}{G(z)} &= 2\alpha z - \beta + \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{1}{\beta_k - z} - \frac{1}{\beta_k} \right) \\ &= -\beta + 2\alpha z + \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{z}{\beta_k^2} + \frac{z^2}{\beta_k^3} + \frac{z^3}{\beta_k^4} + \cdots \right) \\ &= s_1 + s_2 z + s_3 z^2 + \cdots. \end{aligned}$$

Hence

$$\begin{aligned} s_2 &= 2\alpha + \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\beta_k^2}, \\ s_m &= \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\beta_k^m} \quad \text{for } m=3, 4, 5, \dots \end{aligned}$$

The quadratic form

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{\lambda=1}^n \sum_{\mu=1}^n s_{\lambda+\mu} x_{\lambda} x_{\mu} &= 2\alpha x_1^2 + \sum_{\lambda=1}^n \sum_{\mu=1}^n \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \frac{x_{\lambda}}{\beta_k^{\lambda}} \frac{x_{\mu}}{\beta_k^{\mu}} \\ &= 2\alpha x_1^2 + \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{x_1}{\beta_k} + \frac{x_2}{\beta_k^2} + \cdots + \frac{x_n}{\beta_k^n} \right)^2 \end{aligned}$$

is not only positive, but positive definite (unless  $x_1 = x_2 = \cdots = x_n = 0$  only a finite number of squares included under the last summation sign can vanish). The positive definiteness of the quadratic form is equivalent to the positivity of the determinants.

(The theorem proved here was discovered by A. Hurwitz with a view to investigating the Riemann hypothesis. The converse theorem was proved by J. Grommer: *J. reine angew. Math.* **144**, pp. 114–166 (1914), as a particular case of a more general fact. For another proof see N. Kritikos: *Math. Ann.* **81**, pp. 97–118 (1920).)

**43.2.** [G. Pólya: *J. reine angew. Math.* **145**, pp. 224–249 (1915), especially p. 235, theorem IV.] By refining the demonstration of V **65.1**, we find: If the polynomial  $P(x) \geq 0$  for all real values of  $x$  but does not vanish identically, then the polynomial

$$Q(x) = c_0 P(x) + \frac{c_1}{1!} P'(x) + \frac{c_2}{2!} P''(x) + \cdots > 0$$

for all real values of  $x$  (for details see op. cit.). Apply **38** and pass to the determinants as in **43.1**.

**44.** [I. Schur, problem: *Arch. Math. Phys. Series 3*, **19**, p. 276, (1912). Solution by G. Pólya: *Arch. Math. Phys. Series 3*, **24**, p. 369 (1916).]

**45.** [I. Schur, problem: *Arch. Math. Phys. Series 3*, **27**, p. 162 (1918).] Cf. **46**.

**46.** [I. Schur, problem: *Arch. Math. Phys. Series 3*, **27**, p. 163 (1918).] Consider four cases: (a) an arbitrary determinant; (b) elements in the principal diagonal  $= 0$ , the remaining elements arbitrary; (c) a symmetric determinant [**45**];

(d) a symmetric determinant with elements in the principal diagonal  $=0$  [46]. The notation for the numbers is summarized in the following table:

	Independent elements	Different terms in the expansion			
		Positive	Negative		
(a)	$n^2$	$S'_n$	$S''_n$	$S'_n + S''_n = S_n$	$S'_n - S''_n = D_n$
(b)	$n^2 - n$	$\Sigma'_n$	$\Sigma''_n$	$\Sigma'_n + \Sigma''_n = \Sigma_n$	$\Sigma'_n - \Sigma''_n = \Delta_n$
(c)	$\frac{n^2 + n}{2}$	$s'_n$	$s''_n$	$s'_n + s''_n = s_n$	$s'_n - s''_n = d_n$
(d)	$\frac{n^2 - n}{2}$	$\sigma'_n$	$\sigma''_n$	$\sigma'_n + \sigma''_n = \sigma_n$	$\sigma'_n - \sigma''_n = \delta_n$

We associate with the term  $a_{1k_1}a_{2k_2}\dots a_{nk_n}$  in the expansion the permutation

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 2 & \dots & n \\ k_1 & k_2 & \dots & k_n \end{pmatrix}.$$

If the term in the expansion contains the product  $a_{\alpha\beta}a_{\beta\gamma}\dots a_{\chi\lambda}a_{\lambda\alpha}$ , then the associated permutation contains the cycle  $(\alpha\beta\gamma\dots\chi\lambda)$ ; if the above term in the expansion belongs to a symmetric determinant, then the permutation associated with another term of equal value contains *either* the cycle  $(\alpha\beta\gamma\dots\chi\lambda)$  *or* the inverse cycle  $(\lambda\chi\dots\gamma\beta\alpha)$ .

The number of permutations of  $n$  elements, that contain  $k_1$  one-term cycles,  $k_2$  two-term cycles,  $k_3$  three-term cycles, ... is known to be [cf. Riordan, Introduction to Combinatorial Analysis, p. 67; New York: Wiley 1958]

$$\frac{n!}{k_1!1^{k_1}\cdot k_2!2^{k_2}\cdot k_3!3^{k_3}\dots} = Z_{k_1k_2k_3\dots}$$

where  $1k_1 + 2k_2 + 3k_3 + \dots = n$ . If this number is multiplied by  $+1$  or  $-1$  according as the permutation in question is even or odd, then we obtain

$$(-1)^{k_2+k_4+k_6+\dots} Z_{k_1k_2k_3\dots} = \frac{n!}{k_1!1^{k_1}\cdot k_2!(-2)^{k_2}\cdot k_3!3^{k_3}\cdot k_4!(-4)^{k_4}\dots}$$

[Kowalewski, p. 16] (applicable in the calculation of  $D_n$ ,  $\Delta_n$ ). If permutations that arise from each other by replacing certain cycles by the *inverse cycles* are not regarded as different, then the number of different ones is given by

$$2^{-k_3-k_4-k_6-\dots} Z_{k_1k_2k_3\dots} = \frac{n!}{k_1!1^{k_1}\cdot k_2!2^{k_2}\cdot k_3!6^{k_3}\cdot k_4!8^{k_4}\dots}$$

(applicable in the calculation of  $s_n$ ,  $d_n$ ,  $\sigma_n$ ,  $\delta_n$ ). We have clearly

$$\begin{aligned} S_n &= \Sigma Z_{k_1k_2k_3\dots}, & D_n &= \Sigma (-1)^{k_2+k_4+k_6+\dots} Z_{k_1k_2k_3\dots}, \\ \Sigma_n &= \Sigma^* Z_{0k_2k_3\dots}, & \Delta_n &= \Sigma^* (-1)^{k_2+k_4+k_6+\dots} Z_{0k_2k_3\dots}, \\ s_n &= \Sigma 2^{-k_3-k_4-\dots} Z_{k_1k_2k_3\dots}, & d_n &= \Sigma (-1)^{k_2+k_4+\dots} 2^{-k_3-k_4-\dots} Z_{k_1k_2k_3\dots}, \\ \sigma_n &= \Sigma^* 2^{-k_3-k_4-\dots} Z_{0k_2k_3\dots}, & \delta_n &= \Sigma^* (-1)^{k_2+k_4+\dots} 2^{-k_3-k_4-\dots} Z_{0k_2k_3\dots}. \end{aligned}$$

$\Sigma$  is extended over those non-negative sets of number  $k_1, k_2, k_3, \dots$  for which

$k_1 + 2k_2 + 3k_3 + \dots = n$ ,  $\Sigma^*$  over those for which  $k_1 = 0$ ,  $2k_2 + 3k_3 + \dots = n$ . We have

$$\begin{aligned}\frac{S_n x^n}{n!} &= \sum \frac{x^{k_1}}{k_1! 1^{k_1}} \cdot \frac{x^{2k_2}}{k_2! 2^{k_2}} \cdot \frac{x^{3k_3}}{k_3! 3^{k_3}} \cdots, \\ \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{S_n x^n}{n!} &= \sum_{k_1=0}^{\infty} \frac{x^{k_1}}{k_1! 1^{k_1}} \cdot \sum_{k_2=0}^{\infty} \frac{x^{2k_2}}{k_2! 2^{k_2}} \cdot \sum_{k_3=0}^{\infty} \frac{x^{3k_3}}{k_3! 3^{k_3}} \cdots \\ &= e^x \cdot e^{\frac{x^2}{2}} \cdot e^{\frac{x^3}{3}} \cdots = e^{x + \frac{x^2}{2} + \frac{x^3}{3} + \cdots} \\ &= \frac{1}{1-x} = 1 + x + x^2 + \cdots,\end{aligned}$$

from which it follows that  $S_n = n!$ , which serves as a check on our deductions. In the same way we obtain

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{D_n x^n}{n!} = e^{x - \frac{x^2}{2} + \frac{x^3}{3} - \cdots} = 1 + x, \quad D_n = 0 \text{ for } n \geq 2,$$

which yields a further check.

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\Sigma_n x^n}{n!} = e^{\frac{x^2}{2} + \frac{x^3}{3} + \cdots} = \frac{e^{-x}}{1-x}, \quad \frac{\Sigma_n}{n!} = 1 - \frac{1}{1!} + \frac{1}{2!} - \cdots + \frac{(-1)^n}{n!}$$

[VIII 23].

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\Delta_n x^n}{n!} = e^{-\frac{x^2}{2} + \frac{x^3}{3} - \frac{x^4}{4} + \cdots} = (1+x)e^{-x}, \quad \Delta_n = (-1)^n(1-n);$$

special case of 7 for  $r_1 = r_2 = \dots = r_n = 0$ ,  $a = b = 1$ .

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{s_n x^n}{n!} = e^{x + \frac{x^2}{2} + \frac{1}{2}(\frac{x^3}{3} + \frac{x^4}{4} + \cdots)} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1-x}} e^{\frac{x}{2} + \frac{x^2}{4}},$$

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{d_n x^n}{n!} = e^{x - \frac{x^2}{2} + \frac{1}{2}(\frac{x^3}{3} - \frac{x^4}{4} + \cdots)} = \sqrt{1+x} e^{\frac{x}{2} - \frac{x^2}{4}},$$

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\sigma_n x^n}{n!} = e^{\frac{x^2}{2} + \frac{1}{2}(\frac{x^3}{3} + \frac{x^4}{4} + \cdots)} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1-x}} e^{-\frac{x}{2} + \frac{x^2}{4}},$$

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\delta_n x^n}{n!} = e^{-\frac{x^2}{2} + \frac{1}{2}(\frac{x^3}{3} - \frac{x^4}{4} + \cdots)} = \sqrt{1+x} e^{-\frac{x}{2} - \frac{x^2}{4}}.$$

The last four lines satisfy the differential equations

$$\begin{aligned}2(1-x)y' &= (2-x^2)y, & 2(1+x)y' &= (2-x^2)y, \\ 2(1-x)y' &= x(2-x)y, & 2(1+x)y' &= -x(2+x)y,\end{aligned}$$

respectively, from which we deduce the recursion formulae which were to be proved. The formulae for the limits are obtained from I 178 for

$$f(x) = e^{\frac{x}{2} + \frac{x^2}{4}}, \quad e^{\frac{x}{2} - \frac{x^2}{4}}, \quad e^{-\frac{x}{2} + \frac{x^2}{4}}, \quad \text{and} \quad e^{-\frac{x}{2} - \frac{x^2}{4}}, \quad \text{respectively,}$$

$$b_n = \frac{1 \cdot 3 \cdots (2n-1)}{2 \cdot 4 \cdots 2n} \sim \frac{1}{\sqrt{\pi n}} \quad \text{and} \quad (-1)^{n-1} \frac{1 \cdot 3 \cdots (2n-3)}{2 \cdot 4 \cdots 2n} \sim \frac{(-1)^{n-1}}{2\sqrt{\pi} \cdot n^{\frac{3}{2}}},$$

respectively [II 202], and

$q=1$  and  $-1$ , respectively.

**46.1.** Definition of the product of two matrices.

**46.2.** [Result found in answering a question of Sami Beraha.] Let  $a_{ij}$  and  $b_{ij}$  be the entries of  $A$  and  $B$ , respectively. For  $j=1, 2, \dots, n$  there exist  $i$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq n$  and  $i \neq j$ , and such that

$$a_{i1}b_{1j} + a_{i2}b_{2j} + \dots + a_{in}b_{nj} = 0.$$

All entries  $b_{kj}$  in the  $j$ th column cannot be 0, since the determinant of  $B$  is not 0, and so there exists in this column at least one positive, and at least one negative, entry,  $j=1, 2, \dots, n$ .

If  $a > 0$  and  $A = I + aZ$ , then  $B = I + bZ$  with

$$b = -\frac{a}{1+na} > -1$$

and it has exactly  $n$  positive entries.

If  $a > 1$  and  $A = -I + aZ$  then  $B = -I + bZ$  with

$$b = \frac{a}{na-1} < 1$$

and it has exactly  $n^2 - n$  positive entries.

**47.** [I. Schur, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Series 3, 27, p. 163 (1918).] Setting

$$\varphi = \frac{1}{1-x_1x_2 \dots x_n} \bar{\varphi},$$

we have

$$\Sigma \pm \varphi(x_{\lambda_1}, x_{\lambda_2}, \dots, x_{\lambda_n}) = \frac{1}{1-x_1x_2 \dots x_n} \sum_{v=1}^n (-1)^{n-v} [\Sigma_v \pm \bar{\varphi}(x_{\mu_1}, x_{\mu_2}, \dots, x_{\mu_{n-1}})],$$

where  $\Sigma_v$  is extended over the permutations of  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_{v-1}, x_{v+1}, \dots, x_n$ , and the determination of signs is carried out analogously to that in the sum on the left-hand side.

Assuming then that the assertion is correct if  $n$  is replaced by  $n-1$ , the identity to be proved has the form

$$\Delta \Phi = \frac{1}{1-x_1x_2 \dots x_n} \sum_{v=1}^n (-1)^{n-v} \Delta_v \Phi_v,$$

where  $\Delta_v$  and  $\Phi_v$  are formed from  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_{v-1}, x_{v+1}, \dots, x_n$  in an analogous manner as  $\Delta$  and  $\Phi$  are from  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n$ ;  $\Phi$  is to be considered in the form of a product as given at the end of the problem while the  $\Phi_v$  contain fewer factors. Now apply VI 69, noting the equations (notation and assumptions as given there,  $a_0=1$ )

$$\frac{\Delta_v}{\Delta} = \frac{1}{(x-x_v) \dots (x_{v-1}-x_v)(x_v-x_{v+1}) \dots (x_v-x_n)} = \frac{(-1)^{v-1}}{f'(x_v)},$$

$$\frac{\Phi_v}{\Phi} = (1-x_v)(1-x_vx_1) \dots (1-x_vx_{v-1})(1-x_{v+1}x_v) \dots (1-x_nx_v) = \frac{x_v^n f(x_v^{-1})}{1+x_v}.$$



**48.** [P. Epstein, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Series 3, 8, p. 262 (1905). From  $\alpha_\rho x_\lambda = \sum_{\mu=1}^n a_{\lambda\mu} x_\mu$ ,  $\lambda=1, 2, \dots, n$ , observing that

$$\sum_{\lambda=1}^n a_{\lambda\mu} \chi_{\lambda\sigma}(z) = z \chi_{\mu\sigma}(z) + \varepsilon_{\mu\sigma} \chi(z),$$

$\varepsilon_{\mu\sigma} = 1$  for  $\mu = \sigma$ ,  $\varepsilon_{\mu\sigma} = 0$  for  $\mu \neq \sigma$ , we deduce the equations

$$(\alpha_\rho - z) \sum_{\lambda=1}^n x_\lambda \chi_{\lambda\sigma}(z) = x_\sigma \chi(z), \quad \sigma = 1, 2, \dots, n.$$

**49.** [M. Riesz.] Cf. 50.

**50.** The property required in the problem is equivalent to the relations

$$\sum_{\nu=0}^n g\left(\frac{\pi}{n+1}(p-\nu+\alpha)\right) g\left(\frac{\pi}{n+1}(\nu-q+\beta)\right) = g\left(\frac{\pi}{n+1}(p-q+\alpha+\beta)\right).$$

Cf. VI 15. In 49 (if we replace  $x_p$  by  $(-1)^p x_p$  and  $y_p$  by  $(-1)^p y_p$ ) we have

$$g(\vartheta) = \frac{1}{n+1} \frac{\sin(n+1)\vartheta}{\sin \vartheta}.$$

**51.** The determinant  $D(\alpha)$  of  $S_\alpha$  satisfies the functional equation

$$D(\alpha)D(\beta) = D(\alpha + \beta).$$

Moreover  $D(\alpha)$  is real, continuous and periodic (with period  $2n+2$ ), thus  $D(\alpha) = 0$  or 1. The first case holds if and only if the system of linear equations

$$\sum_{q=0}^n g\left(\frac{\pi}{n+1}(p-q)\right) x_q = 0, \quad p = 0, 1, \dots, n,$$

has solutions that are different from  $x_q = 0$ ,  $q = 0, 1, \dots, n$ . This is certainly the case if  $x_0, x_1, \dots, x_n$  satisfy the following equations

$$(*) \quad \sum_{q=0}^n x_q e^{ikq\frac{\pi}{n+1}} = 0, \quad \sum_{q=0}^n x_q e^{-ikq\frac{\pi}{n+1}} = 0,$$

where  $k$  runs through all the values for which the coefficient of  $\cos k\vartheta$  in  $g(\vartheta)$  is different from 0. (For  $k=0$  only one of the two equations is to be retained.) By solution VI 15,  $k$  can take either only even or only odd values; the number of the coefficients above is thus  $\leq 1 + [n/k]$  and  $\leq [(n+1)/2]$  respectively. The number of equations (\*) is in the first case  $\leq 1 + 2[n/2] \leq n+1$ , in the second case  $\leq 2[(n+1)/2] \leq n+1$ . The equality sign in these inequalities holds if and only if

$$g(\vartheta) = \frac{1}{n+1} \frac{\sin(n+1)\vartheta}{\sin \vartheta} \quad [49]$$

and  $n$  is even or odd respectively. Apart from this case the number of equations (\*) is always less than  $n+1$ , i.e. less than the number of unknowns. There thus exist solutions of the stated kind.

In 49 we obtain the constant value of the determinant if we let  $\alpha \rightarrow 0$ .

**52.** [M. Riesz.] Setting

$$g(\vartheta) = \frac{1}{n+1} \frac{\sin(n+1)\vartheta}{\sin \vartheta},$$

we are concerned with the sum

$$\begin{aligned} & \sum_{p=0}^n \sum_{k,l=0}^n (-1)^{k+l} x_k x_l g\left(\frac{\pi}{n+1}(p-k+\alpha)\right) g\left(\frac{\pi}{n+1}(p-l+\alpha)\right) \\ &= \sum_{k,l=0}^n (-1)^{k+l} x_k x_l \sum_{p=0}^n g\left(\frac{\pi}{n+1}(k-\alpha+p)\right) g\left(\frac{\pi}{n+1}(p+\alpha-l)\right). \end{aligned}$$

By VI 15 this is

$$= \sum_{k,l=0}^n (-1)^{k+l} x_k x_l g\left(\frac{\pi}{n+1}(k-l)\right),$$

i.e.  $\sum_{p=0}^n y_p^2$  is independent of  $\alpha$ . Set  $\alpha=0$ .

**53.** [I. Schur.] The equations to be proved are:

$$\begin{aligned} u_1^2 + u_2^2 + \dots + u_n^2 + u_n^2 &= u_n u_{n+2}, \\ u_1^2 + u_2^2 + \dots + u_n^2 &= u_n u_{n+1}, \\ \frac{u_{n-1}}{u_{n+1}} + u_n^2 \left( \frac{1}{u_n u_{n+2}} + \frac{1}{u_{n+1} u_{n+3}} + \frac{1}{u_{n+2} u_{n+4}} + \dots \right) &= 1, \\ -\frac{1}{u_{n+2}} + u_{n+1} \left( \frac{1}{u_{n+1} u_{n+3}} + \frac{1}{u_{n+2} u_{n+4}} + \frac{1}{u_{n+3} u_{n+5}} + \dots \right) &= 0, \quad n=1, 2, 3, \dots \end{aligned}$$

From the definition of the  $u_n$  it follows that

$$\sum_{v=1}^n u_v^2 = \sum_{v=1}^n u_v (u_{v+1} - u_{v-1}) = \sum_{v=1}^n u_v u_{v+1} - \sum_{v=1}^{n-1} u_v u_{v+1} = u_n u_{n+1},$$

i.e. the second equation. The first results if we set in the second  $u_{n+1} = u_{n+2} - u_n$ . Observe moreover that

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{1}{u_n u_{n+2}} + \frac{1}{u_{n+1} u_{n+3}} + \frac{1}{u_{n+2} u_{n+4}} + \dots \\ &= \frac{1}{u_{n+1}} \left( \frac{1}{u_n} - \frac{1}{u_{n+2}} \right) + \frac{1}{u_{n+2}} \left( \frac{1}{u_{n+1}} - \frac{1}{u_{n+3}} \right) + \frac{1}{u_{n+3}} \left( \frac{1}{u_{n+2}} - \frac{1}{u_{n+4}} \right) + \dots \\ &= \frac{1}{u_{n+1} u_n}. \end{aligned}$$

**54.** [E. C. Titchmarsh: Proc. Lond. Math. Soc. Series 2, 22, No. 5, III (1924).]

Clearly we have

$$\sum_{n=-\infty}^{+\infty} \left( \frac{1}{\lambda+n-\alpha} - \frac{1}{\mu+n-\alpha} \right) = 0$$

for  $\lambda \leq \mu$ ;  $\lambda, \mu = \dots, -1, 0, 1, \dots$ . As is well known, we have

$$\sum_{n=-\infty}^{+\infty} \frac{1}{(m+n-\alpha)^2} = \sum_{n=-\infty}^{+\infty} \frac{1}{(n-\alpha)^2} = \left( \frac{\pi}{\sin \alpha \pi} \right)^2.$$

**54.1.** The system of equations

$$\begin{aligned}
 1 &= 1 \\
 1+x &= y \\
 1+2x+x^2 &= y^2 \\
 1+3x+3x^2+x^3 &= y^3 \\
 &\dots\dots\dots
 \end{aligned}$$

implies the system

$$\begin{aligned}
 1 &= 1 \\
 -1+y &= x \\
 1-2y+y^2 &= x^2 \\
 -1+3y-3y^2+y^3 &= x^3 \\
 &\dots\dots\dots
 \end{aligned}$$

Replace

$$x^0, x^1, x^2, \dots, x^n; \quad y^0, y^1, y^2, \dots, y^n$$

by the indeterminates

$$x_0, x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n; \quad y_0, y_1, y_2, \dots, y_n.$$

The two systems still imply each other and so we obtain two linear transformations that are inverse to each other. See also I 34.1.

**54.2.** From I 191 and I 199 by using the idea of solution 54.1. For the numerical values involved see I 186 and I 197.

**54.3.** (1) Immediate from I 34.1. (2) Denote the three matrices arising in 54.1 by  $A$ ,  $B$  and  $I$ , respectively, so that

$$AB=I.$$

Define

$$I = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & & & \\ 0 & -1 & & \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 \\ \dots\dots\dots \end{bmatrix}.$$

Then

$$I^2=I, \quad AI=IB$$

and the desired relation is obtained from

$$(AI)(IB)=I.$$

**54.4.** By the required condition

$$y_0=a_0x_0, \quad x_0=a_0y_0$$

and thus

$$a_0^2=1, \quad a_0=1 \quad \text{or} \quad -1.$$

Guided by the solution of I 34.1, we introduce the power series

$$a_0 + \frac{a_1 z}{1!} + \frac{a_2 z^2}{2!} + \dots = a_0 F(z)$$



**62. Setting**

$$y = Y_0, \quad W(f_1, y) = Y_1, \quad W(f_1, f_2, y) = Y_2, \quad \dots, \quad W(f_1, f_2, \dots, f_n, y) = Y_n$$

we find by **59**

$$\frac{d}{dx} \frac{Y_0}{W_1} = \frac{W_0 Y_1}{W_1^2}, \quad \frac{d}{dx} \frac{Y_1}{W_2} = \frac{W_1 Y_2}{W_2^2}, \quad \dots, \quad \frac{d}{dx} \frac{Y_{n-1}}{W_n} = \frac{W_{n-1} Y_n}{W_n^2}.$$

From these relations calculate  $Y_n/W_n$ . [**61.**]

**63.** [J. P. Gram: J. reine angew. Math. **94**, pp. 41-73 (1883).] The corresponding quadratic form is:

$$\int_a^b [t_1 f_1(x) + t_2 f_2(x) + \dots + t_n f_n(x)]^2 dx.$$

This integral is not negative, and  $=0$  if and only if in the interval  $a \leq x \leq b$  we have identically

$$t_1 f_1(x) + t_2 f_2(x) + \dots + t_n f_n(x) = 0.$$

Cf. also **II 68**.

**64.** [G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Series 3, **20**, p. 271 (1913).] The corresponding quadratic form

$$\begin{aligned} \int_a^b \{ (t_1^2 + t_2^2 + \dots + t_n^2) [(f_1(x))^2 + (f_2(x))^2 + \dots + (f_n(x))^2] \\ - [t_1 f_1(x) + t_2 f_2(x) + \dots + t_n f_n(x)]^2 \} dx = \int_a^b \sum_{j>k}^{1,2,\dots,n} [t_j f_k(x) - t_k f_j(x)]^2 dx \end{aligned}$$

is positive. It vanishes for a set of numbers  $t_1, t_2, \dots, t_n$  with  $t_1^2 + t_2^2 + \dots + t_n^2 > 0$ , if and only if  $f_\nu(x) = t_\nu \varphi(x)$ ,  $\nu = 1, 2, \dots, n$ , where  $\varphi(x)$  does not depend on  $\nu$ .

**65.** [E. H. Moore, problem: Amer. Math. Monthly, **24**, p. 293 (1916). Solution by C. F. Gummer: Amer. Math. Monthly, **24**, pp. 293, 333-334 (1916) (the first solution given on p. 293 is incorrect as is noted on p. 333).] [**36, 63.**] If, e.g., the first two rows are identical, we have in particular that

$$\frac{a_{11}a_{22}}{a_{21}a_{12}} = e^{\int_a^b [f_1(x) - f_2(x)]^2 dx} = 1, \quad f_1(x) = f_2(x).$$

**66.** [G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Series 3, **28**, p. 174 (1920).] In view of **II 112, II 113** we have

$$\begin{aligned} (a_\lambda + a_\mu + 1) \int_0^\infty x^{a_\lambda + a_\mu} f(x) dx &= x^{a_\lambda + a_\mu + 1} f(x) \Big|_0^\infty - \int_0^\infty x^{a_\lambda + a_\mu + 1} df(x), \\ &= - \int_0^\infty x^{a_\lambda + a_\mu + 1} df(x), \end{aligned}$$

where the last integral is interpreted as a Stieltjes integral. Hence we have

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{\lambda=1}^n \sum_{\mu=1}^n (a_\lambda + a_\mu + 1) \int_0^\infty x^{a_\lambda + a_\mu} f(x) dx \cdot t_\lambda t_\mu \\ = - \int_0^\infty (t_1 x^{a_1} + t_2 x^{a_2} + \dots + t_n x^{a_n})^2 x df(x) \geq 0. \end{aligned}$$

If  $f(x)$  is piece-wise constant, and if there exist at least  $n$  points with a negative jump, then the last integral can vanish only if  $t_1 = t_2 = \dots = t_n = 0$  [V 76].

**67.** [For **67**, **68**, cf. O. Toeplitz: Gött. Nachr., pp. 110–115 (1907); pp. 489–506 (1910).]

For  $f(\vartheta) = a_0 + 2(a_1 \cos \vartheta + b_1 \sin \vartheta)$  we obtain

$$T_n(f) = a_0(|x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + \dots + |x_n|^2) + 2\Re(a_1 + ib_1)(x_0\bar{x}_1 + x_1\bar{x}_2 + \dots + x_{n-1}\bar{x}_n).$$

For

$$f(\vartheta) = \frac{1-r^2}{1-2r \cos \vartheta + r^2} = 1 + 2r \cos \vartheta + 2r^2 \cos 2\vartheta + \dots + 2r^n \cos n\vartheta + \dots$$

we obtain

$$T_n(f) = \sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n r^{|\mu-\lambda|} x_\lambda \bar{x}_\mu.$$

**68.** We have

$$c_n = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} f(\vartheta) e^{in\vartheta} d\vartheta, \quad n=0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \pm 3, \dots;$$

hence we have for the Toeplitz form  $T_n(f)$  the representation

$$T_n(f) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} f(\vartheta) |x_0 + x_1 e^{-i\vartheta} + x_2 e^{-2i\vartheta} + \dots + x_n e^{-in\vartheta}|^2 d\vartheta.$$

From this the assertion follows, if we note the equation

$$\begin{aligned} T_n(1) &= \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} |x_0 + x_1 e^{-i\vartheta} + x_2 e^{-2i\vartheta} + \dots + x_n e^{-in\vartheta}|^2 d\vartheta \\ &= |x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + |x_2|^2 + \dots + |x_n|^2. \end{aligned}$$

**69.** [For **69–71**, cf. G. Szegő: Math. Ann. **76**, pp. 490–503 (1915); Math. es. term. ért. **35**, pp. 185–222 (1917); Math. Z. **6**, pp. 167–202 (1920). For heuristic considerations see MPR, **2**, pp. 45–46. For later developments see U. Grenander and G. Szegő, Toeplitz forms and their applications, Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press, 1958.]

For  $f(\vartheta) = a_0 + 2(a_1 \cos \vartheta + b_1 \sin \vartheta)$  we have

$$D_n(f) = \begin{vmatrix} a_0 & a_1 + ib_1 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ a_1 - ib_1 & a_0 & a_1 + ib_1 & \dots & 0 \\ 0 & a_1 - ib_1 & a_0 & \dots & 0 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & \dots & a_0 \end{vmatrix}$$

By expanding the determinant in terms of the last row we obtain the recurrence relations

$$\begin{aligned} D_n(f) &= a_0 D_{n-1}(f) - (a_1^2 + b_1^2) D_{n-2}(f), \quad n=2, 3, 4, \dots; \\ D_0(f) &= a_0, \quad D_1(f) = a_0^2 - (a_1^2 + b_1^2). \end{aligned}$$

Let  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  be the two roots of the quadratic equation:

$$x^2 = a_0 x - (a_1^2 + b_1^2).$$

Mathematical induction yields

$$D_n(f) = \begin{cases} \frac{[D_1(f) - D_0(f)\beta]\alpha^n - [D_1(f) - D_0(f)\alpha]\beta^n}{\alpha - \beta}, & \text{if } \alpha \neq \beta, \\ (n+2)\alpha^{n+1} = (n+2)\beta^{n+1} = (n+2)\left(\frac{a_0}{2}\right)^{n+1}, & \text{if } \alpha = \beta. \end{cases}$$

For  $f(\vartheta) = \frac{1-r^2}{1-2r\cos\vartheta+r^2}$  we have

$$D_n(f) = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & r & r^2 & \dots & r^n \\ r & 1 & r & \dots & r^{n-1} \\ r^2 & r & 1 & \dots & r^{n-2} \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ r^n & r^{n-1} & r^{n-2} & \dots & 1 \end{vmatrix}.$$

If we subtract  $r$  times the second row from the first row, and then  $r$  times the third row from the second row, and so on, then we obtain that  $D_n(f) = (1-r^2)^n$ .

If  $f(\vartheta) = a_0 + 2(a_1 \cos \vartheta + b_1 \sin \vartheta)$  is positive, then  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  are positive,  $\alpha \neq \beta$ . Let  $\alpha > \beta > 0$ , then we have  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sqrt[n+1]{D_n(f)} = \alpha$ . In the second case this limit  $= 1 - r^2$ . The geometric mean [II 48]  $\mathfrak{G}(f)$  of  $a_0 + 2(a_1 \cos \vartheta + b_1 \sin \vartheta)$  in the interval  $0, 2\pi$  is identical with that of  $a_0 - 2\sqrt{a_1^2 + b_1^2} \cos \vartheta = \alpha(1 + \rho^2 - 2\rho \cos \vartheta)$ , if  $\rho$  is determined in accordance with  $\sqrt{a_1^2 + b_1^2} = \alpha\rho$ ;  $0 \leq \rho < 1$ ,  $a_0 = \alpha(1 + \rho^2)$ . For  $\mathfrak{G}(1 + \rho^2 - 2\rho \cos \vartheta)$  cf. II 52.

**70.** Because  $D_n(f)$  is a Hermitian determinant, all the zeros of  $D_n(f-h)$  are real and lie between the minimum and maximum of the form  $T_n(f)$  for  $|x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + \dots + |x_n|^2 = 1$ . [Kowalewski, pp. 130, 283.] By 68 they thus have the form

$$h = a_0 - 2\sqrt{a_1^2 + b_1^2} \cos \varphi, \quad 0 < \varphi < \pi.$$

It then follows, by everywhere replacing  $a_0$  by  $a_0 - h$  in solution 69, that

$$D_n(f-h) = (a_1^2 + b_1^2)^{\frac{n+1}{2}} \frac{\sin(n+2)\varphi}{\sin \varphi}.$$

From this we obtain the zeros of  $D_n(f-h)$ :

$$h_{\nu n} = a_0 - 2\sqrt{a_1^2 + b_1^2} \cos \frac{\nu+1}{n+2} \pi, \quad \nu = 0, 1, 2, \dots, n.$$

**71. Cf. 70.**

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{F(h_{0n}) + F(h_{1n}) + \dots + F(h_{nn})}{n+1} \\ &= \frac{1}{n+1} \sum_{\nu=0}^n F\left(a_0 - 2\sqrt{a_1^2 + b_1^2} \cos \frac{\nu+1}{n+2} \pi\right) \rightarrow \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^\pi F(a_0 - 2\sqrt{a_1^2 + b_1^2} \cos \vartheta) d\vartheta \\ &= \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} F[f(\vartheta)] d\vartheta. \end{aligned}$$

The property of the numbers  $h_{\nu n}$  formulated in the problem holds not only in

the special case when  $f(\vartheta)$  is a trigonometric polynomial of first order, but in general for an arbitrary properly integrable function  $f(\vartheta)$ . [Cf. G. Szegő, op. cit. 69.]

**72. First solution:** We use the following symbolic notation [cf. M. Riesz: Ark. för Mat., Astron. och Fys. 17, No. 16, p. 1 (1923).] Let

$$f(z) = \sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n a_{\lambda\mu} z^{\lambda} \bar{z}^{\mu},$$

where  $a_{\lambda\mu}$  are arbitrary constants. We set

$$f(c) = \sum_{\lambda=0}^n \sum_{\mu=0}^n a_{\lambda\mu} c_{\lambda-\mu}.$$

The assumptions of the problem imply for example that

$$|x_0 + x_1 c + x_2 c^2 + \dots + x_n c^n|^2 > 0$$

if the polynomial  $x_0 + x_1 z + x_2 z^2 + \dots + x_n z^n$  does not vanish identically. Let  $P(z)$  be the polynomial in question,  $z_0$  one of its zeros and  $P(z) = (z - z_0)Q(z)$ . Denoting by  $z(\bar{Q})$  the polynomial with conjugate complex coefficients, we set

$$Q(c)\bar{Q}(\bar{c}) = C_0, \quad Q(c)\bar{Q}(\bar{c})c = C_1, \quad Q(c)\bar{Q}(\bar{c})\bar{c} = C_{-1}.$$

Then we have, with  $x_0, x_1$  arbitrary,

$$\begin{aligned} C_0(|x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2) + C_{-1}x_0\bar{x}_1 + C_1\bar{x}_0x_1 &= Q(c)\bar{Q}(\bar{c})(|x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + \bar{c}x_0\bar{x}_1 + c\bar{x}_0x_1) \\ &= Q(c)(x_0 + x_1 c)\bar{Q}(\bar{c})(\bar{x}_0 + \bar{x}_1 \bar{c}) > 0, \end{aligned}$$

if  $|x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 > 0$ . Hence we have  $|C_1| < C_0$ .

We now have

$$P(c)\bar{c}^v = 0, \quad v = 0, 1, \dots, n-1,$$

and hence

$$(c - z_0)Q(c)\bar{Q}(\bar{c}) = 0, \quad z_0 = \frac{Q(c)\bar{Q}(\bar{c})c}{Q(c)\bar{Q}(\bar{c})} = \frac{C_1}{C_0}.$$

**Second solution:** By a theorem of C. Carathéodory [Palermo Rend. 32, p. 205 (1911)], there exist  $2n$  numbers

$$\begin{array}{cccc} \rho_1, & \rho_2, & \dots, & \rho_n, \\ \varepsilon_1, & \varepsilon_2, & \dots, & \varepsilon_n, \end{array}$$

such that  $\rho_v \geq 0$ ,  $|\varepsilon_v| = 1$ ,  $v = 1, 2, \dots, n$ , and in addition

$$c_k = \rho_1 \varepsilon_1^k + \rho_2 \varepsilon_2^k + \dots + \rho_n \varepsilon_n^k, \quad k = 1, 2, \dots, n.$$

We have

$$c_0 - h = \rho_1 + \rho_2 + \dots + \rho_n,$$

where  $h$  denotes the minimum of the form mentioned in the problem with the subsidiary condition  $|x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + \dots + |x_n|^2 = 1$ . In our own case we have  $h > 0$ .



From this we deduce

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{\lambda=0}^{n-1} \sum_{\mu=0}^{n-1} c_{\lambda-\mu} x_{\lambda} \bar{x}_{\mu} &= h(|x_0|^2 + |x_1|^2 + \cdots + |x_{n-1}|^2) \\ &\quad + \sum_{v=1}^n \rho_v |x_0 + x_1 e_v + \cdots + x_{n-1} e_v^{n-1}|^2, \\ \sum_{\lambda=0}^{n-1} \sum_{\mu=0}^{n-1} c_{\lambda-\mu+1} x_{\lambda} \bar{x}_{\mu} &= h(x_0 \bar{x}_1 + x_1 \bar{x}_2 + \cdots + x_{n-2} \bar{x}_{n-1}) \\ &\quad + \sum_{v=1}^n \rho_v e_v |x_0 + x_1 e_v + \cdots + x_{n-1} e_v^{n-1}|^2, \end{aligned}$$

and hence

$$\left| \sum_{\lambda=0}^{n-1} \sum_{\mu=0}^{n-1} c_{\lambda-\mu+1} x_{\lambda} \bar{x}_{\mu} \right| < \sum_{\lambda=0}^{n-1} \sum_{\mu=0}^{n-1} c_{\lambda-\mu} x_{\lambda} \bar{x}_{\mu},$$

assuming that the numbers  $x_0, x_1, \dots, x_{n-1}$  are not all equal to zero.

Now we can write our equation in the form

$$|c_{\lambda-\mu+1} - z c_{\lambda-\mu}|_{\lambda, \mu=0, 1, \dots, n-1} = 0.$$

Thus if  $z_0$  denotes a root, then there exist numbers  $x_0, x_1, \dots, x_{n-1}$  not all vanishing that satisfy the system of equations

$$\sum_{\mu=0}^{n-1} (c_{\lambda-\mu+1} - z_0 c_{\lambda-\mu}) \bar{x}_{\mu} = 0, \quad \lambda = 0, 1, \dots, n-1.$$

We deduce that

$$z_0 = \frac{\sum_{\lambda=0}^{n-1} \sum_{\mu=0}^{n-1} c_{\lambda-\mu+1} x_{\lambda} \bar{x}_{\mu}}{\sum_{\lambda=0}^{n-1} \sum_{\mu=0}^{n-1} c_{\lambda-\mu} x_{\lambda} \bar{x}_{\mu}}, \quad |z_0| < 1.$$

## Part Eight. Number Theory

**1.**

$$x+n-1 < [x+n] \leq x+n, \quad x-1 < [x+n]-n \leq x.$$

Hence, since  $[x+n]-n$  is an integer, we have

$$[x+n]-n = [x].$$

**2.** We must show that

$$(n-1) + (n-2) + \cdots + 1 = \frac{n(n-1)}{2} \equiv \left[ \frac{n}{2} \right] \pmod{2}.$$

We show this for  $n=0, 1, 2, 3$  by calculation. Both sides increase by an even number if we substitute  $n+4$  for  $n$ .

**3.** If  $x - [x] < \frac{1}{2}$ , then  $0 \leq 2x - 2[x] < 1$ . If  $x - [x] \geq \frac{1}{2}$ , then  $1 \leq 2x - 2[x] < 2$ . By **1**, we have

$$[2x - 2[x]] = [2x] - 2[x].$$

**4.** From **1** in a similar fashion as **3**.

**5.** From **3** we have

$$[2x] - 2[x] + [x] = [2x] - [x].$$

**6.** The required integer  $n$  satisfies:

$$n-1 < x \leq n, \quad \text{therefore} \quad -n \leq -x < -n+1,$$

and hence  $n = -[-x]$ .

**7.**

$$0 \leq \alpha + \beta - [\alpha] - [\beta] = \alpha - [\alpha] + \beta - [\beta] < 2,$$

$$-1 < \alpha - \beta - [\alpha] + [\beta] = \alpha - [\alpha] - (\beta - [\beta]) < 1.$$

**8.** From **1** we see that both sides change by the same quantity if either  $\alpha$  or  $\beta$  changes by an integer. It is thus sufficient to prove the theorem only for the case  $0 \leq \alpha < 1$ ,  $0 \leq \beta < 1$ . It then reads as follows

$$[2\alpha] + [2\beta] \geq [\alpha + \beta].$$

If  $[\alpha + \beta] = 0$ , we have nothing to prove. If  $[\alpha + \beta] = 1$  then  $\alpha + \beta \geq 1$ , and hence at least one of the two numbers, say  $\alpha$ , is  $\geq \frac{1}{2}$ , and thus  $[2\alpha] + [2\beta] \geq [2\alpha] \geq 1$ .

**9.** [Ch. Hermite: Acta Math. 5, p. 315 (1884).] It suffices to consider the case  $0 \leq x < 1$  [solution 8]. Determine  $k$  such that

$$x + \frac{k-1}{n} < 1 \leq x + \frac{k}{n}, \quad \text{i.e.} \quad -k = [nx - n] = [nx] - n.$$

Both sides are  $= n - k$ .

**10.** We may assume that  $0 \leq x < 1$  [solution 8, solution 9]. For  $0 \leq x < 1$  the right-hand side is  $= 0$ , and we have also

$$[nx] \leq nx, \quad \frac{[nx]}{n} \leq x < 1, \quad \left[ \frac{[nx]}{n} \right] = 0.$$

**11.** [J. J. Sylvester, problem: Nouv. Annls Math. Sér. 1, 16, p. 125 (1857). Solution by E. Prouhet, Lebesgue: Nouv. Annls Math. Sér. 1, 16, p. 184, p. 262 (1857).]

$$[(1 + \sqrt{3})^{2m+1}] = (1 + \sqrt{3})^{2m+1} + (1 - \sqrt{3})^{2m+1},$$

since  $-1 < (1 - \sqrt{3})^{2m+1} < 0$  and the right-hand side is an integer. We obtain further that

$$\begin{aligned} (1 + \sqrt{3})(4 + 2\sqrt{3})^m + (1 - \sqrt{3})(4 - 2\sqrt{3})^m \\ = 2^m \{(1 + \sqrt{3})(2 + \sqrt{3})^m + (1 - \sqrt{3})(2 - \sqrt{3})^m\}. \end{aligned}$$

The expression in curly brackets is of the form

$$2(a + b\sqrt{3}) + (1 + \sqrt{3})(\sqrt{3})^m + 2(a - b\sqrt{3}) + (1 - \sqrt{3})(-\sqrt{3})^m,$$

where  $a, b$  are rational and integral, and hence is divisible only by the first power of 2.

**12.** The numbers in question are  $a, 2a, 3a, \dots, ka$ , where  $ka \leq n < (k+1)a$ , and thus  $k = [n/a]$ . We can also pose the question in the following way: How many of the fractions  $1/a, 2/a, \dots, n/a$  are integers, i.e. how many integers are contained in the interval  $0 < x \leq n/a$ ?

**13.** The number of integers in the interval  $a/\pi < x \leq b/\pi$  is equal to [solution 12]

$$\left[ \frac{b}{\pi} \right] - \left[ \frac{a}{\pi} \right].$$

The number of integers in the interval  $-b/\pi < x \leq -a/\pi$  is equal to

$$\left[ -\frac{a}{\pi} \right] - \left[ -\frac{b}{\pi} \right].$$

**14.** [J. König: Math. Ann. 9, p. 530 (1876). Also Nouv. Corresp. Math. 5, p. 222 (1879); solution by Radicke: ibid. 6, p. 82 (1880).] For  $\alpha = 0$  and  $\alpha = \pi$  the assertion is obvious; thus assume  $0 < \alpha < \pi$ . Then no two successive terms of the sequence can vanish simultaneously. If two *adjacent* terms  $\cos \nu\alpha$ , and  $\cos (\nu+1)\alpha$  constitute a change of sign, then between  $\nu\alpha$  and  $(\nu+1)\alpha$  there lies just one zero of  $\cos x$ . Two *non-adjacent* terms  $\cos (\nu-1)\alpha$  and  $\cos (\nu+1)\alpha$  can also constitute a

change of sign, namely in the case that  $\cos n\alpha = 0$ . Thus  $V_n(\alpha)$  is equal to the number of zeros of  $\cos x$  in the interval  $0 \leq x < n\alpha$ , i.e. to the number of zeros of  $\sin x$  in the interval  $(\pi/2) - n\alpha < x \leq \pi/2$ . This number is equal to

$$-\left[\frac{1}{2} - n\frac{\alpha}{\pi}\right] \quad [13].$$

15.

$$g_n = [n\delta] - [(n-1)\delta].$$

16.  $N(r, a, \alpha) = 0$  for  $r < |\log a|$ ;  $N(r, a, \alpha) = l - k$  for  $r \geq |\log a|$ , where

$$\begin{aligned} \alpha + 2l\pi &\leq \sqrt{r^2 - (\log a)^2} < \alpha + 2(l+1)\pi, \\ \alpha + 2k\pi &< -\sqrt{r^2 - (\log a)^2} \leq \alpha + 2(k+1)\pi, \end{aligned}$$

i.e. we have in this case

$$N(r, a, \alpha) = 1 + \left[ \frac{\sqrt{r^2 - (\log a)^2} - \alpha}{2\pi} \right] + \left[ \frac{\sqrt{r^2 - (\log a)^2} + \alpha}{2\pi} \right].$$

Cf. III 73.

17.

$$[f(a)] + [f(a+1)] + [f(a+2)] + \cdots + [f(b-1)] + [f(b)].$$

18. The left-hand side represents [17] the number of lattice points in the region  $1 \leq x \leq p-1$ ,  $0 < y \leq (q/p)x$ . In the rectangle

$$1 \leq x \leq p-1, \quad 1 \leq y \leq q-1$$

there lie a total of  $(p-1)(q-1)$  lattice points. They are distributed symmetrically with respect to the point  $x=p/2$ ,  $y=q/2$ , and there are as many above as below the straight line  $y=(q/p)x$  but none on the straight line itself, for a lattice point lies on this straight line if and only if  $x$  is an integral multiple of  $p$ .

19. [Gauss: *Theorematis arithmetici demonstratio nova*, 1808, Werke, 2, pp. 1-8, Göttingen: Königl. Ges. der Wiss. (1863). G. Eisenstein, problem: *J. reine angew. Math.* 27, p. 281 (1844).] We are concerned with the lattice points in the rectangle

$$1 \leq x \leq p', \quad 1 \leq y \leq q'.$$

Their total number is  $p'q'$ . The first  $p'$  terms on the left-hand side give the number of lattice points below, the last  $q'$  terms the number of lattice points above, the straight line  $y=(q/p)x$  [17].

20. [V. Bunyakovski: *C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris)*, 94, pp. 1459-1461 (1882).] Let the variable  $x$  run through the numbers  $1, 2, \dots, n$ , and the variable  $y$  for given  $x$  run through the numbers  $[\sqrt{(x-1)p}] + 1, [\sqrt{(x-1)p}] + 2, \dots, [\sqrt{xp}]$ . Setting  $r=r(x, y)=xp-y^2$ , we have  $0 < r < p$  and  $-r$  is a quadratic residue modulo  $p$ . Since  $-1$  is a quadratic residue, the same is true for  $r$ . The number of all the numbers  $r$ , since  $4n=p-1$ , is

$$= \sum_{x=1}^n ([\sqrt{xp}] - [\sqrt{(x-1)p}]) = [\sqrt{np}] = \frac{p-1}{2},$$

i.e. as many as there are quadratic residues mod  $p$ . Moreover they are all distinct: From  $x_1p - y_1^2 = x_2p - y_2^2$  it follows that  $p$  divides  $y_1^2 - y_2^2 = (y_1 + y_2)(y_1 - y_2)$ , i.e.  $y_1 = y_2$ , and hence also  $x_1 = x_2$ . The sum of all the numbers  $r$  is given by

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{x=1}^n \sum_{y=[\sqrt{(x-1)p}]+1}^{[\sqrt{xp}]} r(x, y) &= p \sum_{x=1}^n x([\sqrt{xp}] - [\sqrt{(x-1)p}]) - \sum_{y=1}^{2n} y^2 \\ &= -p \sum_{x=1}^n [\sqrt{xp}] + (n+1)p[\sqrt{np}] - \frac{n}{3}(2n+1)(4n+1), \end{aligned}$$

and hence is equal to the sum of all the smallest positive quadratic residues mod  $p$ , i.e.  $[(p-1)/4]p$ .

**21.** [J. J. Sylvester: C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris), 96, p. 463 (1883).] Let  $n$  be the number of properties  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma, \dots, \kappa, \lambda$ . If an object has  $k$  of these properties ( $1 \leq k \leq n$ ), then it contributes to the sum written out in the problem precisely

$$1 - \binom{k}{1} + \binom{k}{2} - \binom{k}{3} + \dots + (-1)^k \binom{k}{k} = 0$$

units. If however an object has none at all of the properties  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma, \dots, \kappa, \lambda$ , then the number it contributes is precisely 1, contributed in fact to the first summand  $N$ .—The theorem actually belongs to formal logic. For a proof based on mathematical induction cf. for example U. Yule, *An Introduction to the Theory of Statistics*, Chapter 2, London: Griffin, 1916.

**21.1.** (1)  $1 - A$ ,

(2)  $AB$ ,

(3)  $1 - (1 - A)(1 - B) = A + B - AB$ .

**21.2.** Let  $A, B, C, \dots$  be the subsets characterized by the properties  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma, \dots$ , respectively. We are required to find the number of elements in the intersection of the complements of  $A, B, C, \dots$  whose characteristic function is, by **21.1**, (1) and (2),

$$\begin{aligned} &(1 - A)(1 - B)(1 - C) \dots \\ &= 1 \\ &- A - B - C - \dots \\ &+ AB + AC + BC + \dots \\ &- ABC - \dots \end{aligned}$$

Pass from the characteristic function to the number of elements by summation over all the elements of  $U$ .

**22.**  $N = n$ ,  $N_\alpha = N_\beta = \dots = n - 1$ ,  $N_{\alpha\beta} = N_{\alpha\gamma} = \dots = n - 2, \dots$ . We have

$$n - \binom{n}{1}(n-1) + \binom{n}{2}(n-2) - \dots + (-1)^n \binom{n}{n}(n-n) = 0,$$

since there are no objects that have none of the properties  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma, \dots, \kappa, \lambda$ . [I 37.]

**22.1.** We are required to paint the  $n$  houses of a settlement with  $k$  different colors, using just one color for each house [I 192]. We regard each color distribution as one of our “objects”; the number of all such objects is  $N = k^n$ . If the first

color is not used, the object (color distribution) has the property  $\alpha$ , if the second color is not used, it has the property  $\beta$ , and so on. Hence [21]

$$\begin{aligned} N_\alpha &= N_\beta = \dots = N_\kappa = N_\lambda = (k-1)^n, \\ N_{\alpha\beta} &= N_{\alpha\gamma} = \dots = N_{\kappa\lambda} = (k-2)^n, \\ N_{\alpha\beta\gamma} &= \dots = (k-3)^n, \\ &\dots\dots\dots \end{aligned}$$

and the number of those color distributions in which every one of the  $k$  available colors is used at least once is

$$k^n - \binom{k}{1}(k-1)^n + \binom{k}{2}(k-2)^n - \dots + (-1)^k 0^n$$

which equals  $k!S_k^n$  [I 192].

**22.2.** Apply 21. There are altogether  $T_n = N$  different partitions of a set  $S$  of  $n$  elements. The property  $\alpha$  belongs to those  $N_\alpha = T_{n-1}$  partitions that contain a class (subset of  $S$ ) consisting of the first element of  $S$  alone. The property  $\beta$  is similarly linked to the second element of  $S$ , and so on. Let  $\tilde{T}_n$  be the number of those partitions that have neither the property  $\alpha$ , nor  $\beta$ , nor  $\gamma$ , ....

**22.3.** Similarly to 22.2. Can also be linked to I 204.

**23.** [In a different guise as "jeu de recontre" by P. R. Montmort, A. de Moivre. Cf. L. Euler: Opera Omnia, Series 1, 7, p. 11. Leipzig and Berlin: B. G. Teubner, 1923.] The total number of terms in the expansion is  $n!$ . The number of those terms that contain  $a_{vv}$  is  $(n-1)!$ , the number of those that contain  $a_{\mu\mu}a_{vv}$  is  $(n-2)!$  and so on. By 21 the required number is thus

$$\begin{aligned} n! - \binom{n}{1}(n-1)! + \binom{n}{2}(n-2)! - \binom{n}{3}(n-3)! + \dots + (-1)^n \binom{n}{n} \\ = n! \left( 1 - \frac{1}{1!} + \frac{1}{2!} - \frac{1}{3!} + \dots + \frac{(-1)^n}{n!} \right). \end{aligned}$$

(Cf. also solution VII 46.)

**24.** The number of numbers less than or equal to  $n$  that are divisible by  $a$  (property  $\alpha$ ) is [12] equal to  $[n/a]$ . The number of those that are divisible simultaneously by  $a$  and  $b$  (properties  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ ) is equal to the number of those that are divisible by  $ab$ , since  $a$  and  $b$  are relatively prime, and hence is equal to  $[n/(ab)]$ , and so on. The required number is thus [21] equal to

$$\begin{aligned} n - \left[ \frac{n}{a} \right] - \left[ \frac{n}{b} \right] - \left[ \frac{n}{c} \right] - \dots - \left[ \frac{n}{k} \right] - \left[ \frac{n}{l} \right] \\ + \left[ \frac{n}{ab} \right] + \left[ \frac{n}{ac} \right] + \dots + \left[ \frac{n}{kl} \right] \\ - \left[ \frac{n}{abc} \right] - \dots \\ \dots\dots\dots \\ \pm \left[ \frac{n}{abc\dots kl} \right]. \end{aligned}$$







**31.** The determinant in question is equal to the square of the determinant  $|\eta_{\lambda\mu}|_{\lambda, \mu=1, 2, \dots, n}$ , in which  $\eta_{\lambda\mu}=1$  if  $\mu$  is a divisor of  $\lambda$  and  $\eta_{\lambda\mu}=0$  otherwise. The square is formed by row-by-row multiplication.

**32.** Multiply row-by-row the two determinants

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & \dots & 0 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & \dots & 1 \end{vmatrix} \begin{vmatrix} a_0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ a_0 & a_1 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ a_0 & a_1 & a_2 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ a_0 & a_1 & a_2 & a_3 & \dots & 0 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ a_0 & a_1 & a_2 & a_3 & \dots & a_n \end{vmatrix}.$$

**33.** Multiply row-by-row the two determinants

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 0 & 1 & \dots & 0 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ 1 & \eta_{n2} & \eta_{n3} & \eta_{n4} & \dots & 1 \end{vmatrix} \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ a_1 & a_2 & 0 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ a_1 & 0 & a_3 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ a_1 & a_2 & 0 & a_4 & \dots & 0 \\ \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots & \dots \\ a_1 & . & . & . & \dots & a_n \end{vmatrix},$$

where the  $\eta_{\lambda\mu}$  have the same meaning as in **31**. The second determinant is formed from the first by replacing  $\eta_{\lambda\mu}$  by  $a_\mu \eta_{\lambda\mu}$ .

**34.** The first part is obvious.—Let  $p, q, r, \dots$  be the prime factors of  $n$ . Apply **26** to the divisors  $t$  of  $n$ . Let the value of  $t$  be  $a_t$ . Let us say that a divisor has the property  $\alpha$  if it divides not only  $n$  but also  $n/p$ , the property  $\beta$  if it divides not only  $n$  but also  $n/q$ , and so on. The total value of those divisors  $t$  that divide neither  $n/p$ , nor  $n/q$ , nor  $n/r, \dots$  is then equal to

$$\begin{aligned} & \sum_{t|n} a_t - \sum_{t|n/p} a_t - \sum_{t|n/q} a_t - \sum_{t|n/r} a_t - \dots \\ & + \sum_{t|n/pq} a_t + \sum_{t|n/pr} a_t + \dots \\ & - \sum_{t|n/pqr} a_t - \dots \\ & \dots \dots \dots \\ & \pm \sum_{t|n/pqr\dots} a_t = \sum_{t|n} \mu(t) A_{\frac{n}{t}} \end{aligned}$$

by the definition of  $\mu(n)$ . The only divisor, however, that has neither property  $\alpha$ , nor  $\beta$ , nor  $\gamma, \dots$ , is  $n$  and its value is  $a_n$ .

**35.** [A. Hurwitz.] By **34** it suffices to prove that

$$g(n) = \sum_{t|n} f(t)$$

But this is evident. For if we reduce the fractions  $1/n, 2/n, 3/n, \dots, n/n$  to their lowest terms, then we obtain the fractions of the form  $r/t$  where  $r \leq t$ ,  $(r, t)=1$ , and  $t$  is a divisor of  $n$ , and each of these fractions we obtain precisely once.

**36.** In **35** set

$$\psi(y) = \log(x - e^{2\pi i y}).$$

We then have  $g(n) = \log(x^n - 1)$ ,  $f(n) = \log K_n(x)$ , and thus

$$\log K_n(x) = \sum_{i|n} \mu(i) \log(x^{n/i} - 1).$$

**37.** In **35** set  $\psi(y) = e^{2\pi i y}$ . We then have

$$g(1) = 1, \quad g(n) = 0 \quad \text{for } n > 1, \quad \text{hence} \quad f(n) = \sum_{(r, n)=1} e^{\frac{2\pi i r}{n}} = \mu(n).$$

**38.**

$n$	$\varphi(n)$	$\tau(n)$	$\sigma(n)$	$\sigma_2(n)$	$\nu(n)$	$\mu(n)$	$\lambda(n)$	$e^{A(n)}$
1	1	1	1	1	0	1	1	1
2	1	2	3	5	1	-1	-1	2
3	2	2	4	10	1	-1	-1	3
4	2	3	7	21	1	0	1	2
5	4	2	6	26	1	-1	-1	5
6	2	4	12	50	2	1	1	1
7	6	2	8	50	1	-1	-1	7
8	4	4	15	85	1	0	-1	2
9	6	3	13	91	1	0	1	3
10	4	4	18	130	2	1	1	1

**38.1.** It is advantageous to make use of **43**.

(1) If  $p$  is a prime number and  $m \geq 1$ , then

$$\varphi(p^m) = p^{m-1}(p-1)$$

is divisible by  $p-1$  and thus an even number if  $p > 2$ . If  $n$  is divisible by  $p^m$ , then  $\varphi(n)$  is divisible by  $\varphi(p^m)$  and therefore by  $p-1$ , and so it is even if  $p$  is odd. Hence  $\varphi(n)$  can be odd only if  $n$  is a power of 2, but

$$\varphi(2^m) = 2^{m-1}$$

is even if  $m \geq 2$ .

(2) Proved by (1).

(3) If  $n$  is divisible by a prime  $p > 3$ , then  $\varphi(n)$  has a factor  $> 3-1$ , and so  $\varphi(n) > 2$ . Hence we need to examine only the cases

$$\varphi(2^l) = 2^{l-1}, \quad \varphi(3^m) = 3^{m-1} \cdot 2, \quad \varphi(2^l 3^m) = 2^{l-1} \cdot 3^{m-1}$$

for  $l \geq 1, m \geq 1$ .

(4) If  $n$  has the divisor  $d$ , it has also the "complementary" divisor  $n/d$  and these two divisors are different unless  $n = d^2$ .

(5) No. If  $n$  is not a perfect square multiplied by some power of 2, then there is an odd prime number  $p$  whose highest power that divides  $n$  is  $p^{2k-1}$ ;  $k$  is a

positive integer. Hence  $\sigma(n)$  is divisible by

$$\sigma(p^{2k-1}) = 1 + p + p^2 + \cdots + p^{2k-1},$$

which is an even number.

(6) Further exploration may suggest results similar to 45.

39. By the Cauchy and the Dirichlet multiplication rules respectively, cf. introduction to 39 p. 119,  $a_n = b_n = 1$ .

40. By the Cauchy and the Dirichlet multiplication rules respectively, cf. introduction to 39 p. 119,  $b_n = 1$ .

41. Special case of 42:  $A_0 = A_1 = A_2 = A_3 = \cdots = 1$ .

42. By Cauchy and Dirichlet multiplication respectively, with the aid of 34.

43. If  $m$  and  $n$  have no common divisors, then every divisor of  $mn$  is formed by multiplying one divisor of  $m$  by one divisor of  $n$ . We therefore have

$$\sum_{t_1|m} t_1^\alpha \cdot \sum_{t_2|n} t_2^\alpha = \sum_{t|mn} t^\alpha, \quad \text{i.e. } \sigma_\alpha(m)\sigma_\alpha(n) = \sigma_\alpha(mn).$$

For  $\varphi(n)$  the assertion follows from 25. For the other functions the assertion is obvious.—For  $f(n) = n^\alpha$ ,  $\lambda(n)$ , the relation  $f(mn) = f(m)f(n)$  is satisfied not only for relatively prime but in fact for arbitrary  $m$  and  $n$ .

44. By 43, it is sufficient to consider the case  $n = p^k$ ,  $p$  a prime number. The divisors are then  $1, p, p^2, \dots, p^k$ , and hence

$$\sigma_\alpha(n) = 1 + p^\alpha + p^{2\alpha} + \cdots + p^{k\alpha} = \frac{1 - p^{\alpha(k+1)}}{1 - p^\alpha}.$$

45. The values of the quotient

$$\frac{\tau(p^k)}{\varphi(p^k)} = \frac{k+1}{p^{k-1}(p-1)}$$

can be arranged in a two-way classification table.

$p \backslash k$	1	2	3	4
2	<b>2</b> <u>1</u>	<b>3</b> <u>2</u>	<b>4</b> <u>4</u>	<b>5</b> <u>8</u>
3	<b>2</b> <u>2</u>	<b>3</b> <u>6</u>	<b>4</b> <u>18</u>	<b>5</b> <u>54</u>
5	<b>2</b> <u>4</u>	<b>3</b> <u>20</u>	<b>4</b> <u>100</u>	<b>5</b> <u>500</u>

In the above table entries  $\geq 1$  are printed in bold type. The entries decrease with increasing  $p$  as well as with increasing  $k$  (differentiate!) and tend to 0. Since  $\tau(n)/\varphi(n)$  is a multiplicative function of  $n$ , we require to form all products of value  $\geq 1$  whose factors ( $\geq 1$  in number) are taken from *different* rows of the table. There exist only ten such products corresponding to the numbers  $n=2, 3, 4, 6, 8, 10, 12, 18, 24, 30$ , which together with  $n=1$ , comprise all the solutions of the inequality  $\tau(n) \geq \varphi(n)$ .

**46.** It suffices to consider a single fixed prime number  $p$  and a specific multiplicative function that is associated with  $p$  in the following manner:  $f(n)=g(k)$ , if  $p^k$  is the highest power of  $p$  that divides  $n$ ;  $g(0)=1$  and  $g(k)$  is a fixed but otherwise arbitrary function of the exponent  $k$  for  $k \geq 1$ . All multiplicative functions may be constructed from such functions by multiplication. But for such a function the theorem reads as follows:

$$g(\max(\alpha, \beta, \gamma, \delta, \dots, \kappa, \lambda))g(\min(\alpha, \beta))g(\min(\alpha, \gamma)) \cdots \\ g(\min(\kappa, \lambda))g(\min(\alpha, \beta, \gamma, \delta)) \cdots = g(\alpha)g(\beta) \cdots g(\lambda)g(\min(\alpha, \beta, \gamma)) \cdots,$$

where  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma, \delta, \dots, \kappa, \lambda$  are the non-negative exponents of  $p$  in  $a, b, c, d, \dots, k, l$ . This is now a generalization of **28**, that can be proved in an analogous fashion to **28** with the single difference that here we must use **26** instead of **21**, setting the "value" of a number  $m$  equal to  $\log g(m) - \log g(m-1)$ ;  $\log g(-1)=0$ .

**47.** Every positive integer may be written in one and only one way as a product of powers of prime numbers. By the rules for the construction of the infinite product in question we thus obtain every term  $f(n)n^{-s}$ , where  $n=p_1^{k_1}p_2^{k_2}\dots p_v^{k_v}$ , once and exactly once, namely in the form  $f(p_1^{k_1})p_1^{-k_1s}f(p_2^{k_2})p_2^{-k_2s}\dots f(p_v^{k_v})p_v^{-k_vs}$ . The theorem is completely equivalent to the multiplicative property of  $f(n)$ .

**48.** [Euler: *Introductio in analysin infinitorum*, **1**, Opera Omnia, Series 1, **8**, p. 288. Leipzig and Berlin: B. G. Teubner, 1922.]  $f(n)=1$ ,  $n=1, 2, 3, 4, \dots$  is multiplicative [47].

**49.** Because of the multiplicative property we have

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \sigma_{\alpha}(n)n^{-s} &= \prod_p \frac{(1-p^{\alpha})1^{-s} + (1-p^{2\alpha})p^{-s} + (1-p^{3\alpha})p^{-2s} + \dots}{1-p^{\alpha}} \\ &= \prod_p \frac{1}{(1-p^{-s})(1-p^{\alpha-s})}, \\ \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} 2^{v(n)}n^{-s} &= \prod_p (1+2p^{-s}+2p^{-2s}+2p^{-3s}+\dots) = \prod_p \frac{1-p^{-2s}}{(1-p^{-s})^2}, \\ \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \lambda(n)n^{-s} &= \prod_p (1-p^{-s}+p^{-2s}-p^{-3s}+\dots) = \prod_p \frac{1-p^{-s}}{1-p^{-2s}}, \\ \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \varphi(n)n^{-s} &= \prod_p \left[ 1 + \left(1-\frac{1}{p}\right)p^{1-s} + \left(1-\frac{1}{p}\right)p^{2-2s} + \dots \right] = \prod_p \frac{1-p^{-s}}{1-p^{1-s}}. \end{aligned}$$

**50.** [E. Cesàro, problem: *Mathesis*, **6**, p. 192 (1886). Solution by Mantel: *Mathesis*, **8**, p. 208 (1888).]  $a(n)$  is a multiplicative function, hence [47]

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a(n)n^{-s} &= \prod_p [1 + a(p)p^{-s} + a(p^2)p^{-2s} + \dots] \\ &= (1^{-s} + 2^{-s} + 2^{-2s} + \dots) \prod_{p>2} (1 + p^{1-s} + p^{2(1-s)} + \dots) \\ &= \frac{1}{1-2^{-s}} \prod_{p>2} \frac{1}{1-p^{1-s}}. \end{aligned}$$

**51.** By **48** we have

$$-\frac{\zeta'(s)}{\zeta(s)} = \sum_p \frac{p^{-s} \log p}{1-p^{-s}}.$$

**52.**

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n^{-s} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mu(n) n^{-s} = 1.$$

Equivalent to the second part of **41**.—**52–56**, **58** may also be proved without using Dirichlet series.

**53.** By **49** we have

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (n^2)^{-s} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n^{-s} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \lambda(n) n^{-s}.$$

**54.** By **49** we have

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n \cdot n^{-s} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n^{-s} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \varphi(n) n^{-s}.$$

**55.** By **49** we have

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n \cdot n^{-s} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mu(n) n^{-s} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \varphi(n) n^{-s};$$

alternatively by applying **34** to **54**. Equivalent to **25**.

**56.**

$$-\zeta''(s) = \left( -\frac{\zeta'(s)}{\zeta(s)} \right) \zeta(s),$$

i.e.  $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \log n \cdot n^{-s} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \Lambda(n) n^{-s} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n^{-s}$ .

**57.** From **33**, **54**. Further particular cases of **33** follow from **52–56**.

**58.** [Jacobi, problem: *Nouv. Ann.* **11**, p. 45 (1852). Solution by A. Dallet *et al.*: *Nouv. Ann.* **11**, p. 126, p. 186 (1852).]

$$\begin{aligned} \sum \alpha^{-s} &= 1^{-s} + 3^{-s} + 5^{-s} + \dots = (1-2^{-s})\zeta(s), \\ \sum \beta^{-s} &= 2^{-s} + 4^{-s} + 6^{-s} + \dots = 2^{-s}\zeta(s); \end{aligned}$$

hence we have

$$\begin{aligned} \sum \sum (\beta - \alpha)(\alpha\beta)^{-s} &= \sum \sum \alpha^{-s} \beta^{1-s} - \sum \sum \alpha^{1-s} \beta^{-s} \\ &= (1-2^{-s})\zeta(s) 2^{1-s}\zeta(s-1) - (1-2^{1-s})\zeta(s-1) 2^{-s}\zeta(s) \\ &= 2^{-s}\zeta(s)\zeta(s-1) = \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \sigma(m)(2m)^{-s}. \end{aligned}$$

**58.1.** [A. F. Möbius; see E. Netto: *Lehrbuch der Kombinatorik*, 2nd ed., Leipzig, Teubner, 1927, pp. 173–176, p. 277.]

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{\zeta(s)} &= 1 - (\zeta(s) - 1) + (\zeta(s) - 1)^2 - (\zeta(s) - 1)^3 + \dots, \\ \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mu(n) n^{-s} &= 1 - \sum_{k=2}^{\infty} k^{-s} + \sum_{k=2}^{\infty} \sum_{l=2}^{\infty} (kl)^{-s} - \sum_{k=2}^{\infty} \sum_{l=2}^{\infty} \sum_{m=2}^{\infty} (klm)^{-s} + \dots \end{aligned}$$

In fact, for  $k=1, 2, 3, \dots$ ,

$$(\zeta(s)-1)^k = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} P(n, k) n^{-s}.$$

**58.2.** [Viggo Brun; see E. Netto, op. cit., **58.1**, p. 276.] By **48**

$$\begin{aligned} \log \zeta(s) &= - \sum_p \log(1-p^{-s}) \\ &= \sum_p (p^{-s} + \frac{1}{2}p^{-2s} + \frac{1}{3}p^{-3s} + \dots) \\ &= (\zeta(s)-1) - \frac{1}{2}(\zeta(s)-1)^2 + \frac{1}{3}(\zeta(s)-1)^3 - \dots; \end{aligned}$$

see **58.1**.

**58.3.** A decomposition of such an  $n$  into  $k$  factors (each  $> 1$ ) is, in fact, a partition of its  $m$  prime factors into  $k$  classes, if we disregard the order of the factors. Observe that the  $k$  factors must be different. For an explicit formula for  $S_k^m$  see **22.1**, I **189**.

**58.4.** Proof by following up the intuitive solution of I **21**; cf. MD, **2**, p. 189, problem 3.40.1.

**58.2** is now also readily verified:

$$\frac{1}{1} \binom{m-1}{0} - \frac{1}{2} \binom{m-1}{1} + \dots + \frac{(-1)^{m-1}}{m} \binom{m-1}{m-1} = \int_0^1 (1-x)^{m-1} dx = \frac{1}{m}.$$

**58.5.** See solution **58.3**.

**58.6.**

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} Q(n) n^{-s} &= \prod_{j=2}^{\infty} (1 + j^{-s} + j^{-2s} + j^{-3s} + \dots) \\ &= \exp \left( - \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \log(1-j^{-s}) \right) \\ &= \exp \left( \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} j^{-s} + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} j^{-2s} + \frac{1}{3} \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} j^{-3s} + \dots \right). \end{aligned}$$

**58.7.**

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \delta(n) n^{-s} &= (1 + 2^{-s} + 2^{-2s} + \dots) \\ &\quad \times \prod_p (1 + 2p^{-s} + 3p^{-2s} + \dots) \prod_q (1 + q^{-2s} + q^{-4s} + \dots) \\ &= \frac{1}{1-2^{-s}} \prod_p \frac{1}{(1-p^{-s})^2} \prod_q \frac{1}{1-q^{-2s}} \\ &= \zeta(s) \prod_p \frac{1}{(1-p^{-s})} \prod_q \frac{1}{1+q^{-s}} \\ &= \zeta(s) \prod_p (1 + p^{-s} + p^{-2s} + \dots) \prod_q (1 - q^{-s} + q^{-2s} - \dots) \\ &= \zeta(s) \left( 1 - \frac{1}{3^s} + \frac{1}{5^s} - \frac{1}{7^s} + \frac{1}{9^s} - \dots \right). \end{aligned}$$

$\prod_p$  and  $\prod_q$  are extended over the primes  $\equiv 1$  and  $\equiv 3 \pmod{4}$ , respectively. It can also be proved without the use of Dirichlet series; see Hardy-Wright, pp. 240–242. See also Gauss: *Disquisitiones arithmeticae*, Art. 182, annotation, Werke, 1, p. 161, Göttingen, 1863. See also **237.2**.

**58.8.** Only  $\delta(n)$ . Thus, for  $k \geq 2$ ,

$$P(2^k, k) = 1, \quad P(3^k, k) = 1, \quad P(6^k, k) > 1.$$

**59.** By **47**, a function  $h(n)$  is multiplicative if

$$\prod_p (1^{-s} + h(p)p^{-s} + h(p^2)p^{-2s} + \dots) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} h(n)n^{-s}.$$

In our case, however, we have

$$\begin{aligned} & 1^{-s} + h(p)p^{-s} + h(p^2)p^{-2s} + \dots \\ &= (1^{-s} + f(p)p^{-s} + f(p^2)p^{-2s} + \dots)(1^{-s} + g(p)p^{-s} + g(p^2)p^{-2s} + \dots), \end{aligned}$$

whence the assertion follows.

**60.** Let the corners of the regular *convex*  $n$ -gon, numbered consecutively, be  $A_1, A_2, A_3, \dots, A_n$ . The line joining the corners  $A_k$  and  $A_l$  belongs to a regular (convex or self-intersecting)  $n/t$ -gon, where  $t = (n, l-k)$ ; after tracing this line  $n/t$  times, we arrive back at the starting point. Thus from every corner, in accordance with  $t=1$ , there emanate  $\varphi(n)$  connecting lines that belong to one of the  $n$ -gons; these have therefore a total of  $[n\varphi(n)]/2$  sides.

**61.** If  $k/n$  is in its lowest terms, then so is  $(n-k)/n$ . The sum of the two  $= 1$ .

**62.** [G. Frobenius; see A. Errera: *Palermo Rend.* 35, p. 110 (1913).] Let  $(b, c) = d$ . If  $(a, b, c) = 1$ , then only those fractions can be reduced whose numerators are divisible by prime numbers that divide  $c$  but do not divide  $b$  and thus do not divide  $d$ . Analogously to **25**, it therefore follows that the number of irreducible fractions is

$$N = c \prod_{\substack{p|c \\ (p,d)=1}} \left(1 - \frac{1}{p}\right) = \frac{c \prod_{q|c} \left(1 - \frac{1}{q}\right)}{\prod_{r|d} \left(1 - \frac{1}{r}\right)} = \frac{\varphi(c)}{\frac{\varphi(d)}{d}}.$$

But  $\varphi(bc) = d\varphi(bc/d)$ , since  $bc$  and  $bc/d$  contain the same prime numbers. Moreover by **46** we have  $\varphi(bc/d)\varphi(d) = \varphi(b)\varphi(c)$ .

**63.** 
$$\varphi(1) + 2[\varphi(2) + \varphi(3) + \dots + \varphi(n)].$$

**64.** (1) The number of columns of the square array in which the imaginary parts of the numerator have a fixed greatest common divisor  $t$  with  $n$  is  $\varphi(n/t)$ . In each of these columns the number of irreducible fractions is equal to the number of numbers less than  $n$  that are relatively prime with  $t$ , i.e.  $(n/t)\varphi(t)$ . The number of all the irreducible fractions is therefore

$$\sum_{t|n} \varphi(t) \cdot \frac{n}{t} \varphi\left(\frac{n}{t}\right),$$

and thus [**43**, **59**] multiplicative.—For  $n = p^k$  the number of reducible fractions

is  $p^{k-1} \cdot p^{k-1}$ , and hence the number of irreducible fractions  $p^{2k} - p^{2k-2}$ .—As a matter of fact, from  $\Phi(n) = \sum_{t|n} \varphi(t)(n/t)\varphi(n/t)$ , (4) also follows directly, for we obtain

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \Phi(n)n^{-s} = \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \varphi(k)k^{-s} \cdot \sum_{l=1}^{\infty} \varphi(l)l^{1-s} = \frac{\zeta(s-1)}{\zeta(s)} \cdot \frac{\zeta(s-2)}{\zeta(s-1)} \quad [49].$$

(2) Follows from **21** in the same way as **25**.

(3) The number of fractions of the array that may be reduced precisely by the factor  $t$  is  $\Phi(n/t)$ . Summing over all  $n/t$  it follows that

$$n^2 = \sum_{t|n} \Phi\left(\frac{n}{t}\right) = \sum_{t|n} \Phi(t).$$

(1) follows from (4) by **47** and conversely.

(2) follows from (4) and conversely; for we have

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \Phi(n)n^{-s} = \frac{\zeta(s-2)}{\zeta(s)} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \sum_{d|n} \mu(d) \frac{n^2}{d^2} n^{-s}$$

[41], and hence

$$\begin{aligned} \Phi(n) &= \sum_{d|n} \mu(d) \frac{n^2}{d^2} = n^2 \left( 1 - \frac{1}{p^2} - \frac{1}{q^2} - \cdots + \frac{1}{p^2 q^2} + \cdots \right) \\ &= n^2 \left( 1 - \frac{1}{p^2} \right) \left( 1 - \frac{1}{q^2} \right) \cdots \end{aligned}$$

(3) follows from (4) and conversely by Dirichlet multiplication.

**65.** From the first identity we obtain

$$A_n = \sum_{t|n} a_t,$$

and from the second identity

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{a_n x^n}{1-x^n} = \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} a_m (x^m + x^{2m} + x^{3m} + \cdots) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \left( \sum_{t|n} a_t \right) x^n.$$

**66.** We have

$$(1 - 2^{1-s})\zeta(s) = 1^{-s} - 2^{-s} + 3^{-s} - 4^{-s} + \cdots.$$

From the first identity it therefore follows that

$$B_n = \sum_{t|n} (-1)^{t-1} a_{\frac{n}{t}},$$

and from the second identity

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{a_n x^n}{1+x^n} = \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} a_m (x^m - x^{2m} + x^{3m} - \cdots) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \left( \sum_{t|n} (-1)^{t-1} a_{\frac{n}{t}} \right) x^n.$$

**67.** Writing  $A_n$  in the form  $A_n = \sum_{t|n} a_t$  and collecting the factors with exponent  $a_m$ , we obtain on the right-hand side the product

$$\left( 1 - \frac{x^2}{m^2 n^2} \right)^{a_m} \left( 1 - \frac{x^2}{(2m)^2 n^2} \right)^{a_m} \left( 1 - \frac{x^2}{(3m)^2 n^2} \right)^{a_m} \cdots$$



On the left-hand side we have correspondingly the  $a_m$ th power of

$$\frac{m}{x} \sin \frac{x}{m} = \left(1 - \frac{x^2}{m^2\pi^2}\right) \left(1 - \frac{x^2}{(2m)^2\pi^2}\right) \left(1 - \frac{x^2}{(3m)^2\pi^2}\right) \cdots$$

**68.** Cf. solution **66**:

$$\prod_{k=1}^{\infty} \left(1 - \frac{x^2}{(km)^2\pi^2}\right)^{(-1)^{k-1}} = \frac{x}{2m} \cot \frac{x}{2m}.$$

**68.1.** The left-hand side of the required equation may be written in the form

$$\begin{array}{ccccccc} a_1 f(x) + a_1 f(2x) + a_1 f(3x) + a_1 f(4x) + \cdots & & & & & & \\ & + a_2 f(2x) & & + a_2 f(4x) + \cdots & & & \\ & & + a_3 f(3x) & & + \cdots & & \\ & & & + a_4 f(4x) + \cdots & & & \\ & & & & \cdot & & \\ & & & & \cdot & & \\ & & & & \cdot & & \end{array}$$

Cf. a diagram due to Leibniz, MD, 2, p. 168. (Questions of convergence are not considered in the present chapter although they may be important in concrete applications.)

If  $f(x) = e^{-x}$ , then  $F(x) = \frac{e^{-x}}{1 - e^{-x}}$ .

If  $f(x) = \log \left(1 - \frac{1}{\pi^2 x^2}\right)$ , then  $F(x) = \log \left(x \sin \frac{1}{x}\right)$ . Hence **65** and **67** easily follow.

If  $f(x) = x^{-s}$ , then  $F(x) = \zeta(s)f(x)$ . How is this result related to **40**?

**68.2.** Analogous to **68.1**.

**68.3.** [Hardy-Wright, p. 237, theorem 270.] Assume the first equation and apply **68.1** to the particular case

$$a_n = \mu(n), \quad A_1 = 1, \quad A_n = 0 \quad \text{for } n \geq 2.$$

Assume the second equation. Imitate solution **68.1**, add the equations:

$$\begin{array}{llll} f(x) = \mu(1)F(x) + \mu(2)F(2x) + \mu(3)F(3x) + \mu(4)F(4x) + \cdots \\ f(2x) = & \mu(1)F(2x) & + \mu(2)F(4x) + \cdots \\ f(3x) = & & \mu(1)F(3x) & + \cdots \\ f(4x) = & & & \mu(1)F(4x) + \cdots \end{array}$$

and use **52** (which was in fact also used in the first case.)

(It deserves to be mentioned that the “inversion formula” just proved played a role in a problem of electrophysiology raised by B. W. Knight, and discussed at Rockefeller University, especially by J. Towber.—Communication by M. Schreiber.)

**69.** From **65**, observing **41** and **49**, we find that the desired functions are  $x$  and  $x/(1-x)^2$ .

**70.** [Baschwitz, problem: Mathesis, Series 2, 3, p. 80 (1893). Solution by

E. Cesàro: *Mathesis*, Series 2, 3, p. 205 (1893). Laguerre: *Oeuvres*, 1, p. 216. Paris: Gauthier-Villars, 1898.] From **65** and **49**.

**71.** From **66**, observing **41**, **49**.

**72.** From **66**, observing **49**.—By **I 93** the sum of the series

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \lambda(n) \frac{x^n}{1+x^n}$$

converges to  $-\infty$  as  $x \rightarrow 1$ . An analogous result for the series  $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \lambda(n)x^n$  would decide the Riemann hypothesis. [For a related conjecture, its heuristic background and its fate, see MPR, 2, p. 49, ex. 16 and p. 209, ex. 13.20.]

**72.1.** [Cf. Richard Bellman, problem: *Amer. Math. Monthly*, 50, pp. 124–125 (1943).] From **69** by integration.

**73.** Cf. **64**, **65**, **66**.

**74.** By **39**, **65** we have

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \tau(n)x^n &= \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{x^n}{1-x^n} = x + x^2 + x^3 + x^4 + \dots \\ &\quad + x^2 + x^4 + x^6 + x^8 + \dots \\ &\quad + x^3 + x^6 + x^9 + x^{12} + \dots \\ &\quad \dots\dots\dots \end{aligned}$$

Sum successively the terms lying *to the right and below* each of the diagonal elements  $x, x^4, x^9, \dots$ . Cf. also **II 32**.

**74.1.** See **58.7**, **65**.

**\*75.** First combine **49** and **65**:

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \sigma(n)x^n &= \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n \frac{x^n}{1-x^n} = x + x^2 + x^3 + x^4 + \dots \\ &\quad + 2x^2 + 2x^4 + 2x^6 + 2x^8 + \dots \\ &\quad + 3x^3 + 3x^6 + 3x^9 + 3x^{12} + \dots \\ &\quad \dots\dots\dots \end{aligned}$$

The double series, obtained by rows, should then be summed by columns.

**75.1.** Use **75**. From **I 54**; differentiate the logarithm of both sides.

**75.2.** Use **75**. From **A I 54.1**; differentiate the logarithm of both sides.

**75.3.** [Euler: *Opera Omnia*, Series 1, 2, Leipzig and Berlin: B. G. Teubner, 1915, especially pp. 241–253 (translated and annotated MPR, 1, pp. 90–107) and p. 390–398 (proof).] From **75.1**.

**75.4.** From **75.2**.

**75.5.** From **75** and **A I 20.2**.

$$\sigma(1)x + \sigma(2)x^2 + \sigma(3)x^3 + \dots = \frac{\sum_1^{\infty} np(n)x^n}{\sum_0^{\infty} p(n)x^n}.$$

A common generalization of **75.3**, **75.4** and **75.5** is obvious, but to discover some interesting new particular case of this generalization is not obvious.

$$\mathbf{76.} \quad \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{p^n}{1-qx^n} = \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} p^n q^m x^{mn} = \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \frac{q^m}{1-px^m}.$$

**77.** In **76** replace  $p$  by  $x$ ,  $q$  by  $-x^2$ ,  $x$  by  $x^2$ .

**78.** In the expansion of  $x/(1-x^2)$  we have as exponents the odd numbers, in that of  $x^2/(1-x^4)$  the numbers that are divisible by 2 but not by 4, in that of  $x^4/(1-x^8)$  the numbers that are divisible by 4 but not by 8, and so on. Cf. solution I 19, where the classification of all the numbers according to the highest power of 2 which they contain as a factor also plays a part. The required identity may also be obtained from I 164 by logarithmic differentiation.—The second identity follows from 66 or from solution I 14 by logarithmic differentiation.

**79.** [Cf. P. G. Lejeune-Dirichlet: Werke, 2, p. 52, Berlin: G. Reimer, 1897.] The lattice points in question may be counted in two different ways. The number of lattice points on the hyperbola  $xy=k$  is equal to  $\tau(k)$ . From this relation for  $k=1, 2, \dots, n$  we obtain the left-hand side of the equation. The number of lattice points on the straight line  $x=k$  parallel to the  $y$ -axis is  $[n/k]$ . From this relation for  $k=1, 2, \dots, n$  we obtain the right-hand side. Cf. II 46.

**80.** The lattice points considered in 79 may also be counted in the following way: Take the number of lattice points in the two strips

$$1 \leq x \leq \nu, \quad xy \leq n \quad \text{and} \quad 1 \leq y \leq \nu, \quad xy \leq n,$$

and subtract from this the number of lattice points in  $1 \leq x \leq \nu, 1 \leq y \leq \nu$ , i.e.  $\nu^2$ . [In the region  $x > \nu, y > \nu, xy \leq n$  there does not lie a single lattice point since  $(\nu+1)^2 > n$ .]

**80.1.** If  $p$  is a prime number and the integer  $m$  is characterized by the two-sided inequality

$$p^m \leq n < p^{m+1},$$

then the proposed sum has  $m$  terms equal to  $\log p$ ,  $U(n)$  clearly contains the factor  $p^m$ , and  $m = [\log n / \log p]$ . Hence, with the notation of 82, the proposed sum

$$= \sum_{p \leq n} \left[ \frac{\log n}{\log p} \right] \log p = \log U(n).$$

**80.2.** Cf. last line of solution 80.1. The ratio of the two sides of the required inequality tends to 1 as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ ; see Hardy-Wright, p. 347, theorem 427.

**81.** With each lattice point  $(k, l)$  in the region  $x > 0, y > 0, xy \leq n$  associate the value  $a_k b_l$ . By methods of enumeration similar to those in 79 we obtain different representations of  $\Gamma_n$ , which is in fact the “total value” of all the above-mentioned lattice points.

**82.** In 81 set  $a_n = A(n)$ ,  $b_n = 1$ . Then  $c_n = \log n$  and  $B_n = n$ ,  $\Gamma_n = \log n!$ , and hence we obtain

$$\log n! = \sum_{r=1}^n a_r B\left[\frac{n}{r}\right] = \sum_{r=1}^n A(r) \left[\frac{n}{r}\right] = \sum_{p \leq n} \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \log p \left[\frac{n}{p^m}\right].$$

**83.** [80.]

**84.** The binomial coefficients are integers.  $\binom{x}{m}$  has integral values also for negative integers  $x$ , since

$$\binom{-x}{m} = (-1)^m \binom{x+m-1}{m}.$$

**85.** The functions  $1, x, x^2, \dots, x^n$  may be successively expressed as linear combinations with constant coefficients of

$$1, \frac{x}{1!}, \frac{x(x-1)}{2!}, \dots, \frac{x(x-1)\dots(x-n+1)}{n!} \quad (\text{cf. I 191}).$$

The coefficients  $b_0, b_1, \dots, b_m$  may be determined from

$$\begin{aligned} P(0) &= b_m, \\ P(1) &= b_m + \binom{1}{1} b_{m-1}, \\ P(2) &= b_m + \binom{2}{1} b_{m-1} + \binom{2}{2} b_{m-2}, \\ &\dots\dots\dots \\ P(m) &= b_m + \binom{m}{1} b_{m-1} + \dots + \binom{m}{m} b_0. \end{aligned}$$

If  $P(0), P(1), \dots, P(m)$  are integers, we deduce that  $b_m, b_{m-1}, \dots, b_0$  are integers.

**86.** [85.]

**87.** We may assume that the points at which by hypothesis  $P(x)$  assumes integral values are  $0, 1, \dots, m$ . Then the assertion follows from solution **85**.

**88.** [G. Pólya: Palermo Rend. 40, p. 5 (1915).]

$$\binom{x+m-1}{2m-1} = \frac{x(x^2-1^2)(x^2-2^2)\dots[x^2-(m-1)^2]}{(2m-1)!}.$$

The coefficients  $c_1, c_2, \dots, c_m$  may be determined successively from

$$\begin{aligned} P(1) &= c_1, \\ P(2) &= c_1 \binom{2}{1} + c_2, \\ P(3) &= c_1 \binom{3}{1} + c_2 \binom{3}{2} + c_3, \\ &\dots\dots\dots \end{aligned}$$

[solution **85**.]

**89.** The polynomial of degree  $2m$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{x}{m} \binom{x+m-1}{2m-1} &= 1, \quad 0, \quad \dots, \quad 0, 0, 0, \dots, 0, \quad 1, \\ &\text{for } x = -m, -m+1, \dots, -1, 0, 1, \dots, m-1, m; \end{aligned}$$

thus it is integral-valued [87]. Moreover

$$\begin{aligned} P(0) &= d_0, \\ P(1) &= d_0 + d_1, \\ P(2) &= d_0 + d_1 \frac{2}{1} \binom{2}{1} + d_2, \\ &\dots\dots\dots \end{aligned}$$

[solution **85**, **88**.]

**90.** [G. Pólya: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. 28, pp. 31–40 (1919).] By VI **70**

a polynomial  $P(x) = a_0x^m + a_1x^{m-1} + \dots + a_m$ ,  $a_0 \neq 0$ , with integral coefficients assumes at at least one of  $m+1$  distinct integral points a value whose absolute value is  $\geq (m!/2^m)|a_0| \geq m!/2^m$ . For  $m \geq 4$ , we have  $m!/2^m > 1$ . With regard to  $m \leq 3$  cf. the examples:

$$\begin{array}{lll} m=1, & P(x)=x & \text{for } x=-1, 1, \\ m=2, & P(x)=x(x-1)-1 & \text{for } x=-1, 0, 1, \\ m=3, & P(x)=(x+1)x(x-2)+1 & \text{for } x=-1, 0, 1, 2. \end{array}$$

**91.** From the Lagrange interpolation formula, cf. VI, introduction to § 9 p. 82.

**92. First solution.** Let the function in question be  $R(x) = P(x)/Q(x)$ , where  $P(x)$ ,  $Q(x)$  are relatively prime polynomials,  $r$  the sum of the degrees of  $P(x)$  and  $Q(x)$ . For  $r=0$  the theorem is obvious. Consider if necessary  $R(x)^{-1}$  in place of  $R(x)$  and assume that the degree of  $P(x)$  is not less than that of  $Q(x)$  and furthermore that  $a$  is a positive integer such that  $Q(a) \neq 0$ . Then  $P(a)/Q(a)$  is rational and

$$\frac{1}{x-a} \left( R(x) - \frac{P(a)}{Q(a)} \right) = \frac{P^*(x)}{Q(x)}$$

is a rational function whose value is rational for integral  $x$ ,  $x > a$ , and the degree of

$$P^*(x) = \frac{P(x)Q(a) - Q(x)P(a)}{Q(a)(x-a)}$$

is less than that of  $P(x)$ ; thus the sum of the degrees of  $P^*(x)$  and  $Q(x)$  is less than that of  $P(x)$  and  $Q(x)$ . The assertion follows from this by mathematical induction.

*Second Solution.* Let the function in question be  $R(x) = P(x)/Q(x)$ , where  $P(x)$  and  $Q(x)$  are relatively prime polynomials of degree  $m$  and  $n$  respectively. Let the values of the function for  $x=0, 1, 2, \dots, m+n$  be the rational numbers  $r_0, r_1, r_2, \dots, r_{m+n}$ . Consider the system of  $m+n-1$  homogeneous linear equations

$$u_0 + u_1k + u_2k^2 + \dots + u_mk^m - v_0r_k - v_1r_kk - v_2r_kk^2 - \dots - v_nr_kk^n = 0 \\ (k=0, 1, 2, \dots, m+n)$$

for the  $m+n+2$  unknowns  $u_0, u_1, \dots, u_m, v_0, v_1, \dots, v_n$ . To two solutions of this system there correspond two pairs of polynomials  $P(x)$ ,  $Q(x)$  and  $P^*(x)$ ,  $Q^*(x)$  where  $P(x)$ ,  $P^*(x)$  are of degree  $\leq m$ , and  $Q(x)$ ,  $Q^*(x)$  of degree  $\leq n$ , such that

$$P(k) - r_k Q(k) = 0, \quad P^*(k) - r_k Q^*(k) = 0, \quad k=0, 1, \dots, m+n.$$

But now from the vanishing of the function  $P(x)Q^*(x) - P^*(x)Q(x)$  of degree  $\leq m+n$ , for  $x=0, 1, \dots, m+n$  there follows that it vanishes identically. Since  $P(x)$  and  $Q(x)$  are relatively prime,  $P(x)$  must divide  $P^*(x)$  and thus  $P^*(x) = cP(x)$ ,  $Q^*(x) = cQ(x)$ ,  $c$  constant. I.e. the system has, apart from proportionality factors only one solution. Its rank is therefore  $m+n+1$ . Consequently the matrix of the system contains a determinant of order  $m+n+1$  that is  $\neq 0$ . All the elements of this matrix are rational numbers. Hence we may assume a solution  $u_0, u_1, \dots, u_m, v_0, v_1, \dots, v_n$  that is integral.

It would be sufficient to assume that  $R(x)$  is finite and rational for  $m+n+1$  distinct rational values of  $x$ .

**93.** The function  $f(x)$  considered is [solution **92**, cf. the final remark]  $= P(x)/Q(x)$ , where  $P(x)$  and  $Q(x)$  are polynomials with integral coefficients. We can find an integer  $q$ , such that  $qf(x) = G(x) + r(x)$ , where  $G(x)$  denotes a polynomial *with integral coefficients* and  $r(x)$  a rational function whose numerator is of lower degree than its denominator. The value of  $r(x)$  is integral for infinitely many integral values of  $x$ . Since  $\lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} r(x) = 0$ , from a certain point of this kind on we must have  $|r(x)| < 1$ , thus  $r(x) = 0$  and hence  $r(x) \equiv 0$ , for a rational function that does not vanish identically can be  $= 0$  for only a finite number of values of  $x$ .

**94.** From

$$2^m \equiv -1 \pmod{p}$$

it follows that

$$2^{2^k m} \equiv 1, \quad 2^{2^k m} + 1 \equiv 2 \pmod{p},$$

where  $m$  and  $k$  are positive integers,  $p$  an odd prime number. From this we deduce that the number of prime numbers up to the bound  $x$  is certainly  $\geq \text{const.} \log \log x$ .

**95.** [G. Pólya: Math. Z. 1, p. 144 (1918).] Leaving aside the case  $a=0$ , we may assume that  $(a, d)=1$ ,  $d \geq 1$ ,  $a > d$ . The numbers

$$n = \frac{a}{d} (a^{v(d)v} - 1),$$

$v=1, 2, 3, \dots$ , are integral, and the numbers

$$a + nd = a^{v(d)v+1}$$

contain only prime factors of  $a$ .

**96.** A product of numbers of the form  $6n+1$  is again of the same form.

**97.** [Goldbach; cf. Euler: Opera Omnia, Series 1, 3, p. 4, p. 337. Leipzig: B. G. Teubner 1917.]

*First solution.* Let us suppose [**85**] that

$$P(x+n) = b_0 \binom{x}{m} + b_1 \binom{x}{m-1} + \dots + b_{m-1} \binom{x}{1} + b_m, \quad b_m = P(n)$$

and that  $b_0$  is positive. Let  $n$  be chosen sufficiently large so that the prime number  $P(n)=p$  is larger than  $m$  and  $P(p+n) > p$ . [ $P(x)$  increases to infinity, and in fact monotonically for large  $x$ .] For  $x=p$  all the terms then are divisible by  $p$  and hence  $p$  is a proper divisor of  $P(p+n)$ .

*Second solution.* If  $P(x)$  is of the  $m$ th degree, then  $m!P(x)$  has integral coefficients [**86**]. Let  $a$  and  $b$  be positive integers,  $P(a)=p$  and  $P(b)=q$ , where  $p, q$ , are prime numbers,  $q > p > m$ . Choose  $c$  such that  $c \equiv a \pmod{p}$ ,  $c \equiv b \pmod{q}$ . We then have  $m!P(c) \equiv 0 \pmod{pq}$ , and thus  $P(c) \equiv 0 \pmod{pq}$ .

**98.** The odd prime number  $p$  is a prime divisor of  $x^2+1$  if and only if  $\left(\frac{-1}{p}\right) = (-1)^{\frac{p-1}{2}} = 1$ .

**99.** The prime number  $p$ ,  $p \neq 2, 3, 5$  is a prime divisor of  $x^2+15$  if and only if  $\left(\frac{-15}{p}\right) = \left(\frac{-1}{p}\right) \left(\frac{3}{p}\right) \left(\frac{5}{p}\right) = 1$ . Since

$$\left(\frac{-1}{p}\right) = (-1)^{\frac{p-1}{2}}, \quad \left(\frac{3}{p}\right) = (-1)^{\frac{p-1}{2}} \left(\frac{p}{3}\right), \quad \left(\frac{5}{p}\right) = \left(\frac{p}{5}\right),$$

$$\left(\frac{p}{3}\right) \equiv p \pmod{3}, \quad \left(\frac{p}{5}\right) \equiv p^2 \pmod{5},$$

$\left(\frac{-15}{p}\right) = \left(\frac{p}{3}\right) \left(\frac{p}{5}\right) = 1$ , if and only if  $p$  is contained either in both the sequences

$$4, 7, 10, 13, 16, 19, \dots, \quad 4, 6, 9, 11, 14, 16, 19, 21, 24, 26, \dots$$

or else in neither of them. The required prime divisors are 3, 5, and all prime numbers of the form  $15x + y$ ,  $y = 1, 2, 4, 8$ .

**100.** The polynomial  $ax^2 + bx + c$  is irreducible if and only if  $b^2 - 4ac$  is not a square. Let  $p$  be not a divisor of  $b^2 - 4ac$ . From

$$4a(ax^2 + bx + c) = (2ax + b)^2 + 4ac - b^2 \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$$

it follows that  $((b^2 - 4ac)/p) = 1$ . By the theorem of reciprocity, applied as in solution **99**, and by the Dirichlet theorem concerning the prime numbers in an arithmetic progression [cf. the footnote to **110**], there are infinitely many prime numbers such that  $((b^2 - 4ac)/p) = -1$ . With the aid of more advanced results we can extend the theorem to irreducible polynomials of arbitrary degree. Cf. G. Frobenius: Berl. Ber. I, pp. 689–703 (1896).

**101.** After multiplication by an integer  $\neq 0$ , the polynomial considered is written in the form  $(ax + b)Q(x)$ , where  $a, b$  are integers,  $a \neq 0$ ,  $Q(x)$  integral-valued,  $Q(x) \not\equiv 0$ . If  $p$  is a prime number that does not divide  $a$ , then there exist infinitely many  $x$ , such that  $ax + b \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$ , i.e.  $(ax + b)Q(x) \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$ .

$$\mathbf{102.} \quad x^6 - 11x^4 + 36x^2 - 36 = (x^2 - 2)(x^2 - 3)(x^2 - 6).$$

If  $p > 3$ , we cannot have that simultaneously  $\left(\frac{2}{p}\right) = \left(\frac{3}{p}\right) = \left(\frac{6}{p}\right) = -1$ , since

$$\left(\frac{2}{p}\right) \left(\frac{3}{p}\right) \left(\frac{6}{p}\right) = 1.$$

**103.** From **104** it follows that  $m$  is a divisor of  $p - 1$ .

**104.** From

$$x^m - 1 = K_m(x) \prod_{t|m, t < m} K_t(x)$$

[**36**] it follows that  $a^m - 1 \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$ , and thus that  $a$  is relatively prime to  $p$ . If  $a$  did not have order  $m \pmod{p}$ , then we would have that  $a^t - 1 \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$ , where  $t$  is a proper divisor of  $m$ . Hence in view of

$$x^t - 1 = \prod_{t'|t} K_{t'}(x)$$

at least one other factor of  $x^m - 1$  apart from  $K_m(x)$  would be divisible by  $p$ . Thus we would have  $a^m - 1 \equiv 0 \pmod{p^2}$  and at the same time  $(a + p)^m - 1 \equiv 0 \pmod{p^2}$ , which is impossible, since  $(a + p)^m - 1 \equiv a^m - 1 + mpa^{m-1} \pmod{p^2}$ .

**105.**  $6P - 1$  has a prime factor of the form  $6n - 1$  [**96**]; this factor is not a divisor of  $P$  and hence is distinct from all the already known prime numbers of the form  $6n - 1$ .

**106.** Cf. solution **105**.

**107.** [G. Pólya: J. reine angew. Math. **151**, pp. 19–21 (1921).] Let  $p_1, p_2, \dots, p_k, q_1, q_2, \dots, q_l$  be prime divisors of  $ab^x + c$ , where every  $q$  but no  $p$  is a divisor of  $b$ . Every  $q$  must therefore divide  $c$ . If the highest power of  $q_v$  that divides  $c$  is  $q_v^{\beta_v}$ , then, for  $x > \beta_v$ ,  $q_v^{\beta_v}$  is also the highest power of  $q_v$  that divides  $ab^x + c$ . Let  $x_0$  be an integer for which  $ab^{x_0} + c \geq 0$  and let  $p_\mu^{\alpha_\mu}$  be the highest power of  $p_\mu$  that divides  $ab^{x_0} + c$ . Setting

$$\varphi(p_1^{\alpha_1+1} p_2^{\alpha_2+1} \dots p_k^{\alpha_k+1}) = r,$$

we have for every integer  $x \geq 0$  and for  $\mu = 1, 2, \dots, k$ ,

$$ab^{x_0+r} + c \equiv ab^{x_0} + c \not\equiv 0 \pmod{p_\mu^{\alpha_\mu+1}}.$$

If now  $p_1, p_2, \dots, p_k, q_1, q_2, \dots, q_l$  were *all* the prime divisors of  $ab^x + c$ , then for all sufficiently large values integral values of  $x$  we would have

$$ab^{x_0+r} + c \not\equiv 0 \pmod{p_1^{\alpha_1+1}}, \pmod{p_2^{\alpha_2+1}}, \dots, \pmod{q_l^{\beta_l+1}},$$

$$|ab^{x_0+r} + c| \leq p_1^{\alpha_1} p_2^{\alpha_2} \dots p_k^{\alpha_k} q_1^{\beta_1} q_2^{\beta_2} \dots q_l^{\beta_l},$$

and thus bounded, which is not the case.

**108.** Every integral-valued polynomial that is not a constant has at least one prime divisor, for it assumes the values 0, 1,  $-1$  at only a finite number of points. Assume that  $P(x)$  is a polynomial with integral coefficients [86],  $P(a) = b \neq 0$  and let us assume that we know that  $p_1, p_2, \dots, p_l$  are prime divisors of  $P(x)$ . The polynomial  $b^{-1}P(a + bp_1p_2 \dots p_l x)$  is integral-valued,  $\equiv 1 \pmod{p_1p_2 \dots p_l}$  for integral  $x$ , and thus has a prime divisor *distinct* from  $p_1, p_2, \dots, p_l$ . This prime divisor is also a prime divisor of  $P(x)$ . Also possible by the method of **107** [cf. op. cit. **107**].

**109.** Yes, if  $P(x)$  is linear or a power of a linear function [95], but in no other case as can be shown with the aid of more advanced results. Cf. op. cit. **95** and C. Siegel, Math. Z. **10**, pp. 204–205 (1921).

**110.** [J. A. Serret and others; cf. E. Landau: Handbuch der Lehre von der Verteilung der Primzahlen, p. 436, p. 897. Leipzig and Berlin: B. G. Teubner, 1909.] [**108**, **103**.]

**111.** There exist two polynomials  $p(x)$  and  $q(x)$  with integral coefficients such that  $p(x)P(x) + q(x)Q(x) = m \neq 0$ , where  $m$  is an integer. Consequently  $(P(n), Q(n))$  is a divisor of  $m$ , while  $P(x), Q(x)$  have prime divisors that do not divide  $m$  [**108**].

**112.** First let  $P(x)$  have integral coefficients.  $P(x)$  has no common divisors with  $P'(x)$ . There exist infinitely many prime divisors  $p$  of  $P(x)$ , such that  $P(n) \equiv P(n+p) \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$  and  $P'(n) \not\equiv 0 \pmod{p}$  [**111**]. Since  $P(n+p) - P(n) \equiv pP'(n) \pmod{p^2}$  [**130**], both of the numbers  $P(n), P(n+p)$  cannot be divisible by  $p^2$ . In general consider  $m!P(x)$  where  $m$  is the degree of  $P(x)$  [86].

**113.** Let  $J(x), J_1(x), J_2(x), \dots$  be the distinct irreducible factors of  $P(x)$ , ordered according to multiplicity, so that

$$P(x) = [J(x)]^m [J_1(x)]^{m_1} [J_2(x)]^{m_2} \dots, \quad m \leq m_1 \leq m_2 \leq \dots$$



There exist [111] infinitely many prime divisors  $p$  of  $J(x)$ , such that from  $J(n) \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$  it will follow that  $J'(n) \not\equiv 0, J_1(n) \not\equiv 0, J_2(n) \not\equiv 0, \dots \pmod{p}$ . One of the two numbers  $J(n)$  and  $J(n+p)$  is divisible only by  $p$  [112] and hence one of the two numbers  $P(n)$  and  $P(n+p)$  is divisible only by  $p^m$  and by no higher power of  $p$ .

**114.** [Ch. Brisse, problem: *Interméd. des math.* 1, p. 10 (1894). R. Jentzsch, problem: *Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3*, 19, p. 361 (1912). Solution by W. Grosch: *Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3*, 21, p. 368 (1913). See also *Ser. 3*, 25, p. 86 (1917).] If  $P(x)$  is not an exact  $k$ th power, then there exists an integer  $a$  and two polynomials  $Q(x), R(x)$  with integral coefficients such that  $a^k P(x) = [Q(x)]^k R(x)$ , where  $Q(x)$  may possibly be  $\equiv 1$ , but  $R(x)$  in any case has a zero whose multiplicity is  $< k$  (can be seen from the factorization of  $P(x)$  into irreducible factors). There exist arbitrarily large integers  $n$  for which  $R(n)$  is divisible by a prime number  $p$  but is not divisible by  $p^k$  [113]: consequently neither  $R(n)$  nor  $P(n)$  is an exact  $k$ th power. A different solution is given in 190.

**115.** Refinement of the method of 107. [Cf. op. cit. 107, pp. 19–21.]

**116.** [Gauss. Cf. Hecke, p. 14, p. 78.]

**117.** [Gauss. Cf. *Nouv. Annls Math. Ser. 1*, 15, p. 383 (1856). Solution by De Rochas, *et al.*: *Nouv. Annls Math. Ser. 1*, 16, p. 9, p. 10, p. 71 (1857).] If  $f(a) = 0$ , where  $a$  is an integer, then  $f(x) = (x-a)\varphi(x)$ , where  $\varphi(x)$  has integral coefficients [116]. Of the two numbers  $-a, 1-a$  one is even and therefore of the two numbers  $f(0) = -a\varphi(0), f(1) \equiv (1-a)\varphi(1)$  at least one is even.

**118.** [Op. cit. 90.] Let  $f(x) = a_0 x^m + a_1 x^{m-1} + \dots + a_m, a_0 \neq 0$ , be a factor of  $P(x)$  with integral coefficients of the highest possible degree  $m$ . Then we have  $n - [n/2] \leq m < n$ . By the assumptions  $f(x)$  would have to assume for  $n$  and thus for at least  $m+1$  values of  $x$  integral values that are of absolute value less than

$$\frac{\left(n - \left[\frac{n}{2}\right]\right)!}{2^{n - \left[\frac{n}{2}\right]}} \leq \frac{m!}{2^m}.$$

From the Lagrange interpolation formula (cf. VI, introduction to § 9 p. 85) it then follows [VI 70] that  $|a_0| < 1$ , and hence  $a_0 = 0$ : Contradiction. Cf. 116.

**119.** [Op. cit. 90.] By modification of the argument in 118.

**120.** [P. Stäckel: *J. für Math.* 148, p. 104 (1918); G. Pólya, op. cit. 90.] Denoting the polynomial in question by  $P(x)$ , we have for integral  $x$

$$P(x) \equiv x(x-1)(x-2)\dots(x-n+1) \equiv 0 \pmod{n!} \quad [130].$$

The irreducibility of  $P(x)$  follows from 119 since

$$n! < \left(\frac{n!+1}{2}\right)^{n - \left[\frac{n}{2}\right]} \left(n - \left[\frac{n}{2}\right]\right)!, \quad n \geq 3.$$

The given irreducible polynomial has the maximum constant numerical factor  $n!$  that a polynomial of  $n$ th degree with integral coefficients with no common divisor can have [86].—Another counter-example [A. and R. Brauer]: The

polynomial  $x^n + 105x + 12$  has the constant numerical factor 2, and it is irreducible by the well-known *Eisenstein* criterion (HW p. 62). However, it cannot assume the values  $\pm 2$  since by the same criterion also the polynomials

$$x^n + 105x + 10, \quad x^n + 105x + 14$$

are irreducible.

**121.** [I. Schur, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 13, p. 367 (1908). Solution by W. Flügel: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 15, pp. 271–272 (1909).] If  $\varphi(x)$  and  $\psi(x)$  are polynomials with integral coefficients [116] and

$$(x-a_1)(x-a_2)\dots(x-a_n)-1=\varphi(x)\psi(x),$$

then we must have  $\varphi(a_\nu)=-\psi(a_\nu)=\pm 1$  for  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, n$ . If the polynomials  $\varphi(x)$  and  $\psi(x)$  and thus also  $\phi(x)+\psi(x)$  were of degree  $\leq n-1$ , then we would necessarily have  $\varphi(x)+\psi(x)\equiv 0$ , since it is  $=0$  at  $n$  values of  $x$ ; hence we would also have

$$(x-a_1)(x-a_2)\dots(x-a_n)-1\equiv -[\varphi(x)]^2,$$

which is impossible because of the coefficient of  $x^n$ .

**122.** [Loc. cit. 121.] If  $\varphi(x)$  and  $\psi(x)$  are polynomials of degree  $\leq n-1$  with integral coefficients and

$$F(x)\equiv x(x-a_1)(x-a_2)\dots(x-a_{n-1})+1\equiv \varphi(x)\psi(x),$$

where  $0 < a_1 < a_2 < \dots < a_{n-1}$ , then by the argument used in 121 it follows that

$$\varphi(x)\equiv \psi(x), \quad F(x)\equiv [\varphi(x)]^2, \quad n=2m,$$

where  $m$  is an integer. Now we have

$$\begin{aligned} F\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) &= 1 - \frac{1}{2} \frac{2a_1-1}{2} \frac{2a_2-1}{2} \dots \frac{2a_{n-1}-1}{2} \\ &\leq 1 - \frac{1}{2} \cdot \frac{1}{2} \cdot \frac{3}{2} \dots \frac{4m-3}{2} < 0 \quad \text{for } m \geq 3, \end{aligned}$$

and thus  $F(x)$  is not a square. Only for  $F(\frac{1}{2}) > 0$  is further discussion required.  $F(x)$  is reducible (and thus a square) only in the following two cases:

$$\begin{array}{lllll} m=2, & n=4, & a_1=1, & a_2=2, & a_3=3. \\ m=1, & n=2, & & a_1=2. & \end{array}$$

**123.** [I. Schur, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 15, p. 259 (1909).] If  $\varphi(x)$ ,  $\psi(x)$  are polynomials with integral coefficients and of degrees  $k$  and  $l$  respectively, and if further the leading coefficient of  $\varphi(x)$  is positive and we have that

$$(x-a_1)^2(x-a_2)^2\dots(x-a_n)^2+1\equiv \varphi(x)\psi(x),$$

then  $\varphi(x)$  and  $\psi(x)$  are always  $>0$  for real values of  $x$ ,  $\varphi(a_\nu)=\psi(a_\nu)=1$ ,  $\varphi(x)=x^k+\dots$ ,  $\psi(x)=x^l+\dots$ ,  $k+l=2n$ . If  $k < l$ , then  $\varphi(x)\equiv 1$ , since the value of  $\varphi(x)$  is  $=1$  for  $n \geq k+1$  values of  $x$ . If  $k=l=n$ , then the polynomial of degree  $n-1$ ,

$\varphi(x) - \psi(x)$ , vanishes for  $n$  values of  $x$  and hence vanishes identically. An identity of the form

$$\begin{aligned} 1 &\equiv [\varphi(x)]^2 - (x-a_1)^2(x-a_2)^2 \dots (x-a_n)^2 \\ &\equiv [\varphi(x) + (x-a_1)(x-a_2) \dots (x-a_n)][\varphi(x) - (x-a_1)(x-a_2) \dots (x-a_n)] \end{aligned}$$

is, however, impossible.

**124.** [I. Schur, problem: op. cit. **123**. Solution by A. and R. Brauer.] We set  $p_0(x) = (x-a_1)(x-a_2) \dots (x-a_n)$ . If  $p_0^4(x) + 1$  were reducible, then it could be factorized in the form

$$(1) \quad p_0^4(x) + 1 = [1 - p_0(x)p_{-1}(x)][1 - p_0(x)p_1(x)],$$

where  $p_{-1}(x)$  and  $p_1(x)$  are polynomials with integral coefficients and with leading coefficient  $-1$ . From (1) it follows that

$$(2) \quad \begin{aligned} p_0^4(x) &= -[p_{-1}(x) + p_1(x)] \cdot p_0(x) + p_{-1}(x) \cdot p_0^2(x) \cdot p_1(x), \\ p_{-1}(x) + p_1(x) &= -p_0(x) \cdot t(x), \end{aligned}$$

where  $t(x)$  is a polynomial with integral coefficients. Hence we have that

$$(3) \quad p_0^2(x) = t(x) + p_{-1}(x) \cdot p_1(x).$$

If now the degrees  $n_{-1}$  and  $n_1$  of  $p_{-1}(x)$  and  $p_1(x)$  are equal, we deduce from (1):  $n_{-1} = n_1 = n$ . Comparing the leading coefficients in (2), we conclude that  $t(x) = 2$ . From (2) it follows moreover that  $p_{-1}(a_\nu) = -p_1(a_\nu)$ ; hence we deduce by (3):  $p_1^2(a_\nu) = 2$ ,  $\nu = 1, 2, \dots, n$ . Since  $p_1(a_\nu)$  is rational and an integer, this is impossible. Let therefore  $n_{-1} > n_1$ . We have  $1 \equiv p_1^4(x)p_0^4(x) \pmod{1 - p_1(x)p_0(x)}$ . Hence it follows from (1) that

$$(4) \quad \begin{aligned} p_1^4(x) + 1 &\equiv p_1^4(x) + p_1^4(x) \cdot p_0^4(x) \equiv 0 \pmod{1 - p_1(x)p_0(x)}, \\ p_1^4(x) + 1 &= [1 - p_1(x)p_0(x)][1 - p_1(x)p_2(x)], \end{aligned}$$

where  $p_2(x)$ , as also in the sequel  $p_\lambda(x)$  and  $t_\lambda(x)$  in general, denotes a polynomial with integral coefficients. In the deduction of (4) from (1) we did not use the properties of the roots of  $p_0(x)$ . Hence we obtain analogously to (4), (2) and (3)

$$(5) \quad p_\lambda^4(x) + 1 = [1 - p_\lambda(x)p_{\lambda-1}(x)][1 - p_\lambda(x)p_{\lambda+1}(x)],$$

$$(6) \quad p_{\lambda-1}(x) + p_{\lambda+1}(x) = -p_\lambda(x)t_\lambda(x),$$

$$(7) \quad p_\lambda^2(x) = t_\lambda(x) + p_{\lambda-1}(x)p_{\lambda+1}(x), \quad \lambda = 0, 1, 2, \dots$$

By eliminating  $p_{\lambda-1}(x)$  and  $p_{\lambda+1}(x)$  from (6) and (7) respectively we obtain

$$\frac{p_\lambda^2(x) + p_{\lambda+1}^2(x)}{1 - p_\lambda(x)p_{\lambda+1}(x)} = t_\lambda(x) = \frac{p_\lambda^2(x) + p_{\lambda-1}^2(x)}{1 - p_\lambda(x)p_{\lambda-1}(x)} = t_{\lambda-1}(x) = t_{\lambda-2}(x) = \dots = t(x).$$

The degrees  $n_\lambda$  of the  $p_\lambda(x)$  decrease by a constant amount, for from (5) it follows, since  $n_{-1} > n_1$ , that

$$2n_\lambda = n_{\lambda-1} + n_{\lambda+1}, \quad n_{\lambda-1} - n_\lambda = n_\lambda - n_{\lambda+1}, \quad n_{\lambda+1} < n_\lambda.$$

Hence there must exist a first polynomial  $p_{\nu+1}(x)$  that vanishes identically. Set  $p_\nu(x)=y$ . From (7) we deduce for  $\lambda=\nu$ :  $y^2=t(x)$ , and thus from (6)

$$p_{\nu-1}(x)=-y^3, \quad p_{\nu-2}(x)=-p_{\nu-1}(x) \cdot y^2 - p_\nu(x) = y^5 - y, \quad \dots$$

From (6) it further follows that all the  $p_\lambda$  become polynomials in  $y$ ,  $p_\lambda(x)=q_\lambda(y)$ ; in every polynomial  $q_\lambda$  all the exponents are congruent (mod 4). Thus, together with  $\alpha$ ,  $i\alpha$  is also a root of  $q_\lambda(y)=0$ . Apart from  $q_\nu(y)$  and  $q_{\nu-1}(y)$ , all the  $q_\lambda(y)$  have zeros different from zero and hence also non-real zeros. The same is true for  $p_\lambda(x)$ , since  $y(x)$  has rational coefficients. Since  $p_0(x)$  has only real zeros, we must have that either  $\nu=1$  or  $\nu=0$ . The former alternative is not possible since then we would have  $p_0(x)=-p_1^2(x)$ , which is impossible since the zeros of  $p_0(x)$  are all distinct.

**125.** [A. and R. Brauer.] Analogously to **124**, we obtain a series of polynomials with integral coefficients  $p_{-1}(x), p_0(x), p_1(x), \dots$ , that satisfy the following equations

$$(1) \quad F[p_\lambda(x)] = \{1 - p_\lambda(x) \cdot p_{\lambda-1}(x)\} \{1 - p_\lambda(x) \cdot p_{\lambda+1}(x)\},$$

$$(2) \quad p_{\lambda-1}(x) + p_{\lambda+1}(x) = -p_\lambda(x) \cdot t(x) - A,$$

$$(3) \quad p_\lambda^2(x) + Ap_\lambda(x) + B = t(x) + p_{\lambda-1}(x)p_{\lambda+1}(x), \quad \lambda=0, 1, 2, \dots,$$

where  $t(x)$  denotes a polynomial with integral coefficients that is independent of  $\lambda$ . If  $p_{-1}(x)$  and  $p(x)$  are of the same degree, then analogously to **124** we will have

$$p_1(a_k) = \frac{-A}{2} \pm \frac{1}{2} \sqrt{A^2 - 4B + 8}, \quad k=1, 2, \dots, n.$$

Hence we must have  $A^2 - 4B + 8 = C^2$ . But if this is the case, then  $F(z)$  is reducible,

$$(4) \quad F(z) = \{z^2 + \frac{1}{2}(A+C)z + 1\} \{z^2 + \frac{1}{2}(A-C)z + 1\}.$$

If  $n_{-1} > 1$ , let  $p_{\nu+1}(x)$  again be the first identically vanishing polynomial,  $p_\nu(x)=y$ . Then we obtain  $t(x)=u(y)=y^2+Ay+B$ , and  $p_\lambda(x)=q_\lambda(y)$  are polynomials in  $y$  with integral coefficients. Together with  $p_0(x)$ ,  $q_0(y)$  has only distinct integral zeros  $b_1, b_2, \dots, b_m$ . For  $y=b_\mu$ ,  $\mu=1, 2, \dots, m$ , we obtain, setting  $q_1(b_\mu)=b_\mu^*$ ,

$$(5) \quad q_1^2(b_\mu) + Aq_1(b_\mu) + B = u(b_\mu) = b_\mu^2 + Ab_\mu + B$$

[from (3) for  $\lambda=1$ ], and hence

$$(6) \quad u(b_\mu^*) = b_\mu^{*2} + Ab_\mu^* + B = u(b_\mu) = b_\mu^2 + Ab_\mu + B.$$

Hence either  $b_\mu^* = b_\mu$  or  $b_\mu^* = -A - b_\mu$ . Now we have  $q_0(b_\mu) = q_{\nu+1}(b_\mu^*) = 0$ ,  $b_\mu^* = q_1(b_\mu) = q_\nu(b_\mu^*)$ , since  $q_\nu(y)=y$ . From  $q_\lambda(b_\mu) = q_{\nu-\lambda+1}(b_\mu^*)$  and  $q_{\lambda+1}(b_\mu) = q_{\nu-\lambda}(b_\mu^*)$  there follows from (2):

$$\begin{aligned} q_{\lambda+2}(b_\mu) &= -A - q_{\lambda+1}(b_\mu)u(b_\mu) - q_\lambda(b_\mu) \\ &= -A - q_{\nu-\lambda}(b_\mu^*)u(b_\mu^*) - q_{\nu-\lambda+1}(b_\mu^*) = q_{\nu-\lambda-1}(b_\mu^*), \\ &\quad \lambda=0, 1, \dots, \nu-1, \end{aligned}$$

and hence

$$(7) \quad b_\mu = q_\nu(b_\mu) = q_1(b_\mu^*).$$

Those  $b_\mu$ , for which  $b_\mu^* = b_\mu$ , satisfy the equation

$$(8) \quad q_1(y) = y,$$

and those for which  $b_\mu^* = -A - b_\mu$ , the equation

$$(9) \quad q_1(y) = -y - A.$$

(8) and (9) are of degree  $m-2$  if  $\nu > 1$ . Hence at least 2 of the  $b_\mu$ ,  $b_1$  and  $b_2$  say, satisfy equation (8) and at least 2 satisfy equation (9),  $b_3$  and  $b_4$  say. Since  $b_3 \neq b_4$ , we may assume that  $b_3 \neq -A/2$ , and thus  $b_3 \neq b_3^*$ . Now by (7) we have that

$$\frac{q_1(b_3) - q_1(b_1)}{b_3 - b_1} = \frac{b_3^* - b_1}{b_3 - b_1}$$

and

$$\frac{q_1(b_3^*) - q_1(b_1)}{b_3^* - b_1} = \frac{b_3 - b_1}{b_3^* - b_1}$$

are integers. Hence  $b_3^* - b_1 = \pm(b_3 - b_1)$ . The  $+$  sign is not applicable since  $b_3^* \neq b_3$ . Thus we obtain  $b_1 = (b_3^* + b_3)/2$  and analogously  $b_2 = (b_3^* + b_3)/2$  and hence  $b_1 = b_2$ . This is impossible. Hence  $\nu = 1$ :

$$q_0(y) = -y(y^2 + Ay + B) - A = -(y^3 + Ay^2 + By + A).$$

From  $b_1 + b_2 + b_3 = -A = b_1 b_2 b_3$ , it follows with suitable numbering that  $b_1 = 1$ ,  $b_2 = 2$ ,  $b_3 = 3$  or  $b_1 = -1$ ,  $b_2 = -2$ ,  $b_3 = -3$ , or  $b_1 = -b_2 > 0$ ,  $b_3 = 0$ . In the first two cases we obtain that  $F(z) = z^4 \pm 6z^3 + 11z^2 \pm 6z + 1$  is reducible by (4), in the last case  $F(z) = z^4 - b_1^2 z^2 + 1$  is positive definite only for  $b_1^2 = 1$ . Hence we obtain  $F(z) = z^4 - z^2 + 1$ ;  $b_1 = 1$ ,  $b_2 = -1$ ,  $b_3 = 0$ ;  $q_0(y) = -y(y-1)(y+1) = p_0(x) = \prod_{v=1}^n (x - a_v)$ .  $y(x)$  can have only a linear factor as otherwise  $y(x)$  and  $y(x) - 1$  would have not only integral roots  $a_v$ . Hence we obtain that

$$p_0(x) = (x - \alpha)(x - \alpha - 1)(x - \alpha - 2).$$

In this case  $F[p_0(x)]$  is in fact reducible.

**126.** [A. and R. Brauer.] Cf. solution **124**, **125**. The recurrence relations here become

$$\left. \begin{aligned} Ap_\lambda^4(x) + 1 &= [1 - p_\lambda(x)p_{\lambda-1}(x)][1 - p_\lambda(x)p_{\lambda+1}(x)] \\ p_{\lambda-1}(x) + p_{\lambda+1}(x) &= -p_\lambda(x) \cdot t(x) \\ Ap_\lambda^2(x) &= t(x) + p_{\lambda-1}(x)p_{\lambda+1}(x) \end{aligned} \right\} \text{ for even } \lambda,$$

$$\left. \begin{aligned} \frac{1}{A} p_\lambda^4(x) + 1 &= [1 - p_\lambda(x)p_{\lambda-1}(x)][1 - p_\lambda(x)p_{\lambda+1}(x)] \\ p_{\lambda-1}(x) + p_{\lambda+1}(x) &= -p_\lambda(x) \cdot \frac{1}{A} t(x) \\ \frac{1}{A} p_\lambda^2(x) &= \frac{1}{A} t(x) + p_{\lambda-1}(x)p_{\lambda+1}(x) \end{aligned} \right\} \text{ for odd } \lambda.$$

$p_{-1}(x)$  and  $p_1(x)$  here have integral coefficients; let their leading coefficients be  $A_{-1}$  and  $A_1$ ; the remaining  $p_\lambda(x)$  need not have integral coefficients. Nevertheless in the case  $n_{-1} > n$ , we can argue as in **124**, **125**.

For  $n_{-1} = n_1$ , we deduce from the recurrence relations, since  $A_{-1}A_1 = A > 0$ , that

$$\begin{aligned} [p_{-1}(x) - p_1(x)]^2 &= p_0^2(x)(A_{-1} - A_1)^2 - 4(A_{-1} + A_1), \\ \{p_{-1}(x) - p_1(x) + p_0(x)(A_{-1} - A_1)\} &\{p_{-1}(x) - p_1(x) - p_0(x)(A_{-1} - A_1)\} \\ &= -4(A_{-1} + A_1). \end{aligned}$$

From  $A_{-1}A_1 > 0$  it follows that  $A_{-1} + A_1 \neq 0$ ; the two factors on the left-hand side are constants; the leading coefficient in the first factor is thus  $2A_{-1} - 2A_1 = 0$ . Hence  $A_{-1} = A_1$ ,  $[p_{-1}(x) - p_1(x)]^2 = -8A_1$ ,  $2A_1 = -C^2$ ,  $A_1 = -2D^2$ ,  $A = 4D^4$ . Conversely we have that  $4D^4z^4 + 1 = (2D^2z^2 + 2Dz + 1)(2D^2z^2 - 2Dz + 1)$  is reducible.

**127.** [Generalization of a remark of O. Gmelin, cf. P. Stäckel, op. cit. **120**, pp. 109–110.] Let  $\varphi(x)$  be a factor with integral coefficients of  $P(x) = \varphi(x)\psi(x)$  [**116**]. Then all the zeros of  $\varphi(x)$  also lie in the half-plane  $\Re x < n - \frac{1}{2}$ . We deduce that  $|\varphi(n - \frac{1}{2} - t)| < |\varphi(n - \frac{1}{2} + t)|$ , if  $t > 0$ . Since  $\varphi(n-1) \neq 0$ ,  $\varphi(n-1)$  integral, we have that  $|\varphi(n-1)| \geq 1$  and  $\varphi(n)$  integral,  $|\varphi(n)| > 1$ . A similar statement is true for  $\psi(x)$ . Thus  $P(n)$  would have the proper divisors  $\varphi(n)$  and  $\psi(n)$ : Contradiction.

**128.** [A. Cohn.] Apply **127** with  $n = 10$  [III **24**].

**129.** [D. Hilbert: Gött. Nachr. p. 53 (1897); proof by A. Hurwitz.]  $\sqrt{r}$ ,  $\sqrt{s}$ ,  $\sqrt{rs}$ ,  $\sqrt{r} + \sqrt{s}$ ,  $\sqrt{r} - \sqrt{s}$  are irrational numbers. Hence in every linear factor the ratios of the coefficients are irrational and similarly in every quadratic factor that is obtained by combination of any two linear factors. Hence the given polynomial is irreducible in the absolute sense [introduction to § 3 p. 132]. If we have the function congruence [Hecke, pp. 11–12]

$$\begin{aligned} P(x) &\equiv (x^2 + a_1x + a_2)(x^2 + a_3x + a_4) \pmod{a}, \\ P(x) &\equiv (x^2 + b_1x + b_2)(x^2 + b_3x + b_4) \pmod{b} \end{aligned}$$

and if  $(a, b) = 1$ , then there exist numbers  $c_1, c_2, c_3$ , and  $c_4$  such that

$$\begin{aligned} c_\nu &\equiv a_\nu \pmod{a}, \quad c_\nu \equiv b_\nu \pmod{b}, \quad \nu = 1, 2, 3, 4, \\ P(x) &\equiv (x^2 + c_1x + c_2)(x^2 + c_3x + c_4) \pmod{ab}. \end{aligned}$$

Thus it is sufficient to demonstrate the factorization modulo powers of prime numbers.  $r$  is a quadratic residue mod 8 and thus mod  $2^n$ , where  $n$  is arbitrary.  $P(x)$  appears in (1) as the difference of two squares mod  $2^n$  and hence decomposes into two factors of the second degree.  $P(x)$  decomposes mod  $r^n$  by (2) and mod  $s^n$  by (1). If  $p$  is a prime number,  $p \neq 2$ ,  $p \neq r$ ,  $p \neq s$ , then certainly at least one of the three Legendre symbols  $\left(\frac{r}{p}\right)$ ,  $\left(\frac{s}{p}\right)$  and  $\left(\frac{rs}{p}\right)$  is  $= 1$ , since  $\left(\frac{r}{p}\right)\left(\frac{s}{p}\right)\left(\frac{rs}{p}\right) = 1$ . According as  $\left(\frac{r}{p}\right)$ ,  $\left(\frac{s}{p}\right)$  or  $\left(\frac{rs}{p}\right) = 1$ , (1), (2) or (3) then shows the decomposition of  $P(x) \pmod{p^n}$ . The basis for the possibility of such examples can be found in G. Frobenius, op. cit. **100**.

$$\mathbf{130.} \quad \frac{a(a+1) \dots (a+m-1)}{m!} = \binom{a+m-1}{m}. \quad [\mathbf{84, solution 136.}]$$

**131.** If the numbers in question are  $a, a+d, a+2d, \dots, a+(m-1)d$  and  $(d, m!) = 1$ , there exists a number  $d'$  satisfying  $(d', m!) = 1$  such that  $dd' \equiv 1 \pmod{m!}$ . We have, setting  $ad' = a'$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} d'^m a(a+d)(a+2d) \dots (a+(m-1)d) \\ \equiv a'(a'+1)(a'+2) \dots (a'+m-1) \pmod{m!} \end{aligned} \quad [130.]$$

**132.** [K. Hensel: J. reine angew. Math. **116**, p. 354 (1896).] [Solution V **96**.]

**133.** (a)  $n=4$  or a prime number. For if  $n$  is a composite number,  $n=ab$  and  $a < b < n-1$ , then  $(n-1)!$  is divisible by  $n$ . If  $n$  is the square of a prime number,  $n=p^2$  and  $p > 2$ , then  $n-1 > 2p$  and  $(n-1)!$  is again divisible by  $p^2$ .

(b)  $n=8, 9, p, 2p$  where  $p$  denotes a prime number. If  $n$  does *not* have the form  $p, 2p, p^2$  and  $n \neq 8, 16$  then  $n=ab$ , where  $3 \leq a < b$ . Either the numbers  $a, 2a, b, 2b$  or the numbers  $a, b, 3a, 2b$  are all distinct. In either case from  $2b < n$  we deduce the divisibility of  $(n-1)!$  by  $a^2b^2$ . We now have

$$\begin{aligned} \left\lfloor \frac{p^2-1}{p} \right\rfloor = p-1 \geq 4 \quad \text{for } p \geq 5, \\ \left\lfloor \frac{2^n-1}{2} \right\rfloor + \left\lfloor \frac{2^n-1}{4} \right\rfloor + \left\lfloor \frac{2^n-1}{8} \right\rfloor + \dots = 2^n - 1 - n > 2n \quad \text{for } n \geq 4, \end{aligned}$$

and hence by **134** there remain only the enumerated exceptional cases.

**134.** By **82** the exponent in question is

$$\left\lfloor \frac{n}{p} \right\rfloor + \left\lfloor \frac{n}{p^2} \right\rfloor + \left\lfloor \frac{n}{p^3} \right\rfloor + \dots = \sum \left\lfloor \frac{n}{p^v} \right\rfloor.$$

The sum is extended over  $l$  terms where  $p^l \leq n < p^{l+1}$ , or over infinitely many terms:  $v=1, 2, 3, \dots$

**135.** [E. Lucas: Théorie des nombres, **1**, p. 363. Paris: Gauthier-Villars, 1891.] The highest power of 10 that divides 1000! evidently has the same exponent as the highest power of 5 that divides 1000! The exponent is **[134]**

$$\left\lfloor \frac{1000}{5} \right\rfloor + \left\lfloor \frac{1000}{25} \right\rfloor + \left\lfloor \frac{1000}{125} \right\rfloor + \left\lfloor \frac{1000}{625} \right\rfloor = 200 + 40 + 8 + 1 = 249.$$

**136.** [E. Catalan: Nouv. Annls Math. Ser. 2, **13**, p. 207 (1874); E. Landau: Nouv. Annls Math. Ser. 3, **19**, pp. 344–362 (1900).] Let  $p$  be a prime number,  $v$  a positive integer. Setting  $ap^{-v} = a', bp^{-v} = b'$  it suffices **[134]** to prove the following:

$$[2a'] + [2b'] \geq [a'] + [b'] + [a' + b'].$$

Cf. **8**.

**137.** [F. G. Teixeira: C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris) **92**, p. 1066 (1881); M. Weill: S. M. F. Bull. **9**, p. 172 (1881).] It suffices **[134]** to show that

$$\left\lfloor \frac{hn}{p} \right\rfloor + \left\lfloor \frac{hn}{p^2} \right\rfloor + \dots \geq n \left( \left\lfloor \frac{h}{p} \right\rfloor + \left\lfloor \frac{h}{p^2} \right\rfloor + \dots \right) + \left\lfloor \frac{n}{p} \right\rfloor + \left\lfloor \frac{n}{p^2} \right\rfloor + \dots$$

where  $p$  is a prime number.

(a)  $(h, p) = 1$ :  $h \geq [h/p^v]p^v + 1$ , hence

$$\left\lfloor \frac{nh}{p^v} \right\rfloor \geq n \left\lfloor \frac{h}{p^v} \right\rfloor + \left\lfloor \frac{n}{p^v} \right\rfloor, \quad v=1, 2, 3, \dots$$

(b)  $h = p^\alpha h'$ ,  $(h', p) = 1$ . Then on the left-hand side and on the right-hand side the first  $\alpha$  terms cancel and the assertion becomes

$$\left[\frac{h'n}{p}\right] + \left[\frac{h'n}{p^2}\right] + \dots \geq n \left( \left[\frac{h'}{p}\right] + \left[\frac{h'}{p^2}\right] + \dots \right) + \left[\frac{n}{p}\right] + \left[\frac{n}{p^2}\right] + \dots$$

Cf. (a).

**138.** Let  $m! = \tau M$ , where  $\tau$  contains only prime factors of  $t$  and  $(M, t) = 1$ . Let  $tt' \equiv 1 \pmod{M}$ . Then we have, similarly as in **131**,

$$t'^m s(s-t)(s-2t) \dots [s-(m-1)t] \equiv t's(t's-1) \dots [t's-(m-1)] \equiv 0 \pmod{M}.$$

**139.** By **134** and **138** we have

$$\alpha_n = n\alpha + \left[\frac{n}{p}\right] + \left[\frac{n}{p^2}\right] + \left[\frac{n}{p^3}\right] + \dots, \quad \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\alpha_n}{n} = \alpha + \frac{1}{p-1}.$$

**140.** If  $t = p^\alpha q^\beta r^\gamma \dots$ , where  $p, q, r, \dots$  are distinct prime numbers, then  $T = p^{\alpha+1} q^{\beta+1} r^{\gamma+1} \dots$  [**139**], since

$$n\alpha + \left[\frac{n}{p}\right] + \left[\frac{n}{p^2}\right] + \dots < n \left( \alpha + \frac{1}{p-1} \right) \leq n(\alpha+1),$$

$$n\beta + \left[\frac{n}{q}\right] + \left[\frac{n}{q^2}\right] + \dots < n(\beta+1), \dots, \quad \text{and so on.}$$

**141.** Let  $f(z) = P(z)/Q(z)$ , where  $Q(0) \neq 0$ , and  $P(z)$  and  $Q(z)$  are polynomials with integral coefficients [**149**].  $Q(0)f[zQ(0)]$ , after simplification by cancellation of  $Q(0)$ , may be represented as the quotient of two polynomials with integral coefficients, where the denominator assumes the value 1 for  $z=0$ . Cf. the last part of solution **142**.

**142.** If  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$  satisfy the Eisenstein condition, then  $f(z) - f(0)$  and  $g(z) - g(0)$  may be *simultaneously* transformed into power series with integral coefficients by replacing  $z$  by  $Tz$  ( $T$  a suitably chosen positive integer).

If  $F(z)$  and  $G(z)$  are power series with integral coefficients, then so are  $F(z) + G(z)$ ,  $F(z) - G(z)$ ,  $F(z)G(z)$ , and also  $F[G(z)]$ , if we assume that  $G(0) = 0$ , and  $F(z)/G(z)$  if we assume that  $G(0) = 1$ . For we have

$$G(z) = 1 - a_1 z - a_2 z^2 - \dots = 1 - H(z),$$

where  $a_1, a_2, \dots$  are integers, and we deduce that

$$[G(z)]^{-1} = [1 - H(z)]^{-1} = 1 + H(z) + [H(z)]^2 + [H(z)]^3 + \dots$$

arranged in ascending powers of  $z$  is a power series with integral coefficients.

**143.** From the definition.

**144.** [Cf. G. Pólya: Acta Math. **42**, p. 314 (1920).] Conditions (1) and (2) follow directly from the Eisenstein condition. That (1) and (2) imply the Eisenstein condition we can show as follows: Assume that

$$\frac{\log t_n}{n} < A, \quad n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$



Then if a prime factor  $p$  occurs exactly  $\nu_n$  times in  $t_n$  we have that

$$\frac{\nu_n}{n} \log p < A, \quad \frac{\nu_n}{n} < \frac{A}{\log 2} = B.$$

If  $P$  denotes the product of those prime numbers that divide  $t_1, t_2, t_3, \dots$ , and  $k$  is an integer,  $k > B$ , then we may set  $T = P^k$ . For every factor  $p$  of  $P$  occurs in  $T^n$  exactly  $kn$  times, and  $kn > \nu_n$  for  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$

$$145. \quad \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{2^{n+1}}{2^{n+1}-1} z^n, \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{u_n}{2^{n^2}} z^n,$$

where  $u_n/2^{n^2} = \sum_{t|n} 1/2^{nt}$ , and thus  $u_n$  is odd. The first series satisfies (2) but not (1) [107], the second series satisfies (1) but not (2), and neither of the two satisfies the complete Eisenstein condition, neither is algebraic.

146. Setting

$$(1-z)^{-\alpha} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n z^n, \quad (1-z)^{-\beta+\gamma-1} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} b_n z^n,$$

we have

$$\frac{\beta-\gamma+1}{1} \cdot \frac{\beta-\gamma+2}{2} \cdots \frac{\beta-1}{\gamma-1} F(\alpha, \beta, \gamma; z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n b_{n+\gamma-1} z^n$$

[140, 143]. For further investigations and literature see A. Errera: Palermo Rend. 35, pp. 107–144 (1913).

147. The quotients of two successive coefficients is  $[(\alpha+n)(\beta+n)]/[(1+n)(\gamma+n)]$ . If  $\alpha \neq \gamma$ ,  $\beta \neq \gamma$  and  $[(\alpha+x)(\beta+x)]/[(1+x)(\gamma+x)]$  is rational for  $x=0, 1, 2, \dots$ , then  $\alpha\beta$ ,  $\alpha+\beta$  and  $\gamma$  are rational numbers [92].

148. Choose  $a \geq 0$  such that  $a(\alpha+x)(\beta+x) = ax^2 + bx + c$ , where  $a$ ,  $b$ , and  $c$  are integers. If  $F(\alpha, \beta, \gamma; z)$  were algebraic, then [144 (1)] every prime number  $p$  (with the exception of a finite number) would have to be a prime divisor of  $ax^2 + bx + c$ . Cf. however 100.

149. A special case of 150.

150. A special case of 151.

151. [Cf. E. Heine: J. reine angew. Math. 48, pp. 269–271 (1854); Theorie der Kugelfunktionen, 2nd ed., pp. 52–53. Berlin: Reimer, 1878.]

*First Proof.* Consider the coefficients of  $R$ . If the function  $R$  does not vanish identically, then it may be written in the form  $R_0 + \alpha_1 R_1 + \alpha_2 R_2 + \cdots + \alpha_l R_l$  where  $R_0, R_1, R_2, \dots, R_l$  are rational entire functions in  $z, y, y', \dots, y^{(l)}$  with rational coefficients and where  $1, \alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_l$  are *rationally independent*, i.e. from  $n_0 + n_1 \alpha_1 + n_2 \alpha_2 + \cdots + n_l \alpha_l = 0$  with  $n_0, n_1, n_2, \dots, n_l$  rational it follows that  $n_0 = n_1 = n_2 = \cdots = n_l = 0$ . If in  $R_0, R_1, R_2, \dots, R_l$  we set for  $y$  the power series  $a_0 + a_1 z + \cdots + a_n z^n + \cdots$ , then we obtain the power series  $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} t_n^{(\nu)} z^n$ ,  $\nu = 0, 1, \dots, l$ , where the coefficients  $t_n^{(\nu)}$  are rational, respectively. By comparing the coefficients of  $z^n$ , it follows that  $t_n^{(0)} + \alpha_1 t_n^{(1)} + \cdots + \alpha_l t_n^{(l)} = 0$ , i.e.  $t_n^{(0)} = t_n^{(1)} = \cdots = t_n^{(l)} = 0$ , so that

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} t_n^{(\nu)} z^n \equiv 0, \quad \nu = 0, 1, \dots, l.$$

*Second Proof.* Consider the coefficients of  $y$ . The existence of the relation  $R=0$  implies that the power series of a certain finite number of functions of the form  $z^\mu y^\nu (y')^{\nu_1} (y'')^{\nu_2} \dots (y^{(r)})^{\nu_r}$  are linearly dependent [introduction to VII 33 p. 100]. Express one of these power series linearly in terms of a distinct set of linearly independent power series. The constant factors required for this representation are constructed by means of the system of equations (\*) occurring in solution VII 33 rationally from the coefficients of the power series  $y$ , and thus in the present instance are rational numbers.

**152.** [E. Heine, op. cit. **151**, p. 50.] The discriminant of the equation of degree  $l$  in  $w$

$$(*) \quad F_0(z)w^l + F_1(z)w^{l-1} + \dots + F_{l-1}(z)w + F_l(z) = 0$$

is a rational entire expression in  $F_0, F_1, \dots, F_{l-1}, F_l$ , and hence an analytic function that is regular in a neighbourhood of  $z=0$ . In case it should vanish identically, we can construct an equation by means of rational operations which is satisfied by  $f(z)$  and whose discriminant does not vanish identically. Thus let us assume that the discriminant of (\*) itself does not vanish identically. Then there exist  $l$  distinct functions  $w_1 = f(z), w_2, \dots, w_l$ , that are regular in some annular region  $0 < |z| < \rho$ ,  $\rho > 0$ , are perhaps many-valued, and satisfy the equation (\*). At the point  $z=0$  they may have an algebraic singularity. If a function  $\varphi(z)$  with the same properties as  $w$  has the property that

$$(\varphi(z) - c_0 - c_1z - \dots - c_{n-1}z^{n-1})z^{-n}$$

remains bounded in the neighbourhood of  $z=0$  for arbitrarily large values of  $n$ , then we have that identically  $\varphi(z) = f(z)$  [IV 166]. Consider a number  $m$  such that the  $l-1$  functions

$$(w_\lambda - c_0 - c_1z - \dots - c_{m-1}z^{m-1})z^{-m}, \quad \lambda = 2, 3, \dots, l$$

are all unbounded in the neighbourhood of  $z=0$ . If we set in (\*)

$$w = c_0 + c_1z + \dots + c_{m-1}z^{m-1} + z^m y,$$

then we obtain an equation for  $y$  of the same type as (\*). Dividing the coefficients by a suitable power of  $z$  this equation may be expressed in the form

$$(**) \quad G_0(z)y^l + G_1(z)y^{l-1} + \dots + G_{l-1}(z)y + G_l(z) = 0,$$

where not all the numbers  $G_0(0), G_1(0), \dots, G_{l-1}(0), G_l(0)$  vanish. If  $G_0(0) = G_1(0) = \dots = G_{h-1}(0) = 0$ ,  $G_h(0) \neq 0$ , then (\*\*) has (for instance by the Weierstrass preparation theorem)  $l-h$  solutions bounded for  $z=0$ . (\*\*) has in fact only one solution that is bounded for  $z=0$ , namely  $c_m + c_{m+1}z + c_{m+2}z^2 + \dots$ . Hence  $l-h=1$ ,  $h=l-1$ , q.e.d.

**153.** [Op. cit. **151**.] We may assume that, if we set  $f(z) = c_0 + c_1z + c_2z^2 + \dots$ , then  $P_0(0) = P_1(0) = \dots = P_{l-2}(0) = 0$ ,  $P_{l-1}(0) = a \neq 0$  [**152**],  $P_0(z), P_1(z), \dots, P_l(z)$  are power series with integral coefficients,  $c_0 \neq 0$  and  $c_0$  is an integer. Setting  $z=0$  we obtain  $ac_0 + P_l(0) = 0$ , and thus  $P_l(0)$  is divisible by  $a$ . Hence  $a^{-1}P_\lambda(az)$  is a power series with integral coefficients,  $\lambda = 0, 1, 2, \dots, l$ , and in particular  $a^{-1}P_{l-1}(0) = 1$ . Hence we may set

$$(*) \quad f(az) = Q_0(z) + Q_2(z)[f(az)]^2 + \cdots + Q_l(z)[f(az)]^l,$$

where  $Q_\lambda(z) = -[a^{-1}P_{l-\lambda}(az)]/[a^{-1}P_{l-1}(az)]$  is again a power series with integral coefficients [solution 142],  $\lambda = 0, 2, 3, \dots, l$ , and  $Q_\lambda(0) = 0$  for  $\lambda = 2, 3, \dots, l$ . From (\*) we can determine  $a^n c_n$  by comparing coefficients as an entire function with integral coefficients of  $c_0, ac_1, a^2c_2, \dots, a^{n-1}c_{n-1}$ , and hence (by recursion) we find that it is an integer.

**154.** Let  $P(z), Q(z), Q_2(z), Q_3(z), \dots$  be power series with rational coefficients, and set  $y = c_0 + c_1z + c_2z^2 + \cdots$ . If one of the following six equations holds

$$\begin{aligned} y &= P(z) + Q(z), & y &= P(z) - Q(z), & y &= P(z)Q(z), \\ y &= \frac{P(z)}{Q(z)}, & \text{assuming } Q(0) &= 1 & & \text{[142],} \\ y &= P[Q(z)], & \text{assuming } Q(0) &= 0, & & \\ y &= Q(z) + Q_2(z)y^2 + Q_3(z)y^3 + \cdots + Q_l(z)y^l, & \text{assuming} & & & \\ & Q_2(0) = Q_3(0) = \cdots = Q_l(0) = 0 & & & & \text{[152],} \end{aligned}$$

then  $c_n$  is a uniquely determined rational number, given as a rational and *entire* function of the coefficients of  $1, z, z^2, \dots, z^n$  in the expansions of  $P(z), Q(z), Q_2(z), \dots$ , which therefore can have only such prime numbers in its denominator as occur also in the denominators of the coefficients mentioned above. [Cf., op. cit., 144.]

**155.** [A. Hurwitz, Cf. G. Pólya: Math. Ann. 77, pp. 510–512 (1916).] Let  $p$  be a prime number, that divides all the  $c_n = \sum_{v=0}^n a_v b_{n-v}$  but not all the  $a_n$ ,  $n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$ . Let for example  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_{k-1} \equiv 0, a_k \not\equiv 0 \pmod{p}$ . From  $c_k \equiv a_k b_0 \pmod{p}$  it then follows that  $b_0 \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$ , from  $c_{k+1} \equiv a_k b_1 \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$  it follows that  $b_1 \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$ , from  $c_{k+2} \equiv a_k b_2 \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$  it follows that  $b_2 \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$  and so on.

**156.** [P. Fatou: Acta Math. 30, p. 369 (1906). The solution given here is due to A. Hurwitz; cf. G. Pólya, op. cit., 155.] It is sufficient to prove the theorem for primitive power series  $f(z) = a_0 + a_1z + a_2z^2 + \cdots$  [155]. By 149 we have  $f(z) = P(z)/Q(z)$ , where  $P(z)$  and  $Q(z)$  have integral coefficients and their coefficients are relatively prime. Then the (terminating) power series  $Q(z)$  is primitive. For if its coefficients had a common divisor  $t$ , then, since  $P(z) = t[Q(z)/t]f(z)$ ,  $t$  would also have to divide the coefficients of  $P(z)$ . Now determine two polynomials  $p(z), q(z)$  with integral coefficients, such that  $p(z)P(z) + q(z)Q(z) = m \neq 0$ , where  $m$  is an integer. Setting  $q(z) + p(z)f(z) = R(z)$ , we have  $m = Q(z)R(z)$ . Here  $R(z)$  has integral coefficients and is not primitive if  $m \neq \pm 1$  (otherwise [155]  $m$  would also have to be primitive); its coefficients are in any case divisible by  $m$ . From  $1 = Q(0)[R(0)/m]$  it follows that  $Q(0) = \pm 1$ .

**157.** For rational  $\vartheta$  the sequence  $a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots$  is periodic from a certain term on and hence  $f(z) = a_1z + a_2z^2 + \cdots + a_nz^n + \cdots$  is rational. For irrational  $\vartheta$ ,  $f(z)$  cannot be rational since it would then [149] be a quotient of two polynomials with integral coefficients, and thus  $f(1/10)$  would be rational.

**158.** [Cf. E. Landau: Nouv. Annls Math. Ser. 4, 3, pp. 333–336 (1903). R. Jentzsch: Math. Ann. 78, p. 277 (1918).] “If the sequence of coefficients is periodic, then the function represented by it is rational” is easily proved (geo-

metric series). Conversely: Let the numbers  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$  take only  $m$  different values, and let the denominator be  $=1+l_1z+l_2z^2+\dots+l_kz^k$ . We have  $a_n+l_1a_{n-1}+l_2a_{n-2}+\dots+l_ka_{n-k}=0$  for sufficiently large  $n$ . Since there are only  $m^k$  different systems  $a_{n-1}, a_{n-2}, \dots, a_{n-k}$ , there exist two numbers  $\mu, \nu, \mu < \nu \leq \mu+m^k$ , such that

$$a_{\mu-1}=a_{\nu-1}, \quad a_{\mu-2}=a_{\nu-2}, \quad \dots, \quad a_{\mu-k}=a_{\nu-k}.$$

But then it follows that  $a_\mu=a_\nu$ , and hence also  $a_{\mu+1}=a_{\nu+1}, a_{\mu+2}=a_{\nu+2}, \dots$

**159.** The coefficients of

$$(1-z)^{-l-1} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \binom{l+n}{l} z^n$$

are periodic modulo any prime number  $p$ . If  $p > l$ , then  $l!$  and  $p$  are relatively prime and

$$(n+1)(n+2)\dots(n+l) \equiv (n+p+1)(n+p+2)\dots(n+p+l) \pmod{p}.$$

If  $p \leq l$ ,  $l! = p^a L$ ,  $(L, p) = 1$ , then  $\binom{n+p^{a+1}}{l} \equiv \binom{n}{l} \pmod{p}$ , since the symbolic

numerators of these binomial coefficients are congruent  $\pmod{p^{a+1}}$ .—The sequence of coefficients obtained after multiplication by  $P(z)$  is periodic from a certain term on.

**160.** 
$$\frac{(D-1)z}{(1-Dz)(1-z)} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (D^n - 1)z^n.$$

If  $k$  is the smallest number such that  $D^{n-k} \equiv D^n \pmod{p}$ , i.e.  $D^k \equiv 1 \pmod{p}$ , then  $k$  is a divisor of  $p-1$ .

**161.** 
$$(1-Dz^2)^{-1} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} D^n z^{2n}.$$

The length of the period  $k$  is even,  $k=2k'$ ;  $k'$  is the smallest positive integer such that  $D^{k'} \equiv 1 \pmod{p}$ . Since  $D^{p-1} \equiv 1 \pmod{p}$ ,  $k'$  is a divisor of  $p-1$ . However, for odd  $p$  we have that  $D^{\frac{p-1}{2}} \equiv 1 \pmod{p}$ , if  $\left(\frac{D}{p}\right) = 1$ , and thus  $k'$  divides  $(p-1)/2$ .

Conversely  $D^{\frac{p-1}{2}} \equiv 1 \pmod{p}$  follows from " $D^{k'} \equiv 1 \pmod{p}$ ,  $k'$  divides  $\frac{1}{2}(p-1)$ ."

**162.**

$p$	2	3	5	7	11	13	17	19	23	29
length of period	3	8	20	16	10	28	36	18	48	14
$p-1$	—	—	—	—	10	—	—	18	—	28
$p^2-1$	3	8	—	48	—	168	288	—	528	—

Of the two numbers  $p-1$  and  $p^2-1$ ,  $p-1$  is given in the table if  $p-1$  is a multiple of the length of the period and  $p^2-1$  is given if  $p-1$  is not a multiple but  $p^2-1$  is a multiple of the length of the period. Whether the first or the second case occurs depends on whether  $p$  is or is not a quadratic residue  $\pmod{5}$ . The number 5 occupies an exceptional position. Cf. A. Speiser: Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 23, p. 177 (1922).

**163.** If  $a_n$  are the coefficients in the expansion considered, then  $a_n+l_1a_{n-1}+l_2a_{n-2}+\dots+l_ka_{n-k}=0$  for  $n$  sufficiently large, where  $l_1, l_2, \dots, l_k$  are integers

[156]. Since mod  $m$  there are only  $m^k$  different systems  $a_{n-1}, a_{n-2}, \dots, a_{n-k}$ , there exist two numbers  $\mu$  and  $\nu$  such that  $a_{\mu-1} \equiv a_{\nu-1}, a_{\mu-2} \equiv a_{\nu-2}, \dots, a_{\mu-k} \equiv a_{\nu-k} \pmod{m}$ ,  $\mu \neq \nu$ . Hence  $a_\mu \equiv a_\nu$ , and  $a_{\mu+1} \equiv a_{\nu+1}, \dots \pmod{m}$  [158].

**164.** [G. Pólya: Tôhoku Math. J. 22, p. 79 (1922).] We have  $(1-4z)^{-1/2} = \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \binom{2m}{m} z^m$ . Let  $p$  be an odd prime number and  $p^{r-1}$  its highest power that divides  $(2k-1)!$ ,  $k \geq 1, r \geq 1$ . We deduce from **134** that

$$\binom{2p^r}{p^r} = \frac{(2p^r)!}{p^r! p^r!} \not\equiv 0 \pmod{p}.$$

On the other hand we have

$$\begin{aligned} \binom{2p^r}{p^r} &= \frac{2}{1} \cdot \frac{2p^r-1}{p^r} \cdot \frac{2p^r-2}{p^r-1} \cdot \frac{2p^r-3}{p^r-1} \cdots \frac{2p^r-2q+2}{p^r-q+1} \cdot \frac{2p^r-2q+1}{p^r-q+1} \binom{2(p^r-q)}{p^r-q}, \\ -2(2q-1)! \binom{2(p^r-q)}{p^r-q} &\equiv 0 \pmod{p^r}, \quad \binom{2(p^r-q)}{p^r-q} \equiv 0 \pmod{p} \end{aligned}$$

for  $q=1, 2, 3, \dots, k$ . Since  $k$  and thus  $r$  may be arbitrarily large, in the sequence of coefficients reduced mod  $p$  there occur arbitrarily long sequences of zeros, followed by a term that is  $\not\equiv 0$ .

**165.** For  $z=1$  the general term does not tend to 0.

[For the background of **165–173** see G. Pólya: Math. Ann. 77, pp. 497–513 (1916), also Proc. Lond. Math. Soc., Ser. 2, 21, pp. 22–38 (1923), and F. Carlson: Math. Z. 9, pp. 1–13 (1921). For heuristic considerations see also MPR, 2, p. 46, ex. 14.]

**166.** [P. Fatou: Acta. Math. 30, pp. 368–371 (1906).] Setting  $f(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n z^n$ , the series

$$|a_0|^2 + |a_1|^2 + \cdots + |a_n|^2 + \cdots$$

would have to converge [III 122].

**167.** [P. Fatou, op. cit. 166.] By **150** the algebraic function considered satisfies an equation of the form

$$P_0(z)[f(z)]^l + P_1(z)[f(z)]^{l-1} + \cdots + P_{l-1}(z)f(z) + P_l(z) = 0,$$

where  $P_0(z), P_1(z), \dots, P_l(z)$  have rational integral coefficients. It follows from this that  $y = P_0(z)f(z)$  satisfies the equation

$$y^l + P_1(z)y^{l-1} + P_2(z)P_0(z)y^{l-2} + \cdots + P_l(z)P_0(z)^{l-1} = 0.$$

$y$  cannot be infinite for any finite value of  $z$ , since, if  $y$  were infinite,  $y^l$  on the left-hand side would be of higher order than the other terms and so the equation could not be satisfied. However,  $y = P_0(z)f(z)$  is by hypothesis a non-terminating power series with integral coefficients [166].

**168.** [F. Carlson: Math. Z., 9, p. 1 (1921).]

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{1-4z^l}} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \binom{2n}{n} z^{ln},$$

where  $l$  is an arbitrarily large integer.

**169.** [G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 23, p. 289 (1915).] In the first case the numbers  $P(n) - [P(n)]$  are periodic [158]. In the second case let us assume that the power series  $f(z)$  under consideration is rational. We may assume  $a_0$  irrational; otherwise consider

$$\frac{f(z) + f\left(ze^{\frac{2\pi i}{k}}\right) + \cdots + f\left(ze^{(k-1)\frac{2\pi i}{k}}\right)}{k} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} [P(kn)]z^{kn}$$

and choose  $k$  such that  $a_0 k^r$  is an integer, and accordingly  $P(kn)$  is given by  $[P(kn)] = a_0 k^r n^r + [a_1 k^{r-1} n^{r-1} + \cdots]$ . Applying I 85 we obtain

$$\lim_{z \rightarrow 1-0} (1-z)^{r+1} f(z) = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{[P(n)]}{\binom{r+n}{r}} = r! a_0,$$

which is impossible since [149] the limit on the left-hand side must be rational.

**170.** [Cf. D. Hansen: Thèse, p. 65. Copenhagen 1904. G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 27, pp. 161–162 (1918). Proc. Lond. Math. Soc. Ser. 2, 21, pp. 36–38 (1922).] That the assumptions regarding the  $a_n$  cannot be weakened in any very obvious fashion is shown by 69.

**171.** [Op. cit. 170.] Cf. 71.

**172.** We have  $Q_n - Q_{n-1} = 1 - 9A_n$ , where  $A_n$  denotes the number of zeros at the end of the decimal representation of  $n$ . Hence we have

$$(1-z) \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} Q_n z^n = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (Q_n - Q_{n-1}) z^n = \frac{z}{1-z} - 9 \left( \frac{z^{10}}{1-z^{10}} + \frac{z^{100}}{1-z^{100}} + \frac{z^{1000}}{1-z^{1000}} + \cdots \right).$$

The function

$$f(z) = \frac{z}{1-z} + \frac{z^{10}}{1-z^{10}} + \frac{z^{100}}{1-z^{100}} + \frac{z^{1000}}{1-z^{1000}} + \cdots$$

has  $|z|=1$  as its natural boundary. In fact  $z=1$  is a singular point [ $\lim_{z \rightarrow 1-0} f(z) = +\infty$ ], and also  $z = e^{\frac{2\pi i \nu}{10^m}}$ ,  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, 10^m-1$ , since the function obtained by deleting the first  $m$  terms is transformed into  $f(z)$  if we replace  $z^{10^m}$  by  $z$ , whereas the  $m$  omitted terms behave as regular functions at those  $10^m$ th roots of unity that are not  $10^{m-1}$ th roots of unity.

**173.** [G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 25, p. 85 (1917). Solution by R. Jentzsch: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 27, pp. 90–91 (1918).] Apply the *Hadamard gap theorem* to  $(1-z) \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} d_n z^n$ .

**174.** Differentiation replaces the sequence of coefficients  $a_0, a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots$  by  $a_1, a_2, a_3, a_4, \dots$ , and the indicated integration replaces them by  $0, a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$

**175.** For the multiplication cf. I 34. If

$$g(z) = 1 + \frac{b_1}{1!} z + \frac{b_2}{2!} z^2 + \cdots + \frac{b_n}{n!} z^n + \cdots = 1 - h(z),$$

then  $h(z)$  is a power series with  $H$ -integral coefficients and so is

$$\frac{1}{g(z)} = \frac{1}{1-h(z)} = 1 + h(z) + [h(z)]^2 + [h(z)]^3 + \cdots.$$

**176.** If we assume that  $[f(z)]^m/m!$  is a power series with  $H$ -integral coefficients, then it follows [174, 175] that the same is true of

$$\int_0^z \frac{[f(z)]^m}{m!} f'(z) dz = \frac{[f(z)]^{m+1}}{(m+1)!}.$$

**177.**

$$g(z) = b_0 + \frac{b_1}{1!} z + \frac{b_2}{2!} z^2 + \cdots + \frac{b_m}{m!} z^m + \cdots,$$

$$g[f(z)] = b_0 + \frac{b_1}{1!} f(z) + \frac{b_2}{2!} [f(z)]^2 + \cdots + \frac{b_m}{m!} [f(z)]^m + \cdots$$

is a power series with  $H$ -integral coefficients in view of 176.

**178.** In general: if  $y$  is determined by a differential equation of the form

$$\frac{d^n y}{dx^n} = P\left(x, y, \frac{dy}{dx}, \frac{d^2 y}{dx^2}, \dots, \frac{d^{n-1} y}{dx^{n-1}}\right)$$

and by the initial conditions  $y = m_0, y' = m_1, \dots, y^{(n-1)} = m_{n-1}$  for  $x=0$ , where  $P$  is a rational entire function with integral coefficients and  $m_0, m_1, \dots, m_{n-1}$  are integers, then all the derivatives of  $y$  at  $x=0$  have integral values, and thus  $y$  is a power-series with  $H$ -integral coefficients. In particular: we have  $\varphi'' = -2\varphi^3$ ,  $\varphi(0)=0$ ,  $\varphi'(0)=1$ .

**179.**

$$\begin{aligned} (e^z - 1)^3 &= e^{3z} - 3e^{2z} + 3e^z - 1 \\ &= \sum_{n=2}^{\infty} \frac{3^n - 3 \cdot 2^n + 3}{n!} z^n = \sum_{n=2}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^n - 1}{n!} z^n \pmod{4}. \end{aligned}$$

**180.**

$$\begin{aligned} (e^z - 1)^{p-1} &= z^{p-1} + \cdots \equiv \frac{-1}{(p-1)!} z^{p-1} + \cdots \pmod{p} \\ &= e^{(p-1)z} - \binom{p-1}{1} e^{(p-2)z} + \binom{p-1}{2} e^{(p-3)z} - \cdots - \binom{p-1}{p-2} e^z + 1 \\ &= \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{(p-1)^n - \binom{p-1}{1} (p-2)^n + \binom{p-1}{2} (p-3)^n - \cdots - \binom{p-1}{p-2}}{n!} z^n. \end{aligned}$$

In the first line we have used *Wilson's theorem*  $(p-1)! \equiv -1 \pmod{p}$ . From the third line (where incidentally we have assumed  $p \geq 3$ ) it follows that the coefficient of  $z^n/n!$  is periodic mod  $p$  with period  $p-1$ ,  $n=1, 2, 3, \dots, p-1, p, \dots$ . Now again make use of the first line!

**181.** From 176 and 133 or from I 41 and 133.

**182.** [Theorem of K. G. Ch. v. Staudt and Th. Clausen. For the proof see J. C. Kluyver: Math. Ann. 53, pp. 591–592 (1900).] From

$$\begin{aligned} z &= \log [1 + (e^z - 1)], \\ \frac{z}{e^z - 1} &= 1 - \frac{e^z - 1}{2} + \frac{(e^z - 1)^2}{3} - \frac{(e^z - 1)^3}{4} + \cdots \end{aligned}$$

it follows [179–181] that

$$\frac{z}{e^z-1} = g(z) - \frac{z}{2} - \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{z^2}{2!} + \frac{z^4}{4!} + \frac{z^6}{6!} + \cdots \right) \\ - \sum_p \frac{1}{p} \left( \frac{z^{p-1}}{(p-1)!} + \frac{z^{2p-2}}{(2p-2)!} + \frac{z^{3p-3}}{(3p-3)!} + \cdots \right),$$

where  $g(z)$  is a power series with  $H$ -integral coefficients and the summation  $\sum_p$  is extended over the odd prime numbers 3, 5, 7, 11, ...

**183.**

$$\frac{dz}{d\varphi} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1-\varphi^4}} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \binom{2n}{n} \frac{\varphi^{4n}}{2^{2n}}, \quad \frac{z}{\varphi(z)} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \binom{2n}{n} \frac{(4n)!}{2^{2n}(4n+1)} \frac{[\varphi(z)]^{4n}}{(4n)!};$$

$(4n)!$  is divisible by  $2^{2n}$  [134] and also by  $4n+1$ , if  $4n+1$  is not a prime number [133];  $[\varphi(z)]^{4n}/(4n)!$  is a power series with  $H$ -integral coefficients [178, 176].

**184.** From the differential equation 178 it follows that

$$\left[ \frac{d}{dz} \left( \frac{1}{\varphi^2} \right) \right]^2 = 4 \frac{1}{\varphi^6} - 4 \frac{1}{\varphi^2},$$

and hence  $1/\varphi^2 = \wp$ , and moreover that

$$\frac{dz^2}{d\varphi} = \frac{2z}{\sqrt{1-\varphi^4}}, \quad (1-\varphi^4) \frac{d^2 z^2}{d\varphi^2} - 2\varphi^3 \frac{dz^2}{d\varphi} = 2.$$

We seek the solution  $z^2$  that satisfies the initial condition  $z^2 = dz^2/d\varphi = 0$  at  $\varphi = 0$  and find that

$$z^2 = \varphi^2 + \frac{3}{5} \frac{\varphi^6}{3} + \frac{3}{5} \cdot \frac{7}{9} \cdot \frac{\varphi^{10}}{5} + \frac{3}{5} \cdot \frac{7}{9} \cdot \frac{11}{13} \cdot \frac{\varphi^{14}}{7} + \cdots, \\ z^2 \wp(z) = \left( \frac{z}{\varphi(z)} \right)^2 = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{G_n H_n}{(4n+1)(2n+1)} \frac{[\varphi(z)]^{4n}}{(4n)!},$$

where  $G_n = 3 \cdot 7 \cdot 11 \cdots (4n-1)$ ,  $H_n = 2 \cdot 3 \cdot 4 \cdot 6 \cdot 7 \cdot 8 \cdots (4n-2)(4n-1)4n$ . If  $2n+1 \equiv -1 \pmod{4}$  then  $2n+1$  divides  $G_n$ . Let  $2n+1 \equiv 1 \pmod{4}$  and  $2n+1 = ab$ ,  $a > 1$ ,  $b > 1$ . If  $a \equiv b \equiv -1 \pmod{4}$ , then both the numbers  $a$  and  $b$  divide both the numbers  $G_n$  and  $H_n$  and thus  $ab$  divides  $G_n H_n$ . If however  $a \equiv b \equiv 1 \pmod{4}$ , then among the factors of  $H_n$  we have  $2a$  as well as  $4b$ .  $2n+1$  thus does not divide  $G_n H_n$  in only one case, if it is a prime number and  $\equiv 1 \pmod{4}$ , and we find that the same holds for  $4n+1$ . Note that  $2n+1$  and  $4n+1$  are relatively prime, and thus if each separately divides  $G_n H_n$ , then their product also divides  $G_n H_n$ . For deeper more exact results see A. Hurwitz, op. cit., p. 145.

**185.** [For more particulars cf. M. Fujiwara: Tôhoku Math. J. 2, p. 57 (1912).] The power series

$$a_0 + \frac{a_1}{1!} z + \frac{a_2}{1!} z^2 + \cdots + \frac{a_n}{n!} z^n + \cdots$$

satisfies a differential equation of the required type if and only if  $a_0 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \cdots + a_n z^n + \cdots$  is a rational function. Both conditions require the same recurrence relation between  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$ . Cf. 163.



**186.** [G. Pólya: Tôhoku Math. J. 22, p. 79 (1922).] Cf. 164;  $y$  satisfies [I 48] the differential equation

$$xy'' + (1 - 4x)y' - 2y = 0.$$

**187.** [S. Kakeya: Tôhoku Math. J. 10, p. 70 (1916). G. Pólya: Tôhoku Math. J. 19, p. 65 (1921).] If

$$g(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{a_n}{n!} z^n,$$

and if  $a_n \neq 0$ , then we have

$$|a_n| \geq 1, \quad M(n) \geq \frac{|a_n|}{n!} n^n \geq \frac{n^n}{n!} \sim \frac{e^n}{\sqrt{2\pi n}}.$$

The equality sign holds, e.g., for  $g(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} [z^{2^n}/(2^n)!]$ .

**188.** [Th. Skolem: Videnskapsselskapets Skrifter 1921, No. 17, Theorem 8.] Denoting by  $g$  the lowest common denominator of the rational numbers  $b_1, b_2, \dots, b_m$ , we have that

$$gb_0 + \frac{gb_{-1}}{z} + \frac{gb_{-2}}{z^2} + \dots = gb_0 + r(z)$$

is also integral for the infinitely many integral values in question. Since  $\lim_{z \rightarrow \infty} r(z) = 0$ ,  $gb_0$  must approach arbitrarily closely to an integer, i.e.  $gb_0$  must be an integer. Thus  $r(z)$  also assumes integral values for infinitely many integral values of  $z$ , and hence, in view of  $\lim_{z \rightarrow \infty} r(z) = 0$ , it is  $\equiv 0$  for infinitely many integral values of  $z$ . It follows that  $r(z) \equiv 0$ . For  $r(z^{-1})$  is regular in some closed circular disc with center  $z=0$ , it is  $\equiv 0$  at infinitely many points of the disc, and hence it is identically  $\equiv 0$ .

**189.** The equation  $y^2 - 2z^2 = 1$  has infinitely many solutions in the integers, as can be seen from

$$(3 + 2\sqrt{2})^n = y_n + z_n\sqrt{2}, \quad (3 - 2\sqrt{2})^n = y_n - z_n\sqrt{2},$$

$$(9 - 8)^n = y_n^2 - 2z_n^2, \quad y_n, z_n \text{ integers}, \quad n = 0, 1, 2, 3, \dots$$

**190.** [J. Franel: Interméd. des math. 2, p. 94 (1895).] If the integral-valued polynomial

$$P(x) = a_0 x^n + a_1 x^{n-1} + \dots + a_n,$$

which accordingly has rational coefficients, represents for all sufficiently large integral values of  $x$  the  $k$ th power of an integer, but is itself *not* the  $k$ th power of a polynomial, then the polynomial

$$P(x+l_1)P(x+l_2)\dots P(x+l_k) = a_0^k x^{nk} + b_1 x^{nk-1} + \dots$$

has the same two properties, provided that the integers  $l_1, l_2, \dots, l_k$  are chosen such that  $P(x+l_1), P(x+l_2), \dots, P(x+l_k)$  have no common zeros. Let  $l_1 < l_2 < \dots < l_k$  say, and assume further that  $l_2 - l_1, l_3 - l_2, \dots, l_k - l_{k-1}$  are sufficiently large.

Then the power series

$$\begin{aligned}\sqrt[k]{P(x+l_1)P(x+l_2)\dots P(x+l_k)} &= a_0 x^n \sqrt[k]{1 + \frac{b_1}{a_0^k} \frac{1}{x} + \dots} \\ &= a_0 x^n + c_1 x^{n-1} + c_2 x^{n-2} + \dots\end{aligned}$$

with rational coefficients would represent a rational integer for all sufficiently large integral values of  $x$ , but would itself not be a rational entire function: Contradiction to **188**!

**191.** [Proof by H. Prüfer. For more particulars see op. cit. **188**.] If  $b_m, b_{m-1}, \dots, b_1$  are all rational, apply **188**. If not, we may assume that  $b_m$  is irrational. (If  $b_m, b_{m-1}, \dots, b_{m-k+1}$  were rational with lowest common denominator  $g$ , and  $b_{m-k}$  were irrational,  $k \geq 1$ , consider

$$g[F(z) - b_m z^m - b_{m-1} z^{m-1} - \dots - b_{m-k+1} z^{m-k+1}].)$$

The  $m$ th difference

$$\begin{aligned}F(z+m) - \binom{m}{1} F(z+m-1) + \binom{m}{2} F(z+m-2) - \dots + (-1)^m F(z) \\ = m! b_m + \frac{b'_{-1}}{z} + \frac{b'_{-2}}{z^2} + \dots\end{aligned}$$

also has integral values for sufficiently large integral  $z$ , from which it follows by **188** that  $b_m$  is rational. Contradiction!

**192.** [G. Pólya, problem: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. **32**, Section 2, p. 16 (1923). Solution by T. Radó: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. **33**, Section 2, p. 30 (1924).] For a proof based on the method of **188**, **191** see **193**. Let the polynomials be denoted by  $f(z)$  and  $g(z)$ . The two entire functions

$$e^{2\pi i f(z)} - 1, \quad e^{2\pi i g(z)} - 1$$

have the same zeros but perhaps not with the same multiplicities. Their multiple zeros are contained among the zeros of the polynomials  $f'(z)$  and  $g'(z)$  respectively. Hence the function

$$g'(z) \frac{e^{2\pi i f(z)} - 1}{e^{2\pi i g(z)} - 1}$$

is entire and has only finitely many zeros; it is also of finite genus. Thus it is equal to  $k(z)e^{h(z)}$ , where  $k(z)$  and  $h(z)$  are polynomials. From the identity

$$g'(z)e^{2\pi i f(z)} - g'(z) = k(z)e^{h(z)+2\pi i g(z)} - k(z)e^{h(z)}$$

it follows that one of the two functions  $h(z)+2\pi i g(z)$  and  $h(z)$  is equal to a constant and the other is equal to  $2\pi i f(z)+$  a constant. [Cf. G. Pólya: *Nyt Tidsskr. for Math. (B)*, **32**, p. 21 (1921).]

**193.** [G. Pick, problem: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. **32**, Section 2, p. 45 (1923). Solution by G. Szegő: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. **33**, Section 2, p. 31 (1924).] If  $m$  is the degree of  $y=f(x)$  and  $n$  the degree of  $z=g(x)$ , then we have for sufficiently large  $|y|$

$$x = a_1 y^{\frac{1}{m}} + a_0 + \frac{a_{-1}}{y^{\frac{1}{m}}} + \frac{a_{-2}}{y^{\frac{2}{m}}} + \dots,$$

$$z = b_n y^{\frac{n}{m}} + b_{n-1} y^{\frac{n-1}{m}} + \dots + b_0 + \frac{b_{-1}}{y^{\frac{1}{m}}} + \frac{b_{-2}}{y^{\frac{2}{m}}} + \dots,$$

where all  $m$  determinations are admissible for  $y^{\frac{1}{m}}$ .

By assumption the *Laurent* series

$$(1) \quad \sum_{k=-\infty}^n b_k e^{\frac{2\nu}{m} k n} Y_1^k, \quad \nu = 0, 1, 2, \dots, m-1,$$

as well as the *Laurent* series

$$(2) \quad \sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} b_k e^{i \frac{2\nu+1}{m} k n} Y_2^k, \quad \nu = 0, 1, 2, \dots, m-1,$$

have real values as  $Y_1$  and  $Y_2$  each run through some sequence of positive numbers tending to infinity. I.e. the numbers

$$b_k e^{i \frac{2\nu}{m} k n}, \quad b_k e^{i \frac{2\nu+1}{m} k n}, \quad \nu = 0, 1, 2, \dots, m-1$$

are real and hence  $b_k = 0$  if  $k$  is not divisible by  $m$ . [For odd  $m$  it is sufficient to consider simply the series (1).] We obtain that  $g(x) = \varphi(y) + P(y^{-1})$ , where  $\varphi(y)$  is a polynomial in  $y$  and  $P(y^{-1})$  a power series with no constant term, both with real coefficients. The polynomial  $g(x) - \varphi[f(x)]$  accordingly converges to 0 as  $x \rightarrow \infty$ , i.e.  $g(x) - \varphi[f(x)] \equiv 0$ .—With the assumptions of **192**, the inverse function of the polynomial  $\varphi(y)$  must also be a polynomial; thus  $\varphi(y)$  is of the first degree. Moreover  $\varphi(y)$  as well as the inverse function must be integral-valued.

**194.** From

$$\alpha^n + a_1 \alpha^{n-1} + \dots + a_{n-1} \alpha + a_n = 0$$

it follows that

$$(\sqrt{\alpha})^{2n} + a_1 (\sqrt{\alpha})^{2n-2} + \dots + a_{n-1} (\sqrt{\alpha})^2 + a_n = 0.$$

**195.** The case  $s=0$  is clear. Assume  $s \neq 0$ . If  $r + s\sqrt{-1}$  satisfies an equation with rational integral coefficients and with leading coefficient 1, then the complex conjugate number  $r - s\sqrt{-1}$  satisfies the same equation; it is thus also an integer. Hence the numbers

$$(r + s\sqrt{-1}) + (r - s\sqrt{-1}), \quad (r + s\sqrt{-1})(r - s\sqrt{-1})$$

are also integers; they are also rational. The coefficients of the polynomial

$$(x - r - s\sqrt{-1})(x - r + s\sqrt{-1}) = x^2 - 2rx + r^2 + s^2$$

are thus ordinary integers.  $r^2 + s^2$  and  $2r$  are integers and hence so are  $4(r^2 + s^2)$  and  $2s$ . Let  $2r = a$  and  $2s = b$ ;  $a^2 + b^2 = 4(r^2 + s^2) \equiv 0 \pmod{4}$  cannot occur in the following three cases:

$$a \equiv 1, \quad b \equiv 1; \quad a \equiv 1, \quad b \equiv 0; \quad a \equiv 0, \quad b \equiv 1 \pmod{2}.$$

Hence we must have  $a \equiv b \equiv 0 \pmod{2}$  and hence  $r = a/2$  and  $s = b/2$  are integers.

**196.** We deduce as in **195** that the coefficients of the polynomial  $(x-r-s\sqrt{-5})(x-r+s\sqrt{-5})$ , i.e.  $2r$  and  $r^2+5s^2$ , and hence also  $5(2s)^2=4(r^2+5s^2)-(2r)^2$  are *integers*. But if the rational number  $2s$  were not an integer, then the *square* of a prime number would be a factor of the denominator of  $(2s)^2$  and this could not be cancelled by 5 as required. Hence  $2s=b$  is an integer and similarly  $2r=a$ . We now argue as in **195** from

$$a^2+b^2 \equiv a^2+5b^2 \equiv 4(r^2+5s^2) \equiv 0 \pmod{4}.$$

**197.** We deduce as in **195**, **196** that  $2r$  and  $r^2+3s^2$  and hence also  $2r=a$  and  $2s=b$  are *integers*. That  $a \equiv b \pmod{2}$  follows from

$$(a+b)(a-b) \equiv a^2+3b^2 \equiv 4(r^2+3s^2) \equiv 0 \pmod{4}.$$

$\frac{1}{2}(-1+\sqrt{-3})$  is an integer, a zero of  $x^2+x+1$ .

**197.1.** [See G. Pólya: *L'Enseignement Math.*, **15**, pp. 237–243 (1969).] Assume that  $\vartheta/\pi$  is rational,  $\vartheta=2\pi m/n$  where  $m$  and  $n$  are rational integers,  $n \geq 1$ . Let  $\zeta=e^{i\vartheta}$ . Then

$$\zeta^n-1=0 \quad \text{and} \quad (\zeta^{-1})^n-1=0.$$

Therefore,  $\zeta$ ,  $\zeta^{-1}$  and

$$2 \cos \vartheta = \zeta + \zeta^{-1}$$

are algebraic integers. Assume now that also  $\cos \vartheta$  is rational. Then  $2 \cos \vartheta$  is a rational integer, yet it is  $\leq 2$  in absolute value and so it must be equal to one of the five numbers 2, 1, 0, -1, -2 which correspond to  $\vartheta/\pi=0, \frac{1}{3}, \frac{1}{2}, \frac{2}{3}, 1$ , respectively. See **227.2**.

**197.2.** Follows from **197.1** and the values of the cosines. To obtain any one of these cosines apply

$$\cos a = \cos b \cos c + \sin b \sin c \cos \alpha,$$

to an appropriate spherical triangle with sides  $a, b, c$  and angles  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma$  on a sphere centered at a vertex of the solid concerned. We are required to find  $\cos \alpha$ . Each of the angles  $a, b$ , and  $c$  is of the form  $[\pi(n-2)]/n$  since it is an angle in a regular polygon with  $n$  sides;  $n$  is 3 or 4 or 5, and  $b=c$ . See the table:

$\alpha$	$T$	$H$	$O$	$D$	$I$
$\frac{a}{\pi}$	$\frac{1}{3}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	$\frac{3}{5}$	$\frac{3}{5}$
$\frac{b}{\pi} = \frac{c}{\pi}$	$\frac{1}{3}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	$\frac{1}{3}$	$\frac{3}{5}$	$\frac{1}{3}$
$\cos \alpha$	$\frac{1}{3}$	0	$-\frac{1}{3}$	$-\sqrt{5}/5$	$-\sqrt{5}/3$
$\cos \frac{\pi}{3} = \frac{1}{2}$	$\cos \frac{\pi}{2} = 0, \quad \cos \frac{3\pi}{5} = \frac{1-\sqrt{5}}{4}$				

**197.3.** By virtue of the linear relation between  $T, H$ , and  $O$ , the rationality of  $O/T$  would imply that of  $H/T$  which is contrary to **197.2**.

**197.4.** [H. Lebesgue, *Ann. Soc. Polon. Math.*, **17**, pp. 193–226 (1938).]

(1) We assume first that there is a linear relation of the form

$$(*) \quad lT + 2mI = 4hH + 2kD,$$

where  $h, k, l$  and  $m$  are rational integers,  $k, l$  and  $m$  positive. The assumed relation  $(*)$  is equivalent to

$$(**) \quad e^{ilT} \cdot e^{i2mI} = e^{i2kD}.$$

Now (cf. **197.2**)

$$\begin{aligned} e^{i2kD} &= \left( \frac{-3-i4}{5} \right)^k = K + K'i \\ e^{ilT} &= \left( \frac{1+2i\sqrt{2}}{3} \right)^l = L + L'i\sqrt{2}, \\ e^{i2mI} &= \left( \frac{1-4i\sqrt{5}}{9} \right)^m = M + M'i\sqrt{5}, \end{aligned}$$

where  $K, K', L, L', M, M'$  are rational.

Observe that  $K'=0$  would imply  $K=\pm 1$ , and so  $D/\pi$  would be rational, contrary to **197.2**. Therefore  $K' \neq 0$  and similarly  $L' \neq 0, M' \neq 0$ .

There follows from  $(**)$  that

$$L'M\sqrt{2} + LM'\sqrt{5} = K'.$$

Observe that  $L=0$  would imply  $M \neq 0$  and so would imply that  $\sqrt{2}$  is rational. Therefore  $L \neq 0$  and similarly  $M \neq 0$ .

Yet now we conclude that  $LML'M' \neq 0$  and squaring the last equation we conclude further that

$$LML'M'\sqrt{10}$$

is rational—and this absurd conclusion shows that the equation  $(*)$  initially assumed is in fact impossible.

(2) In the foregoing we have dealt with the most crucial possibility of linear dependence between  $T, H, O, D$ , and  $I$ . The other possibilities can be reduced to the one we have considered, or can be treated either similarly or more simply. We briefly mention a few cases.

If there existed a linear relation containing  $O$  and essentially different from the one given in **197.3** we could eliminate  $O$ .

There is no restriction in assuming that in  $(*)$  one of the coefficients is a multiple of 4 and two others are even (multiplication by 4).

If in  $(*)$ ,  $l < 0$ , we use

$$e^{ilT} = \left( \frac{1-2i\sqrt{2}}{3} \right)^{-l}.$$

If  $l=0$  the argument is simpler.

**197.5.** From **197.1** and

$$\cos 2\vartheta = \frac{1 - \tan^2 \vartheta}{1 + \tan^2 \vartheta}.$$

**197.6.** From **197.5**; there are now only three exceptional values: 0, 1, and  $1/0$ .

**198.** Let  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n$  be conjugate integers,  $|\alpha_\nu| < k$  for  $\nu=1, 2, \dots, n$ , and

$$(x - \alpha_1)(x - \alpha_2) \dots (x - \alpha_n) = x^n + a_1 x^{n-1} + \dots + a_n$$

identically. Then

$$|a_\nu| < \binom{n}{\nu} k^\nu, \quad \nu=1, 2, \dots, n.$$

For the rational integers  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  we thus have only finitely many admissible sets of values.

**199.** Notation as in solution **198**. According to the assumptions  $|a_n| = |\alpha_1 \alpha_2 \dots \alpha_n| < 1$ , and hence  $a_n = 0$ . The only irreducible polynomial with vanishing constant term and leading coefficient 1 is  $x$ .

**200.** [L. Kronecker, Werke, 1, p. 105. Leipzig; B. G. Teubner, 1895.] Let the polynomial in question be denoted by  $F(x)$  and its zeros by  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n$  (repeated according to multiplicity). Set

$$(x - \alpha_1^h)(x - \alpha_2^h) \dots (x - \alpha_n^h) = F_h(x),$$

$h=1, 2, \dots$ ;  $F_1(x) = F(x)$ ;  $F_h(x)$  has rational integral coefficients. The infinite sequence  $F_1(x), F_2(x), \dots, F_h(x), \dots$  contains only finitely many different polynomials [**198**]. If  $F_h(x)$  is identical with  $F_k(x)$ ,  $1 \leq h < k$ , then the systems  $\alpha_1^h, \alpha_2^h, \dots, \alpha_n^h$  and  $\alpha_1^k, \alpha_2^k, \dots, \alpha_n^k$  coincide apart from their order. If  $\alpha_1^h = \alpha_1^k$ , then we already have the desired result. With suitable choice of numbering let

$$\alpha_1^h = \alpha_2^k, \quad \alpha_2^h = \alpha_3^k, \quad \dots, \quad \alpha_{i-1}^h = \alpha_i^k, \quad \alpha_i^h = \alpha_1^k.$$

Then we have

$$\alpha_1^{h^i} = \alpha_2^{k h^{i-1}} = \alpha_3^{k^2 h^{i-2}} = \dots = \alpha_{i-1}^{k^{i-1} h^2} = \alpha_i^{k^i h^{i-1}} = \alpha_1^{k^i}.$$

**201.** The equation  $x^2 - \alpha x + 1$  has by assumption two complex roots of absolute value 1. Let  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n$  be  $\alpha$  and its conjugates,  $\alpha_1 = \alpha$ . The polynomial

$$(x^2 - \alpha_1 x + 1)(x^2 - \alpha_2 x + 1) \dots (x^2 - \alpha_n x + 1)$$

has rational integral coefficients and its zeros are all of absolute value 1 and thus roots of unity [**200**]. Let the root of unity that makes the first factor vanish be  $e^{\frac{2\pi ip}{q}}$ . We have

$$e^{\frac{4\pi ip}{q}} - \alpha e^{\frac{2\pi ip}{q}} + 1 = 0.$$

**202.** The numbers of the field that are generated by the number of the second degree  $\vartheta$  may be expressed in the form  $r + s\vartheta$ , where  $r$  and  $s$  are rational [Hecke, Theorem 53, p. 68]. Cf. **195–197**. The equation

$$\sqrt{-3} = a + b\sqrt{-5},$$

where  $a$  and  $b$  are rational, is excluded since from it would follow that  $a=0$ ,  $b=\sqrt{3/5}$ ; the latter square root is known to be irrational. The same reasoning shows that all the three fields are distinct.

**203.** [G. Pólya: Proc. Lond. Math. Soc. Ser. 2, **21**, p. 27 (1921).] If for the moment we set aside the requirement with respect to  $\zeta'\zeta''$  we have for  $\mathfrak{S}$  as we know [Hurwitz-Courant, pp. 134–138] only the following two possibilities:

- (a)  $\mathfrak{S}$  consists of the numbers  $nA$ ,  $n=0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \dots$ ;
- (b)  $\mathfrak{S}$  consists of the numbers  $mA+nB$ ,  $A \neq 0$ ,  $B/A$  not real,  $m, n=0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \dots$

If we now apply the requirement with respect to  $\zeta'\zeta''$  we deduce in case (a) that  $A^2=nA$ , i.e. if  $A \neq 0$ ,  $A=n$ , where  $n$  is a rational integer. In case (b) we have

$$AB=lA+l'B, \quad B^2=mA+m'B, \quad AB^2=nA+n'B,$$

where  $l, l', m, m', n, n'$  are rational integers. Eliminating  $1, B, B^2$  from these three linear equations we obtain

$$mA^2+(lm'-l'm-n)A=ln'-l'n.$$

Thus  $ln'-l'n$  belongs to  $\mathfrak{S}$ . If  $ln'-l'n=0$ , then  $lm'-l'm-n$  belongs to  $\mathfrak{S}$ . If also this number  $=0$ , then  $m=0$ ,  $m'=B \neq 0$  and  $m'$  belongs to  $\mathfrak{S}$ . In any case  $\mathfrak{S}$  contains rational integers other than 0. If  $R=rA+r'B$  is the rational integer other than 0 of smallest absolute value that is contained in  $\mathfrak{S}$  then  $r$  and  $r'$  are relatively prime. Let  $s$  and  $s'$  be rational integers,  $rs'-r's=1$ . Then  $S=sA+s'B$  is a number of  $\mathfrak{S}$  and every number of  $\mathfrak{S}$  may be expressed in the form  $pR+qS$ , where  $p, q=0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \dots$ .  $S$  is certainly not real. We have  $S^2=pR+qS$ .

**204.** If  $3=(a+b\sqrt{-5})(c+d\sqrt{-5})$  then it follows that

$$9=(a^2+5b^2)(c^2+5d^2).$$

Thus the only possible cases are

$$a^2+5b^2=1, 3, 9$$

and consequently

$$a, b = \pm 1, 0; \quad \pm 2, \pm 1; \quad \pm 3, 0.$$

The case  $a, b = \pm 2, \pm 1$  is excluded, for it would imply that  $c^2+5d^2=1$  whereas  $3 \neq \pm 2 \pm \sqrt{-5}$ . 3 has only the divisors  $\pm 1$  and  $\pm 3$ . Similarly we obtain that  $1+2\sqrt{-5}$  has only the divisors  $\pm 1$  and  $\pm(1+2\sqrt{-5})$ . The greatest common divisor could thus only be 1. However

$$3(d+D\sqrt{-5})+(1+2\sqrt{-5})(c+C\sqrt{-5})=1$$

is impossible, since from

$$\begin{aligned} 3d+c-10C &= 1, \\ 3D+2c+C &= 0 \end{aligned}$$

it follows that  $3(-2d+D+7C)=-2$ . This is incompatible with the requirements that  $d, D$  and  $C$  are integers.

**205.** The divisors of 9 lying in the field are 1, 3, 9,  $2+\sqrt{-5}$ ,  $2-\sqrt{-5}$  [204]. We find using 196 that  $-19+4\sqrt{-5}$  is not divisible only by 3, 9 and  $2-\sqrt{-5}$  while

$-19+4\sqrt{-5}=(2+\sqrt{-5})(-2+3\sqrt{-5})$ . We seek to determine  $\xi=x+u\sqrt{-5}$  and  $\eta=y+v\sqrt{-5}$  such that

$$9\xi+(-19+4\sqrt{-5})\eta=2+\sqrt{-5}.$$

Transforming this equation we find successively that

$$\begin{aligned}(2-\sqrt{-5})\xi+(-2+3\sqrt{-5})\eta &= 1, \\ 2x+5u-2y-15v &= 1, & -x+2u+3y-2v &= 0, \\ x=2u+3y-2v, & & 9u+4y-19v &= 1.\end{aligned}$$

Since the g.c. divisor of 9, 4, 19 is in fact = 1, a solution is possible. For example let  $u=1, y=-2, v=0, x=-4$ :

$$\begin{aligned}9(-4+\sqrt{-5})-(-19+4\sqrt{-5})2 &= 2+\sqrt{-5}, \\ 9 &= (2+\sqrt{-5})(2-\sqrt{-5}), & -19+4\sqrt{-5} &= (2+\sqrt{-5})(-2+3\sqrt{-5}).\end{aligned}$$

**206.** Observe **194** and the last three equations in solutions **205**. It follows that

$$\begin{aligned}3\sqrt{\frac{9}{2+\sqrt{-5}}}(-4+\sqrt{-5})-(1+2\sqrt{-5})\sqrt{\frac{-19+4\sqrt{-5}}{2+\sqrt{-5}}}\cdot 2 &= \sqrt{2+\sqrt{-5}}, \\ 3 &= \sqrt{2+\sqrt{-5}}\cdot\sqrt{2-\sqrt{-5}}, & 1+2\sqrt{-5} &= \sqrt{2+\sqrt{-5}}\sqrt{-2+3\sqrt{-5}}.\end{aligned}$$

The g.c. divisor of 3 and  $1+2\sqrt{-5}$  is thus  $\sqrt{2+\sqrt{-5}}$ .

**207.** From  $\alpha_1=\gamma_1\delta, \alpha_2=\gamma_2\delta, \dots, \alpha_m=\gamma_m\delta$  and from

$$\alpha_1\lambda_1+\alpha_2\lambda_2+\dots+\alpha_m\lambda_m=\vartheta$$

(definition of the g.c. divisor) it follows that

$$\vartheta=(\gamma_1\lambda_1+\gamma_2\lambda_2+\dots+\gamma_m\lambda_m)\delta.$$

**208.** The quotients  $\vartheta/\vartheta'$  and  $\vartheta'/\vartheta$  are both integers [**207**] and hence divisors of unity since  $\vartheta/\vartheta'\cdot\vartheta'/\vartheta=1$ .

**209.** Multiply the  $m+1$  equations used in the definition of the g.c. divisor (introduction to § 2 p. 146) by  $\gamma$ .

**210.** The equation  $\alpha\alpha'+\beta\gamma\beta'=1$  may also be interpreted as  $\alpha\alpha'+\beta(\beta'\gamma)=1$  or as  $\alpha\alpha'+\gamma(\beta\beta')=1$ .

**211.** Special case of **212**.

**212.** The g.c. divisor  $\delta$  of  $\alpha$  and  $\gamma$  also divides  $\beta\gamma$ . From  $\beta\beta'=1+\alpha\alpha', \gamma\gamma'=\delta+\alpha\alpha''$  it follows that  $\beta\gamma(\beta'\gamma')=\delta+\alpha(\alpha'\delta+\alpha''+\alpha\alpha'\alpha'')$ .

**213.**  $\alpha/\delta$  and  $\beta/\delta$  are relatively prime [definition!, cf. al.o **209**], hence [**211**] so are  $(\alpha/\delta)^n, (\beta/\delta)^n$  and hence  $\delta^n$  is the g.c. divisor of  $\alpha^n, \beta^n$  [**209**].

**214.**  $\sqrt[n]{\alpha}$  is an integer, cf. **194**. From  $\alpha=\alpha'\delta, \beta=\beta'\delta, \alpha\alpha''+\beta\beta''=\delta$  we deduce

$$\sqrt[n]{\alpha}=\sqrt[n]{\alpha'}\sqrt[n]{\delta}, \quad \sqrt[n]{\beta}=\sqrt[n]{\beta'}\sqrt[n]{\delta}, \quad \sqrt[n]{\alpha}(\sqrt[n]{\alpha'})^{n-1}\alpha''+\sqrt[n]{\beta}(\sqrt[n]{\beta'})^{n-1}\beta''=\sqrt[n]{\delta}.$$

**215.** Obvious for  $m=2$ . Mathematical induction from  $m$  to  $m+1$ . Assume that

$$\frac{\mu}{\alpha_1}\lambda_1+\frac{\mu}{\alpha_2}\lambda_2+\dots+\frac{\mu}{\alpha_m}\lambda_m=1,$$



and let  $\alpha_{m+1}$  be relatively prime to  $\alpha_1$ , to  $\alpha_2, \dots$ , and to  $\alpha_m$ . Then  $\alpha_{m+1}$  is also relatively prime to  $\alpha_1\alpha_2\cdots\alpha_m$  [211]. In  $\lambda\alpha_{m+1} + \lambda'\alpha_1\alpha_2\cdots\alpha_m = 1$  substitute

$$\alpha_{m+1} = \frac{\mu\alpha_{m+1}}{\alpha_1} \lambda_1 + \frac{\mu\alpha_{m+1}}{\alpha_2} \lambda_2 + \cdots + \frac{\mu\alpha_{m+1}}{\alpha_m} \lambda_m.$$

**216.** If  $\alpha$  is an integer and is  $\neq 0$ , it satisfies an equation of the form

$$a_n = -\alpha(a_{n-1} + a_{n-2}\alpha + \cdots + \alpha^{n-1}),$$

where  $a_1, \dots, a_{n-1}, a_n$  are rational integers,  $a_n \neq 0$ . Let  $p$  be a rational prime number that does *not* divide  $a_n$ . In

$$a_n u + p v = 1$$

substitute for  $a_n$  the value given by the equation that defines  $\alpha$ .

**217.** [D. Hilbert: Die Theorie der algebraischen Zahlkörper, Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein., 4, p. 218 (1897).] From  $a_v^N = d^v b_v^N$ , where  $b_v$  is a rational integer, it follows that  $a_v = \delta^v \beta_v$ , where  $\beta_v$  is an integer. If  $\alpha$  is any of the numbers  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n$ , then we have

$$\begin{aligned} \alpha^n + \delta\beta_1\alpha^{n-1} + \delta^2\beta_2\alpha^{n-2} + \cdots + \delta^n\beta_n &= 0, \\ \left(\frac{\alpha}{\delta}\right)^n + \beta_1\left(\frac{\alpha}{\delta}\right)^{n-1} + \beta_2\left(\frac{\alpha}{\delta}\right)^{n-2} + \cdots + \beta_n &= 0, \end{aligned}$$

and hence  $\alpha/\delta$  is an integer [Hecke, p. 79, Theorem 62].—On the other hand, since  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  are *rational* numbers, there exist rational integers  $c_1, c_2, \dots, c_n$  such that

$$c_1 a_1^N + c_2 a_2^{\frac{N}{2}} + c_3 a_3^{\frac{N}{3}} + \cdots + c_n a_n^{\frac{N}{n}} = d.$$

Since  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n$  are homogeneous functions of  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n$  we have

$$c_1 a_1^N + c_2 a_2^{\frac{N}{2}} + c_3 a_3^{\frac{N}{3}} + \cdots + c_n a_n^{\frac{N}{n}} = \sum C_{k_1 k_2 \dots k_n} \alpha_1^{k_1} \alpha_2^{k_2} \dots \alpha_n^{k_n},$$

where  $C_{k_1 k_2 \dots k_n}$  are rational integers,  $k_1 + k_2 + \cdots + k_n = N$ . From

$$\sum C_{k_1 k_2 \dots k_n} \alpha_1^{k_1} \alpha_2^{k_2} \dots \alpha_n^{k_n} = \delta^{N-1} \delta,$$

since  $\delta$  divides  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n$ , it follows by dividing both sides by  $\delta^{N-1}$  that

$$\alpha_1 \gamma_1 + \alpha_2 \gamma_2 + \cdots + \alpha_n \gamma_n = \delta,$$

where  $\gamma_1, \gamma_2, \dots, \gamma_n$  are integers. Cf. also **214**.

**218.** From  $\beta = \alpha\gamma$  there follow analogous equations for the conjugates which on multiplication yield  $N(\beta) = N(\alpha)N(\gamma)$ .

**219.** [G. Rabinowitsch: J. reine angew. Math., 142, pp. 153–164 (1913).] Necessity: If the g.c. divisor  $\vartheta$  of  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  exists, i.e. if

$$\alpha = \alpha'\vartheta, \quad \beta = \beta'\vartheta, \quad \alpha\gamma + \beta\delta = \vartheta,$$

and neither  $\alpha'$  nor  $\beta'$  is a unit, then we have  $|N(\alpha')| > 1$ ,  $|N(\beta')| > 1$ , and consequently, since  $N(\alpha) = N(\alpha')N(\vartheta)$ ,  $N(\beta) = N(\beta')N(\vartheta)$ ,  $0 < |N(\vartheta)| = |N(\alpha\gamma + \beta\delta)| < |N(\alpha)|$  and also  $< |N(\beta)|$ .

**Sufficiency:** Let  $\xi$  and  $\eta$  run through all pairs of integers for which the linear form  $\alpha\xi + \beta\eta$  assumes a value different from 0. Among all the positive rational integers  $|N(\alpha\xi + \beta\eta)|$  thus obtained let  $|N(\alpha\xi_0 + \beta\eta_0)|$  be the smallest. Let  $\alpha\xi_0 + \beta\eta_0 = \vartheta$ , where accordingly  $\vartheta \neq 0$ . We must distinguish two cases: (1)  $\alpha$  is a divisor of  $\vartheta$ . Then, setting  $\vartheta = \vartheta'\alpha$ , we have  $|N(\vartheta)| = |N(\vartheta')||N(\alpha)| \geq |N(\alpha)|$ . But we have on the other hand, by the choice of  $\vartheta$ ,  $|N(\vartheta)| \leq |N(1 \cdot \alpha + 0 \cdot \beta)| = |N(\alpha)|$ . Hence  $|N(\vartheta)| = |N(\alpha)|$ ,  $N(\vartheta') = \pm 1$ , and thus  $\vartheta'$  is a unit and  $\vartheta$  is also a divisor of  $\alpha$ . (2)  $\alpha$  is not a divisor of  $\vartheta$ . If also  $\vartheta$  were not a divisor of  $\alpha$ , we could by the assumptions determine  $\xi, \eta$  such that  $0 < |N(\alpha\xi + \beta\eta)| < |N(\vartheta)|$ : a contradiction to the choice of  $\vartheta$ ! For  $\alpha\xi + \beta\eta = \alpha(\xi + \eta\xi_0) + \beta\eta\eta_0$  is also a number of the set from which  $\vartheta = \alpha\xi_0 + \beta\eta_0$  was chosen. In any case  $\vartheta$  is thus a divisor of  $\alpha$  and by the same reasoning also a divisor of  $\beta$  and thus a g.c. divisor.

**220.** Let  $\alpha, \beta$  be integers of the field, neither a divisor of the other, and  $N(\beta) \leq N(\alpha)$ .  $\alpha/\beta$  is a number of the field but not an integer and hence  $\alpha/\beta = r + s\sqrt{-1}$ , where  $r, s$  are rational numbers but not both integers [202]. Determine two rational integers  $R$  and  $S$  such that  $|r - R| \leq \frac{1}{2}$ ,  $|s - S| \leq \frac{1}{2}$ ,  $r - R, s - S$  are not both  $= 0$ . Hence, setting  $\gamma = r - R + (s - S)\sqrt{-1}$ , we have

$$0 < N(\gamma) = (r - R)^2 + (s - S)^2 \leq \frac{1}{4} + \frac{1}{4}.$$

Set  $\alpha - \beta(R + S\sqrt{-1}) = \delta$ . By this definition  $\delta$  is an integer. On the other hand we have  $\delta = \beta(r + s\sqrt{-1} - (R + S\sqrt{-1})) = \beta\gamma$  and hence

$$N(\delta) = N(\gamma)N(\beta) \leq \frac{1}{2}N(\beta) \leq \frac{1}{2}N(\alpha).$$

If we set  $\xi = 1, \eta = -R - S\sqrt{-1}$ , condition **219** is satisfied.

**221.** As in the theory of rational integers.

**222.** As in the theory of rational integers.

**223.** From  $\alpha\alpha_1 + \mu\mu_1 = 1$ ,  $\alpha \equiv 0 \pmod{\mu}$  it follows that  $1 \equiv \alpha\alpha_1 \equiv 0 \pmod{\mu}$ , i.e.  $\mu$  is a divisor of 1.

**224.** By repeated application of the congruence, obviously valid for any two integers  $\beta, \gamma$ ,

$$(\beta + \gamma)^p = \beta^p + p\beta^{p-1}\gamma + \frac{p(p-1)}{2}\beta^{p-2}\gamma^2 + \dots + \gamma^p \equiv \beta^p + \gamma^p \pmod{p}.$$

**225.** [G. Pólya: J. reine angew. Math., **151**, p. 7 (1921).] Let the determinant  $|\omega_i^k|_{k, i=1, 2, \dots, m}$  be denoted by  $\Delta$ . Let  $p$  be a rational prime number that is relatively prime to  $\alpha_1$  as well as to  $\Delta$  [216].

Then the  $m$  congruences

$$\alpha_1\omega_1^r + \alpha_2\omega_2^r + \dots + \alpha_m\omega_m^r \equiv 0 \pmod{p}, \quad r = 1, 2, \dots, m$$

cannot be satisfied simultaneously. For if they were it would follow [222, 224] that

$$\alpha_1|\omega_i^{kp}| \equiv \alpha_1\Delta^p \equiv 0 \pmod{p},$$

whereas on the other hand  $\alpha_1\Delta^p$  is relatively prime to  $p$  [211]: Contradiction [223].

**226.** [Cf. op. cit. **227.**] Solution follows problem **226** p. 148.

**227.** [F. Mertens: Wien. Ber. **117**, pp. 689–690 (1908). Cf. K. Grandjot: Math. Z., **19**, pp. 128–129 (1924).] Notation as in problem and solution **226** p. 148. Let  $P$  be the product of all primes  $\leq 2^h$ ,  $t$  the greatest divisor of  $P$  relatively prime to  $m$ ,  $r$  an arbitrary number relatively prime to  $m$ . In addition let  $y$  denote a solution of the congruences

$$y \equiv r \pmod{m}, \quad y \equiv 1 \pmod{t}.$$

$y$  is relatively prime to  $m$  and  $t$  and hence to  $P$  and thus contains only prime numbers that are  $> 2^h$ .

The method of proof given for problem **226** p. 148 yields  $f(\alpha^p) = 0$ , where  $p$  denotes a prime factor of  $y$ . If  $y > p$  the same reasoning is repeated for an arbitrary prime factor  $q$  of  $y/p$ ; we obtain  $f(\alpha^{pq}) = 0$ . Finally we obtain

$$f(\alpha^y) = f(\alpha^r) = 0,$$

i.e.  $f(x)$  has all the numbers  $\alpha^{r_1}, \alpha^{r_2}, \dots, \alpha^{r_h}$  as zeros,  $f(x) \equiv K_m(x)$ .

**227.1.** [Cf. D. H. Lehmer: Amer. Math. Monthly, **40**, pp. 165–166 (1933).] Since  $n > 2$ ,  $\varphi(n)$  is even [**38.1** (1)]. We use the notation

$$\varphi(n) = 2h, \quad e^{2\pi i m/n} = \alpha$$

(different from **226**). The cyclotomic polynomial  $K_n(x)$  has the property

$$x^{2h} K_n(x^{-1}) \equiv K_n(x)$$

and so the equation  $K_n(\alpha) = 0$  has the form

$$(*) \quad \alpha^h + \alpha^{-h} + a_1(\alpha^{h-1} + \alpha^{-h+1}) + \dots + a_{h-1}(\alpha + \alpha^{-1}) + a_h = 0,$$

where  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_h$  are rational integers. Since

$$\begin{aligned} 2 \cos 2\pi m/n &= \alpha + \alpha^{-1}, \\ (2 \cos 2\pi m/n)^2 &= \alpha^2 + \alpha^{-2} + 2, \\ (2 \cos 2\pi m/n)^3 &= \alpha^3 + \alpha^{-3} + 3(\alpha + \alpha^{-1}), \\ &\dots \end{aligned}$$

the equation  $(*)$  can be transformed into

$$(**) \quad \left(2 \cos \frac{2\pi m}{n}\right)^h + b_1 \left(2 \cos \frac{2\pi m}{n}\right)^{h-1} + \dots + b_h = 0,$$

where  $b_1, b_2, \dots, b_h$  are rational integers. And  $(**)$  cannot be reducible, otherwise  $(*)$  would be reducible also, which is not the case [**226**].

**227.2.** An algebraic number is rational if, and only if, it is of degree 1. Now  $\varphi(n)/2 > 1$  and so  $2 \cos (2\pi m)/n$  is irrational except in the cases  $n=1, 2, 3, 4$  and  $6$  [**38.1** (2), (3)].

**228.** The rational function under consideration is the quotient of two polynomials with rational integral coefficients [**149**], and the first as well as the last non-vanishing coefficient of the denominator is  $= \pm 1$  [**156**].

**229.** [P. Fatou: C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris), **138**, pp. 342–344 (1904).] Because of the convergence of the series in the unit circle, the absolute values of all the

poles are  $\geq 1$ . By **156** the product of these absolute values is  $\leq 1$ , and hence they are all  $=1$  and the leading coefficient of the denominator is  $=\pm 1$ . Then the assertion follows from **200**. **157** illustrates a special case.

**230.** By **235**, or by direct considerations analogous to **149**, we see that the given function is the quotient of two polynomials whose coefficients are algebraic integers. The finite field from which they come contains also  $\alpha_0, \alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots$ . If we replace all the coefficients by the corresponding numbers of the fields conjugate to  $K$  and form the Cauchy product of the power series obtained in this way, then we obtain on the right-hand side a power series in  $z^{-1}$  with integral coefficients and on the left-hand side a rational function whose numerator and denominator are polynomials with integral coefficients, where the denominator has leading coefficient 1 [**156**]. The zeros of this denominator are hence algebraic integers.

**231.** Interpretation of **225**.

**232.** [G. Pólya, op. cit. **225**, pp. 3–9.] By carefully expressing the rational function  $f'(z)$ , without introducing irrationalities, in a form suitable for integration, we reduce the assertion to **231**. [For a conjecture that undertakes to generalize this proposition and awaits proof or disproof see MPR, **2**, p. 53, ex. 19.]

**233.** We may assume that the algebraic function  $f(z)$  is entire; for  $P_0(z)f(z)$  satisfies an equation of the stated form with leading coefficient 1. We may assume further that  $z=\alpha$  is a regular point of the algebraic entire function  $f(z)$ . If the function  $f(z)$  is expanded in ascending powers of  $(z-\alpha)^{\frac{1}{m}}$  ( $m$  an ordinary integer), set  $z=\alpha+\zeta^m$ ; then the branch point  $z=\alpha$  is transformed into the regular point  $\zeta=0$  and the new expansion in powers of  $\zeta$  has the same coefficients as the original expansion in powers of  $(z-\alpha)^{\frac{1}{m}}$ ; the given equation is transformed, when  $z$  is replaced by  $\alpha+\zeta^m$ , into another equation of the given form. If

$$f(z) = a_0 + a_1(z-\alpha) + \dots + a_m(z-\alpha)^m + \dots,$$

then

$$\begin{aligned} (z-\alpha)^{-m}[f(z) - a_0 - a_1(z-\alpha) - \dots - a_{m-1}(z-\alpha)^{m-1}] \\ = a_m + a_{m+1}(z-\alpha) + \dots = \varphi(z) \end{aligned}$$

is regular at the point  $z=\alpha$  and satisfies an equation in which only algebraic numbers occur as coefficients of the polynomials involved, since  $a_0, a_1, \dots, a_{m-1}$  have already been demonstrated to be algebraic numbers. We must show that

$$a_m = \varphi(\alpha)$$

is algebraic. Thus the whole proposition is reduced to the special case to which we have drawn attention in the statement of the problem. But this case is obvious since we may assume from the outset that  $P_0(z), P_1(z), \dots, P_l(z)$  are not all divisible by  $z-\alpha$ . [Hecke, p. 66, Theorem 51.]

**234.** [H. Weyl.] Let  $F(z, y)=0$  have a rational solution  $f(z)$ . We may assume without loss of generality that  $f(z)$  is an entire function [solution **233**]. The coefficients of  $f(z)$  are algebraic numbers [**233**], all of which belong to a finite field [Hecke, p. 67, Theorem 52], whose degree we denote by  $n$ . Replacing the coefficients in  $f(z)$  by the conjugate numbers we obtain the additional polynomials  $f_1(z), f_2(z), \dots, f_{n-1}(z)$ . The equation

$$(y - f(z))(y - f_1(z)) \cdots (y - f_{n-1}(z)) = 0$$

has rational coefficients and has a root in common with the irreducible equation  $F(z, y) = 0$ . Hence the roots of the latter are contained among  $f(z), f_1(z), \dots, f_{n-1}(z)$  and are thus rational functions of  $z$ .

**235.** If the power series expansion  $y = \alpha_0 + \alpha_1 z + \alpha_2 z^2 + \cdots$  represents an algebraic function and  $\alpha_0, \alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots$  are algebraic numbers, then the series satisfies an equation of the form  $F(z, y) = 0$ , where  $F(z, y)$  is a rational entire function,  $F(z, y) \neq 0$ , with *algebraic coefficients* [151; both proofs can be adapted to this problem]. The coefficients  $\alpha_0, \alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots$  are determined recursively from a certain point on by an equation of the form

$$(*) \quad Y = \frac{P_1(z)}{Q(z)} + \frac{zP_2(z)}{Q(z)} Y^2 + \frac{zP_3(z)}{Q(z)} Y^3 + \cdots + \frac{zP_n(z)}{Q(z)} Y^n,$$

where  $Y = \alpha_m + \alpha_{m+1}z + \cdots$  with suitable  $m$ ,  $P_1(z), P_2(z), \dots, P_n(z)$ ,  $Q(z)$  are polynomials with algebraic coefficients and  $Q(0) \neq 0$  [152]. Hence all the coefficients depend rationally on finitely many algebraic numbers [Hecke, p. 67, Theorem 52].

**236.** Deduction from equation (\*) in solution 235 similarly as in 153.

**237.** [Th. Skolem: Videnskapsselskapets Skrifter 1921, No. 17, Theorem 41.]

**237.1.** [Cf. MPR, 1, p. 9.] Set  $l = x$ ,  $m = y$  and regard  $x$  and  $y$  as rectangular coordinates. The three inequalities

$$x \leq y, \quad y \leq n, \quad x + y > n$$

( $x > 0$  follows from the last two) delimit a triangle which contains the lattice points  $(x, y)$  that we are required to count. We count by horizontal rows:

If $y = n$ ,	then $1 \leq x \leq n$ ,	and there are	$n$	cases,
$y = n - 1$ ,	$2 \leq x \leq n - 1$ ,		$n - 2$	,
$y = n - 2$ ,	$3 \leq x \leq n - 2$ ,		$n - 4$	,
.....	.....		.....	

The total number of cases (lattice points, triangles) is the sum of non-negative terms

$$n + (n - 2) + (n - 4) + \cdots,$$

which equals

$$\left(\frac{n+1}{2}\right)^2 \quad \text{or} \quad \left(\frac{n+1}{2}\right)^2 - \frac{1}{4},$$

according as  $n$  is odd or even. Cf. I 31.

**237.2.** Draw the figure for some values of the variables, count the solutions in integers of the equation

$$x^2 + y^2 = n$$

in all cases. Interesting cases are

$$4\delta(25) = 12, \quad 4\delta(65) = 16.$$

**238.** [E. Lucas: S. M. France Bull., 6, p. 9 (1878).] See 238.1.

**238.1.** We term a straight line that passes through two different lattice points a *lattice line*. The tangent of the angle included by a lattice line and the  $x$ -axis is obviously rational. Consider two lattice lines which include with the  $x$ -axis the angles  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  respectively; the angle between them is  $\alpha - \beta$  and so

$$\tan(\alpha - \beta) = \frac{\tan \alpha - \tan \beta}{1 + \tan \alpha \tan \beta}$$

is rational.

The exterior angle at any vertex of the polygon considered is  $2\pi/n$  and is included by two lattice lines, and so its tangent must be rational; by **197.6**,  $n=4$  or 8. The octagon with vertices  $(1, 0)$ ,  $(2, 0)$ ,  $(3, 1)$ ,  $(3, 2)$ ,  $(2, 3)$ ,  $(1, 3)$ ,  $(0, 2)$  and  $(0, 1)$  is equiangular.

**238.2.** [T. Gallai and P. Turán; cf. F. Kárteszi: *Mat. és fizikai lapok*, 50, pp. 182–183 (1943) and W. Scherrer: *Elemente der Math.*, 1, pp. 97–98 (1946).] The regular octagon, admitted by **238.1**, is excluded by **244.1**.

**239.** [G. Pólya: *Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3*, 27, p. 135 (1918); method of proof given here by A. Speiser.] We term a lattice point  $p, q$  *primitive* if it is visible from the origin, i.e. if  $p$  and  $q$  are relatively prime. If the relation  $pv - qu = 1$  holds, then the two lattice points  $p, q$  and  $u, v$  are primitive and connected by a parallelogram of area 1 (the two other corners are  $0, 0$  and  $p+u, q+v$ ); we term  $u, v$  the *left neighbour* of  $p, q$  and  $p, q$  the *right neighbour* of  $u, v$ . We term the diagonal emanating from  $0, 0$  the *diagonal* of the connecting parallelogram. If the length of the diagonal of the connecting parallelogram of  $p, q$  and  $u, v$  is  $d$ , then  $p, q$  and  $u, v$  lie at the same distance  $1/d$  from it. Every primitive lattice point has infinitely many left neighbours, all of which lie on a straight line and are in fact equally spaced.

(1)  $1, 0$  and  $s-1, 1$  are neighbours. The diagonal of the connecting parallelogram is of length  $\sqrt{s^2 + 1^2}$ . If this diagonal extended to infinity is to be intercepted by a  $\rho$ -circle, then only the circles with center  $1, 0$  and  $s-1, 1$  need be considered. Hence  $\rho \geq 1/\sqrt{s^2 + 1^2}$ .

(2) For an arbitrary primitive lattice point  $p, q$  lying in the circle  $x^2 + y^2 \leq s^2$ , determine the *furthest* left neighbouring point  $p', q'$  lying in the same circle, i.e.  $p' + p, q' + q$  already lies outside the circle  $x^2 + y^2 \leq s^2$ . In the same manner, let  $p'', q''$  be the furthest left neighbour of  $p', q'$  and  $p''', q'''$  that of  $p'', q''$  and so on. After a certain number  $n$  of steps we reach  $p^{(n)}, q^{(n)}$  with the property that the connecting parallelograms of  $p, q$  and  $p', q'$ , of  $p', q'$  and  $p'', q''$ , ..., and of  $p^{(n-1)}, q^{(n-1)}$  and  $p^{(n)}, q^{(n)}$  completely cover the circle  $x^2 + y^2 \leq 1$ . The diagonal of the connecting parallelogram of  $p, q$  and  $p', q'$  is  $> s$  and the distance of the points  $p, q$  and  $p', q'$  from it is  $< 1/s$ . Thus if we draw circles of radius  $1/s$  about each of the points  $p, q; p', q'; \dots; p^{(n)}, q^{(n)}$ , then every ray emanating from  $0, 0$  will be intersected by one of the circles and the diagonals in fact by two of the circles. Hence  $\rho < 1/s$ .

**240.** [A. J. Kempner: *Annals of Math. Series 2*, 19, pp. 127–136 (1917).] Let  $x$  be rational  $= p/q$ , where  $p, q$  denotes a primitive lattice point [solution **239**]. If the path in question has the point  $0, 0$  lying on its right boundary, then it is bounded on the right by the straight line connecting  $0, 0$  and  $p, q$  and on the left by the straight line containing the left neighbours of  $p, q$  [solution **239**]. The

width of the path is equal to the height of a parallelogram of area 1 and base  $\sqrt{p^2+q^2}$ , that is, it is equal to

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{p^2+q^2}} = \varphi\left(\frac{p}{q}\right), \quad \text{and thus} \quad f\left(\frac{p}{q}\right) = \varphi\left(\frac{p}{q}\right) \sqrt{1 + \frac{p^2}{q^2}} = \frac{1}{q}$$

We have  $f(x) = \varphi(x) = 0$  if  $x$  is irrational [II 166]. (II 99, II 169.)

**241.** If we consider all the lattice points congruent mod  $n$  as a “residue class”, then there are  $n^2$  different residue classes. It is not possible to distribute  $kn^2+1$  objects into  $n^2$  boxes in such a way that there are not more than  $k$  objects in any one box.

**242.** [H. F. Blichfeldt: Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 15, pp. 227–235 (1914). W. Scherrer: Math. Ann. 86, p. 99 (1922).] Consider the lattice with mesh size  $1/N$ , i.e. the set of all points  $x/N, y/N$ , where  $x, y, N$  are integers,  $x, y$  variable,  $N > 0$  given. If  $z_N$  of the points of this lattice fall into the domain of area  $F$ , then  $\lim_{N \rightarrow \infty} z_N/N^2 \equiv F$ . Let  $F > [F]$ . Then among the  $z_N$  points there are  $[F]+1$  that are congruent mod  $N$  if  $N$  is sufficiently large [241], which is the required result. The case  $F = [F]$  may be reduced to the preceding case by continuity considerations or else the proof may be suitably modified.

**243.** [For further details see R. Fueter and G. Pólya: Zürich. Naturf. Ges. 68, p. 380 (1923).] Let  $N$  be an integer,  $N > 1$ . In that part of the plane in which the three inequalities

$$(*) \quad f(x, y) \leq N, \quad x \geq 0, \quad y \geq 0$$

are simultaneously satisfied, there lie by conditions (1) and (2) exactly  $N$  lattice points, i.e. points for which  $x$  and  $y$  are integers. The first inequality (\*) may be written in the following form:

$$\begin{aligned} \varphi_m(xN^{-\frac{1}{m}}, yN^{-\frac{1}{m}}) + N^{-\frac{1}{m}}\varphi_{m-1}(xN^{-\frac{1}{m}}, yN^{-\frac{1}{m}}) \\ + N^{-\frac{2}{m}}\varphi_{m-2}(xN^{-\frac{1}{m}}, yN^{-\frac{1}{m}}) + \dots \leq 1. \end{aligned}$$

Denote by  $F$  the area of the domain defined by the inequalities

$$(**) \quad \varphi_m(x, y) \leq 1, \quad x \geq 0, \quad y \geq 0$$

( $F$  is by supposition finite), and consider the points  $xN^{-\frac{1}{m}}, yN^{-\frac{1}{m}}$ , where  $x$  and  $y$  are integers (they form a fine-meshed lattice). Of the points of this fine-meshed lattice approximately  $FN^{\frac{2}{m}}$  points lie in the region (\*\*). We deduce that the number of points of the lattice of mesh width 1 that lie in the region (\*) as  $N$  tends to infinity is asymptotically  $= FN^{\frac{2}{m}}$ . But now as we have stated above the exact number  $= N$ . From

$$FN^{\frac{2}{m}} \sim N$$

it follows that

$$m=2, \quad F=1.$$

**244.** [Cf. W. Ahrens: *Mathematische Unterhaltungen und Spiele*, 2, p. 364. Leipzig: B. G. Teubner, 1918.] The four systems of numbers

$$\begin{array}{cccc} x_1, & x_2, & \dots, & x_n, \\ y_1, & y_2, & \dots, & y_n, \\ x_1 - y_1, & x_2 - y_2, & \dots, & x_n - y_n, \\ x_1 + y_1, & x_2 + y_2, & \dots, & x_n + y_n \end{array}$$

are required to be complete residue systems mod  $n$ . If we set  $x_\mu - y_\mu = r_\mu$ ,  $y_\mu = s_\mu$ , then we are concerned with the simplest particular cases  $p=2$ ,  $p=3$  and  $p \geq 5$ , respectively, of **247**.

**244.1.** [H. E. Chrestenson: *Amer. Math. Monthly*, 70, pp. 447–448 (1963).] Three consecutive vertices of the polygon  $P$  considered are the vertices of an isosceles triangle with sides  $a$ ,  $a$ ,  $b$ . The sides of length  $a$  are consecutive sides of  $P$ , containing the angle  $[\pi(n-2)]/n$ . Therefore

$$b^2 = 2a^2 - 2a^2 \cos \frac{\pi(n-2)}{n}.$$

Yet  $a^2$  and  $b^2$  are integers. Therefore  $\cos [\pi(n-2)]/n$  is rational,  $=\frac{1}{2}$ , 0, or  $-\frac{1}{2}$  by **197.1**, and so  $n=3$ , 4, or 6.

**244.2.** The square is trivial. Triangle with vertices (1, 0, 0), (0, 1, 0), (0, 0, 1). Hexagon with vertices

$$(0, 1, -1) \quad (1, 0, -1) \quad (1, -1, 0) \quad (0, -1, 1) \quad (-1, 0, 1) \quad (-1, 1, 0).$$

**244.3.** A face of the dodecahedron is a regular pentagon. A given vertex of the icosahedron is joined by edges to five other vertices which form a regular pentagon. Thus these two solids are excluded by **244.1**.

**244.4.** The cube is trivial. Tetrahedron with vertices

$$(0, 0, 0), \quad (0, 1, 1), \quad (1, 0, 1), \quad (1, 1, 0).$$

Octahedron with vertices

$$(1, 0, 0) \quad (-1, 0, 0) \quad (0, 1, 0) \quad (0, -1, 0) \quad (0, 0, 1) \quad (0, 0, -1).$$

**245.** [A. Hurwitz, problem: *Nouv. Annls Math.*, Ser. 3, 1, p. 384 (1882).]  $r_1 s_1, r_2 s_2, \dots, r_q s_q$  certainly do not form a complete remainder system mod  $q$  if  $r_\alpha \equiv s_\beta \equiv 0 \pmod{q}$  and  $\alpha \neq \beta$ . Thus let us assume that  $r_q \equiv s_q \equiv 0 \pmod{q}$ . Then we have

$$r_1 r_2 \dots r_{q-1} \equiv s_1 s_2 \dots s_{q-1} \equiv 1 \cdot 2 \dots (q-1) \equiv -1 \pmod{q},$$

and hence

$$r_1 s_1 \cdot r_2 s_2 \dots r_{q-1} s_{q-1} \equiv 1 \not\equiv 1 \cdot 2 \dots (q-1) \pmod{q}.$$

If we assume the reduced remainder system  $1, 2, \dots, q-1$  written in the form  $g, g^2, \dots, g^{q-1}$  ( $g$  a primitive root mod  $q$ ), then the theorem is a special case of **247** for  $n=q-1$ ,  $p=2$ .

**246.** [A. Hurwitz.] It is sufficient to consider the sum

$$S = 1^\lambda + 2^\lambda + \dots + p^{a\lambda}.$$



If  $\lambda$  is not a multiple of  $p-1$  and  $g$  is a primitive root mod  $p$ , then  $g^\lambda - 1$  is not divisible by  $p$ . It then follows from

$$g^\lambda S \equiv g^\lambda + (g \cdot 2)^\lambda + (g \cdot 3)^\lambda + \cdots + (gp^\alpha)^\lambda \equiv S, \quad S(g^\lambda - 1) \equiv 0 \pmod{p^\alpha},$$

that  $S \equiv 0 \pmod{p^\alpha}$ . If  $\lambda$  is a multiple of  $p-1$ , then we have that

$$1^\lambda + 2^\lambda + \cdots + (p^\alpha)^\lambda \equiv -p^{\alpha-1} \pmod{p^\alpha}$$

is true for  $\alpha=1$ . Assume that this congruence is true for a certain value of  $\alpha$ . It then follows that

$$\begin{aligned} 1^\lambda + 2^\lambda + \cdots + (p^{\alpha+1})^\lambda &= \sum_{k=0}^{p-1} [(1+kp^\alpha)^\lambda + (2+kp^\alpha)^\lambda + \cdots + (p^\alpha+kp^\alpha)^\lambda] \\ &\equiv \sum_{k=0}^{p-1} (1^\lambda + 2^\lambda + \cdots + p^{\alpha\lambda}) \\ &\quad + \lambda p^\alpha \sum_{k=0}^{p-1} k(1^{\lambda-1} + 2^{\lambda-1} + \cdots + p^{\alpha(\lambda-1)}) \\ &\equiv p(1^\lambda + 2^\lambda + \cdots + p^{\alpha\lambda}) \\ &\quad + \lambda p^\alpha \cdot \frac{p(p-1)}{2} (1^{\lambda-1} + 2^{\lambda-1} + \cdots + p^{\alpha(\lambda-1)}) \\ &\equiv -p^\alpha \pmod{p^{\alpha+1}}. \end{aligned}$$

**247.** [A. Hurwitz, cf. op. cit. 244.] (1) If we set  $r_\mu = s_\mu$  then  $(r+s)=(2r)$ ,  $(r+2s)=(3r)$ ,  $\dots$ ,  $(r+(p-2)s)=((p-1)r)$  are complete remainder systems mod  $n$ , since  $2, 3, \dots, p-1$  are relatively prime to  $n$ .

(2) If  $p=2$ , and thus  $n$  is even, and if  $(r)$ ,  $(s)$ ,  $(r+s)$  were simultaneously complete remainder systems, then it would follow that

$$\begin{aligned} r_1 + r_2 + \cdots + r_n &\equiv s_1 + s_2 + \cdots + s_n \equiv (r_1 + s_1) + (r_2 + s_2) + \cdots \\ &\quad + (r_n + s_n) \equiv 1 + 2 + \cdots + n \equiv \frac{n(n+1)}{2} \equiv \frac{n}{2} \pmod{n}, \end{aligned}$$

and hence that

$$(r_1 + s_1) + (r_2 + s_2) + \cdots + (r_n + s_n) \equiv 0 \equiv \frac{n}{2} \pmod{n}.$$

Contradiction!

(3) Let  $p$  be odd and  $p^\alpha$  the highest power of  $p$  that divides  $n$ . Set

$$1^{p-1} + 2^{p-1} + \cdots + n^{p-1} = S.$$

If  $(r)$ ,  $(s)$ ,  $(r+s)$ ,  $\dots$ ,  $((r+(p-1)s))$  were simultaneously complete remainder systems, then it would follow that

$$\sum_{v=1}^n (r_v + ks_v)^{p-1} \equiv S \pmod{n}$$

and hence, setting

$$\binom{p-1}{\alpha} \sum_{v=1}^n r_v^{p-1-\alpha} s_v^\alpha = S_\alpha$$

we would have

$$kS_1 + k^2S_2 + \cdots + k^{p-2}S_{p-2} + k^{p-1}S \equiv 0 \pmod{n}, \quad k=1, 2, \dots, p-1.$$

Now the determinant of this system of  $p-1$  linear congruences is formed from factors that are all  $>0$  and  $<p$  and is thus relatively prime to  $n$ . Thus it would finally follow that

$$S_1 \equiv S_2 \equiv \cdots \equiv S_{p-2} \equiv S \equiv 0 \pmod{n}.$$

Contradiction, since  $S$  is not divisible by  $p^\alpha$  [246].

**247.1.** In the sequel, H-W refers to Hardy-Wright.

For  $\binom{p}{k}$  see H-W, p. 64, Theorem 75.

For  $s_k^n$  see I\* 199 and H-W, p. 85, Theorem 112.

From I 187, I 191, and H-W, p. 84, Theorem 111, it follows that

$$S_2^p x(x-1) + S_3^p x(x-1)(x-2) + \cdots + S_{p-1}^p x(x-1)\cdots(x-p+2) \equiv 0 \pmod{p}.$$

Divide first by  $x(x-1)$  (see H-W, p. 82, Theorem 104) then set  $x=2$ ; there follows  $S_2^p \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$ . Return now to the original congruence, divide by  $x(x-1)(x-2)$ , then set  $x=3$ ; it follows that  $S_3^p \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$ , and so on.

**247.2.** The coefficients of  $T_n(z)$  and  $U_n(x)$  are integers, as we find if we compute them from the identity

$$\cos n\delta + i \sin n\delta = (\cos \delta + i \sin \delta)^n.$$

The assertion follows from

$$T'_p(x) = pU_{p-1}(x).$$

**248.** For  $a \geq 2$  (of course!) we have for

$$\begin{aligned} n \text{ even: } n^a &= n \cdot n^{a-1} = (n^{a-1} + 1) + (n^{a-1} + 3) + \cdots + (n^{a-1} + n - 1) \\ &\quad + (n^{a-1} - 1) + (n^{a-1} - 3) + \cdots + (n^{a-1} - n + 1); \\ n \text{ odd: } n^a &= n^{a-1} + (n^{a-1} + 2) + (n^{a-1} + 4) + \cdots + (n^{a-1} + n - 1) \\ &\quad + (n^{a-1} - 2) + (n^{a-1} - 4) + \cdots + (n^{a-1} - n + 1). \end{aligned}$$

**249.** A proper divisor of one of the numbers  $2, 3, 4, \dots, n$  is contained in the same sequence of numbers; hence the required number must be a prime number. If a number  $m \leq n/2$ , then  $2m$  is contained in the same sequence of numbers. Hence the required number must be  $> n/2$ .

**250.** Using Tchebychev's theorem: If  $n > 2$ ,  $p$  a prime number,  $n \geq p > n/2$ , then we have

$$1 + \frac{1}{2} + \cdots + \frac{1}{p} + \cdots + \frac{1}{n} = \frac{1}{p} + \frac{M}{N} = \frac{N + pM}{pN},$$

where  $(M, N) = 1$ ,  $(p, N) = 1$ , from which it follows that  $(pN, N + pM) = 1$ : no cancellation of factors in the denominator! Without using Tchebychev's theorem: Cf. 251.

**251.** [J. Kürschák: Math. és phys. lapok, 27, pp. 299–300 (1918).] We term  $\alpha$  the “degree of parity of  $n$ ” if  $n$  is divisible by  $2^\alpha$  and not divisible by  $2^{\alpha+1}$ .

$2^\alpha, 3 \cdot 2^\alpha, 5 \cdot 2^\alpha, 7 \cdot 2^\alpha, \dots$  are the numbers of degree of parity  $\alpha$ . Between two consecutive numbers of this sequence lie the numbers  $2 \cdot 2^\alpha, 4 \cdot 2^\alpha, 6 \cdot 2^\alpha, \dots$ , respectively, and thus between any two numbers of the same degree of parity there lies one of higher degree of parity. Hence among the numbers  $n, n+1, \dots, m-1, m$  there is only *one* of maximal degree of parity  $\mu$ : the factor  $2^\mu$  of the denominator cannot be cancelled.

**252.** [G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 23, p. 289 (1915). Solution by S. Sidon: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 24, p. 284 (1916); present solution by A. Fleck.] It is sufficient to consider the case  $\alpha=1/k$ , where  $k$  is an integer. Let  $n$  be divisible by  $1, 2, 3, \dots, [\sqrt[k]{n}]$ , and hence also by the least common multiple  $V$  of these numbers. Denoting the  $\nu$ th prime number by  $p_\nu$ , let

$$p_l \leq \sqrt[k]{n} < p_{l+1}, \quad V = p_1^{m_1} p_2^{m_2} \dots p_l^{m_l}.$$

The exponent  $m_\lambda$  is determined by the inequality  $p_\lambda^{m_\lambda} \leq \sqrt[k]{n} < p_\lambda^{m_\lambda+1}$ . In particular  $\sqrt[k]{n} < p_\lambda^{2m_\lambda}$ ,  $\lambda=1, 2, \dots, l$ , whence by multiplication it follows that  $n^{\frac{1}{k}} < V^2$ . From the assumption it follows moreover that  $V \leq n$ , and hence finally

$$\frac{l}{k} < 2, \quad \sqrt[k]{n} < p_{2k}, \quad n < p_{2k}^k.$$

E.g. if  $k=2$ , then  $n < 49$ . We now arrive at the result for  $n=24$  by direct computation. For  $k=3$  the greatest permissible value of  $n$  is 420.

**253.** [L. Kollros.] Denote the least positive remainders of the numbers  $P, 10P, 10^2P, \dots \pmod{Q}$  by  $p_0, p_1, p_2, \dots$ . If

$$\frac{P}{Q} = a. a_1 a_2 a_3 \dots,$$

where  $a_1, a_2, a_3 \dots$  are the decimal digits, then we have

$$\frac{p_0}{Q} = 0. a_1 a_2 a_3 \dots, \quad \frac{p_1}{Q} = 0. a_2 a_3 a_4 \dots, \quad \frac{p_2}{Q} = 0. a_3 a_4 a_5 \dots$$

From this we deduce that the length of the shortest period  $l$  is the exponent of  $10 \pmod{Q}$ , i.e.  $10^l \equiv 1 \pmod{Q}$  and no smaller power of 10 is  $\equiv 1 \pmod{Q}$ . If  $l$  is even,  $=2\lambda$ , and thus  $(10^\lambda - 1)(10^\lambda + 1) \equiv 0 \pmod{Q}$ , then  $10^\lambda \equiv -1 \pmod{Q}$ , and hence

$$\frac{p_0}{Q} + \frac{p_\lambda}{Q} = 0. a_1 a_2 a_3 \dots a_\lambda a_1 \dots + 0. a_{\lambda+1} a_{\lambda+2} \dots a_l a_1 \dots a_\lambda = 0.999 \dots,$$

and thus  $a_1 + a_{\lambda+1} = 9, a_2 + a_{\lambda+2} = 9, \dots, a_\lambda + a_l = 9$ . If on the other hand  $l$  is odd, then we have clearly

$$\frac{a_1 + a_2 + \dots + a_l}{l} \neq \frac{9}{2}.$$

**254.** [E. Lucas; cf. A. Hurwitz: Interméd. des math. 3, p. 214 (1896).]

(1) If  $3^{2^h-1} \equiv -1 \pmod{n}$ , and hence  $3^{2^h} \equiv 1 \pmod{n}$ , then 3 belongs mod  $n$  to the exponent  $2^h = n-1$ . The exponent is a divisor of  $\varphi(n)$  and hence  $\varphi(n) \geq n-1$ . It follows that  $\varphi(n) = n-1$  and  $n$  is a prime number.

(2) If  $n=2^h+1$  is a prime number,  $h \geq 2$ , then  $n \equiv 1 \pmod{4}$ ; moreover  $h$  must be even,  $=2v$ . (Otherwise  $2^{2v+1}+1=4^v \cdot 2+1 \equiv 0 \pmod{3}$ .) By the law of reciprocity we have

$$\left(\frac{3}{n}\right) = \left(\frac{n}{3}\right) = \left(\frac{4^v+1}{3}\right) = \left(\frac{2}{3}\right) = -1, \quad 3^{\frac{n-1}{2}} \equiv \left(\frac{3}{n}\right) \pmod{n}.$$

**255.** [Euler: Opera Postuma, 1, p. 220. Petropoli 1862; G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 24, p. 84 (1916). Solution by G. Szegő: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 25, p. 340 (1917).] If  $x, y, z, t$  were a solution, then

$$\frac{4zt^2+1}{4yz-1} = 4zx-1$$

would be integral, i.e.

$$(2zt)^2 \equiv -z \pmod{4yz-1}.$$

Let  $z=2^\alpha z'$ ,  $\alpha$  integral,  $\alpha \geq 0$ ,  $z'$  odd. We then have (Legendre-Jacobi symbols [V 45])

$$\left(\frac{-z}{4yz-1}\right) = \left(\frac{-1}{4yz-1}\right) \left(\frac{2^\alpha}{4yz-1}\right) \left(\frac{z'}{4yz-1}\right).$$

The first factor is  $= -1$ . The third factor is

$$= \left(\frac{4yz-1}{z'}\right) (-1)^{\frac{z'-1}{2}} = \left(\frac{-1}{z'}\right) (-1)^{\frac{z'-1}{2}} = 1.$$

The second factor, if  $\alpha=2k+1$ ,  $k$  integral,  $k \geq 0$ ,  $z=2z''$ , is

$$= \left(\frac{2}{4yz-1}\right) = \left(\frac{2}{8yz''-1}\right) = 1,$$

and, if  $\alpha=2k$ ,  $k$  integral,  $k \geq 0$ ,

$$= \left(\frac{1}{4yz-1}\right) = 1.$$

Thence we have

$$\left(\frac{-z}{4yz-1}\right) = -1. \quad \text{Contradiction!}$$

**256.** [G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 24, p. 84 (1916). Cf. Gauss: Disquisitiones Arithmeticae, p. 125; Werke, 1, pp. 94–95. Göttingen: Königliche Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften 1863. Solution by P. Bernays.]

(1)  $q \equiv 1 \pmod{4}$ . If  $p$  is a prime factor of  $q-4$ , then we have  $\left(\frac{q}{p}\right) = \left(\frac{p}{q}\right) = 1$ ; we have used  $q > 5$ . Moreover, there must exist an odd prime number  $p < q$ , for which  $\left(\frac{p}{q}\right) = \left(\frac{q}{p}\right) = -1$ . For otherwise all odd numbers  $r$  less than  $q$ , and hence also the even numbers  $q-r$  and finally all the numbers  $1, 2, 3, \dots, q-1$  would be quadratic residues of  $q$ .

(2)  $q \equiv -1 \pmod{4}$ . At least one prime factor  $p$  of  $q-4$  is also  $\equiv -1 \pmod{4}$ . For this prime factor  $p$  we have  $\left(\frac{q}{p}\right) = -\left(\frac{p}{q}\right) = 1$ .

(2a).  $q \equiv 7 \pmod{8}$ . Of the four numbers  $(q+1)/8$ ,  $(q+9)/8$ ,  $(q+25)/8$ ,  $(q+49)/8$ , one and only one is of the form  $4n+3$ . This number has a prime factor  $p$  of the same form, and  $p < q$  if  $q > 7$ . We have  $\left(\frac{q}{p}\right) = \left(\frac{-1}{p}\right) = -1$ ,  $\left(\frac{p}{q}\right) = 1$ .

(2b).  $q \equiv 3 \pmod{8}$ . Of the two odd numbers  $(q+1)/4$  and  $(q+9)/4$ , one and only one has the form  $4n+3$ . This number has a prime factor  $p$  of the same form,  $p < q$ , if  $q > 3$ ;  $\left(\frac{q}{p}\right) = \left(\frac{-1}{p}\right) = -1 = -\left(\frac{p}{q}\right)$ .

**257.** [G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, **21**, p. 288 (1913). Solution by O. Szász, G. Szegő, L. Neder: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, **22**, p. 366 (1914). Cf. W. H. Young and Grace Chisholm Young: The theory of sets of points, p. 3. Cambridge University Press, 1906.]

*First solution:* Let  $n$  be any positive integer. There are arbitrarily large prime numbers that, when expressed in decimal notation, contain at least  $n$  consecutive zeros. [The arithmetic progression  $10^{n+1}x+1$  contains infinitely many prime numbers, **110**.] Hence the given decimal fraction cannot have a period of length  $n$ .

*Second solution:* By a result of Tchebychev [op. cit. **249**] there exists at least one prime number which, when expressed in decimal notation, has a prescribed number of digits. If the given decimal fraction were periodic with period  $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_k$ ,  $k \geq 2$ , choose  $r$  so large that the prime numbers with  $kr$  digits follow the digit  $a_1$  of the first period. Let  $x$  be the smallest of the prime numbers with  $kr$  digits. Then two cases are possible:

$$\begin{aligned} (1) \quad x &= a_1 a_2 \dots \overset{1}{a_k} a_1 a_2 \dots \overset{2}{a_k} \dots a_1 a_2 \dots \overset{r}{a_k}, \\ (2) \quad x &= a_{l+1} a_{l+2} \dots \overset{1}{a_k} a_1 a_2 \dots \overset{2}{a_k} \dots a_1 a_2 \dots \overset{r}{a_k} a_1 a_2 \dots a_l, \quad l > 0. \end{aligned}$$

In the first case the presumed prime number  $x$  would be divisible by the number  $a_1 a_2 \dots a_k$ , while in the second case  $x$  would be divisible by  $a_{l+1} a_{l+2} \dots a_k a_1 \dots a_l$ . Contradiction!

**258.** From Taylor's formula it follows that for  $n=0, 1, 2, \dots$

$$e = 1 + \frac{1}{1!} + \frac{1}{2!} + \dots + \frac{1}{n!} + \frac{e^{\theta_n}}{(n+1)!}, \quad 0 < \theta_n < 1.$$

Assume  $e=r/s$ , ( $r, s$  positive integers, relatively prime,  $s \geq 2$ ). Set  $n=s$ . Then

$$s! \left( e - 1 - \frac{1}{1!} - \frac{1}{2!} - \dots - \frac{1}{s!} \right) = \frac{e^{\theta_s}}{s+1}$$

would be integral. On the other hand we have that

$$0 < \frac{e^{\theta_s}}{s+1} < \frac{e}{3} < 1: \text{ Contradiction!}$$

**259.** If  $ae^x + be^{-x} + c = 0$  ( $a, b, c$  integral,  $|a| + |b| > 0$ ), then it would follow from Taylor's formula, applied to the function  $ae^x + be^{-x}$ , that

$$-c = \sum_{v=0}^n \frac{a + (-1)^v b}{v!} + \frac{ae^{\theta_n} - (-1)^n be^{-\theta_n}}{(n+1)!}, \quad 0 < \theta_n < 1,$$

$n=0, 1, 2, \dots$ . Let  $n \geq 3|a| + |b| - 1$ , and further choose  $n$  such that the sign of  $(-1)^n b$  coincides with the sign of  $-a$ . Then, [cf. 258]

$$\frac{ae^{\theta_n} - (-1)^n b e^{-\theta_n}}{n+1}$$

will be integral. On the other hand we have

$$0 < \frac{|a|e^{\theta_n} + |b|e^{-\theta_n}}{n+1} = \left| \frac{ae^{\theta_n} - (-1)^n b e^{-\theta_n}}{n+1} \right| < \frac{3|a| + |b|}{n+1} \leq 1:$$

Contradiction!

**260.** [A. Hurwitz.] We have

$$\frac{\Gamma'(n)}{\Gamma(n)} = \frac{\Gamma'(1)}{\Gamma(1)} + \frac{1}{1} + \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{3} + \dots + \frac{1}{n-1}$$

for integral  $n$ , and thus

$$\Gamma'(n+1) = n! \left( \frac{1}{1} + \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{3} + \dots + \frac{1}{n} - C \right).$$

**260.1.** If  $\lambda$  were rational,  $=m/n$ , where  $m$  and  $n$  are positive integers,  $3^n$  would equal  $2^m$  which is impossible: The decomposition into prime factors is unique.

**260.2.** Eight examples are collected in the following table (use 260.1):

$a$	$b$	$a^b$	
$r$	$r$	$r$	$2^1 = 2$
$r$	$r$	$i$	$2^{\frac{1}{2}} = \sqrt{2}$
$i$	$r$	$r$	$(\sqrt{2})^2 = 2$
$i$	$r$	$i$	$(\sqrt{2})^1 = \sqrt{2}$
$r$	$i$	$r$	$2^\lambda = 3$
$r$	$i$	$i$	$2^{\frac{\lambda}{2}} = \sqrt{3}$
$i$	$i$	$r$	$(\sqrt{2})^{2\lambda} = 3$
$i$	$i$	$i$	$(\sqrt{2})^\lambda = \sqrt{3}$

**261.**  $\pi + (4 - \pi) = 3.9999 \dots$

**262.** [G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 27, p. 161 (1918).] The given expression is [182, 82]

$$= \left\{ 2^{n - \lfloor n \rfloor - \lfloor \frac{n}{2} \rfloor - \lfloor \frac{n}{4} \rfloor - \dots} \prod_{p > 2} p^{\lfloor \frac{2n}{p-1} \rfloor - \lfloor \frac{2n}{p} \rfloor - \lfloor \frac{2n}{p^2} \rfloor - \dots} \right\}^{\frac{1}{n}} = 2^{a_n} \prod_1^{\frac{1}{n}} \prod_2^{\frac{1}{n}} ;$$

$\prod_{p > 2}$  is extended over all odd prime numbers  $\leq 2n+1$ . The product  $\prod_1$  contains those factors for which  $3 \leq p \leq \sqrt{2n}$ ,  $\prod_2$  those for which  $\sqrt{2n} < p \leq 2n+1$ . We have for  $n \rightarrow \infty$

$$a_n = -\frac{1}{n} \left( \left[ \frac{n}{2} \right] + \left[ \frac{n}{4} \right] + \left[ \frac{n}{8} \right] + \dots \right) \rightarrow -1.$$

For  $p > \sqrt{2n}$  we have  $[2n/p^2] = [2n/p^3] = \dots = 0$ . Since it is an alternating series with decreasing terms we have that

$$\sum_{p > \sqrt{2n}} \left( \left[ \frac{p-1}{2n} \right] - \left[ \frac{2n}{p} \right] \right) \leq \left[ \frac{2n}{[\sqrt{2n}]} \right] < \frac{2n}{\sqrt{2n}-1}$$

We deduce that

$$1 \leq \prod_2 < (2n+1)^{\frac{2n}{\sqrt{2n}-1}},$$

and hence that  $\prod_3^{\frac{1}{2}} \rightarrow 1$ .

Let  $m = a_0 + a_1p + a_2p^2 + \dots + a_l p^l$  be a rational integer expressed in the  $p$ -adic system, that is

$$0 \leq a_\lambda \leq p-1, \quad \lambda = 0, 1, \dots, l, \quad a_l > 0.$$

Then we have

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{m}{p} - \left[ \frac{m}{p} \right] &= \frac{a_0}{p}, \\ \frac{m}{p^2} - \left[ \frac{m}{p^2} \right] &= \frac{a_0}{p^2} + \frac{a_1}{p}, \\ &\dots \end{aligned}$$

and if all the infinitely many equations are added we obtain

$$\frac{m}{p-1} - \left[ \frac{m}{p} \right] - \left[ \frac{m}{p^2} \right] - \dots = \frac{a_0 + a_1 + \dots + a_l}{p-1} \leq l+1 \leq \frac{\log m}{\log p} + 1,$$

where the last inequality follows from  $l \log p \leq \log m$ . Hence we have for  $3 \leq p < \sqrt{2n}$

$$p^{\left[ \frac{2n}{p-1} \right] - \left[ \frac{2n}{p} \right] - \left[ \frac{2n}{p^2} \right] - \dots} \leq p^{\frac{\log 2n}{\log p} + 1} < p^{\frac{2 \log 2n}{\log p}} = (2n)^2,$$

$$1 \leq \prod_1 < (2n)^{2\sqrt{2n}}, \quad \prod_1^{\frac{1}{2}} \rightarrow 1.$$

**262.1.** We must determine the limit of the sum of the first  $n$  rows of the double series

$$\begin{aligned} &\frac{1}{2^2} + \frac{1}{3^2} + \frac{1}{4^2} + \dots \\ &+ \frac{1}{2^3} + \frac{1}{3^3} + \frac{1}{4^3} + \dots \\ &+ \frac{1}{2^4} + \frac{1}{3^4} + \frac{1}{4^4} + \dots \\ &+ \dots \end{aligned}$$

The sum of the first  $n$  columns is

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{2(2-1)} + \frac{1}{3(3-1)} + \dots + \frac{1}{(n+1)n} &= \left(1 - \frac{1}{2}\right) + \left(\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{3}\right) + \dots + \left(\frac{1}{n} - \frac{1}{n+1}\right) \\ &= 1 - \frac{1}{n+1}. \end{aligned}$$

**262.2.** Since

$$\log n = 1 + \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{3} + \cdots + \frac{1}{n-1} - C + \varepsilon_n,$$

where  $\varepsilon_n \rightarrow 0$  [II 19.1], we must determine the limit of the sum of the first  $n-1$  rows of the double series

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{2^2} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{3^2} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{4^2} + \cdots \\ & + \frac{1}{3} \frac{1}{2^3} + \frac{1}{3} \frac{1}{3^3} + \frac{1}{3} \frac{1}{4^3} + \cdots \\ & + \frac{1}{4} \frac{1}{2^4} + \frac{1}{4} \frac{1}{3^4} + \frac{1}{4} \frac{1}{4^4} + \cdots \\ & + \cdots \cdots \cdots \end{aligned}$$

The sum of the first  $n-1$  columns is

$$\begin{aligned} & -\log \left(1 - \frac{1}{2}\right) - \frac{1}{2} - \log \left(1 - \frac{1}{3}\right) - \frac{1}{3} - \cdots - \log \left(1 - \frac{1}{n}\right) - \frac{1}{n} \\ & = -\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{3} - \cdots - \frac{1}{n} + \log n \rightarrow 1 - C \end{aligned} \quad [\text{II } 19.1.]$$

**263.** [G. Pólya: Gött. Nachr. p. 26 (1918).] By assumption there are only finitely many prime number powers  $p^{a'}$  for which  $|f(p^{a'})| \geq 1$ . Let the product of all such values  $\prod f(p^{a'})$  be  $= C$ . Let  $0 < \varepsilon < 1$ . Then there are also only finitely many prime number powers  $p^{a''}$  such that

$$|f(p^{a''})| \geq \varepsilon |C|^{-1}.$$

Thus, apart from finitely many, every natural number  $n$  has in its prime factor decomposition at least one prime number power  $P^A$  for which

$$|f(P^A)| < \varepsilon |C|^{-1}.$$

Then we have

$$\begin{aligned} |f(n)| &= |f(p^a q^b \cdots P^A \cdots)| = |f(p^a)| |f(q^b)| \cdots |f(P^A)| \cdots \\ &< |C| \cdot \varepsilon |C|^{-1} = \varepsilon. \end{aligned}$$

**264.** Application of **263** [25, 44]. Cf. **45**.

**265.**  $ax^2 + bx + c$  is reducible if and only if  $b^2 - 4ac$  is the square of an integer,  $= u^2$ . We require an estimate for  $r_n$ . We can omit consideration of the coordinate planes ( $a=0, b=0, c=0$ ), which can contribute at most  $3(2n+1)^2$  units to  $r_n$ . For  $b$  there are thus  $2n$  admissible values,  $-n, \dots, -1, 1, \dots, n$ . For fixed  $b$  we must have

$$b^2 - u^2 = 4ac \geq -4n^2, \quad u^2 \leq 4n^2 + b^2 \leq 5n^2.$$

For  $u$  there are thus at most  $2\sqrt{5}n$  admissible values,  $u^2 = b^2$  is not permissible. For fixed  $b$  and  $u$ ,  $b^2 - u^2 = 4ac$ , there are a total of  $2\tau(|b^2 - u^2|/4)$  admissible values for  $a$ ; then  $c$  is also determined. If then we denote by  $T(n)$  the largest of the numbers  $\tau(1), \tau(2), \dots, \tau(n)$  we have



$$r_n < 3(2n+1)^2 + 2n \cdot 2\sqrt{5}n \cdot 2T(n^2).$$

We have  $\tau(n) \cdot n^{-\varepsilon} \rightarrow 0$  for every fixed  $\varepsilon > 0$  [264].

**266.** Let  $k > 0$ ,  $l > 0$ ,  $k+l=h$ , and

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha(x) &= \alpha_0 + \alpha_1 x + \dots + \alpha_k x^k, \\ \beta(x) &= \beta_0 + \beta_1 x + \dots + \beta_l x^l\end{aligned}$$

two polynomials with integral coefficients, in whose product  $\alpha(x)\beta(x)=A(x)$  all the coefficients are in absolute value  $\leq n$ . Moreover let  $\alpha_0, \alpha_k, \beta_0, \beta_l$  be different from 0. Since the number of polynomials considered in the problem with  $\alpha_0=0$  or  $\alpha_k=0$  is of the order of magnitude  $n^h$ , it is sufficient to show that the number of admissible systems  $(\alpha_0, \alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_k, \beta_0, \beta_1, \dots, \beta_l)$  is equal to  $O(n^h \log^2 n)$ .

Let  $x_1 < x_2 < \dots < x_h$  be the  $h$  smallest natural numbers for which  $A(x)$  does not vanish. Then clearly  $x_h \leq 2h$ . Moreover  $|\alpha(x_\nu)|, |\beta(x_\nu)|$  are positive integers and both divide  $|A(x_\nu)|$ ; hence

$$|\alpha(x_\nu)| \leq |A(x_\nu)| \leq (1 + (2h) + (2h)^2 + \dots + (2h)^h)n, \\ \nu = 1, 2, \dots, h.$$

The same inequality holds for  $\beta(x_\nu)$ . From this it follows by the Lagrange interpolation formula (introduction to Part VI, § 9 p. 82) that all the coefficients of  $\alpha(x)$  and  $\beta(x)$  are in absolute value smaller than  $Cn$  where  $C$  depends only on  $h$ . Moreover  $1 \leq |\alpha_0 \beta_0| \leq n$ ,  $1 \leq |\alpha_k \beta_l| \leq n$ . The number of admissible systems of numbers  $(\alpha_0, \beta_0)$  and  $(\alpha_k, \beta_l)$  respectively is thus [79, II 46]  $= O(n \log n)$ , the number of systems of numbers  $(\alpha_0, \beta_0, \alpha_k, \beta_l)$  is hence  $= O(n^2 \log^2 n)$ , and finally the required number is

$$= O(n^{k-1} n^{l-1} n^2 \log^2 n) = O(n^h \log^2 n).$$

## Part Nine. Geometric Problems

**1.** The points of the surface form a closed set of points  $\mathcal{O}$  from which  $P$  is at a certain minimum distance. This minimum distance can be attained only at a point  $M$  of the surface such that the direction of every curve element on  $\mathcal{O}$  emanating from the point  $M$  is perpendicular to the straight line  $MP$ . Thus  $M$  cannot be situated at a corner nor on an edge but must be in the interior of a face of the polyhedron.

**1.1.** [G. Pólya, problem: Elem. Math., **26**, p. 113 (1971).] Choose the system of rectangular coordinates  $x, y, z$  in such a way that the  $z$ -axis is the axis of the cone and the major axis of the ellipse in question lies in the  $xz$ -plane. By eliminating  $z$  from two equations, that of the cone and that of the intersecting plane, we obtain the equation of the projection of the ellipse onto the  $xy$ -plane:

$$\left[x - \frac{p-q}{2} \sin \alpha\right]^2 + \left(\frac{p+q}{2\sqrt{pq}}\right)^2 y^2 = \left(\frac{p+q}{2}\right)^2 \sin^2 \alpha,$$

which is again an ellipse with semi-axes

$$a = \frac{p+q}{2} \sin \alpha, \quad b = \sqrt{pq} \sin \alpha.$$

Now

$$S \sin \alpha = \pi ab.$$

**1.2.** [G. Pólya, problem: Elem. Math., **16**, p. 92 (1961). Solution by H. Bieri, Elem. Math., **17**, p. 112 (1962).] Proof for  $V$  and  $S$  by elementary solid geometry. Observe that

$$S = 4\pi r^2 + 4\pi R^2.$$

For the definition of  $M$  see the explanation preceding **7**.

**1.3.** [Cf. G. Pólya, problem: Amer. Math. Monthly, **54**, p. 340 (1947). Solution by Joseph Rosenbaum: Amer. Math. Monthly, **55**, pp. 162–164 (1948).] The “piece of paper” is bounded by two concentric circles, with radii  $r$  and  $r+s$ , respectively, and by rays emanating from the common center of the two circles and including an angle  $2\alpha$ ,

$$r2\alpha = p, \quad (r+s)2\alpha = P.$$

The assumption concerning the inclination  $i$  of the slant height implies that

$$\cos i = \frac{P-p}{2\pi s} \leq \frac{1}{2}$$

and therefore that

$$\alpha = \frac{P-p}{2s} \leq \frac{\pi}{2}.$$

The piece of paper is obviously contained in a rectangle with sides

$$2(r+s) \sin \alpha \quad \text{and} \quad s+r(1-\cos \alpha).$$

That these sides are shorter than those mentioned in the problem follows from I 142:

$$\sin \alpha < \alpha, \quad 1 - \cos \alpha < \frac{\alpha^2}{2}.$$

**1.4.** [G. Pólya, problem: Amer. Math. Monthly 54, p. 479 (1947). Solution by N. J. Fine: Amer. Math. Monthly, 56, p. 273 (1949).] Let

$$F(x) = 2f(x)[1 + (f'(x))^2]^{1/2} \\ G(x) = f(x)[x^2 + (f(x))^2]^{1/2}.$$

It is sufficient to prove that

$$F(x) \leq G'(x)$$

for  $0 \leq x \leq a$ , but the case of equality is not attained throughout the whole interval. In fact we find that  $G' \geq 0$  and

$$(x^2 + f^2)(G'^2 - F^2) = x^2(x^2 f'^2 - f^2) + (2x^2 f + 4f^3)(xf' - f).$$

Since  $f(0) = 0$  and  $f'(x)$  is not decreasing and not constant,

$$xf'(x) \geq f(x),$$

and  $>$  is valid instead of  $\geq$  at some points of the interval  $0 \leq x \leq a$ .

**2.** [G. Pólya: Tôhoku Math. J., 19, pp. 1-3 (1921).]

**3.** [II 121.]

**4.** [Cf. H. Dellac: Interméd. des math., 1, pp. 69-70 (1894); cf. also H. Poincaré: Interméd. des math., 1, pp. 141-144 (1894)]. Let  $A$  and  $B$  be constants and set  $A \cos x + B \sin x = u$ . We have

$$(f'' + f)u = (f'' + f)u - f(u' + u) = \frac{d}{dx}(f'u - fu').$$

It follows that

$$(1) \quad \int_a^{a+\pi} [f''(x) + f(x)] \sin(x-a) dx = f(a) + f(a+\pi) > 0,$$

$$(2) \quad \int_a^b [f''(x) + f(x)] \sin(x-a) dx = f'(b) \sin(b-a).$$

We have  $f'(b) \leq 0$  [solution V 10]. If now we had  $b-a \leq \pi$  then the left-hand side would be  $> 0$  and the right-hand side  $\leq 0$ .

**5.** [W. Blaschke, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 26, p. 65 (1917). Solution by G. Szegő: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 28, pp. 183-184 (1920). Cf. also W. Süss: Jber. deutsch. Math. Verein. 33, Section 2, pp. 32-33 (1924).] Let

$$h(\varphi) \sim \frac{h_0}{2} + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (h_n \cos n\varphi + k_n \sin n\varphi)$$

be the Fourier series of  $h(\varphi)$ . Then the Fourier series of  $r(\varphi)$  is

$$r(\varphi) \sim \frac{h_0}{2} + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (1-n^2)(h_n \cos \varphi + k_n \sin n\varphi),$$

since because of the periodicity of  $h(\varphi)$  and  $h'(\varphi)$  we have

$$\int_0^{2\pi} r(\varphi) e^{in\varphi} d\varphi = (1-n^2) \int_0^{2\pi} h(\varphi) e^{in\varphi} d\varphi$$

$n=0, 1, 2, \dots$  Moreover we have that

$$\begin{aligned} r(\varphi) - r(\varphi + \pi) &\sim \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (1-n^2)[1 - (-1)^n](h_n \cos n\varphi + k_n \sin n\varphi) \\ &\sim 2 \sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty} [1 - (2\nu+1)^2][h_{2\nu+1} \cos (2\nu+1)\varphi + k_{2\nu+1} \sin (2\nu+1)\varphi] \end{aligned}$$

[II 141].

6. [G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 27, p. 162 (1918).] Let  $H(\Phi)$  and  $h(\varphi)$  be the support functions, and  $R(\Phi)$  and  $r(\varphi)$  the radii of curvature belonging to the two convex curves respectively. We then have

$$\begin{aligned} &\int_0^{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} [H(\Phi) - h(\varphi)][R(\Phi) - r(\varphi)] d\Phi d\varphi \\ &= \int_0^{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} [H(\Phi)R(\Phi) + h(\varphi)r(\varphi) - h(\varphi)R(\Phi) - H(\Phi)r(\varphi)] d\Phi d\varphi \\ &= 2\pi \cdot 2A + 2\pi \cdot 2a - IL - LI. \end{aligned}$$

By assumption we have  $H(\Phi) \geq h(\varphi)$ ,  $R(\Phi) \geq r(\varphi)$  for all pairs of values of  $\Phi$  and  $\varphi$ . The last expression above is hence non-negative.

7. [G. Pólya, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Series 3, 27, p. 162 (1918).] Let  $H(\Omega)$  and  $h(\omega)$  be the support functions, and  $R(\Omega)$ ,  $R'(\Omega)$  and  $r(\omega)$ ,  $r'(\omega)$  the principal radii of curvature belonging to the two convex surfaces, respectively. We then have

$$\begin{aligned} &\iint [H(\Omega) - h(\omega)][R(\Omega)R'(\Omega) - r(\omega)r'(\omega)] d\Omega d\omega \\ &= \iint [H(\Omega)R(\Omega)R'(\Omega) + h(\omega)r(\omega)r'(\omega) - h(\omega)R(\Omega)R'(\Omega) \\ &\quad - H(\Omega)r(\omega)r'(\omega)] d\Omega d\omega = 4\pi \cdot 3V + 4\pi \cdot 3v - mS - Ms, \\ &\iint [H(\Omega) - h(\omega)][R(\Omega) - r(\omega)][R'(\Omega) - r'(\omega)] \\ &\quad + [R(\Omega) - r'(\omega)][R'(\Omega) - r(\omega)] d\Omega d\omega \\ &= \iint \{2H(\Omega)R(\Omega)R'(\Omega) - 2h(\omega)r(\omega)r'(\omega) + 2H(\Omega)r(\omega)r'(\omega) \\ &\quad + [R(\Omega) + R'(\Omega)]h(\omega)[r(\omega) + r'(\omega)] - 2h(\omega)R(\Omega)R'(\Omega) \\ &\quad - [r(\omega) + r'(\omega)]H(\Omega)[R(\Omega) + R'(\Omega)]\} d\Omega d\omega \\ &= 6 \cdot 4\pi V - 6 \cdot 4\pi v + 2Ms + 2M \cdot 2s - 2mS - 2m \cdot 2S. \end{aligned}$$

By assumption we have

$$H(\Omega) \geq h(\omega), \quad \min [R(\Omega), R'(\Omega)] \geq \max [r(\omega), r'(\omega)]$$

for all pairs of values of  $\Omega$  and  $\omega$ . The two expressions above are thus non-negative.

**8.** In Gauss's formula

$$\iint (X \cos \alpha + Y \cos \beta + Z \cos \gamma) dS = \iiint \left( \frac{\partial X}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial Y}{\partial y} + \frac{\partial Z}{\partial z} \right) dx dy dz,$$

set  $X=1$ ,  $Y=0$ ,  $Z=0$ , then  $X=0$ ,  $Y=-z$ ,  $Z=y$ .

**9.** Cf. **10**.

**10.** [Cf. *Nouv. Annls Math. Ser. 4*, **16**, p. 140 (1916).] Consider a surface parallel to the given surface at a distance  $\rho$  from it, and associate its points with those of the given surface in such a manner that corresponding points have the same normal. The coordinates, the direction cosines of the normal, the principal radii of curvature and the elements of area at corresponding points of the given surface and the parallel surface are given by

$$\begin{array}{ccc} x, y, z & x + \rho \cos \alpha, & y + \rho \cos \beta, & z + \rho \cos \gamma \\ \cos \alpha, \cos \beta, \cos \gamma & \cos \alpha, & \cos \beta, & \cos \gamma \\ R_1, R_2 & R_1 + \rho, & R_2 + \rho & \\ dS & \frac{(R_1 + \rho)(R_2 + \rho)}{R_1 R_2} dS, & & \end{array}$$

respectively. If we apply **8** to the *parallel surface* we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \iint \cos \alpha \left( 1 + \frac{\rho}{R_1} \right) \left( 1 + \frac{\rho}{R_2} \right) dS &= 0, \dots, \\ \iint (y \cos \gamma - z \cos \beta) \left( 1 + \frac{\rho}{R_1} \right) \left( 1 + \frac{\rho}{R_2} \right) dS &= 0, \dots \end{aligned}$$

Now regard  $\rho$  as a variable and set the coefficients of  $\rho^2$ ,  $\rho$  and 1 equal to 0. We then again obtain **10**, **9** and **8**, respectively.

**11.** By a limiting process from **9**, or by applying **8** to the "parallel surface" of the polyhedron and considering the coefficient of  $\rho$ , or as follows: Resolve the force  $F$  into two components that lie in the two faces of the polyhedron intersecting in the edge  $e$ . The new system of forces thus obtained maintains every face, taken *individually*, in equilibrium, by the analogy of **8** in the plane.

**12.** [G. Pólya, problem: *Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3*, **25**, p. 337 (1917). Solution by K. Scholl: *Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3*, **28**, p. 180 (1920).]

*First Solution:* Let the coordinates and the direction cosines of the principal normal be

$$x, y, z; \quad l = r \frac{d^2 x}{ds^2}, \quad m = r \frac{d^2 y}{ds^2}, \quad n = r \frac{d^2 z}{ds^2},$$

respectively; let the curve be described as  $s$  varies from 0 to  $L$ , and let  $x, y, z$  and their derivatives assume the same values for  $s=0$  and  $s=L$ . We have

$$\begin{aligned} \int_0^L l \frac{ds}{r} &= \int_0^L \frac{d^2 x}{ds^2} ds = \left[ \frac{dx}{ds} \right]_0^L = 0, \\ \int_0^L (ny - mz) \frac{ds}{r} &= \int_0^L \left( y \frac{d^2 z}{ds^2} - z \frac{d^2 y}{ds^2} \right) ds = \left[ y \frac{dz}{ds} - z \frac{dy}{ds} \right]_0^L = 0. \end{aligned}$$

**Second Solution:** The family of spheres, whose center is a variable point of the curve and whose radius is fixed  $=\rho$ , has a "canal surface" as its envelope. Apply 8 to this surface and replace the system of forces acting at the surface by a system of forces acting at points of the curve.

**13.** [K. Löwner.] With the notation of the first solution of 12, the coordinates of a variable point of the spherical image are given by

$$\xi = \frac{dx}{ds}, \quad \eta = \frac{dy}{ds}, \quad \zeta = \frac{dz}{ds}$$

We have

$$\int_0^L \xi ds = \int_0^L \eta ds = \int_0^L \zeta ds = 0,$$

and hence also for any set of real numbers  $\alpha, \beta, \gamma$

$$\int_0^L (\alpha\xi + \beta\eta + \gamma\zeta) ds = 0.$$

There are always at least two values of  $s$  such that  $\alpha\xi + \beta\eta + \gamma\zeta = 0$ .

**14.** [K. Löwner.] By (3),  $F(x)$  assumes negative values both in the neighbourhood of  $a$  and in the neighbourhood of  $b$ . If then  $F(x)$  were monotonic, we would have that  $F(x) < 0$ ,  $f''(x) < 0$  in the whole interval  $a < x < b$ . Let  $\xi$ ,  $a < \xi < b$ , be the only zero of  $f'(x)$ , so that  $f'(x)$  is positive from  $a$  to  $\xi$  and negative from  $\xi$  to  $b$ . The integral

$$(*) \quad \int_a^{\xi} F(x)f(x)f'(x) dx = -\frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{1+[f'(x)]^2}$$

is convergent, and in view of (3) we have

$$\int_a^b F(x)f(x)f'(x) dx = \int_a^{\xi} F(x)f(x)f'(x) dx + \int_{\xi}^b F(x)f(x)f'(x) dx = 0.$$

Since all the factors are of constant sign between  $a$  and  $\xi$  and also between  $\xi$  and  $b$ , it thus follows that

$$F(x_1) \int_a^{\xi} f(x)f'(x) dx + F(x_2) \int_{\xi}^b f(x)f'(x) dx = (F(x_1) - F(x_2)) \frac{[f(\xi)]^2}{2} = 0,$$

$$a < x_1 < \xi < x_2 < b,$$

i.e.  $F(x_1) = F(x_2) = -c$ ,  $c > 0$ . Thus  $F(x) = -c$  for  $x_1 \leq x \leq x_2$ . From the last two equations it follows that

$$\int_a^{x_1} (F(x) - F(x_1))f(x)f'(x) dx + \int_{x_2}^b (F(x) - F(x_2))f(x)f'(x) dx = 0.$$

The two integrands are of the same constant sign, and so  $F(x) = -c$  in the whole interval  $a < x < b$ .

From (\*) it follows that

$$-c \frac{[f(x)]^2}{2} = -\frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{1+[f'(x)]^2}, \quad f'(x) = \pm \frac{\sqrt{c^{-1} - [f(x)]^2}}{f(x)},$$

where the  $+$  sign applies for  $a < x < \xi$  and the  $-$  sign for  $\xi < x < b$ . In the whole of the interval of integration we must have  $[f(x)]^2 \leq c^{-1}$ . By integration we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} x-a &= \sqrt{c^{-1}} - \sqrt{c^{-1} - [f(x)]^2}, & a < x < \xi, \\ b-x &= \sqrt{c^{-1}} - \sqrt{c^{-1} - [f(x)]^2}, & \xi < x < b. \end{aligned}$$

From the continuity of  $f(x)$  it follows that  $\xi-a=b-\xi$ ,  $\xi=(a+b)/2$ . Moreover we must have  $[f(\xi)]^2=c^{-1}$ , for otherwise differentiation with respect to  $x$  would give  $1=-1$ . Hence  $\xi-a=\sqrt{c^{-1}}$  and thus  $c^{-1}=(\xi-a)^2=\frac{1}{4}(b-a)^2$ ,  $f(x)=\sqrt{(x-a)(b-x)}$ .

**15.** [K. Löwner. Cf. also formulae (89) in H. Minkowski: *Ges. Abhandlungen*, 2, p. 263. Leipzig and Berlin: B. G. Teubner, 1911.] Let the meridian curve be given by  $y=f(x)$ ,  $a \leq x \leq b$ . To calculate the Gaussian curvature  $K(x)=K_1(x)K_2(x)$  at points of the circle of latitude belonging to the value  $x$ , we note the following: The meridian section yields one of the principal curvatures

$$K_1(x) = \frac{f''(x)}{(1+[f'(x)]^2)^{3/2}}$$

The second principal curvature (by a theorem of Meusnier; cf. W. Blaschke: *Vorlesungen über Differentialgeometrie*, 2nd edition, 1, pp. 57-58. Berlin: J. Springer, 1924) is obtained from the curvature of the circle of latitude by multiplication by the cosine of the angle between the plane of the circle of latitude and the normal to the surface:

$$K_2(x) = \frac{1}{f(x)} \cdot \frac{1}{\sqrt{1+[f'(x)]^2}}$$

$f(x)$  satisfies the assumptions of **14**.

**16.** [Following J. Kürschák.]

$$\begin{aligned} (\beta-\gamma)(b-c) + (\gamma-\alpha)(c-a) + (\alpha-\beta)(a-b) &\geq 0, \\ \alpha(b+c-a) + \beta(c+a-b) + \gamma(a+b-c) &\geq 0. \end{aligned}$$

**17.** [G. Pólya, problem: *Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3*, 27, p. 162 (1918).] Let the edges of a closed convex polyhedron be denoted by  $k_1, k_2, \dots, k_m$ , and the (interior) surface angles, formed by the faces of the polyhedron intersecting at the corresponding edge, by  $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m$ . The *measure* of all the planes that intersect the polyhedron is given by

$$M = \frac{1}{2}[(\pi-\alpha_1)k_1 + (\pi-\alpha_2)k_2 + \dots + (\pi-\alpha_m)k_m].$$

[G. Pólya: *Wien. Ber.* 126, p. 319 (1917).] As a limiting case we have that the measure of all the planes in space that intersect a convex plane polygon is  $(\pi/2) \times$  perimeter of the polygon. We now consider a tetrahedron,  $m=6$ . Let the perimeters of the four faces be  $L_1, L_2, L_3, L_4$ . The measure of all the planes that intersect the tetrahedron without meeting its first face is  $M-(\pi/2)L_1$ , etc. Let the measure of all the planes that intersect the tetrahedron and meet all its four faces be  $T$ . We then have

$$M = \left(M - \frac{\pi}{2}L_1\right) + \left(M - \frac{\pi}{2}L_2\right) + \left(M - \frac{\pi}{2}L_3\right) + \left(M - \frac{\pi}{2}L_4\right) + T.$$

The desired inequality follows by rewriting the inequality

$$0 < T < M.$$

The bounds are approached as the tetrahedron converges to a straight line segment, the upper bound as two corners of the tetrahedron tend to each end point of the segment, and the lower bound as three corners of the tetrahedron tend to one end of the segment.

**17.1.** The search for convenient parameters may lead (perhaps after various trials) to

$$x = \frac{b}{a}, \quad y = \cos \gamma.$$

We are required to maximize the function of  $x$  and  $y$

$$\frac{64A^6}{(abc)^4} = \frac{x^2(1-y^2)^3}{(1+x^2-2xy)^2}$$

in the domain  $D$

$$x \geq 0, \quad -1 \leq y \leq 1$$

on the boundary of which the function vanishes. (Define it by continuity for  $x \rightarrow \infty$  and at the point  $x=1, y=1$ ; observe that

$$1+x^2-2xy \geq 1-y^2.)$$

Therefore the maximum is attained at an interior point of the domain  $D$ , where the first partial derivatives, with respect to  $x$  and to  $y$ , must vanish. The derivative with respect to  $x$  leads to  $x=1$ ; the use of this value and the derivative with respect to  $y$  yield, appropriately combined,  $y=\frac{1}{2}$ . Thus

$$x = \frac{b}{a} = 1, \quad y = \cos \gamma = \frac{1}{2},$$

the triangle is equilateral.

**17.2.** Combine two facts: **17.1** and the inequality between the arithmetic and geometric means (Part II, chap. 2, § 1 p. 63). As  $p$  increases the inequality becomes steadily "weaker"; see II **82**. For the cases  $p=1$  and  $p=2$  see MPR, 1, p. 133, ex. 16 and 2, p. 212, ex. 8.63.4, respectively; for  $p=3$  C. N. Mills, problem: Amer. Math. Monthly, 34, pp. 382-4, 1927.

**17.3.** From

$$r = \frac{2A}{a+b+c}, \quad R = \frac{abc}{4A}$$

$$\frac{2r}{R} = \frac{16A^2}{(a+b+c)abc} \leq \frac{16A^2}{3(abc)^{4/3}} \leq 1;$$

we have combined the same two facts as in solution **17.2**.

The inequality between  $r$  and  $R$  is well known; the novelty consists in using **17.1** to prove it.

**17.4.** Let  $V$  denote the volume of a tetrahedron and  $k_1, k_2, \dots, k_6$  the lengths of its six edges (as in **17**). Then

$$V \leq \frac{\sqrt{2}}{12} (k_1 k_2 \dots k_6)^{1/2},$$



with equality only for regular tetrahedra.

**17.5.** The proposition is conveniently verified in the following three cases:

(1) The base of the tetrahedron is an equilateral triangle whose center is the foot of the perpendicular drawn from the opposite vertex,

(2) MD, 1, p. 45, ex. 2.10, and

(3) MD, 1, p. 45, ex. 2.13.

**18.** [E. Steinitz, problem: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 19, p. 361 (1912). Solution by W. Gaedcke: Arch. Math. Phys. Ser. 3, 21, p. 290 (1913).] Let  $P_2$  lie at the origin,  $P_0$  on the positive real axis, and  $P_1$  on the positive imaginary axis. Let the length of the hypotenuse  $P_0P_1$  be  $d$ ,  $d > 0$ , let the angle  $P_2P_0P_1$  be  $\alpha$ ,  $0 < \alpha < \pi/2$ , and let the vector  $P_{n-1}P_n$  be represented by the complex number  $z_n$ ,  $n=0, 1, 2, \dots$ ;  $P_{-1}=P_2$ . Let  $z_n = r_n e^{i\vartheta_n}$ ,  $r_n > 0$ ,  $0 \leq \vartheta_n < 2\pi$ . The values of  $r_0, r_1, r_2, \dots$  are given by the sequence

$$\underbrace{d \cos \alpha, \quad d, \quad d \sin \alpha, \quad d \sin \alpha \cos \alpha, \quad d \sin^2 \alpha \cos \alpha, \quad d \sin^2 \alpha \cos^2 \alpha, \quad d \sin^3 \alpha \cos^2 \alpha, \quad \dots}_{\dots};$$

the values of  $\vartheta_0, \vartheta_1, \vartheta_2, \dots$  are given by the sequence

$$\underbrace{0, \pi - \alpha, \frac{3\pi}{2}, \frac{\pi}{2} - \alpha, \pi, 2\pi - \alpha, \frac{\pi}{2}, \frac{3\pi}{2} - \alpha, 0, \pi - \alpha, \dots}_{\dots}$$

We are required to find the sum of the infinite series

$$\begin{aligned} z_0 + z_1 + z_2 + \dots + z_n + \dots &= z_0 + \frac{z_1 + z_2 + z_3 + z_4}{1 + \cos^2 \alpha \sin^2 \alpha} \\ &= \frac{d \cos^3 \alpha \sin^2 \alpha}{1 + \cos^2 \alpha \sin^2 \alpha} + i \frac{d \cos^2 \alpha \sin \alpha}{1 + \cos^2 \alpha \sin^2 \alpha}. \end{aligned}$$

**19.** [Following A. Hirsch.] Let  $P_1, P_2, P'_1, P'_2$  be the points of intersection of the line of intersection of the two given planes with the two given spheres. The equations of the line of intersection are

$$y = \frac{\begin{vmatrix} -D - Ax & C \\ -D' - A'x & C' \end{vmatrix}}{\begin{vmatrix} B & C \\ B' & C' \end{vmatrix}}, \quad z = \frac{\begin{vmatrix} B & -D - Ax \\ B' & -D' - A'x \end{vmatrix}}{\begin{vmatrix} B & C \\ B' & C' \end{vmatrix}}.$$

Substituting these expressions into the equations of the spheres, we obtain the quadratic equations

$$(1) \quad A_0 x^2 + A_1 x + A_2 = 0, \quad A'_0 x^2 + A'_1 x + A'_2 = 0,$$

which yield in turn the  $x$ -coordinates of  $P_1, P_2, P'_1, P'_2$ . In a similar manner we obtain further equations that yield the  $y$ - and  $z$ -coordinates of these points:

$$(2) \quad B_0 y^2 + B_1 y + B_2 = 0, \quad B'_0 y^2 + B'_1 y + B'_2 = 0,$$

$$(3) \quad C_0 z^2 + C_1 z + C_2 = 0, \quad C'_0 z^2 + C'_1 z + C'_2 = 0.$$

Here we have

$$A_0 = A'_0 = B_0 = B'_0 = C_0 = C'_0 = \left| \begin{array}{cc} B & C \\ B' & C' \end{array} \right|^2 + \left| \begin{array}{cc} C & A \\ C' & A' \end{array} \right|^2 + \left| \begin{array}{cc} A & B \\ A' & B' \end{array} \right|^2.$$

This expression is  $=0$  if and only if the two planes are parallel. If we now denote by  $\mathfrak{A}$ ,  $\mathfrak{B}$  and  $\mathfrak{C}$  the resultants of the equations (1), (2) and (3) respectively (cf. solution V 194), then  $\mathfrak{A} + \mathfrak{B} + \mathfrak{C}$  satisfies the conditions for the function required by the problem.

(a) Assume that the two circles are interlocked. Then the pair of points  $P_1P_2$  separates the pair of points  $P'_1P'_2$ . The same is therefore true for the projections onto each of the coordinate axes, with the possible exception of one or two axes, in case the straight line  $P_1P_2$  is perpendicular to that axis; then the projections coincide into a single point. In any event, as can be seen from the relative positions of the roots of the quadratic equations (1), (2), (3), all the resultants  $\mathfrak{A}$ ,  $\mathfrak{B}$  and  $\mathfrak{C}$  are negative (possibly one or two are equal to zero) [V 194], and hence their sum is also negative.

(b) Conversely assume  $\mathfrak{A} + \mathfrak{B} + \mathfrak{C} < 0$ . Then at least one of the three resultants is negative,  $\mathfrak{A} < 0$  say. Then  $A_0 > 0$ ,  $A'_0 > 0$ , and hence the two planes are not parallel and the points of intersection  $P_1$ ,  $P_2$ ,  $P'_1$ ,  $P'_2$  are determined uniquely. The projection of the pair of points  $P_1P_2$  on the  $x$ -axis separates that of  $P'_1P'_2$  on the same axis [V 194] and hence the same is true of the points themselves.

20. [A. Hirsch.] If  $(x_1, x_2, x_3)$  is a singular point of the conic section  $\sum_{i=1}^3 \sum_{j=1}^3 a_{ij} X_i X_j = 0$ , then we have the equations

$$a_{v1}x_1 + a_{v2}x_2 + a_{v3}x_3 = 0, \quad v = 1, 2, 3$$

[G. Kowalewski: Einführung in die analytische Geometrie, p. 202; Leipzig, Veit, 1910]. In our case, setting  $x_1 + x_2 + x_3 = -x_0$ , we obtain  $\lambda_0 x_0 = \lambda_1 x_1 = \lambda_2 x_2 = \lambda_3 x_3$ , and the equation of the conic section (pair of straight lines) in question has the form

$$x_1 x_2 x_3 X_0^2 + x_0 x_2 x_3 X_1^2 + x_0 x_1 x_3 X_2^2 + x_0 x_1 x_2 X_3^2 = 0,$$

where  $X_0 + X_1 + X_2 + X_3 = 0$ . Let  $dx_v$ ,  $v = 0, 1, 2, 3$ ,  $dx_0 + dx_1 + dx_2 + dx_3 = 0$ , be a displacement along the integral curve. Then, setting  $X_v = x_v + dx_v$ , we have

$$(1) \quad x_1 x_2 x_3 (dx_0)^2 + x_0 x_2 x_3 (dx_1)^2 + x_0 x_1 x_3 (dx_2)^2 + x_0 x_1 x_2 (dx_3)^2 = 0.$$

This is the differential equation of the required family of curves. The change of variables  $x_v = y_v^2$  yields the equation

$$(1') \quad (y_0 y_1 y_2 y_3)^2 ((dy_0)^2 + (dy_1)^2 + (dy_2)^2 + (dy_3)^2) = 0,$$

from which we obtain immediately the *singular solution*  $x_v = 0$  ( $v = 0, 1, 2, 3$ ). The *general solution* follows from the equations

$$\begin{aligned} (dy_0)^2 + (dy_1)^2 + (dy_2)^2 + (dy_3)^2 &= 0, & y_0^2 + y_1^2 + y_2^2 + y_3^2 &= 0, \\ y_0 dy_0 + y_1 dy_1 + y_2 dy_2 + y_3 dy_3 &= 0. \end{aligned}$$

Eliminating  $y_0$  we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} (y_0 dy_0)^2 &= (y_1^2 + y_2^2 + y_3^2)((dy_1)^2 + (dy_2)^2 + (dy_3)^2) \\ &= (y_1 dy_1 + y_2 dy_2 + y_3 dy_3)^2, \end{aligned}$$

and thus

$$(y_2 dy_3 - y_3 dy_2)^2 + (y_3 dy_1 - y_1 dy_3)^2 + (y_1 dy_2 - y_2 dy_1)^2 = 0.$$

Setting

$$z_1 = y_2 y'_3 - y_3 y'_2, \quad z_2 = y_3 y'_1 - y_1 y'_3, \quad z_3 = y_1 y'_2 - y_2 y'_1,$$

where the differentiation is with respect to a parameter, it follows that

$$(2) \quad \begin{aligned} \sum y_r z_r &= 0, & \sum y_r z'_r &= 0, \\ \sum z_r z_r &= 0, & \sum z_r z'_r &= 0 \end{aligned}$$

where the summation is extended over  $r=1, 2, 3$ . We deduce that  $z'_1 : z'_2 : z'_3 = z_1 : z_2 : z_3$ , except in the case that  $z_1 : z_2 : z_3 = y_1 : y_2 : y_3$ . The latter assumption leads to  $y_0 = 0$  and thus again to  $x_0 = 0$ . In the former case we obtain by integration  $z_1 : z_2 : z_3 = \mu_1 : \mu_2 : \mu_3$ , where  $\mu_r = \text{constant}$ ,  $\mu_1^2 + \mu_2^2 + \mu_3^2 = 0$ , and hence by (2):  $\mu_1 y_1 + \mu_2 y_2 + \mu_3 y_3 = 0$ . Setting  $\mu_r^2 = \chi_r$ ,  $r=1, 2, 3$ , we obtain after rationalization:

$$\begin{aligned} (\chi_1 x_1 + \chi_2 x_2 + \chi_3 x_3)^2 - 2(\chi_1^2 x_1^2 + \chi_2^2 x_2^2 + \chi_3^2 x_3^2) &= 0, \\ \chi_1 + \chi_2 + \chi_3 &= 0. \end{aligned}$$

This equation represents the family of those conic sections that are inscribed in the quadrilateral  $X_0=0$ ,  $X_1=0$ ,  $X_2=0$ ,  $X_3=0$ . In fact the equation of the tangent at  $(x_1, x_2, x_3)$  is

$$(\chi_1 x_1 + \chi_2 x_2 + \chi_3 x_3)(\chi_1 X_1 + \chi_2 X_2 + \chi_3 X_3) - 2(\chi_1^2 x_1 X_1 + \chi_2^2 x_2 X_2 + \chi_3^2 x_3 X_3) = 0.$$

Let  $\chi_1, \chi_2, \chi_3$  be different from 0 and set  $(x_1, x_2, x_3)$  in succession equal to  $(\chi_1, \chi_2, \chi_3)$ ,  $(0, \chi_2^{-1}, \chi_3^{-1})$ ,  $(\chi_1^{-1}, 0, \chi_3^{-1})$  and  $(\chi_1^{-1}, \chi_2^{-1}, 0)$ .

**21.** [A. Hirsch.]

$$v = \frac{x}{\sin \tau} + \frac{y}{\cos \tau},$$

$$\frac{dx}{d\tau} = \rho \cos \tau = 2n(x \cot \tau + y),$$

$$\frac{dy}{d\tau} = \rho \sin \tau = 2n(x + y \tan \tau).$$

Eliminating  $y$  we obtain

$$\frac{d^2 x}{d\tau^2} - \frac{2n}{\sin \tau \cos \tau} \frac{dx}{d\tau} + \frac{2n}{\sin^2 \tau} x = 0.$$

Now first introduce  $u = -\tan^2 \tau$  as the independent variable and then  $\xi = xu^{-1/2}$  as the dependent variable. We obtain in this way the differential equation

$$u(1-u) \frac{d^2 \xi}{du^2} + \left[ \frac{3}{2} - n - \left( \frac{1}{2} + 1 - n + 1 \right) u \right] \frac{d\xi}{du} - \frac{1}{2} (1-n) \xi = 0,$$

which is satisfied by the hypergeometric series [VIII 146]

$$\xi = F\left(\frac{1}{2}, 1-n, \frac{3}{2}-n, u\right)$$

and thus the problem is solved in principle. On the basis of known results we can

now discuss in particular the rational solutions. In order to obtain a simple expression for these, introduce the dependent variable  $z = x(\tan \tau)^{-n}$  and then the independent variable  $v = i \cot 2\tau$ . We obtain the differential equation

$$(1-v^2) \frac{d^2 z}{dv^2} - 2v \frac{dz}{dv} + n(n-1)z = 0,$$

one of whose particular solutions is  $z = P_{n-1}(v)$  [VI 90], if  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ . We obtain in this way the rational expressions in  $\tan \tau$

$$x = \frac{1}{i} (i \tan \tau)^n P_{n-1}(i \cot 2\tau),$$

$$y = (i \tan \tau)^n P_n(i \cot 2\tau).$$

For  $n=1$  we obtain as a particular solution the parabola

$$x = \tan \tau, \quad y = \frac{\tan^2 \tau - 1}{2}, \quad 2y = x^2 - 1.$$

**22.** [A. Hirsch.] (i) The equation for  $H$  follows by elimination of  $t$  from

$$(1) \quad F = 0,$$

$$(2) \quad \frac{\partial F}{\partial t} = \sum_{v=1}^3 \frac{x_v^2}{(a_v - t)^2} - 1 = 0.$$

If we write (1) in the form

$$\begin{aligned} t^4 - (\sum a_1)t^3 + [\sum (a_2 a_3 + x_1^2)]t^2 - [a_1 a_2 a_3 + \sum (a_2 + a_3)x_1^2]t + \sum a_2 a_3 x_1^2 \\ \equiv A_0 t^4 + 4A_1 t^3 + 6A_2 t^2 + 4A_3 t + A_4 = 0, \end{aligned}$$

where in the summations the indices are to be cyclically interchanged, and denote by  $\Delta$  the discriminant of this polynomial in  $t$ , then  $\Delta = 0$  is the equation of  $H$ . Setting

$$I_2 = A_0 A_4 - 4A_1 A_3 + 3A_2^2,$$

$$I_3 = \begin{vmatrix} A_0 & A_1 & A_2 \\ A_1 & A_2 & A_3 \\ A_2 & A_3 & A_4 \end{vmatrix} = A_0 A_2 A_4 + 2A_1 A_2 A_3 - A_2^3 - A_0 A_3^2 - A_1^2 A_4$$

we now have [Cesàro, p. 387],

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta &= I_2^3 - 27I_3^2 \\ &= 27A_2^4(A_0 A_4 - 4A_1 A_3) + 54A_2^3(A_0 A_2 A_4 + 2A_1 A_2 A_3 - A_0 A_3^2) + Q, \end{aligned}$$

where  $Q$  is of degree 8 at most. The leading term of  $\Delta$  is thus equal to that of  $27A_2^3(3A_2 A_4 - 2A_3^2)$ , i.e.

$$\begin{aligned} &= 27 \left( \frac{\sum x_1^2}{6} \right)^3 \left[ \frac{\sum x_1^2}{2} \sum a_2 a_3 x_1^2 - \frac{1}{8} (\sum (a_2 + a_3)x_1^2)^2 \right] \\ &= -\frac{1}{64} (\sum x_1^2)^3 [\sum (a_2 - a_3)^2 x_1^4 + 2 \sum (a_1 - a_2)(a_1 - a_3)x_2^2 x_3^2]. \end{aligned}$$

(ii) If  $dx_1, dx_2, dx_3$  is a displacement on  $H$ , then we have [(2)]

$$(3) \quad \sum_{v=1}^3 \frac{x_v dx_v}{a_v - t} = 0.$$

We deduce that the direction cosines  $X_1, X_2, X_3$  of the appropriately oriented normal of  $H$  are given by

$$(4) \quad X_v = \frac{x_v}{a_v - t}, \quad v=1, 2, 3.$$

The coordinates of the tangent plane at the point  $x_1, x_2, x_3$  are

$$u_v = \frac{X_v}{x_1 X_1 + x_2 X_2 + x_3 X_3}, \quad v=1, 2, 3.$$

By (1) we have  $x_v = t(a_v - t)u_v$ ,  $v=1, 2, 3$ . Substituting this in (1), (2) and eliminating  $t$  we obtain

$$\left( \sum_{v=1}^3 a_v u_v^2 \right)^2 - 4 \sum_{v=1}^3 u_v^2 = 0.$$

(iii) If  $\rho$  is one principal radius of curvature of  $H$  at  $(x_1, x_2, x_3)$ ,  $\rho \neq 0$ , then the displacements on  $H$  along the corresponding line of curvature satisfy the following equations [W. Blaschke, op. cit. 15, p. 63]:

$$dx_v + \rho dX_v = 0, \quad v=1, 2, 3$$

or by (ii)

$$(5) \quad dx_v + \rho dt \frac{x_v}{(a_v - t)(a_v - t + \rho)} = 0, \quad v=1, 2, 3.$$

In view of (3) it follows that

$$(6) \quad \sum_{v=1}^3 \frac{x_v^2}{(a_v - t)^2(a_v - t + \rho)} = 0.$$

This is the quadratic equation for the two principal radii of curvature. In view of the identity

$$\frac{1}{a^2(a + \rho)} = \frac{1}{\rho} \frac{1}{a^2} - \frac{1}{\rho^2} \frac{1}{a} + \frac{1}{\rho^2} \frac{1}{a + \rho},$$

and noting (1) and (2), it may be written as follows:

$$(6') \quad \sum_{v=1}^3 \frac{x_v^2}{a_v - t + \rho} - (t - \rho) = 0.$$

Combining the total differential of (6') with (5) we now deduce

$$(7) \quad \left( \sum_{v=1}^3 \frac{x_v^2}{(a_v - t + \rho)^2} - 1 \right) (3 dt - d\rho) = 0.$$

The solution of (7) obtained by setting the first factor equal to zero is to be discarded, for it would mean that the equation  $F(x, y, z, \lambda) = 0$  has two distinct double roots  $t$  and  $t - \rho$ , ( $\rho \neq 0$ ), which is impossible. For  $F(\lambda)$  has an *odd* number of zeros in the interval  $a_1, a_2$  as well as in the interval  $a_2, a_3$ . Thus  $\rho = 3t + \text{const.}$  along the

line of curvature corresponding to  $\rho$ . The other radius of curvature is equal to  $t + \text{const.}$  [(6)].

The result can thus be interpreted as follows: If  $w=u$ ,  $w=v$  denote the two roots of

$$(8) \quad \sum_{v=1}^3 \frac{x_v^2}{(a_v - t)^2(a_v - w)} = 0, \quad \text{or of} \quad \sum_{v=1}^3 \frac{x_v^2}{a_v - w} = 0,$$

then the equations of the lines of curvature are  $u = \text{const.}$ ,  $v = \text{const.}$  The parameters  $u$ ,  $v$  are the two roots of the equation  $F(x, y, z, w) = 0$ , which it has apart from the double root  $w = t$ .

The line of curvature  $u = u_0$  lies on the surface  $t = u_0$ . The surfaces of the given family penetrate the enveloping surface  $H$  in its lines of curvature.

**23.** [A. Hirsch.] By 22(8), (2) we have

$$\frac{x_1^2}{(a_1 - t)^2} = \frac{(a_1 - u)(a_1 - v)}{(a_1 - a_2)(a_1 - a_3)}, \quad \dots$$

Combining this with 22(1) we deduce that  $2t + u + v = a_1 + a_2 + a_3$  and

$$x_1 = \sqrt{\frac{(a_1 - u)(a_1 - v)}{(a_1 - a_2)(a_1 - a_3)}} \left( a_1 + \frac{u + v - (a_1 + a_2 + a_3)}{2} \right), \dots$$

The determination of the points of intersection of the line of curvature  $v = \text{const.}$  with a plane leads to an equation of the form:

$$c_0 + \sum_{v=1}^3 c_v \sqrt{a_v - u}(u + b_v) = 0,$$

where  $c_0$ ,  $a_v$ ,  $b_v$ ,  $c_v$  are constants. Rationalization leads to an equation of 12th degree in  $u$ .

**24.** [A. Hirsch.] (1) If  $\xi_1$ ,  $\xi_2$ ,  $\xi_3$  are the coordinates of the center of curvature corresponding to  $\rho$ , then we have [W. Blaschke, op. cit. 15, p. 63 (47)]

$$\xi_v = x_v + \rho X_v = x_v \frac{a_v - t + \rho}{a_v - t}, \quad v = 1, 2, 3,$$

[22 (4)], and hence [22 (2), (6)]

$$\sum_{v=1}^3 \frac{\xi_v^2}{(a_v - t + \rho)^2} = 1, \quad \sum_{v=1}^3 \frac{\xi_v^2}{(a_v - t + \rho)^3} = 0.$$

The central surface of  $H$  is thus the envelope of the family of ellipses

$$\sum_{v=1}^3 \frac{\xi_v^2}{(a_v - s)^2} - 1 = 0.$$

(2) Let  $h$  be a constant and set

$$\bar{x}_v = x_v + h X_v = x_v \frac{a_v - t + h}{a_v - t}, \quad v = 1, 2, 3.$$

We then have [22 (1), (2)]

$$\sum_{v=1}^3 \frac{\bar{x}_v^2}{(a_v - t + h)^2} = 1, \quad \sum_{v=1}^3 \frac{\bar{x}_v^2}{a_v - t + h} = t + h.$$

The parallel surface to  $H$  at a distance  $h$  is thus the envelope of the family of surfaces of second order

$$\sum_{v=1}^3 \frac{\bar{x}_v^2}{a_v - s} = s + 2h.$$

**25.** [E. E. Levi: C.R. Acad. Sci. (Paris) 153, p. 799 (1911).] If  $x'' - x'$  and  $y'' - y'$  are integers, then from the two points  $x', y'$  and  $x'', y''$  there issue congruent and similarly situated integral curves, i.e. integral curves that differ only by a translation. Consider the integral curve  $y = f(x)$  passing through the origin [i.e. for which  $f(0) = 0$ ] and the two integral curves congruent to it passing through the lattice points  $x = m, y = [f(m)]$  and  $x = m, y = [f(m)] + 1$ . Since two distinct integral curves do not intersect, we have for  $m, n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$

$$[f(m)] + f(n) \leq f(m+n) < [f(m)] + 1 + f(n).$$

The sequence  $f(1), f(2), \dots, f(n), \dots$  satisfies the conditions of I 99. In addition we note that similar reasoning yields that

$$[f(-n)] + f(2n) \leq f(n) < [f(-n)] + 1 + f(2n),$$

$$-\frac{1}{n} < \frac{f(n)}{n} + \frac{f(-n)}{-n} - 2 \frac{f(2n)}{2n} < \frac{1}{n};$$

and moreover, denoting by  $M$  the maximum of  $|F(x, y)|$  in the square  $0 \leq x \leq 1, 0 \leq y \leq 1$ , we have  $|f(x) - f([x])| < M$ .

## Appendix

### Additional Problems to Part One

**A I 9.1.** [Cf. Euler, loc. cit. I 9, also Opera Omnia, Series 1, 2, p. 267.] It will be sufficient (and it may even be more suggestive) to consider the concrete particular case of I 2, where  $A_{nk}$  is the number of those non-negative integral solutions of

$$x + 5y + 10u + 25v + 50w = n$$

for which

$$x + y + u + v + w = k$$

(paying the sum of  $n$  cents with  $k$  coins). In this case

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{1}{(1-qz)(1-q^5z)(1-q^{10}z)(1-q^{25}z)(1-q^{50}z)} \\ &= (1+qz+q^2z^2+q^3z^3+\dots+q^xz^x+\dots) \\ & \quad (1+q^5z+q^{10}z^2+q^{15}z^3+\dots+q^{5y}z^y+\dots) \\ & \quad (1+q^{10}z+q^{20}z^2+q^{30}z^3+\dots+q^{10u}z^u+\dots) \\ & \quad (1+q^{25}z+q^{50}z^2+q^{75}z^3+\dots+q^{25v}z^v+\dots) \\ & \quad (1+q^{50}z+q^{100}z^2+q^{150}z^3+\dots+q^{50w}z^w+\dots) \\ &= \sum_{x=0}^{\infty} \sum_{y=0}^{\infty} \sum_{u=0}^{\infty} \sum_{v=0}^{\infty} \sum_{w=0}^{\infty} q^{x+5y+10u+25v+50w} z^{x+y+u+v+w} \\ &= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sum_k A_{nk} q^n z^k, \end{aligned}$$

which, in the general case,

$$= \frac{1}{(1-q^{a_1}z)(1-q^{a_2}z)\dots(1-q^{a_l}z)}.$$

**A I 9.2.** We introduce the variables  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_k$  (one variable for each equation of the system):

$$\begin{aligned} & \sum_{n_1=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n_2=0}^{\infty} \dots \sum_{n_k=0}^{\infty} A_{n_1 n_2 \dots n_k} z_1^{n_1} \dots z_k^{n_k} \\ &= \sum_{x_1=0}^{\infty} \sum_{x_2=0}^{\infty} \dots \sum_{x_l=0}^{\infty} z_1^{a_{11}x_1+a_{12}x_2+\dots+a_{1l}x_l} z_2^{a_{21}x_1+a_{22}x_2+\dots+a_{2l}x_l} \\ & \quad \dots \times z_k^{a_{k1}x_1+a_{k2}x_2+\dots+a_{kl}x_l} \end{aligned}$$



$$\begin{aligned}
&= \sum_{x_1=0}^{\infty} \sum_{x_2=0}^{\infty} \cdots \sum_{x_l=0}^{\infty} (z_1^{a_{11}} z_2^{a_{21}} \dots z_k^{a_{k1}})^{x_1} (z_1^{a_{12}} z_2^{a_{22}} \dots z_k^{a_{k2}})^{x_2} \\
&\quad \dots \times (z_1^{a_{1l}} z_2^{a_{2l}} \dots z_k^{a_{kl}})^{x_l} \\
&= \frac{1}{(1 - z_1^{a_{11}} z_2^{a_{21}} \dots z_k^{a_{k1}})(1 - z_1^{a_{12}} z_2^{a_{22}} \dots z_k^{a_{k2}}) \dots (1 - z_1^{a_{1l}} z_2^{a_{2l}} \dots z_k^{a_{kl}})}
\end{aligned}$$

**A I 20.1.** 1, 1, 2, 3, 5, 7, 11, 15, 22, 30, 42.

**A I 20.2.** Limiting case ( $l=\infty$ ) of the "change problem" I 9:

$$a_1=1, \quad a_2=2, \quad a_3=3, \dots$$

**Cf. I 54.**

**A I 54.1.** In I 53, substitute

$$q^{1/2} \text{ for } q, \quad -q^{1/2}\zeta \text{ for } z.$$

$$\begin{aligned}
&\prod_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 - q^n \zeta)(1 - q^{n-1} \zeta^{-1})(1 - q^n) \\
&= \frac{\zeta - 1}{\zeta} \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 - q^n \zeta)(1 - q^n \zeta^{-1})(1 - q^n) \\
&= \left( \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} + \sum_{n=-\infty}^{-1} \right) (-1)^n q^{n(n+1)/2} \zeta^n \\
&= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (-1)^n q^{n(n+1)/2} \zeta^n + \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} (-1)^{k+1} q^{k(k+1)/2} \zeta^{-k-1} \\
&= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (-1)^n q^{n(n+1)/2} (\zeta^{2n+1} - 1) \zeta^{-n-1}
\end{aligned}$$

To obtain the penultimate line set  $-n=k+1$  in the preceding line. Equate the second line to the last line, divide both sides (i.e. each term on the right-hand side) by  $\zeta-1$ ; then set  $\zeta=1$ .

**A I 60.12.** By A I 9.1

$$\sum_{\alpha=0}^{\infty} \sum_r c_{r+s, r, \alpha} q^{\alpha} z^r = \frac{1}{(1-z)(1-qz)(1-q^2z) \dots (1-q^s z)},$$

which we set (cf. I 51)

$$\begin{aligned}
&= \frac{1}{F(z)} \\
&= Q_0 + Q_1 z + Q_2 z^2 + \dots + Q_r z^r + \dots
\end{aligned}$$

and thus we require to find

$$Q_r = \sum_{\alpha} c_{r+s, r, \alpha} q^{\alpha}.$$

Yet

$$\frac{1}{(1-z)F(qz)} = \frac{1}{F(z)(1-q^{s+1}z)},$$

and thus

$$\begin{aligned}(1-q^{s+1}z) \sum_{r=0}^{\infty} Q_r q^r z^r &= (1-z) \sum_{r=0}^{\infty} Q_r z^r, \\ Q_r q^r - Q_{r-1} q^{r+s} &= Q_r - Q_{r-1}, \\ Q_r &= Q_{r-1} \frac{1-q^{r+s}}{1-q^r}.\end{aligned}$$

Hence, since  $Q_0=1$ ,

$$\begin{aligned}Q_r &= \frac{1-q^{r+s}}{1-q^r} \frac{1-q^{r+s-1}}{1-q^{r-1}} \cdots \frac{1-q^{s+1}}{1-q} \\ &= \begin{bmatrix} r+s \\ r \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} n \\ r \end{bmatrix},\end{aligned}$$

where the Gaussian binomial coefficient  $\begin{bmatrix} n \\ r \end{bmatrix}$  is defined in Vol. 1, Pt. I, Chap. 1, § 5

p. 11. Compare this with the above expression for  $Q_r$ .

**A I 191.1. First solution.** Consider the coefficient of  $x$  in the identity I 191.

*Second solution.* From VIII 58.3 and VIII 58.2. This argument presupposes knowledge of the fact that there are an infinity of primes ( $n$  is taken to be *any* positive integer greater than 1).

**A I 191.2.** From VIII 58.3 and VIII 58.1, by the second solution of A I 191.1.

Is there a less roundabout solution?

**A I 203.1.** The number of possible choices of partners is

$$\tilde{S}_{2n}^{4n} = 1.3.5 \dots (4n-1) = \frac{(4n)!}{(2n)! 2^{2n}},$$

see I 203. Multiply this by the number of possible choices of opponent pairs

$$\tilde{S}_n^{2n} = 1.3.5 \dots (2n-1) = \frac{(2n)!}{n! 2^n}.$$

Without using I 203, from the combinatorial interpretation of polynomial coefficients we have

$$\frac{1}{n!} \frac{(4n)!}{4!^n} 3^n = \frac{(4n)!}{n! 8^n}.$$

The first proof shows that this number is odd.

## **New Problems in English Edition**

- I** \*1, \*2, \*3, \*13, 18.1, 18.2, \*19, 27.1, 27.2, 31.1, 31.2, 34.1, 43.1, 60.1, 60.2, 60.3, 60.4, 60.5, 60.6, 60.7, 60.8, 60.9, 60.10, 60.11, 64.1, 64.2, 68.1, \*99, 132.1, 132.2, \*134, 181.1, 185.1, 185.2, \*186, \*187, \*188, \*189, \*190, \*191, \*192, \*193, \*194, \*195, \*196, \*197, \*198, \*199, \*200, \*201, \*202, \*203, \*204, \*205, \*206, \*207, \*208, \*209, \*210.
- II** \*5, 19.1, 19.2, 81.1, 81.2, 81.3, 81.4, 93.1, 94.1, 94.2, 94.3, 95.1, 95.2, 95.3, 95.4, 95.5, 114.1, 118.1, 122.1, 122.2, 122.3, 217.1, \*223, \*224, \*225, \*226.
- III** \*20, \*21, 55.1, 55.2, 55.3, 55.4, 55.5, 206.1, 206.2.
- IV** 49.1, \*124, 124.1, 172.1, 174.1, 174.2, \*206, \*207, \*208, \*209, \*210, \*211, \*212.
- V** 43.1, 44.1, 62.1, 65.1, 77.1, 83.1, 94.1, 171.1, 171.2, 171.3, 171.4, 171.5, 189.1, 189.2, 189.3, 196.1.
- VII** 1.1, 11.1, 11.2, 11.3, 43.1, 43.2, 46.1, 46.2, 54.1, 54.2, 54.3, 54.4.
- VIII** 21.1, 21.2, 22.1, 22.2, 22.3, 27.1, 27.2, 38.1, 58.1, 58.2, 58.3, 58.4, 58.5, 58.6, 58.7, 58.8, 68.1, 68.2, 68.3, 72.1, 74.1, \*75, 75.1, 75.2, 75.3, 75.4, 75.5, 80.1, 80.2, 197.1, 197.2, 197.3, 197.4, 197.5, 197.6, 227.1, 227.2, 237.1, 237.2, 238.1, 238.2, 244.1, 244.2, 244.3, 244.4, 247.1, 247.2, 260.1, 260.2, 262.1, 262.2.
- IX** 1.1, 1.2, 1.3, 1.4, 17.1, 17.2, 17.3, 17.4, 17.5.
- A** I 9.1, I 9.2, I 20.1, I 20.2, I 54.1, I 60.12, I 191.1, I 191.2, I 203.1.

# Author Index

Numbers refer to pages. Numbers in italics denote original contributions.

- Ahlfors, L. V. 182, 202, 206, 211  
Ahrens, W. 356
- Bálint, E. 249  
Baschwitz 317  
Beke, E. 285  
Bellman, R. 318  
Beraha, Sami. 292  
Bernays, P. 360  
Bernoulli, Jak. 141, 155  
Bernstein, S. 30, 84, 209, 269  
Bessel, F. W. 62, 64  
Bieberbach, L. 192–197  
Bieri, H. 366  
Blaschke, W. 367, 371, 377, 378  
Blichfeldt, H. F. 355  
Boas, R. P. 167, 175  
Bohr, H. 203  
Borel, É. 284  
Brauer, A. 325, 327–329  
Brauer, R. 325, 327–329  
Brisse, Ch. 325  
Brun, Viggo 314  
Bunyakovski, V. 304
- Carathéodory, C. 17, 300  
Carleman, T. 206, 207, 208, 208  
Carlson, F. 337  
Catalan, E. 331  
Cauchy, A. L. 29, 119, 193, 196, 207, 244, 279, 311, 352  
Cayley, A. 104  
Cesàro, E. 312, 318  
Cesàro (textbook) 376  
Chrestenson, H. E. 356  
Christoffel, E. B. 270, 273–275  
Clausen, Th. 339  
Cohn, A. 330  
Collège d'Aberystwyth 281  
Coxeter, H. S. M. 56  
Curtiss, D. R. 249
- Dallot, A. 313  
Dellac, H. 367  
Denjoy, A. 206
- Descartes, R. 36, 39, 41, 42, 46, 50, 51, 66, 226, 227  
Diophantes 154, 163, 164  
Dirichlet, P. G. L. 47, 118–120, 129, 131, 148, 149, 224, 250, 311, 313, 315, 316, 319, 323
- Egerváry, J. 237, 239  
Eisenstein, G. 134–137, 149, 150, 304, 326, 332, 333  
Epstein, P. 293  
Errera, A. 315, 333  
Euler, L. 118, 130, 154, 155, 306, 307, 312, 318, 322, 360, 380
- Faber, G. 192–195  
Fatou, P. 335, 337, 351  
Fejér, L. 225, 232, 237, 255, 256, 259, 261–264, 269, 272  
Fekete, M. 218, 233, 249, 259, 269, 283  
Feller, W. 308  
Fibonacci, L. 106, 138  
Fine, N. J. 367  
Fleck, A. A. 359  
Flügel, W. 326  
Fourier, J. 35, 76, 109, 257, 258, 368  
Franel, J. 260, 341  
Frobenius, G. 315, 323, 330  
Fueter, R. 355  
Fujiwara, M. 288, 340
- Gaedecke, W. 373  
Gallai, T. 354  
Gauss, C. F. 14, 56, 109, 123, 151, 160, 232, 304, 315, 325, 360, 369, 371, 382  
Gmelin, O. 330  
Goldbach, Chr. 322  
Goluzin, G. M. 182  
Goursat, E. 260  
Grace, J. H. 57, 237, 238  
Gram, J. P. 297  
Grandjot, K. 351  
Grenander, U. 298  
Grommer, J. 219, 289  
Gronwall, T. H. 195, 196, 198, 255, 256

- Grosch, W. 325  
 Gummer, C. F. 297
- Hadamard, J. 10, 30, 171, 207, 283, 338  
 Halphen, G. H. 267  
 Hankel, H. 96, 98  
 Hansen, D. 338  
 Harary, F. 279  
 Hardy, G. H. 250  
 Hardy-Wright (textbook) 42, 143, 145, 315, 317, 319, 358  
 Hausdorff, F. 194, 260  
 Heawood, P. J. 238  
 Hecke (textbook) 145–147, 150, 325, 330, 346, 349, 352, 353  
 Heine, E. 333, 334  
 Hensel, K. 331  
 Hermite, Ch. 44, 56, 103, 110, 260, 276, 299, 303  
 Hilbert, D. 330, 349  
 Hille, E. (textbook) 9, 10, 211  
 Hirsch, A. 373–376, 378  
 Hölder, O. 280  
 Hurwitz, A. 137, 140, 205, 212, 237, 239, 244, 280, 287, 289, 309, 330, 335, 340, 356, 356, 357, 359, 362  
 Hurwitz-Courant (textbook) 9, 142, 202, 204, 217, 239, 240, 347
- Iversen, F. 205, 206
- Jackson, D. 255, 256  
 Jacobi, C. G. J. 42, 87, 252, 274, 313, 360  
 Jensen, J. L. W. V. 170, 240  
 Jentzsch, R. 233, 325, 335, 338  
 Jordan, C. 250
- Takeya, S. 341  
 Kárteszi, F. 354  
 Kempner, A. J. 354  
 Kluyver, J. C. 339  
 Kneser, H. 201  
 Knight, B. W. 317  
 Koch, H. v. 204  
 Koebe, P. 16, 23, 183, 184, 194, 195  
 König, J. 303  
 Kollros, L. 359  
 Kowalewski, G. 374  
 Kowalewski (textbook) 262, 283–286, 290, 296, 299  
 Kritikos, N. 289  
 Kronecker, L. 284, 346  
 Kürschák, J. 358, 371
- Lagrange, J. L. 82, 84, 266, 321, 325, 365  
 Laguerre, E. 44, 46, 54, 57, 88, 212, 215, 216, 219, 222, 224–226, 230–232, 239, 249, 275, 318  
 Lambert, J. H. 125
- Landau, E. 29, 30, 201, 203, 224, 237, 324, 331, 335  
 Laplace, P. S. 86  
 Laurent, P. A. 199, 343  
 Lebesgue, H. 76, 303, 344  
 Legendre, A. M. 42, 44, 56, 85–87, 134, 154, 239, 270, 330, 360  
 Lehmer, D. H. 351  
 Leibniz, G. W. 269, 296, 317  
 Levi, E. E. 379  
 Levinson, N. 211  
 Lindelöf, E. 32, 183, 207  
 Liouville, J. 119  
 Lipschitz, R. 162  
 Littlewood, J. E. 197, 208, 250  
 Löwner, K. 190, 193, 194, 198, 370, 371  
 Lucas, E. 331, 353, 359  
 Lukács, F. 260, 278
- Macdonald, H. M. 247  
 Maclaurin, C. 63, 223  
 Malmquist, J. 204  
 Malo, E. 239  
 Mangoldt, H. v. 119  
 Mantel 312  
 Marden, M. 230  
 Markov, A. A. 84, 269  
 Mascheroni, L. 155  
 Meissner, E. 250  
 Mertens, F. 351  
 Meusnier, M. Ch. 371  
 Mills, C. N. 372  
 Minkowski, H. 56, 157, 159, 371  
 Mittag-Leffler, G. 204  
 Möbius, A. F. 118, 313  
 Moivre, A. de 306  
 Montel, P. 237  
 Montmort, P. R. 306  
 Moore, E. H. 297  
 Müntz, Ch. H. 208  
 Muir, T. 280
- Nagy, J. v. Sz. 232  
 Neder, L. 361  
 Netto, E. 313, 314  
 Nevanlinna, F. 171  
 Nevanlinna, R. 171, 195–197, 198, 211
- Obreschkov, N. 211, 251
- Paley, R. E. A. C. 211  
 Peano, G. 28  
 Phragmén, E. 32  
 Picard, E. 32, 35, 211  
 Pick, G. 195, 197, 342  
 Planck, M. 218  
 Plemelj, G. 195  
 Poincaré, H. 203, 228, 250, 367

- Pólya, G. 177, 190, 201, 202, 204, 208, 210, 211–215, 217, 218, 221, 222, 224, 225, 228, 239, 240–243, 246–251, 282–285, 287, 289, 297, 320, 322, 324, 325, 332, 335, 337, 338, 341, 342, 344, 347, 350, 352, 354, 355, 359, 360–362, 364, 366–369, 371  
 MD: 314, 317, 373  
 MPR: 239, 249, 257, 298, 318, 337, 352, 353, 372  
 Prouhet, E. 303  
 Prüfer, H. 247, 342  
  
 Rabinowitsch, G. 349  
 Radicke 303  
 Radó, T. 195, 196, 342  
 Rados, G. 283  
 Remak, R. 287  
 Retali 281  
 Riemann, B. 120, 155, 289, 318  
 Riesz, F. 259  
 Riesz, M. 30, 269, 293, 294, 300  
 Riordan 290  
 Roberts, M. 280  
 Rochas, de 325  
 Rodrigues, O. 86  
 Rolle, M. 36, 37, 43, 47, 51, 60, 213, 229  
 Rosenbaum, J. 366  
 Roth, A. 205  
 Runge, C. 217  
  
 Sadier, J. 260  
 Sarantopoulos, S. 237  
 Saxer, W. 248  
 Scherrer, W. 354, 355  
 Schmidt, H. 211  
 Schoenberg, I. J. 218  
 Scholl, K. 369  
 Schreiber, M. 317  
 Schur, I. 203, 238–240, 247, 251, 266, 267, 286, 289, 292, 294, 326, 327  
 Schwarz, H. A. 200, 208, 228  
 Serret, J. A. 324  
 Sidon, S. 359  
  
 Siegel, C. 251, 324  
 Skolem, Th. 341, 353  
 Speiser, A. 336, 354  
 Stäckel, P. 325, 330  
 Staudt, K. G. Ch. v. 339  
 Steinig, J. 218, 226  
 Steinitz, E. 373  
 Stieltjes, T. J. 228, 297  
 Stirling, J. 9, 107, 180, 181  
 Stoll, A. 284  
 Study, E. 198  
 Süß, W. 367  
 Sylvester, J. J. 223, 224, 303, 305  
 Szász, O. 211, 264, 288, 361  
 Szegő, G. 195, 211, 237–239, 250, 252, 258, 283, 298, 300, 342, 360, 361, 367  
  
 Taylor, B. 361  
 Tchakalov, L. 210, 211  
 Tchebotarev, N. 201, 211  
 Tchebychev, P. 71, 81, 137, 153, 264, 358, 361  
 Teixeira, F. G. 331  
 Titchmarsh, E. C. 294  
 Titchmarsh (textbook) 10, 211  
 Toeplitz, O. 110, 298  
 Towber, J. 317  
 Turán, P. 354  
  
 Valiron, G. 167, 171, 208, 247  
 Vandermonde, A. 43  
  
 Walsh, J. L. 233  
 Weierstrass, K. 9, 334  
 Weill, M. 331  
 Weyl, H. 352  
 Wiener, N. 211  
 Wilson, J. 339  
 Wiman, A. 167, 176, 207, 208  
 Wronski, H. 50, 108, 198, 226, 227, 230  
  
 Young, G. Ch. 361  
 Young, W. H. 256, 361  
 Yule, U. 305

# Subject Index

Roman numerals refer to parts, Arabic numerals in boldface to problems and Arabic numerals in plain type to pages. Thus, for example, VIII 204 146 refers to problem 204 of Part VIII on page 146.

- Additive number theory 119
- Algebraic differential equation 100
- Algebraic function 100, 135
- Algebraic integer 143
- Algebraic number 143
  - conjugate 145, 147
  - degree of 145
  - field 145
- Apolar 59
- Arithmetical function 111, 118
- Arithmetic mean IV 66 11, V 61 44
- Associated polynomials 67
- Asymptotic value of an entire function 31
  
- Basis polynomials of interpolation 82, VI 76 84
- Bernoulli numbers VIII 182 141, VIII 262 155
- Bernstein's theorem IV 179 30, 84
- Bessel functions IV 73 13, V 159 62, V 168 64
- Binomial coefficients 134
  
- Cauchy product 119, VIII 39, 40, 42 120
- Center of gravity of mass distribution V 101 53, V 102 53
  - with respect to a point 53, V 103 53, V 108 54, V 109 54, V 110 54, V 133 58
  - of polynomial 54, V 111 55
- Center of similitude V 122 56
- Central index (subscript) 1, V 176 245
- Central point 17
- Change of sign 36, 39
- Characteristic equation VII 48 105
- Characteristic function 113
- Characteristic root of matrix IV \*210 35
- Christoffel formula VI 88 270, VI 98 273, VI 99 274, VI 100 275
- Circular-arc polygon V 103 53, V 136 58
- Circular convexity V 104 54, V 136 58
- Circular domain 53, V 114 55, V 125 57, V 134 58, V 135 58
- Closed system of functions IV \*212 35
- Concave functions VI 36 76
- Conformal center of gravity 23
- Congruence between power series 140
- Congruence of numbers 147
- Conjugate algebraic numbers 145
- Conjugate numbers in a field 147
- Constant sign, function of 39
- Convex domain V 126 57, 158
- Convex function VI 36 76
- Convex mapping IV 162 198
- Coprime (pairwise relatively prime) numbers 146, VIII 215 146
- Cosine polynomial 72
- Cross sum of a number VIII 172 139
- Crossing point of a function 39
- Curvature bound IV 163 27
- Cut IV 90 16, 17
- Cyclotomic polynomial VIII 36 118, VIII 103 131, VIII 104 131, VIII 226 148, VIII 227 149
  
- Degree of an algebraic number 145
- Degree of parity VIII 251 358–359
- Derivative of polynomial with respect to a point 57
- Derived system 58
- Descartes' rule of signs V 36 41, 46, 50, V 87 50, V 90 51, 66, V 87 226
- Diagonal pair VII 22 97
- Diophantine equation VIII 255 154, AI 9.1 163, AI 9.2 163, AI 60.12 164
- Dirichlet product 119, VIII 82 129, VIII 39 311, VIII 40 311, VIII 42 311, VIII 64 316
- Dirichlet series V 78 47, 118–120, V 78 224, VIII 52 313, VIII 58.7 314–315
- Divisor 116, 146
  - greatest common 116, 146
- Domain 20, IV 123 20
  
- Eisenstein's condition 135, VIII 142 135, VIII 143 135, VIII 144 136, VIII 146 136, VIII 153 137, VIII 142 332, VIII 144 332, VIII 145 333
- Eisenstein's criterion VIII 120 326

- Eisenstein's theorem 135, VIII 141 135,  
 VIII 148 136, VIII 236 150  
 Elliptic function  $\wp(z)$  VIII 184 142  
 Enlargement ratio 17, IV 100 17  
 Entire function IV 180 30, IV 181 30, IV  
 182 30, IV 183 30, IV 184 30, IV 185 31,  
 IV 186 31, IV 187 31  
   asymptotic value of 31  
 Enveloping expression VIII 27.1 115  
 Enveloping series V 163 63  
 Euler's function  $\varphi(n)$  VIII 25 115, 118  
 Euler's (or Mascheroni's) constant  $-\Gamma'(1)$   
 VIII 260 155  
 Even function VI 36 76  
 Exceptional value of an entire function IV  
 \*210 35  
 Exponent of convergence IV 58 10, IV 64 11  
  
 Fibonacci numbers VII 53 106, VIII 162 138  
 Field 143, 145  
 Finite rank 98  
 Fourier coefficients 75, VI 29 76  
 Fourier series 75, VI 30 76, VI 32 76, VI 36  
 76, VI 29, 32, 33, 257, IX 5 367-368  
 Fourier system of functions IV \*212 35  
 Function, integral-valued 130  
  
 Gauss's formula IX 8 369  
 Gaussian curvature IX 10 160, IX 15 160, 371  
 Gaussian error curve IV 76 14  
 Gauss's theorem V 121 56, V 113 232  
 Generating number of an algebraic number  
 field 145  
 Genus of an entire function 10, IV 197 207  
 Geometric mean IV 64 11, IV 65 11, V 61 44  
 Grace's theorem 57  
 Greatest common divisor 116, 146  
 Greatest common part 116  
 Gross rank 98  
  
 Hadamard's gap theorem VIII 173 338  
   three-circle theorem IV 177 30  
 Hankel determinant 96  
 Harmonic series VIII 250 153, VIII 251 154  
 Hermitian determinant VII 70 211  
 Hermitian form VII 43 103, 110, V 72 110  
 Hermite polynomials V 58 44, V 119 56, VI  
 100 88, VI 100 276  
 Hidden arc IV 133 22  
 H-integral (Hurwitz-integral) coefficients of a  
 power series 140  
 Homothetic circular discs V 122 56  
 Horizontal pair VII 22 97  
 Horseshoe-shaped curve IV 145 24  
 Hurwitz condition VIII 154 137  
 Hypergeometric (Jacobi) polynomials VI 98  
 87  
 Hypergeometric series VIII 146 136  
  
 Inclusion and exclusion principle 113  
 Index of change 36, V 1 36, 39  
  
 Inner measure IV 81 182  
 Inner radius of a region 16, 17  
 Integer, algebraic 143  
 Integral coefficients, polynomial with 129  
 Integral domain 143  
 Integral part of a number 111  
 Integral-valued function 130  
   polynomial 129  
 Interpolation formula, Lagrange 82  
 Irreducible polynomial VIII 112 131, 132,  
 145  
   in two variables VIII 234 150  
  
 Jacobi (hypergeometric) polynomial VI 98  
 87, VI 98 274  
 Jacobi (Legendre) symbol  $\left(\frac{n}{p}\right)$  V 45 42,  
 VIII 129 134, VIII 256 154, VIII 98, 99,  
 102 322-3, VIII 255 360  
 Jensen's inequality IV 32 170  
 Jordan content VIII 242 151  
 Jump points of the central index 5  
  
 Koebe distortion theorem 23, IV 151 25  
 Koebe image region 16  
  
 Lagrange interpolation formula 82, VI 76  
 84, VI 67 266, VIII 91 321, VIII 118 325,  
 VIII 266 365  
 Laguerre polynomials V 58 44  
   generalized VI 99 88, VI 99 274-275  
 Lambert series VIII 65 125  
 Laplace's formula VI 86 86  
 Lattice point 112, VIII 17 112, 128  
   in the plane 150  
   in space 152  
 Laurent series 343  
 Least common multiple 116  
 Lebesgue constants of a Fourier series VI 35  
 76  
 Left-adjacent integer  $[x]$  VIII 6 111  
 Legendre polynomials V 58 44, V 120 56, 85,  
 VI 87 86, VI 88 86, VI 91 87, VI 92 87,  
 VI 95 87, VI 96, 97 87, VI 87 270  
 Legendre (Jacobi) symbol  $\left(\frac{n}{p}\right)$  V 45 42,  
 VIII 129 134, VIII 256 154, VIII 255 360  
 Leibniz formula VI 85 269, VII 57 296  
 Lemniscate function VIII 184 142  
 Linear dependence 100, 144  
 Liouville function  $\lambda(n)$  119  
 Lipschitz condition IX 25 162  
  
 Maclaurin series V 163 63  
 Mangoldt function  $\Lambda(n)$  119  
 Markov theorem 84  
 Maximum modulus 1  
 Maximum term 1  
 Mean domain 56, V 122, 123 56  
 Mean value theorem V 95 51, V 98 52, V 99  
 52, VI 59 80, VI 109 90



- Minkowski constant IX 1.2 157, 159  
 Möbius function  $\mu(n)$  VIII 34 118, VIII 37 118  
 Modular graph IV 172.1 28  
 Moment of a function V 81 48  
 Multiplication of power series, Cauchy 119  
 Multiplication of Dirichlet series, Dirichlet 119  
 Multiplicative arithmetical function 120  
 Multiplicative number theory 119  
  
 Net rank 98, 99  
 Norm of a number in an algebraic number field 147  
 Normed mapping function 16, 17  
 Number of distinct prime factors  $\nu(n)$  118  
 Number of divisors  $\tau(n)$  118  
 Number of zeros 1  
  
 Order of an entire function IV 51 9, IV \*208 34  
 Order of a trigonometric polynomial 72  
 Orthogonality condition for generalized  
   Laguerre polynomials VI 99 88  
   for Hermite polynomials VI 100 88  
   for Jacobi (hypergeometric) polynomials VI 98 87  
   for Legendre polynomials 86  
 Orthogonal matrix 106  
 Orthogonal linear transformation 106  
 Outer radius of a region 16, 17  
  
 Part 116  
 Partition of a number AI 20.1 163  
 Peano curve IV 170 28  
 Periodic function VI 32 76  
 Phragmén-Lindelöf method 32  
 Picard exceptional value IV 194 32  
 Picard's theorem IV \*210 35, 211  
 Plank's law of radiation V 43 218  
 Plane of support 159  
 Point dérivé d'un point IV 111 231  
 Polar, first 57  
 Polynomial, integral-valued 129  
   with integral coefficients 129  
   irreducible 132  
   reducible 132  
 Power series with H-integral coefficients 140  
   with integral coefficients 134, 138  
   with rational coefficients 134  
 Precise degree of polynomial 54  
 Prime divisor 130  
 Primitive power series with integral coefficients VIII 155 137  
 Primitive roots of unity VIII 36 118  
 Principal chord IV 149 25  
  
 Quadratic form 100  
 Quadratic non-residue V 45 42  
 Quadratic residue V 45 42  
 Quasilinearly dependent 100  
  
 Rational function VIII 149 136, VIII 157 138  
 Rational independence VIII 151 333  
 Recurrence relation VI 87 86, VII 45 104  
 Recurrent determinant 96  
 Reducible polynomial 132  
 Region IV 78 14  
 Relatively prime numbers 146  
   pairwise (coprime) VIII 215 146  
 Reversal of sign 39, V 22 39  
 Riemann hypothesis VII 43.1 289, VIII 72 318  
 Riemann zeta function  $\zeta(s)$  120, VIII 262.1 155  
 Rodrigues' formula VI 84 86  
 Rolle's theorem 36, V 10 37, 43, V 77 47, 51, V 93 51, V 94.1 51, V 150 60  
 Rotation theorem IV 151 196  
  
 Schlicht (univalent) function IV 77 14  
 Simple harmonic motion VI 61 80  
 Sine polynomial 72  
 Slit region IV 90 16, IV 145 24  
 Star-shaped closed curve IV 133 22  
   region IV 161 26, IV 162 198  
 Stieltjes integral VII 66 297  
 Stirling's formula IV 50 9, IV 73 180, IV 75 181  
 Stirling numbers of the first and second kind VII 54.2 107  
 Support function 158, 159  
 Supporting line 7  
 Sum of divisors  $\sigma(n)$  118  
 Sum of powers of divisors  $\sigma_a(n)$  118  
 Symmetric relation VIII 221 147  
  
 Tchebychev condition VIII 154 137  
 Tchebychev polynomial 71, VI 66 81  
 Tchebychev theorem VIII 249 153, VIII 250 153, 358  
 Toeplitz form 110, VII 67 110, VII 68 110, VII 70 110, VII 68 298  
 Trigonometric polynomial 71-73, 77, 78  
 Transitive relation VIII 221 147  
  
 Unitary transformation IV \*207 34  
 Units 146  
 Univalent (schlicht) mapping IV 77 14  
  
 Vandermonde determinant V 48 43  
 Vertical pair VII 22 97  
 Visible arc IV 133 22  
  
 Weierstrass  $\sigma(z)$  function IV 49 9  
 Weierstrass preparation theorem VIII 152 334  
 Wilson's theorem VIII 180 339  
 Wronskian determinant V 87 50, 108  
  
 Zero of a polynomial 54, 69  
 Zeta function  $\zeta(s)$  120, VIII 262.1 262.2 155

## Topics

The topics listed below are not evident in the arrangement of problems in the book, but they are nevertheless represented by connected series of problems.

Roman numerals refer to parts, Arabic numerals in boldface to problems and Arabic numerals in plain type to pages in Volume I and in italics to pages in Volume II. Thus, for example, VIII 226 *148* refers to problem 226 of Part VIII on page 148 of Volume II.

Arithmetic, geometric and harmonic means: II 49, 50, 51 58, Chap. 2, pp. 66–71; III 139–141 132; V 61 44.

Arithmetic, geometric and harmonic means of analytic functions on the perimeters and in the interior of circles: III 118 127, 119–122 128, 306–308 165, 310 165; IV 64–66 11. (Cf. also Jensen's formula.)

Asymptotic properties of sums (integrals) of powers: II 82, 83 69, 195–201 95–97, 212–213 98–99, 217.1 100, \*226 102.

Bernoulli numbers: I 154, 155 35–36; VIII 182 *141* 262 *155*.

Bessel functions: I 97 22–23, 143 33; II 204 97; IV 73 *13*; V 159 62, 168 64.

Binomial coefficients, asymptotic properties: II 40 55, 51 58, 58 59, 190 94, 206 97; formal properties: I Chap. 1, §2, pp. 6–8; arithmetical properties: VIII Chap. 3, §§1–2, pp. *134–136*, 247.1 358.

Cesàro's theorem on power series: I 85–97 20–23; II 31, 34 54, 65, 66 61, 168 89; III 246 152; IV 67 *11–12*, 70–75 *12–13*; VIII 72 *126*, 169–171 *139*.

Convex mapping: III 108 125, 110, 111 126, 318 166; IV 162 26–27, 163 27.

Cyclotomic polynomial: VIII 36 *118*, 98 *130*, 103 *131*, 104 *131*, 110 *131*, 226 *148–149*, 227 *149*.

Digits in systematic fractions: I 16, 17, 18 3; II 170 89, 178 90, 181 91, 184 92; VIII 172 *139*, 173 *139–140*, 253 *154*, 257 *154*, 262 *155*.

Distance products and related topics: III 25 107, 137 131–132, 139–141, 143 132, 301 164; VI 66 *81*.

Enveloping series: I Chap. 4, §1 pp. 32–36; V 72, 73 46, 163 63; VIII 27.1 308.

Euler's constant: II 18 50–51, 19.1, 19.2 51, 32 54, 42 56, 46 57; VIII 260 *155*.

Exponential series, exponential function and the number  $e$ : I 45 8, 62 14, 141 33, 149 34, 151 35, 168–172 38; II 171 89, 211 98, 215 99; III 11 104–105, 116 127, 156 134, 195 142, 196 142, 209 146, 210 146, 214 146, 260 156, 265 157; IV 1 3, 2 3, 13 4, 27 6, 188 *31*; V 42 42, 73 46, 74 46, 179 66; VIII 179 *141*, 180 *141*, 258 *154*, 259 *154*.

Functions of the form  $\int_a^b f(t) \cos zt \, dt$ : I 147 34; III 199 143, 205 144; V 164 63, 170–175 64–65.

Gamma function: I 89 21, 155 35–36; II 31 54, 35 54, 42 56, 65 61, 66 61, 117 78, 143 84; III 151–154 134, 198 142, 222 148–149, 247 152–153; V 168–170 64. (Cf. also Euler's constant and Stirling's formula.)

Gauss's theorem on the zeros of the derivative: III 31–33 108–109, 35 109, 315 166; V 113 55, 114 55, 121 56, 124 57, 125–127 57, 134–136 58.

Harmonic series and related topics: I 124 28, 132.2 30; II \*5 48, 13 50, 18 50–51; III 41 110; VIII 250 153, 251 154.

Jensen's formula and related topics: II 52 58; III 119–121 128, 172–178 138–140, 230–233 150, 240 151, 307 165, IV 32 6, 34 7.

Legendre and related polynomials: II 191–194 94–95, 203 97; III 157 135, 219 147–148; V 58 44, 119 56, 120 56, 159 62; VI §1, pp. 71–72, §§ 8–12, pp. 80–91.

Maximum term of a power series: I 117–123 26–28; III 11 104–105, 200 143; IV Chap. 1, pp. 3–14; V 176 66, 180 66.

Mean value theorems, generalizations and analogies: II 120–122.3 79–80; III 142 132, 192 142; V 92–100 51–52, 150 60; VI 59 80, 109 90; IX 2 158, 3 158.

Partial products of  $\sin z$ , the related interpolation problem and parallel problems: II 16 50, 17 50, 218–221 100–101; III 12 105, 13 105, 114–116 126–127, 220–222 148, 254 155, 255 155, 263–265 157. Furthermore, II 37 54, 38 54–55, 59 59, 217 100; III 43 110, 161 135–136; IV 174–174.2 29; VI 75 83–84; 76 84.

Probability integral and the Gauss error curve: I 152 35; II 40 55, 58 59, 59 59, 190 94, 200 96, 201 96–97, 212 98, 217 100; III 43 110, 189 141–142; IV 76 13–14, 189 31, 191 31; V 178 66.

Star-shaped mappings; III 109–111 125–126, 317 166; IV 161 26.

Stirling's formula: I 155 35–36, 167 37; II 18 50–51, 65 61, 66 61, 202 97, 205 97, 206 97; III 263 157, 264 157; IV 50 9.

## Errata

II 121, Vol. I, p. 80, line 2. The relation should read:  $f(a)=f(b)=0$ .

II 94.2, Vol. I, p. 72, line 26 should read:

$$E=\iint (b^2c^2\xi^2+c^2a^2\eta^2+a^2b^2\zeta^2)^{1/2} d\omega$$

III 55.1, Vol. I, p. 114, line 7 should read:

$$w=u+iv=f(z)=f(x+iy)$$

III 265, Vol. I, p. 367, line 9. Add:

[Also Math. Z. Vol. 29, pp. 549–640 (1929).]

# **Die Grundlehren der mathematischen Wissenschaften in Einzeldarstellungen mit besonderer Berücksichtigung der Anwendungsgebiete**

## ***Eine Auswahl***

---

- 23. Pasch: Vorlesungen über neuere Geometrie. In Vorbereitung
- 41. Steinitz: Vorlesungen über die Theorie der Polyeder. In Vorbereitung
- 45. Alexandroff/Hopf: Topologie. Band 1
- 46. Nevanlinna: Eindeutige analytische Funktionen
- 63. Eichler: Quadratische Formen und orthogonale Gruppen
- 102. Nevanlinna/Nevanlinna: Absolute Analysis
- 114. Mac Lane: Homology
- 123. Yosida: Functional Analysis
- 127. Hermes: Enumerability, Decidability, Computability
- 131. Hirzebruch: Topological Methods in Algebraic Geometry
- 135. Handbook for Automatic Computation. Vol. 1/Part a: Rutishauser: Description of ALGOL 60
- 136. Greub: Multilinear Algebra
- 137. Handbook for Automatic Computation. Vol. 1/Part b: Grau/Hill/Langmaack: Translation of ALGOL 60
- 138. Hahn: Stability of Motion
- 139. Mathematische Hilfsmittel des Ingenieurs. 1. Teil
- 140. Mathematische Hilfsmittel des Ingenieurs. 2. Teil
- 141. Mathematische Hilfsmittel des Ingenieurs. 3. Teil
- 142. Mathematische Hilfsmittel des Ingenieurs. 4. Teil
- 143. Schur/Grunsky: Vorlesungen über Invariantentheorie
- 144. Weil: Basic Number Theory
- 145. Butzer/Berens: Semi-Groups of Operators and Approximation
- 146. Treves: Locally Convex Spaces and Linear Partial Differential Equations
- 147. Lamotke: Semisimpliziale algebraische Topologie
- 148. Chandrasekharan: Introduction to Analytic Number Theory
- 149. Sario/Oikawa: Capacity Functions
- 150. Iosifescu/Theodorescu: Random Processes and Learning
- 151. Mandl: Analytical Treatment of One-dimensional Markov Processes
- 152. Hewitt/Ross: Abstract Harmonic Analysis. Vol. 2: Structure and Analysis for Compact Groups. Analysis on Locally Compact Abelian Groups
- 153. Federer: Geometric Measure Theory
- 154. Singer: Bases in Banach Spaces I
- 155. Müller: Foundations of the Mathematical Theory of Electromagnetic Waves
- 156. van der Waerden: Mathematical Statistics
- 157. Prohorov/Rozanov: Probability Theory. Basic Concepts. Limit Theorems. Random Processes
- 158. Constantinescu/Cornea: Potential Theory on Harmonic Spaces
- 159. Köthe: Topological Vector Spaces I
- 160. Agrest/Maksimov: Theory of Incomplete Cylindrical Functions and their Applications
- 161. Bhatia/Szegő: Stability Theory of Dynamical Systems
- 162. Nevanlinna: Analytic Functions
- 163. Stoer/Witzgall: Convexity and Optimization in Finite Dimensions I
- 164. Sario/Nakai: Classification Theory of Riemann Surfaces
- 165. Mitrinović/Vasić: Analytic Inequalities
- 166. Grothendieck/Dieudonné: Éléments de Géométrie Algébrique I
- 167. Chandrasekharan: Arithmetical Functions
- 168. Palamodov: Linear Differential Operators with Constant Coefficients
- 169. Rademacher: Topics in Analytic Number Theory
- 170. Lions: Optimal Control of Systems Governed by Partial Differential Equations
- 171. Singer: Best Approximation in Normed Linear Spaces by Elements of Linear Subspaces

172. Bühlmann: Mathematical Methods in Risk Theory
173. Maeda/Maeda: Theory of Symmetric Lattices
174. Stiefel/Scheifele: Linear and Regular Celestial Mechanics. Perturbed Two-body Motion—Numerical Methods—Canonical Theory
175. Larsen: An Introduction to the Theory of Multipliers
176. Grauert/Remmert: Analytische Stellenalgebren
177. Flügge: Practical Quantum Mechanics I
178. Flügge: Practical Quantum Mechanics II
179. Giraud: Cohomologie non abélienne
180. Landkof: Foundations of Modern Potential Theory
181. Lions/Magenes: Non-Homogeneous Boundary Value Problems and Applications I
182. Lions/Magenes: Non-Homogeneous Boundary Value Problems and Applications II
183. Lions/Magenes: Non-Homogeneous Boundary Value Problems and Applications III
184. Rosenblatt: Markov Processes. Structure and Asymptotic Behavior
185. Rubinowicz: Sommerfeldsche Polynommethode
186. Handbook for Automatic Computation. Vol. 2. Wilkinson/Reinsch: Linear Algebra
187. Siegel/Moser: Lectures on Celestial Mechanics
188. Warner: Harmonic Analysis on Semi-Simple Lie Groups I
189. Warner: Harmonic Analysis on Semi-Simple Lie Groups II
190. Faith: Algebra: Rings, Modules, and Categories I
192. Mal'cev: Algebraic Systems
193. Pólya/Szegő: Problems and Theorems in Analysis I
194. Igusa: Theta Functions
195. Berberian: Baer \*-Rings
196. Athreya/Ney: Branching Processes
197. Benz: Vorlesungen über Geometrie der Algebren
198. Gaal: Linear Analysis and Representation Theory
199. Nitsche: Vorlesungen über Minimalflächen
200. Dold: Lectures on Algebraic Topology
201. Beck: Continuous Flows in the Plane
202. Schmetterer: Introduction to Mathematical Statistics
203. Schoeneberg: Elliptic Modular Functions
204. Popov: Hyperstability of Control Systems
205. Nikol'skii: Approximation of Functions of Several Variables and Imbedding Theorems
206. André: Homologie des Algèbres Commutatives
207. Donoghue: Monotone Matrix Functions and Analytic Continuation
208. Lacey: The Isometric Theory of Classical Banach Spaces
209. Ringel: Map Color Theorem
210. Gihman/Skorohod: The Theory of Stochastic Processes I
211. Comfort/Negrepointis: The Theory of Ultrafilters
212. Switzer: Algebraic Topology—Homotopy and Homology
213. Shafarevich: Basic Algebraic Geometry
214. van der Waerden: Group Theory and Quantum Mechanics
215. Schaefer: Banach Lattices and Positive Operators
216. Pólya/Szegő: Problems and Theorems in Analysis II. In preparation

- M. Aigner Combinatorial Theory ISBN 3-540-61787-6
- J. W. S. Cassels An Introduction to the Geometry of Numbers ISBN 3-540-61788-4
- R. Courant, F. John Introduction to Calculus and Analysis I ISBN 3-540-65058-X
- R. Courant, F. John Introduction to Calculus and Analysis II/1 ISBN 3-540-66569-2
- R. Courant, F. John Introduction to Calculus and Analysis II/2 ISBN 3-540-66570-6
- P. Dembowski Finite Geometries ISBN 3-540-61786-8
- A. Dold Lectures on Algebraic Topology ISBN 3-540-58660-1
- J. L. Doob Classical Potential Theory and Its Probabilistic Counterpart  
ISBN 3-540-41206-9
- H. Federer Geometric Measure Theory ISBN 3-540-60656-4
- S. Flügge Practical Quantum Mechanics ISBN 3-540-65035-0
- D. Gilbarg, N. S. Trudinger Elliptic Partial Differential Equations of Second Order  
ISBN 3-540-41160-7
- H. Hasse Number Theory ISBN 3-540-42794-X
- F. Hirzebruch Topological Methods in Algebraic Geometry ISBN 3-540-58663-6
- K. Itô, H. P. McKean, Jr. Diffusion Processes and their Sample Paths ISBN 3-540-60629-7
- T. Kato Perturbation Theory for Linear Operators ISBN 3-540-58661-X
- S. Kobayashi Transformation Groups in Differential Geometry ISBN 3-540-58659-8
- J. Lindenstrauss, L. Tzafriri Classical Banach Spaces I and II ISBN 3-540-60628-9
- R. C. Lyndon, P. E. Schupp Combinatorial Group Theory ISBN 3-540-41158-5
- S. Mac Lane Homology ISBN 3-540-58662-8
- D. Mumford Algebraic Geometry I – Complex Projective Varieties ISBN 3-540-58657-1
- O. T. O'Meara Introduction to Quadratic Forms ISBN 3-540-66564-1
- G. Pólya, G. Szegő Problems and Theorems in Analysis I – Series. Integral Calculus.  
Theory of Functions ISBN 3-540-63640-4
- G. Pólya, G. Szegő Problems and Theorems in Analysis II – Theory of Functions.  
Zeros. Polynomials. Determinants. Number Theory. Geometry  
ISBN 3-540-63686-2
- S. Sakai  $C^*$ -Algebras and  $W^*$ -Algebras ISBN 3-540-63633-1
- C. L. Siegel, J. K. Moser Lectures on Celestial Mechanics ISBN 3-540-58656-3
- T. A. Springer Jordan Algebras and Algebraic Groups ISBN 3-540-63632-3
- R. R. Switzer Algebraic Topology: Homology and Homotopy ISBN 3-540-42750-3
- A. Weil Basic Number Theory ISBN 3-540-58655-5
- A. Weil Elliptic Functions According to Eisenstein and Kronecker ISBN 3-540-65036-9
- K. Yosida Functional Analysis ISBN 3-540-58654-7
- O. Zariski Algebraic Surfaces ISBN 3-540-58658-X



Springer-Verlag began publishing books in higher mathematics in 1920, when the series *Grundlehren der mathematischen Wissenschaften*, initially conceived as a series of advanced textbooks, was founded by Richard Courant. A few years later, a new series *Ergebnisse der Mathematik und ihrer Grenzgebiete*, survey reports of recent mathematical research, was added.

Of over 400 books published in these series, many have become recognized classics and remain standard references for their subject. Springer is reissuing a selected few of these highly successful books in a new, inexpensive softcover edition, to make them easily accessible to younger generations of students and researchers.

## Problems and Theorems in Analysis II

Theory of Functions. Zeros. Polynomials.

Determinants. Number of Theory. Geometry

From the reviews: "...In the past, more of the leading mathematicians proposed and solved problems than today, and there were problem departments in many journals. Pólya and Szegő must have combed all of the large problem literature from about 1850 to 1925 for their material, and their collection of the best in analysis is a heritage of lasting value.

The work is unashamedly dated. With few exceptions, all of its material comes from before 1925. We can judge its vintage by a brief look at the author indices (combined). Let's start on the C's: Cantor, Carathéodory, Carleman, Carlson, Catalan, Cauchy, Cayley, Cesàro, ... Or the L's: Lacour, Lagrange, Laguerre, Laisant, Lambert, Landau, Laplace, Lasker, Laurent, Lebesgue, Legendre, ... Omission is also information: Carlit, Erdős, Moser, etc."

(*Bulletin of the American Mathematical Society*)

ISBN 3-540-63686-2



ISSN 1431-0821

springeronline.com